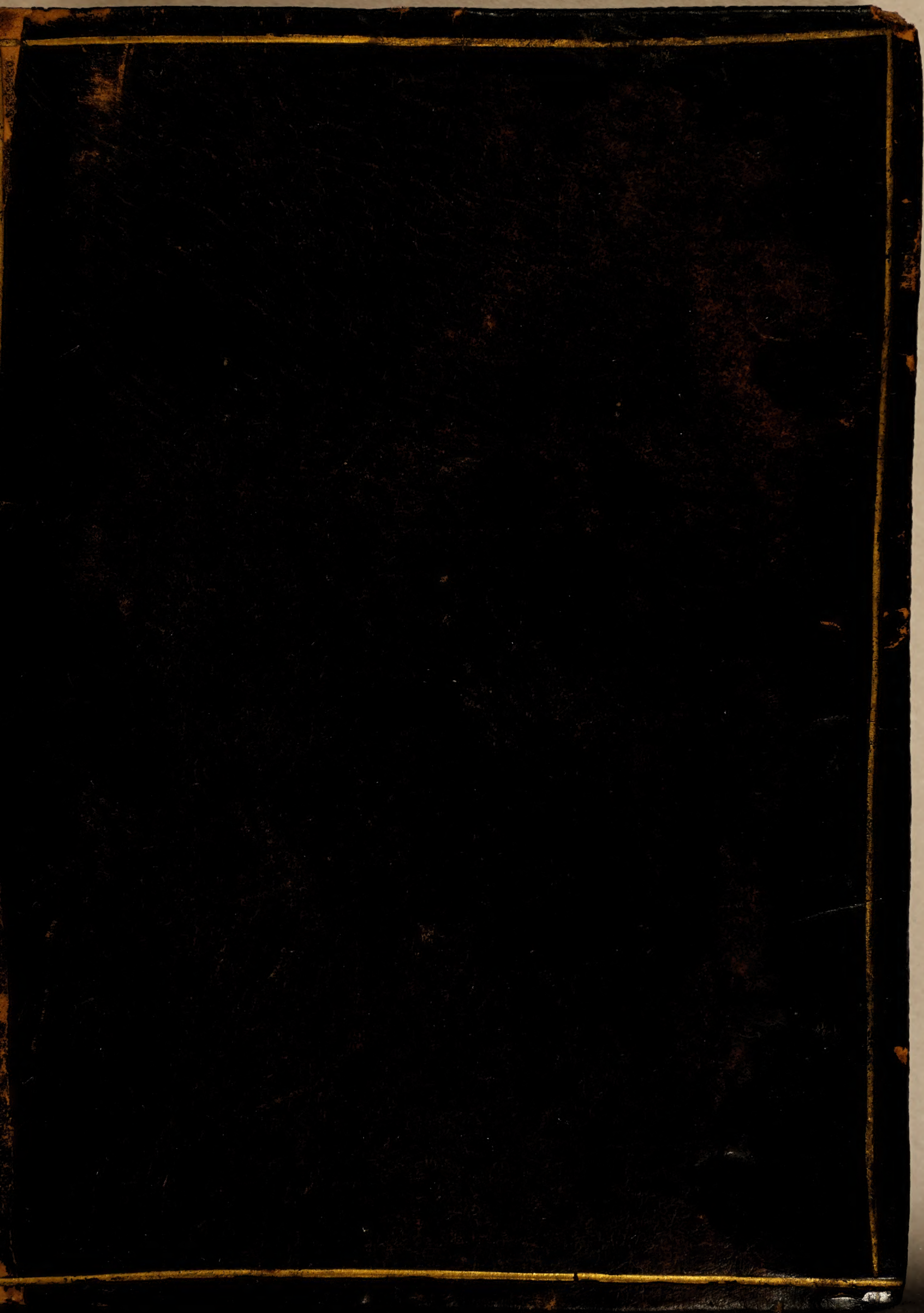




king $\frac{1c}{10}$



James Bindley Esq.

M. A. F. S. A.

Stamp Office London.

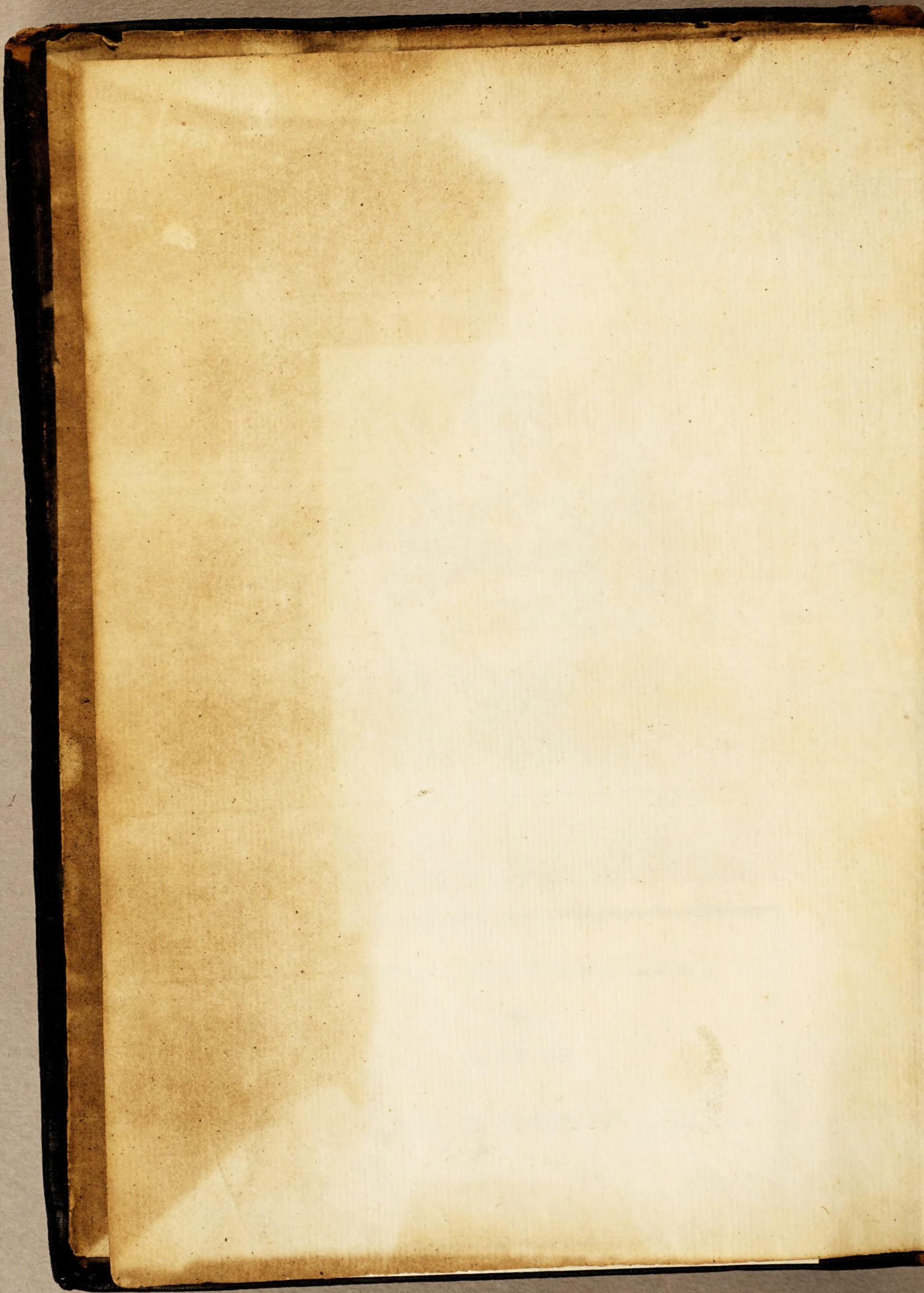
The John Carter Brown Library



GIFT OF

The Estate of Frederick Lippitt

L. 1. 7. 0



AN EPITOME

OF CRONICLES.

Conceyninge the whole discourse
of the histories as well of this realme of Eng-
land as al other countreys, with the succession of their
kinges, the time of their reigne, and what notable
actes they did: much profitable to be redde, namelpe
of Magistrates, and such as have auctoritee in com-
mō weales, gathered out of most probable auctours.

Firste by Thomas Lanquet, from the be-
ginning of the worlde to the incarnation

of Christe, Secondely to the reigne of

our soueraigne lord king Edward

the first by Thomas Cooper,

and thirldy to the reigne of

our soueraigne Ladye

Quene Elizabeth, by

Robert Crow-

ley.

liber. f. 10. m. 1. b. 1. 1. 1.

Anno. 1559.

LONDINI,

In ædibus Thomæ Marthe.

AN EPILOGUE

OF CHRONICLES

CONTAINING THE HISTORY OF THE

REIGN OF KING CHARLES THE FIRST

AND THE REIGN OF KING CHARLES THE SECOND

AND THE REIGN OF KING JAMES THE SECOND

AND THE REIGN OF KING WILLIAM THE THIRD

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE FIRST

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE SECOND

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE THIRD

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE FOURTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE FIFTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE SIXTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE SEVENTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE EIGHTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE NINTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE TENTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE ELEVENTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE TWELFTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE THIRTEENTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE FOURTEENTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE FIFTEENTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE SIXTEENTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE SEVENTEENTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE EIGHTEENTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE NINETEENTH

AND THE REIGN OF KING GEORGE THE TWENTIETH



ANNO 1770.

LONDON:

Printed by Thomas Maltby.

The Preface.

To the ryghte hyghe and myghtye Prynce,

Edward by the grace of God, Duke of Somersset, gouer-

nour of the kynges mathees most royal person,

and protectour of all his hyghnesse realmes

dominions, and subiectes, Thomas

Cooper, wyth all wealth

and perfite felicityes.



A be it (righte excellent
prince (your affabilite and clez
mencie is such, and so great, that
all people of euery state and de
gree, as well pooze as riche,
maye at all conueniente times
haue free accesse to your grace,
and haue their reasonable suites
complayntes, and petitions be
nignely heard, and accordyng

to equitie, iustice and good conscience depeched, so that
therby it is verpe likely that the true knowledge of the
state and condicion of the weale publike, is at all tymes
to your grace reueled & opened: Yet because (well nere)
in all common weales, and aboute all suche noble and
good princes, there haue ben some, which for their owne
commoditee, aduancement, displeasure or other affecti
on, haue so letted and hindered true report, that it could
not frankly come forth, it is a thyng much to be fea
red, and with all wisdom and prudence to be foresene,
lest any such might perchance hereafter couertly crepe
in fauour, as by flatterye and dissimulation, would en
deuour to abuse your godly gentillesse, as suche haue
dooen the like natures of othe r most vertuous and wo
thie gouernours befoze tyme: and by that meanes not
onely blemyshe greatly the immortal prayles that your
grace shoulde moost woorthily deserue of all men, for
your godly and politike gouernaunce, but also tourne

All.

this

The Preface.

this noble realme to much trouble and hindrance. For
neuer did there chaunce greater mischief to any com-
men weale, neuer were the vertuous natures of greate
rulers so soone corrupted, as either when they haue ben
misinstructed and wronge insourmed by flatterers, or
els when those that were in moste fauour and credyte,
dissembling the truerth, in stede of equitee & iustice, haue
wrought their owne purposes. Was not the good kyng
Darius by wicked persuasions induced, even against his
conscience, to committe Daniel the prophete of god, to
the daunger of the cruell and hanging lions? had not the
diuelish counsaile of Haman persuaded Assuerus with-
out cause to destroy the whole nacion of the Jewes, for
malice that he bare to Mardocheus, he had the singuler
prouidence of God in Hester preserved them? to what
misgouernance and vicious liuyng did Perennius, Cle-
ander, & other bring the emperour Commodus, notwith-
standing the graue and sage counsaillours lesse hym by
his father Marcus Antonius? did any thing so much cor-
rupte the nature of the ballant conquerour Alexander,
and so greatly blemish his fame and glozpe, as that he
had his eares so open to flatterers? whiche made hym
to thinke, that he was the sonne of their greate god Ju-
piter: yea almoste that he was a god and no mortall
man. Wherefore the wyse emperour Gordian had good
cause to saie, that he was a wretched prince, from whom
vertuous counsaile & the truerth of matters was hidde by
flattery. Yea (& in mine opinion) it were farre more tolle-
rable, that the soueraigne were euill him selfe, then that
hys nere friendes, seruantes, or samplars, whome he
trusteth, should bee flatterers, conetous, or malispons.
For suche persons shal not onely them selves dooe mu-
che euill, but also by false informacion, corruptinge the
high ruler (if it be possible) allure hym to dooe the lyke,
to the perill and daunger bothe of hym selfe and of the
weale pu-like. Wherefore wise men haue alwayes iudged
them most worthe, to be extremely punished, to the ex-
ample of al other, like as the noble emperour Alexander
for

he Preface.

for his sharpe iustice named Seuerus, caused Vetriconius
Thurinus with smoke to be smothered to death, because
in matters of suite he had taken bribes for false reporte
of the emperours fauour. For the noble gouernour sus-
pecting no such euell to be in them, (for how long wold
it be, ere the wille wates of such subtil reynardes maye
be spied out) may lightly be misledde and do the more so
he wold not, if he wist surely how the truth went. And
this daunger hath alwayes bene so much the thyng
he feared, as that wittie men perceyving thinges to be
in suche wise mishandled by them that were in great
fauour with their princes, durst not, or at the least wold
not speake and discouer the greuous hurtres of the com-
mon weale: some, for feare to be hindred by those fami-
liars, & so to lose their dignitees, offices, & anctozitees:
some for great hope that they had, to be by their reporte
commended, and therby aduanced to some promoti-
on or high roome in the common weale. So that I gather
hereby (righte excellent prince) that of all other it is a
thing mooste difficile and harde to rule well, and for a
chiefe magistrate and gouernour to be truly and with-
out dissimulacion informed in euery case, as the nota-
ble saying of king Antiochus, doth well declare: who
on a time of hunting, being strayed from his company
and benighted, was fayne to take for his harborow, a
poore cotage of the countrey, and there, as he was un-
known at supper with the vplandishe people, through
communication, heard diuers thinges frelye talked of
his owne behauiour. Therfore on the morow, when his
ministers brought to him his purpze raiment and dia-
deme, he turning to those ensignes sayed. Sins the time
I first began to were you, yesterday only and neuer before
I herd the truth frankly spoken. Therfore the best and
most sure waye for a noble gouernour, after the coun-
saile of the excellent philosopher Demetrius, is to reade
such bookes, as most wittily and pithily treat of the
states of common weales, and namely hystories in the
which he shall playnely see sette forth befoze his eyes
A. III. what

The Preface.

What best becometh him to doo, what to eschew: what
maye aduance the state of his common weale, what
maye hurte and hynder the same: howe and by what
meanes hatred and grudge is bredde toward him, and
howe and by what wayes he maye wyne loue and fa-
uour: What maketh his realme weake, what maketh
it stronge: What maketh it wealthe and riche, what
maketh it poore and beggarly: what maketh it flozpye
many yeres, what maketh it miserable in short space: In
bookes shall he lerne to know the wilie flattering fores,
from his sure and trustye frendes: good and faythfull
ministers, from false feigning dissemblers: Whom and
how he ought to chose his counsaylours, how and what
lawes he ought to make. Thus (I saye) he shall learne
out of bookes to bee him selfe to him selfe, the best the
trustest and surest counsaylour. And for thys conside-
ration wold I wyllyngly, that the summes of all such lerned
workes, were drawen out into short brigementes, to the
ende that prudent gouernours (whych for theyr many
folde affayres and busineses, haue but small tyme of
leisure) myghte in lieu of other playes, passe the tyme
therewith, like as the Epitome or brigemente of cron-
icles is, whych not many yeres passed was begonne by
a studious yong man named Thomas Lanquet, & nowe
of late by me finished. and continued, from the incarna-
cion of Christ, to the seconde yere of the reigne of our so-
ueraine lord king Edvard the sixt. In suche forme and
ordre that a diligent reader may as in a mirrour behold
the state and condicion of all realmes at all times, and
know what gouernours ruled them, how many yeres
they reygred, and what notable actes were done in the
time of their reigne, what the Britaines, & likewise the
Scottes, came fyrste into thys lande, with the succession
of their kinges, and the whole discourse of the histories
of both countreys: so that ye may perceiue, what notable
acte was done in any realme vnder enery king of Eng-
land, and what yere of his reigne. For the yeres of the
kinges of this land be noted in the margent, with the
yeres

The Preface.

pere of the worlde and of Chyſte. In the computacyon
wee haue folowed the moſte ſure accompte of the byble
and Hebrews, whiche dyffereth muche from Eusebius
and other latine Cronickers. These my labours (suche
as they be) most excellent prince, I thought most conue-
nient to publish in your Graces name, not for the wel
handling of the same, nor yet because I iudged it wor-
thie so noble a Prince: but onely as I dyd of late exhibe
the correction of sir Thomas Eliotes Dictionarie
to the kinges most royall maiestee, to testifie my louing
and obedient herte toward his highnesse, so doe I now
offer this symple gyfte to your Grace, as a witnesse of
testimonie of the good zeale and loue, whiche all men
ought (as well as I) to beare toward you, for your
christian and vertuous governance, and especial-
ly for your godly zeale in advancynge the true
religion of chylt: wishing continually with
most hertie prayer, that you governing
as so benignely, so mercifully, so gods-
ly, mought alwaye lye in moste
happy felicitye, and bringe
this diuersitee of opini-
ons to a perfite unitie
and concord in
Chyſtes doc-
trine, that
wee
with mutuall loue and charitee, and
hertie obedience toward our
prince, may geue condigne
honour and worship
vnto god, and im-
mortall prais-
es to your
name. A-
men.



The table.

A	Arion	23.26.174.	Actosa	27.
	Alba	194.	Ada	7.
	Abahue	43.	Adad	34.39.
	Abazarus	92.112.	Adam	6.7.8.
	Abas	28	Adamites	155.
	Abbas Arspe	219.	Adelbert	187.
	Abdaram	189.	Adelstane	184.
	Adon	31.	Adolphonius	173.
	Abdimaleth	164.	Adelboldus	182.
	Abdus	95	Adodatus	162.
	Abel	6.285.	Adherball	77.
	Abenefra	207	Adhefer	153.
	Abellan	31.	Adiolde	119.
	Abia	104	Adontas	34.
	Abiathas	33.	Adolphus emp.	229.230.
	Abias	35.	Adolphus de Nassau.	264.
	Abilius	104.	Adastus	30.
	Abimaleth	30.	Adia	191.
	Abzine	288.	Adrian bis. 171. 180. 209. 275	
	Abraham	85.17.19	Adrian emp.	106.107.108.
	Abroditi	177.	Adrian	442
	Abzogastes	131.	Agelippus	110.
	Abitarus	164	Agemus	29.
	Abulazar	174.	Agialens	14.21.
	Abomalach	174.	Agipte conquered.	47.
	Acabath	166	Agidius	18.
	Academia	57.	Agipsa	163.
	Accaron	202.	Agypius	26.96.
	Accalaurentia	38.	Agistus	31.
	Accius	236	Alon	31.
	Accelius	222.	Amilianus	117.118.
	Acenris	25.	Amilius	53.61.69.72.
	Acetozides	48.	Aneas	31.
	Achab	35.36	Aneas Delatus	32.263.
	Achaia	27.56.102.	Aepulo	72.
	Achais	172.	Aelepuz	39.
	Achis	39.	Aelmedes	400.
	Acherres	26	Aelopus	45.
	Acheus	69.	Aelius	126.135.136 137.
	Achilles	30.31.		138.139.
	Acho	214.	Aetna	77.
	Achylis	25.	Africa recovered. 158, subject	
	Adius Cornelius	109	to Sarracens	163.
	Adius.	71.	Aganemnon	30.31.
	Adius	28.	Aganestor	38.
			Agabus	

The table.

Agastus	34.	Aldermen	221.
Agatho	162. 163.	Aldus	267.
Agapitus byl.	146. 186.	Aldrichenys.	283.
Agathocles	61.	Aldroenus	136.
Agelas	35.	Alectus.	114. 115. 120.
Agelians	35. 55. 56. 58.	Alema Souch	225.
Aggal Ecll	66.	Alema	132.
Aggeus	47.	Alema	206.
Agila	149. 150.	Alexander the great.	61. 62.
Agilulphus	154. 155.	Alexander Martir	117.
Agis	55. 62.	Alexander	58. 60. 64. 73.
Agricola	101.		74. 83.
Agrippa.	88. 92. 95. 96. 67.	Alexander zebenna	77.
	99.	Alexander Walans	74.
Agrippa Castor	108.	Alexander of Corinth	34.
Agrippa Memmius	49.	Alexander sonne of Pyrrhus	97.
Agrippina	98. 99.		97.
Ahasias.	36.	Alexander Bubasis.	48.
Ahasias	35.	Alexander emperor of Cōst.	183.
Alex	30. 31.		183.
Aidan	152. 152.	Alexander Olympias bro-	60.
Ailulphus	169. 170.	ther	60.
Ailph	107.	Alexander Gallus.	222.
Ailricus	132. 133.	Alexander Benedictus	269.
Alba longa	31.	Alexander the first Scot.	203.
Albanarie	32.		209.
Alba Silvius	34.	Alexander the second Scot.	17. 218.
Albert of Austrich emperor.	259.	Alexander the thyrde Scot.	222. 226. 228.
Albertus emp.	230. 231.	Alexander Severus emp.	114.
Albert of Hung.	259.	Alexander bil. Hier.	113.
Albertus Magnus	223.	Alexander the fyrst byshop of	196.
Abericus	183. 186.	Rome	196.
Abion	32.	Alexander the second	106.
Abinas	100.	Alexander the thir d.	210. 211.
Aboine	199. 147. 152.		212.
Abous	170.	Alexander the fourth	222.
Abzich	249.	Alexander. v. bysh	252.
Abaron	158.	Alexander. vi.	269.
Abamenon	39.	Alexander Ramsel.	238. 245.
Abanes.	37. 38.	Alexandria	80.
Abetas	44.	Alexandria builded.	62. 62.
Abetans.	275.	ged. 73. repayed. 103. 103.	121. 127.
Abhans	73.	Alexandria builded.	211.
Ababades.	53. 54.		211.
Abameon	42.		211.

The table.

Alexius. 199. 200. 203. 212.	Aminadab	32.
215.	Anilo	174.
Algarus 195.	Amingo	150.
Alendus 131.	Amitus	22.
Algina 184.	Ammenophos	20. 35.
Aliaetes 44.	Ammon	18. 36. 41.
Almericus Carnotensis 217.	Annon	34.
Almericus 210.	Annus	35.
Almaricus 147.	Annus faunigena	27.
Alpetragius 209.	Anodius	259.
Alphons of Arrag. 258. 290.	Anorteus	168.
261.	Amos Ocyrach	67.
Alphons of Naples 262.	Amos	37. 39.
Alphons of Portugale 266.	Anolis	22.
Alphons the card. hisp. 172.	Amphion	27. 28. 29.
Alphons Chetolicus 168.	Amphitron	26.
Alphons the.iii. 176. 177.	Amri	35.
Alphons the.iii. 181.	Amulius Silusus	38.
Alphons the.v. 188. 190.	Amurates	242. 244. 254.
Alphons the.vi. 196.	255. 256.	
Alphons the.vii. 203.	Amptas	26. 46. 47. 55. 56.
Alphons the.viii. 214.	58.	
Alphons the.ix. 221. 223.	Anabaptistes	278. 282.
Alphons 194.	Anacletus	103.
Alphons the.xi. 232.	Anamalis	45.
Alpine 176.	Ananias	44.
Alphiede 186.	Ananelus	86.
Aladas 22.	Ananus	99. 104.
Alceus 23.	Anastatius the firste byshop	
Alureda 176. 180. 181.	of Rome	132.
Amadeus 260. 261.	Anastatius the second, the pere	
Amalthes 14.	of the worlde.	4458.
Amalasiunio 145. 146.	Anastatius the thirde, the pere	
Amarcheus 53.	of the worlde. 4874. bis.ii.	
Amas 51.	peres.	
Amas'ia 37.	Anastatius the.iii. b. fo. 208	
Amatus 153.	Anatus Emp. 143. 144.	
Amazons 31. 38.	Anaragozas	51.
Ambercheleth. 164.	Anaxibios	56.
Ambrose 129. 131.	Anaximander	45.
Ambrose Erle. 181.	Anaximines	45.
Amerinus Uesp. 269.	Amberoch	239.
Amenophis 22. 23.	Anchale	37.
Amilinus Cuilmerodach. 44.	Ancozarus	249.
Amisco. 49. 50.	Anchtale	37.
Amilcae 49. 68.	Ancus Oaplius.	42.
	Am.	Andarils

The table.

Andaristis	74.75.
Andea.	152
Andoine	142
Andouera	151.
Andragalus	131
Andragorus	67.
Andrew Barton.	273.
Andrew	240.
Andrew of Hung.	217.
Andrew the, iii. Hung.	228.
Andrew Collop	262
Androgus	76.
Androgeus	81
Andronicus,	213. 219, 233.
	245.
Angli.	131.
Angus.	210.
Anguleian.	126. 127.
Anianus	100
Annius	73.
Anna	161
Anne of Bist.	269
Anne Bulline	281. 283
Anne of Cleus	282
Anne Ashew	291
Anselmus	202
Antheris	153. 154
Annibal	54. 67. 69. 70
	71. 72.
Antheus	21
Anthemius	140. 166
Antiochus	54. 71. 102
Antiochus Euphrus	77
Antenodus	115
Anterus	115
Anticus	107
Antiochus Lysicenus	78
Antiochus Theos	76. 67
Antiochus Soter	66. 67.
Antiochus the great	69.
Antiochus Epiphanes	72. 73
Antiochus Eupator	73
Antiochus Sidetes	76
Antigenus	63. 64. 66. 68.
	69. 86,
Antipater of Sicily	3569.

pere of the world.	
Antipater pious of Juti. 89	
Antipater Herode	90.
Antipater Idumeus.	81.
Antipater of Maced	62. 63.
	64. 65. 66.
Antenoborus	28.
Antomenes	38.
Anionius	84. 86. 87.
Antonius Bononius	119. 108
Antonius Commodus	111.
Antonius the hermits	124.
Antonius de Bureio	254.
Antonius Rosellanus	253.
Antonius Benenentius.	269.
Anubius	94.
Aper	120.
Apher	120.
Aphidas	131.
Apicianus	74. 115.
Apis	117. 19. 21
Apleonius	73
Appolinaris	110. 129
Appian	107. 2808
Appie	81.
Appius Claudius	52. 66. 73
Appius	44
Apronius	93.
Apteras	26.
Apuleus	107.
Aquila	11.
Aquians	261.
Aralius	18.
Aram	14. 15.
Archas	26.
Arch	32.
Archadi.	14. 110. 111. 132. 133
Archelaus	36. 52. 55. 90. 92.
Archimedes	79.
Archistrandes	45.
Archus	41.
Archistratus	34.
Archidamas	52. 57.
Archidamus	59. 61. 61.
Archiflaminus.	55.
Archigallo.	55. 66.
	Archis

The table.

Archilochus	42.	Artes	68
Archarius	139, 148	Artines	64
Archis	42	Artaces	37
Archisus	39	Artabanes,	148
Archibuenus	135	Arthausus	169
Archimedes	36	Artabanus	50, 93, 97, 98
Archis	95	Artaxerxes	47, 50, 54, 57
Archias	79, 81	Artaxerxes Ochus	59, 60
Archidamus	1108	Arthur	144, 147, 215
Archis	41, 56, 59	Arthur prince	270
Architropus	263	Arthur Wilney	279
Archis	34	Arutagus	97
Argonautes	29	Arripus	37
Argus.	22.	Arymbas	60 62
Arctates.	69, 73, 77.	Arta	35
Arctaidus	159	Artembertus	166
Arctobartanes	79	Artem	34
Arctus	63	Artemius	31
Arcton	44	Arctades	25
Arctus	66	Arctopitatus,	115, 118, 120
Arcton	37	Arctates	36
Arctarchus	51	Arctaball	71, 74
Arctodes	57	Arthe	284
Arctosie	58	Artemichomas	44
Arctobul?	78, 80, 81, 84, 99	Arper	141
Arctides	50, 107	Arpan	164, 165
Arctogiton	47	Araradon	40
Arctonius	77	Arrianus	110
Arctemedes	36	Arur	12
Arctomenes	40	Arpizus	13
Arctbert?	159, 161, 164, 165	Arterius	27
Arctotinus	45	Artiages	44
Arctus	17	Artybarus	44
Arctatiles	20	Artaulphus	133
Arctus	68	Arthalia	47
Arctonius	47	Arthalaricus	145
Arctus	26	Artharagildus	150, 151
Arctide	162	Artharatus,	124, 125, 127, 129
Arctolus de Villanova	231	Artharicus	129 130
Arctus	122	Artharwolbe	163
Arctolus	181, 184	Artharus	168
Arctolus Duke	183, 184	Arthetes	32
Arctolus	24	Artheco	116
Arthar	11	Arthonger	90
Arthas	130	Arthas	23
Arthas	123, 125	Arthas	128
		Arthas	128

The table.

Alota.	47.	Bacchilus	xxx.
Aureus	30. 39.	Bacchides.	73.
Attalus 69. 70. 77. 133. 134.		Bacchus	10.
Atilla	138.	Bacis	35.
Atilius	69. 94.	Bacucas.	225.
Atilius Calatinus.	67.	Bagelarde.	196.
Atilius Regulus	65.	Galach.	295.
Aups	46.	Galabad.	40.
Audley.	290.	Galans	74.
Auentinus Siluius.	37.	Galbinus	116.
Auerrois	207.	Galdata.	162.
Aufidius Victorinus.	109.	Galdequinus.	205.
Auful	200.	Galwine of Const.	221.
Auges	30.	Galwine. 196. 201. 202. 203.	
Augustinus Niphus.	271.	204. 205. 207. 212. 213. 215.	
Augustus	86. 87. 90.	219. 223.	
Augustine friers	222.	Baleus	19. 21.
Augustine	131. 154.	Baliardus.	207.
Augustulus	141.	Balihar.	46.
Auidius Cassius	109. 110.	Bamba.	162.
Aucenna	207.	Banus.	171.
Auitus	140.	Barake.	28.
Aulus	78.	Barachias.	46.
Aurelianus.	119.	Barbaranes.	135.
Aurelius Ambrose	142.	Barbours.	64.
Aurelius Conanus.	148.	Barchochabas.	107.
Aurelius of Spaine.	170.	Barcalanes	92.
Aurelius	63. 143.	Barcus.	18. 20.
Aurelius Scaurus.	78.	Barcilus.	59.
Aureolus	118. 119.	Barcolph.	252.
Aurogallus.	281.	Barnes.	278. 285.
Aurulus	18.	Barnet fiede.	266.
Auseline	190.	Barnich.	42.
Aydo	175.	Barzizus.	263.
Aymanus.	283.	Basilides.	108.
Azahel	36. 37.	Basilus traitore.	178.
Azariah.	35.	Basilus emp.	189.
Azarias	38. 44.	Basilus of Amasia.	223.
Azo	214.	Basilus Magnus.	228.
B		Bastianus Caracalla.	113.
Bales prestos.	35.	Ballas.	102.
Baafa	35.	Bastard Heron.	277.
Babenberge	191.	Battle of Crest.	139.
Babell	6.	Battle at Poitiers.	241.
Babilas	116. 117.	Bathe.	37.
Babylon	11. 14.	Beblus.	71. 74.
Babylons kyngdome	38.	Webis	

The table.

Webius Pamphilus.	71.	Weronice.	68.
Weron.	288.	Werihulphus.	173.
Weda.	167. 168.	Werteem of Alesqui.	243.
Wela the fyrst of Hung.	195.	Wessa.	130.
Wela the second.	206.	Wessarion	263.
Wela the thyrd.	211.	Wessus	62.
Wela the fourth.	220.	Wertheron	73.
Belgius.	24.	Wetia	20.
Belgrade.	277.	Wethsida	92.
Belinus.	52. 55.	Wethsaba	34.
Bellizartus. 145. 146. 147.		Wetus	20. 97.
148. 149. 151.		Winitus	110.
Belochus.	20. 27.	Wil	253.
Belopares.	27.	Wladud	37.
Belus.	14.	Wladumus	77.
Bels vled.	179.	Wladius	247.
Benadod.	35.	Wlanch Marie	196.
Bendaga.	225.	Wledgabridus	78.
Benet the fyrst, the yere of the		Wletas	131.
worlde. 4540.		Wlondus	259.
Benet the second. fol. 163.		Wocatus	243.
Benet the thyrd, the yere of the		Wochorus	83.
worlde. 4818.		Wochus	78.
Benet the. iiii. the yere of the		Wohemunde. 201. 202. 202.	
worlde. 4862.		Wocotia	32.
Benet the. v. fol. 188.		Wozlai	186.
Benet the. vi. fol. 188.		Wolus	78.
Benet the. vii. the yere of the		Wonenis	36.
worlde. 4937.		Wonsuente	23.
Benet the. 8. the yere of worlde		Wonifare of Afriche. 135. 137.	
4970.		Wonifare Erle 136. 216.	
Benet the. fol. 194.		Wonifare the first by th. the	
Benet the. x. fol. 195.		yere of the worlde. 4381.	
Benet the. xi. 231.		Wonifare the seconde. fol.	
Benet the. xii. 237. 238.		146.	
Benet the. xiii. 249.		Wonifare the fourth. 155. 156	
Beniamin. 105.		Wonifare the. v. by th. 157.	
Woz.	101.	Wonifare the. vi. 181.	
Wenmerodach. 41.		Wonifare the. vii. the yere of	
Werillus. 115.		the worlde. 4936.	
Wernard. 175. 184. 204. 207.		Wonifare the. viii. 229. 230.	
Wernabos. 242. 247.		231.	
Weringerlus heretike. 199.		Wonifare the. ix. 248. 250.	
Weringarius. 181. 182. 183.		Wozichus 206.	
185. 186.		Wzabanlois first began. 174	
Weroaldus. 269.		Wzaching. 255. 257.	
		Wzallis	

The table.

Brasidas.	53.
Brecha.	101.
Breton.	281.
Brennus.	52.55.56.56.
Brentius	286.
Brius.	18
Britannicus	98.
Britannion	125.
Britaine inhabited.	32. con-
quered. 83. 84. subdued by	
Saxones. 163. Christened	
110.	
Britannicus	172.173.
Brutus	176.
Brunichilda	157.158.
Bruno	199.
Brute	32.35.
Brutus Rom.	85.
Bubaganus	191.
Bucephala	62.
Bucere	284.
Budeus	276.
Bulleine	290.291.
Balmer	284.
Burcharde	184.
Burdine	205.
Burgontons	114.
Buliris	21.27.
Byogor	140.
Byozmon.	195.
Byzance	42.

C.	
Abades.	142.143.
Caballus	271.
Cabolas	196.
Cabylans	36.
Caraunus	154.155.
Cacus.	29.
Cadmus.	27.28.29.
Cadwallader	163.
Cadwalline	159.
Cadwans.	56.159.
Cahan	220.
Cain.	6.7.
Cainan.	7.
Ca. Manlius.	78.

Ca Antonius	82.
Ca. Caligula	95.96.
Ca. Cassius	98.
Calanus	132.
Calonius Commodus.	108.
Calatinus	67.
Calais wonne.	239.
Calpine	169.
Calphas	93.96.
Calippus	60.
Caliph	165.
Caliste bis. of Rome	114.
Calist the. ii.	204.205.
Caliste the. iii. bis.	262.
Callimedes	59.
Callimachus	49.
Calo Joannes.	209.
Calomachus	201.206.
Calphurnius	67.72.
Calphurnius Agricola.	109.
Canther	32.
Canbya	55.
Canbyres	44.46.
Camillus	96.57.59.
Camoblascom	23.
Canus	191.
Camptinus	157.
Campellus	275.
Canthurbus	36.
Candaces	95.
Candaules	40.
Cannas	69.
Canabam	119.
Canutus	192.193.197.
Capellianus	115.
Capenus	78.
Caperus Syluius	35.
Capis Syluius	35.
Caporus	80.
Capito	93.275.
Capua	35.
Caranus	38.
Caratah.	95.97.98.
Carallus	113.
Caraulius	120.
Cardens invented	74.
Cardus	84.

The table.

Citho	78.	Centaures.	29.
Cerdiceas	40.	Cepio.	87.
Creticus	153.	Cerdicus.	145.
Cardinal	281.	Cerealia.	102.103.
Carew	284 285.288.	Cermisodius.	263.
Caelinus	110.	Cesar.	82.83.84.85.
Caecil	36.	Cesar Octavianus.	86.88.
Carmignola	256.	Cestius Flozus.	100.
Carolus Joannes emp.	241.	Chalcedon.	41.
Carops	40.	Cham.	8.11.14.
Carpocrates	108.	Chameleus.	17.
Cithige dektoped	74.	Charles the great.	171.172.
Carcusians	200.	173.174.	
Carus	120.	Charles the Balde, emp.	179.
Castander	21.	Charles the simple.	181.183.
Cassianus.	65	Charles the thirde, of Fran.	
Cassianus.	108. 201.	called of some the sayze.	235.
Cassianus.	81. 82. 84.	236.	
Cassus.	73. 84. 85.	Charles the. vi. of Fran.	242.
Cassius.	135.	Charles the. vi. of Fran.	246.
Castrutius.	236.	247.149.255.256.	
Catellus.	72.	Charles the. 7. of Fran.	258.
Cataculinus.	241.	260.261.263.	
Cathubelus.	266.	Charles the. viii. of Fr.	267.
Catiline.	82.	268.269.	
Cato Censozus.	71 72.	Charles the. iii. surnamed the	
Cato Uticensis.	74.78.73	grosse, emp. 180. king of Fr.	
83. 35.		ibidem.	
Catti.	98.	Charles the. iii. of Boh. emp.	
Catulus.	79. 80.	240. 241. 243. 244. 245.	
Cauarus.	69.	Charles the. v. emp.	275.276.
Ceaolinus.	152.153.	278.280.281.286.	
Cecennius Priscus.	101.	Carlemanyne or Caroloman:	
Cecilius.	62. 66. 79.	nus. 168.169 171.179.180.	
Cecina.	92.	Charles Martellus. 165.166	
Cecrops.	25.28.	167.168.	
Celestine the first byshp of		Charles. 177.178.179.264.	
Rome the pere of the world.		265.	
3487.		Charles of Morayne	190.
Celestine the. ii. bil. fol.	207.	Charles of Flaunders.	205.
Celestine the. iii. bysh.	214.	Charles of Sicilie	227. 228.
Celestine the. iiii. bysh.	220.	247.	
Celestine the. v.	229.	Charles de Walops.	229 230.
Celius.	39.	Charles of Hung.	232.
Celta.	21.	Charles de Bloys.	238.239.
Censores.	53.	242.243.	
		B. Charles	

The table.

Charles of Navarre.	241.	Circumcision	17.
Charles de la pais.	247.	Cissa	161.
Charles of Cremona	252.	Civile warres	84.
Charles Dolphin	257.	Civilis	102.
Charles of Burgoyne.	266.	Clasius	102.
Charles of Austria 271 274		Clarus Chius	41.
Charles of Gelders 271.279		Claudia	45.
Charles of Burgoyne.	278.	Claudius Pontius	63.
Chebzon	22.	Claudius	72. 75.
Cheneres	25.	Claudius emp.	92. 96 97. 98
Chereas	96.		99. 119.
Cherinthus	104.	Cl. Animanus	76.
Cherres	26.	Cleander	111.
Chesse deified	43.	Cleatidas	53.
Childerich. 140. 142. 151. 162		Clement the first bishop of	
169.		Rome	104.
Childebert. 144. 147. 154.		Clement the. ii. bis.	194.
155. 168.		Clement the. iii. bis.	199.
Chilperich 150. 152. 153.		Clement the. iii. bis.	224.
Chilon	45.	Clement the. v. bis.	231.
Chimius.	76.	Clement the. vi. bis.	238. 339
Chloelia	48.		240.
Chozar	27.	Clement the vii. bis	245. 247
Chozinthus.	25.	Clemēt the viii.	277. 278. 280
Chonthomarius	126.	Clement a servant	92.
Chyke	33. 82. 94. 95.	Cleomenes	47. 69.
Chysostomus	132.	Clombrotus	57.
Chyrtierne	277.	Cleominus	94.
Chystophorus Columbanus		Cleon	53.
269.		Cleopompus	52.
Chysolozus	252.	Cleopatra. 71. 74. 76. 77.	
Chyrmus	174.	84. 85. 86. 87.	
Chunrade em. 206. 207. 208		Cleophilus	173.
Chunrade of Duell.	222.	Clephis	152.
Chunrade	183. 192.	Clicerius	141.
Chunradinus.	225.	Clifforde	262. 264.
Chus	13.	Clinton	273.
Chusen	27.	Clio	172.
Chesioleptus	60.	Clodius	83.
Cicero	82. 83. 86.	Clodius of Fran.	135.
Cimon	49.	Clodompe	144. 147.
Cimbrians	78.	Clodouel. 142. 143. 144. 146	
Cindacundus.	160.	Clodouel Lewis	160. 161.
Cincinnatus	150.	Clothayre. 153. 157. 159. 162	
Cinna	79. 80.	166.	
Ciprian	116.	Cu. Octavius	79.
		Cocks.	

The table.

Cocles	48.	Constantine Monomachus	18.
Codrus	32. 33.	emp. of Con.	194.
Coecilius	28.	Constantine of Byz.	133. 136
Coelius Tiroseus	27.	137. 148.	
Coenus	38.	Constantine Scot.	137. 139.
Colus	64. 73. 109. 118.	182. 184. 190.	
Colat.	272.	Constantine byth.	171.
Colina builded	31.	Constantinople	114.
Collatinus	48.	Constantianus	147.
Calumnus	52.	Constantius Clozon.	129. 128
Colodius	165.	lar. 121. emp. ibidem.	
Comerus Gallus.	12.	Constantius Cæsar.	133. emp
Comerus	14.	124. 125. 176.	
Commodus	111.	Constantius Romaine	127
Commandus	147.	pitaine.	133. 134.
Compostellanus	222.	Constantius of Byz.	137.
Comnacion in Kene	261.	138.	
Conatus	108.	Consuls.	48. 52. 59.
Cono	163.	Conwill	151. 175.
Conon	56.	Coostroes	146. 147. 150.
Conon Herodoke.	130.	Copus	176.
Confession	131.	Corbana	201.
Condoundus	129.	Corbonianus	64. 67.
Congallus	138.	Corbulo	100.
Conrannus	141.	Coridon	108.
Constans	131.	Corbreid	98. 101. 162.
Constans emp. 125 160. 161.		Cordeilla	38.
162.		Corcyra	41.
Constantine Leos Sonne, emp		Corodus Eusticius	276.
Const.	186.	Coribanthus	26.
Constantine Romanus Sonne		Coriolanus	49.
emp. Const.	186.	Corillus	93.
Constane emp. Const.	168.	Corinch destroyed	75.
169. 180. 191. 172. 182.		Corinatus	280.
188. 389. 192. 261.		Cornelianus	109.
Constantine Ducas em. Grec.		Cornellus byth.	107. 116.
196.		Cornelius Tacitus	104.
Constantine the great. 122.		Cornelius Gallus	87.
123. 124.		Cornelius Scipio	67.
Constantine son of great C		Cornelius	67.
emp.	124. 125.	Corum	60.
Constantine sons of Heracl.		Coruinus	60.
emp	157. 169.	Costus	87.
Constantine emp.	162.	Colojoas	156.
Constantine the. vi. emp. of		Costa	1165.
Const	172. 173.	Cotta.	81.

Bill

Council

The table.

Councell at Antioch	125.
Councill of armine	126.
Council of Oziance the pere of the worlde.	4775.
Council of Brixium. fol. 109	
Council of Basile.	259.
Council of Constantino	178
Council of Carthage	134.
Council of Constance	254.
Council of Claremount.	200 210.
Council of Ferrare	259
Council of Laterane at Rom	217. 260.
Council of Lions the pere of the worlde.	5207. 5234.
Council of Bense. the pere of the worlde.	4775.
Council of Nice.	123.
Council of Nicomede	126.
Council of Nice.	253.
Council of Paule	256.
Council of Rome	160.
Council of Sardis	125.
Council of Sirmium.	126.
Council of Vienne	233.
Counsaile of Salisbury.	255
Craichlene	120.
Cramiris	149.
Cranatus	26.
Cranus	15. 17.
Crassus.	23. 77. 81. 83. 87.
Cratinus	51.
Cres.	17.
Crescens	106.
Crescentius	189. 190.
Crinitus	135. 269.
Crispus	103. 123. 124.
Croesus.	45. 46.
Crosse friers	215.
Croton	41.
Crothilde	143. 144.
Crowes.	259
Crouch friers	232.
Cruelce	53. 60.
Crumwell	83.

Culpeper	287.
Culine	188.
Cumanus	98.
Cumminges	222.
Cunedagius	383
Cunibert	16.
Curing	66.
Curtius	59. 99.
Cusenus	263.
Cuthbert	167.
Cuthwolphus	1. 2.
Cyranus.	42.
Cydon	24.
Cymbelinus	87
Cypselus	42.
Cyrenius	88.
Cypillus	120.
Cypus.	44. 45. 46. 54.
D	
Dares. 276. 283. 285.	
Dagileus	150.
Dagobert. 159. 166.	
Dahla	31.
Damascenus	241.
Damalia	42.
Damasus	18.
Damasus	194.
Damon	56.
Danaus.	29.
Denes entered Bysaîne.	172.
	174. 177. 189. 190.
Daniel	43. 44. 51.
Daniel of Fran.	169.
Dantes	231.
Darce	272. 284.
Darcus	32.
Darcillidas	55.
Dardania	26.
Dardanus	25. 26. 102.
Dares.	31.
Darius.	46.
Darius Hytaspis.	47. 49
Darius Hothus.	53.
Darius the last.	61. 62.
Daniel Gathern.	284.
Dalus	263.
	284

The table:

David.	33.34.	Deucalion	25.
David of Scot.	205.206.	Dentbedit	157.
227. 236. 237. 338. 239.		Diadumenus.	114.
241. 244.		Dida.	72.
David a Persian	215.	Dictator	48.
Daubeney.	268.	Dietherus.	262.
Deabus	20.	Dinus Hugellanus.	229.
Dead sea	17.	Dinellus	80.
Death.	259.	Dioclesian	120. 121. 123.
Death	240.	Di datus	76.
Deboza	28.	Dioginetes	36.
Decebalus	105.	Dion.	57. 59. 60.
Decemviri	51.	Dionisius	14. 15.
Decentius	126.	Dionisius liber pater.	27. 28.
Decimius.	73.	Dionisius bysch.	115. 116.
Decius	61. 65. 93.	Doctor London.	288.
Decius Emp.	116. 117.	Doctor greuelend.	249.
Deidancus	77.	Doctee.	280.
Deluge	25. 281.	Delicatus	111.
Demades	61.	Delobella.	66.
Demetrius	117.	Dominicus Michaell.	204.
Demetrius Phalerius	64.	Dominicus Mantocenus.	208.
Demetrius Antigoni	64. 65.		
Demetrius. 35. kyng of Maced.	68.	Dominus ke.	216.
Demetrius of Miria	69.	Domitian emp.	103. 104.
Demetrius Philippi.	72.	Domitus.	80. 84.
Demetrius Soter.	73. 74.	Donald.	112. 119. 159. 201.
Demetrius Sicanoz	74.	Donald the. v. Scot.	177.
Demetrius. 16. k. of Syrie	77.	Donald the. vi.	181.
Demetrius of Alexandria.	111.	Donatus.	116.
Demetrius bysch	115.	Dongallus	175.
Demetrius the Romain.	148.	Dongarde.	134.
Demetrius of Russie.	198.	Doristus	35.
Democedes	47.	Dorotheus	146.
Demophoon	30. 11.	Doridilla	68.
Demosthenes	53.	Douglas	140. 251.
Denple	54. 56. 57. 60.	Draco.	43.
Dereham.	286.	Dzuides	72.
Destruction of Hier.	102.	Dzulla	99.
Desiderius	126.	Dzulus	78. 79. 87. 93.
Desiderius Lombard.	170.	Dudley	271.
171.		Duffus	188.
Diconus.	77.	Dullus	67.
		Dulcane	191.
		Dulenus	236.
		Dultrandus	36.
		Duns	

The table.

Dunbares 34.
 Duncane 201.
 Dunianus 110.
 Dunwallo 49.
 Duke of Bedford 256.
 Duke of York 291. 263.
 Duke of Somerset. 262.
 Duke of Suffolk 177. 284.
 Duke of Albanie 277.
 Duke of Brunswike 279.
 Duke of Bauarie 280.
 Duke of Northf. 282. 284.

290.
 Duke of Buckyngham. 276
 Dunmuir first ordeined in
 Rome, the pere of the world
 3654.

Dinasties 22.
 Dinastia 31.
 Dyndimus 33.
 Dyrhachum buylded. 43.
 wonne from the Venetians
 by the Turkes 270. besiged
 of Peter Emperour of Co
 stantinople. 217.

F Arthe 10.
 Earthquake. 56. 87.
 105. 106. 110. 125.
 126. 128. 132. 149.
 150. 263. 271. 281.

Faulfricus 159.
 Ethoniles 104.
 Ebozine 162. 163.
 Ebzankz 34.
 Echert 195.
 Echireus 25.
 Edaiar 81. 83.
 Edessa taken of the Turkes.
 207.

Edine 108.
 Edseide 162.
 Edgare. 186. 187. 188. 202.
 Edinbozoug. 34.
 Edissa 38.
 Edmund. 178. 185. 186. 192.

Edmund erle of Kent. 236.
 Edmund Holland 251.
 Edmund de la Poole. 270.
 Eoricus 192.
 Edward be fore the conquest.
 181. 182. 183. 188. 189.
 194. 196.

Edward the first after the
 conq. 226. 227. 228. 229.
 230. 232.

Edward the. ii. 232. 233. 234
 235.

Edward the. iii. 235. 236.
 237. 238. 229. 240. 241.
 242. 243. 244. 245.

Edward the. iii. 264. 265.
 266. 267.

Edward the. v. 267.

Edward the. vi. 291.

Edward de la Bruce 234.

Edward Ballol. 236. 237.
 238. 240.

Edward Prince. 239. 241.
 243. 265. 284.

Edward of Mountney. 220.

Edward erle of March. 263.
 264.

Edward of Marwike. 270.

Edward Howard 273.

Edward Dornynge 272.

Edward Peuel 284.

Edward duke of Sommerf.
 291.

Edward Seimour. 289. 290.
 291.

Edwyne. 157. 158. 159. 156.
 187.

Eferem 107.

Egbert. 170. 172. 173.

Egfrede 189. 190. 191.

Egmon 37.

Egesippus 102.

Egerton 285.

Egidius 242.

Eglus 140.

Egnarius. 276.

Egip

The table.

Egiptus S'ulus	34.	Invaded by Danes.	172.
Ehud	28.	174. 177. 189. 190. 1011	
Elena taken of Lacede.	54.	quered by Hogmand.	167.
Ela the 4. kyng of Ire.	35.	Enochid	44.
Ela ouerthrowen with earth		Enoch the cutce	7.
quake.	101.	Enoch	.
Elanus	613.	Enos	7.
Elbiede	79. 186.	Epaminondas	58.
Elbolus	79.	Epaphus	26.
Eleazarus	93. 109.	Ephorus a magist. in Aced.	
Eleazar	26. 35. 66. 67.	first ordeined	36.
Electra	23.	Ephren	225.
Electours of Germany fpylle		Epidauros builded	24.
ordeined by Greg.	190.	Epiphenius.	132.
Eleoneus	67.	Eporcus	27.
Elenour	210.	Erasmus	272.
Elinour Cobban	166.	Erumbert	160.
Elephantus first lene in Rom		Etichonius	26. 27.
66.		Erit stones	26.
Eleutherius	110. 157.	Eritopis	40.
Elfleda	182. 183.	Erippidas	55.
Elfricus	190.	Ere of Cambridg.	246.
Elfride	188.	Ere of Warwike.	293. 264.
Elgina	184.	265. 270. 292.	
Elialib	51.	Ere of Surrey.	270. 274.
Elidicus	40.	275. 276. 277. 291.	
Elidurus	95. 67.	Ere of Eildare	275.
Elisabeth	247. 270. 182.	Ere of Hertford.	289. 290.
Elisabeth of Polons	271.	291.	
Elisabeth Barton	282.	Eroge.	38.
Ehud	771.	Elais	39.
Ella	177.	Elau	18. 19.
Elphegus	190.	Eslepiodes	113.
Emanuel	207. 208.	Eloras	50.
Emanuel emp.	152.	Elm pheus	146.
Emanuel Chycolozas.	150.	Elci	75.
Emerianus	68.	Elalus	38.
Emericus	214.	Ethelard	167.
Emma	190. 193. 194.	Ethelburga	173.
Emehocles	51.	Ethelbert.	152. 154. 158. 178.
Empire of Rome decayed.	133.	Etheldede.	170. 178. 189.
Empton	272.	190. 192.	
Emecus	187.	Ethelfride	153.
Englande diuyded in tenen		Ethelwaldus	177.
kyngedomes.	158. brought	Ethelwolpys	158.
into one Monarchie.	173.	Ethelstane	184. 185.
		Ethos	

The table.

Ethodius.	109.	114.	Ezechias.	39.	40.
Ethias.		179.	Ezechias.		43.
Eua.		6.			
Euander.		29.			
Euarestus.		105.			
Euaz.		101.			
Eucherius.		133.			
Eudamus.		36.			
Eudo.		181.			
Eudocia.	137.	197.			
Eudoxia.	113.	141.			
Eudon.	166.	167.			
Eudorus.		128.			
Euerhard.		186.			
Eugenius Scot	128.	138.			
Eugenius the. iiii. Scot.		154.			
Eugenius the. v. Scot.		163.			
Eugenius the. vi. Scot.		164.			
Eugenius the. vii. Scot.		164.			
Eugenius the. viii. Scot.		170.			
Eugenius emp.		131.			
Eugenius the i. bps. of Rome		161.			
Eugenius the. ii. bps. the pere					
of the worlde.		8882.			
Eugenius the. iii. bps. the pere					
of the world.		3106.			
Eugenius the. iiii. bps. fol.		227.			
		259.			260.
Eulmerodok.		44.			
Eumenes.	61	68.			
	71.	107.			
Eudius.		101.			
Eupales.		34.			
Euripilus.		30.			
Euristhenus.		28.			32.
Eutops.		44.			
Eusebius.		119.			
Eusebius of Const.		125.			
Eustathius.		123.			124.
Eustice.	194.	201.			206.
Eustace bish.		268.			
Eutices.		138.			
Eutius.		221.			
Expedition of the French me					
into Eng.		248.			

The table.

[illegible]

The table.

Galtee	170.	Gobazes	150.
Gentius	73.	Godfrey. 180. 191. 196. 197.	
Geffrey Plantagenet	205.	201.	
206. 108.		Godfrey of Anicourt	239.
Geffrey Lome	279.	Godwine	103. 194. 195
George Doggeobzatus.	261.	Gog	13.
263.		Gollanda	150.
Georgius Castriotus	263.	Gomoz destroyed	17.
George of Clarence	266.	Gondamiers	155.
George Villa	267.	Gargolis	31.
George of Bavarie	271.	Gozbodug	46.
George Bullepe	283.	Gozdian	115. 116.
Germaine Gardiner	289.	Gozdenius	231.
George Larewe	291.	Gozmo	169.
Gerfa	198. 207.	Gozram	246.
Gelasius the. ii.	204.	Golhaues fight	256.
Gellius	81. 197.	Gollene	180.
Gelon	49.	Golaris	98.
Gellia	97.	Golles 104. 124. 130. 132. 137	
Genserius 136 137. 140. 141		Gracius	72. 76. 77.
Genucius	67.	Gramaus	18.
Gerdon	105.	Gratian emp. 128. 129. 130.	
Germaine	140.	Gratian of Bric.	131.
Germanus. 113. 147. 149 151		Gratian	208.
155.		Gratus	93. 110.
Germanicus Caesar. 92. 93.		Gregorie Nazianzen	128.
Gerlon	149.	Gregorius Magnus	154.
Geruntius	71. 133.	Gregorie the. i. bil. of R. 166.	
Geta	113.	168.	
Getulus	13.	Gregorie the. iii. bil.	176.
Gibelines. 220. 222. 223. 226.		Gregorie the. v. bil.	190.
231. 234.		Gregorie the. vi.	194.
Gilbert	212.	Gregorie the. vii.	198. 199.
Gilch. 210. 212.		Gregorie the. viii. bil.	213.
Gildas	148.	Gregorie the ix. bil.	216.
Gilbert de Clare.	225.	Gregorie the. x. bil.	225.
Gileby Ros	218.	Gregorie the. xi. bil.	244.
Gilmer	146.	245.	
Gilloham	171.	Gregorie the. xii.	252. 253.
Gillus	80.	Gregour of Scot	179.
Ginoran	221.	Grenchilde	35.
Gilibert	185.	Gripa	146.
Glarian	280.	Grey friers	305. 218.
Glastenburis	63.	Griffin	196.
Glauias	63.	Grime	191.
Gualtus	130.	Grinoald	162.
		Gul.	

The table.

Grineus	280.
Groffon	221.
Gryphon	168. 169. 170.
Griphus	76. 78.
Gualter of Hungary	238.
Gumerius	259.
Gualter of Athens	239.
Gendolepne	32. 34.
Guephes	220. 222. 223. 226.
	231. 234.
Gunderius	92.
Guthellius	59.
Guscarde de Angle	244.
Gultherus	217.
Gandabald	142.
Gundelaluc	185.
Gunterus	215.
Gandebert	161.
Guanes incanted	246.
Guthianus	152. 153.
Gurguntus	58.
Gurgenes	145.
Gurgonius	77.
Gurgustius	40.
Gurmundus	153.
Guscaldus	252.
Gato. Sonatus	227.
Gudo	210. 211.
Gudo of hier.	213.
Gupe of Lefpigham	214.
Gupe of Florence	223.
Gupe of Flauaders	230.
Guplamour	143.
Gudes pelded	241.
Goges	21.
Gildo	131. 132.
Gollaspis	33.
Gysalphus	157. 194.
H	
Aliaz	204.
Alpaben Regel.	215.
Hammon	14.
Hamillas	49.
Hamo	197.
Hananan	35.
Hano	57. 67. 70.

Harbikintus	191.
Harbon	23.
Harman	285.
Harold.	174. 175. 185. 193.
	196.
Harpagus	44.
Halsruball	74.
Heber	11.
Hebert	159.
Hecrog	31.
Helmode	289.
Hela	35.
Helchias	43.
Helchelaite	116.
Helena	30.
Helene	25.
Helena of Billa	120. 122. 123.
Helena of Scruta	206.
Helias	32. 35. 36.
Heliscus	36. 37.
Helius	81.
Hellogabalus	114.
Heliodorus	72.
Hella	142.
Hellistens	146.
Helmelchildis	152.
Hemungus	174.
Hengist	139. 141.
Henrie the first of Eng.	202.
	203. 204. 205.
Henrie the. ii. of Engl.	209.
	210. 211. 212. 213.
Henrie the. iii. of Eng.	217. 218.
	219. 220. 221. 222.
Henrie the. iii. of Eng.	251.
	252. 253.
Henrie the. v. 253. 254. 255.	
Henrie the. vi. 256. 257. 258.	
	259. 260. 261. 262. 263.
	264. 265.
Henrie the. vii. of Eng.	268. 269.
	270.
Henrie the. viii. 271. 272. 273.	
	et.
Henrie the first emp.	183. 184.
	185.

The table.

Henric the. ii. emp.	191. 193.	Herode Agrippas brother.	
Henric the. iii. emp.	193. 194.	97. 98.	
195.		Herode	118.
Henric the. iiii. emp.	195. 196	Herodia was famous the reie	
197. 198. 199.		of the world.	4141.
Henric the. v. emp.	203.	Heros	133.
Henric the. vi. emp.	214.	Heruli	142.
Henric the. vii. emp.	232. 233.	Herug	108.
Henric the. i. Hsp.	221.	Hesperus	22.
Henric the. ii. Hsp.	243. 244.	Helyodus	37.
Henric the. iii. Hsp.	248.	Hester.	50. 51.
Henric the. iiii. Hsp.	265.	Hiberius	16.
Henric	186.	Hicbas	80.
Henric of Burg.	191.	Hiero	96. 67.
Henric of France	192. 193.	Hieremias	42.
Henric of Noz.	218.	Hieronimus of Prage	154.
Henric of Flaun. em. of Con		Hieronimus Sauonatale.	
stantinople	216.	268.	
Henricus de Gaudau	231.	Hicrom	285.
Henric of Boheme	232.	Hieroboam	37.
Henric Spencer	247.	Hierom the doctor	130.
Henric Wolingbroke	250.	Hierusalem taken. 43. of 19	
Henric Percie	252.	leme. 63. of Antiochus. 73.	
Henric Chicheley	260.	of Pomp. 81. by Herod. 86.	
Henric erle of Richmond.	267	of the Turkes. 190. of Pces	
Heracles	125.	siene. 157. repaired by Ana	
Heracianus. 134. 156. 158.		rip. 85. besieged of Cyrus.	
160.		101. taken 102. net at Bas	
Heracius emp. 157. 159. 160.		lie. 104. besieged of Sarsa	
Heracius of Hier	213.	sine. 160. recovered of the	
Heratus	22.	siene. 201. taken by Salas	
Hercules Libius	21. 22.	dine	213.
Hercules Nlemannus	23.	Higius	108.
Hercules Delius	26.	Hilodjand	169.
Hercules	29. 30.	Hioh	24.
Herculeus	222.	Hippacta	134.
Herdonius	50.	Hippatinus	60.
Herminon	18.	Hippomenes	40.
Herennianus	118.	Hirantus. 72. 76. 77. 78. 80.	
Herinnus	86.	81. 86.	
Hermogenes	125.	Hirous	86.
Herode Antipatres son	85.	Huene	172. 173.
Herode. xii. hyng of Iemes.		Huthaus	101.
86. 87. 88.		Hilpalus	21.
Herode Antipas ruler of Ga		Hilpaines hyngdome began.	
leg.	92.	182.	
		Hilpaine subdued by S. uplo.	

The table.

69. Forlaken the Rom. 139
 vexed by Visigothes. 140.
 spoiled of Childbert. 147.
 subdued of Saracens. 165.
 Histories 1.
 Hittites 41.
 Honoria Can. 218.
 Holofernes 47.
 Homere 36. 41.
 Honoratius 178.
 Honoria 139.
 Honorius. 141.
 Honorius. 131. 132. 133. 134.
 135.
 Honorius the. i. b. p. of R. 158.
 Honorius the. ii. b. p. 205.
 Honorius the. iii. b. p. 217.
 Honorius the. iii. b. p. 226.
 Honorius the. v. b. p. 228.
 Horace 87.
 Horatius Cordes 48.
 Hormisdas. 144. 154.
 Hortentius 88.
 Hosey. 284.
 Hoses 39.
 Hospitallers 232.
 Hostilius. 71.
 Hubba 179.
 Hugh kyng of Fe 190.
 Hugo or Hugh of Italy. 184.
 185. 186.
 Hugh le graund. 186. 201.
 Hugh Capet 190.
 Hugh le Spence. 224. 234.
 235.
 Hugh Gressyngham 129.
 Hugo Paris 204.
 Hugo de Mendosa. 279.
 Hugutio 234. 235.
 Hilderike 275.
 Hilditch 226.
 Humfrey Moz. 193.
 Humfrey duke of Glouc. 261.
 Humfrey Diastoyte 268.
 Hungar 179.
 Hungaries kyng began. 190.

invaded by Saracens. 218.
 by Solymen. 278. named.
 138.
 Hungerford 264.
 Hunibris 171.
 Hunnes invaded Hungary.
 132. were vanquished. 174.
 Hunnes 129. 132. 137.
 Hurdibias 36.
 Hulle 254.
 Huten 276.
 Hydromantis 40.
 Hyemphall 77.
 Hypodamias 28.
 Hypermetra 27.
 Hyppatius 146.
 Hyppitas 47.
 Hyppatus. 47.
I
 Icke Lade 261.
 Icker Brewe 246.
 Icker Sheparde. 246.
 Iacius 25.
 Jacob 18. 19. 22.
 Jacobus Faber 271.
 Jadan 35.
 Jaddus 56. 61.
 Jago 45.
 Jahl 27.
 Jaler 36.
 James apost. 95. 97.
 James the Just. 99.
 James of Briss. 220. 222. 230.
 James Stewart 252. 256.
 James of Scot. 256. 269.
 270. 284.
 James Picenninus 262.
 James of Cyprus 265.
 Jane Rochford 286.
 Jane Selmour 283.
 Jannus 78.
 Janus temple Chute. 68. by
 Quanius. 87. the third time
 88.
 Janus 12. 14. 15.
 Japhet 2. 11.
 Jaques

The table.

Jaques Dartuall	239.	Innocent the first bish of R.	the pce of the world. 4394.
Jared	7. 8.	Innocent the. ii. bish. fol. 205.	
Jalon	72.	Innocent the. iii. 214. 216.	
Jda	148.	Innocent the. iiii. 211.	
Jdo	35.	Innocent the. v. 216.	
Jehonias	43.	Innocent the. vi. 241.	
Jectan	11.	Innocent the. vii. 252.	
Jehiel	35.	Innocent the. viii. 267.	
Jehoiachas	36.	Insurrection	257.
Jehozam	36.	Jo	25.
Jehu	35. 36.	Joahas	35.
Jaroham	35.	Joachas	42.
Jepre	31.	Joachim de Brandeburg. 272	
Jefabell	35. 36.	Joachim Magnus 209.	
Jescha	15.	Joachim 42. 43. 44.	
Jelus	49. 72. 87.	Joanne of Sicilie or Naples	240. 254. 256. 257.
Jelus & his bozne. 89. dispu		Joanne of Fraunce	257.
ted. 90. suffered.	94.	Joas	36. 37.
Jetro	24.	Job	24.
Jew	163. 167.	Joel	41.
Jewes brought in captiuitee.		Johannes	56.
43. driven out of Alexand.		Johannes Anachorites	131.
114. out of Englands. 218.		Johannes rebel of Rom. 135.	
costrained to baptism 159.		Johannes Czarapos. 166.	
Ignatius	104. 106.	Johannes Mesue	206.
Ilades found	269.	Johannes de Columna. 117.	
Idericus	145.	Johannes de Linertis. 243.	
Idouadus	148.	Johannes Birus	247.
Ile of wight		Johannes de sacro busto. 249.	
Imomaline	215.	Johannes Deleog? 258. 259.	
Ilus	28.	Johannes Viteliscus	258.
Illyrium wasted. 60. of Hung.		Johannes de Amala	259.
137. of Ostrogothes. 141. of		Johannes Huniades	260.
Sclauines 149. 156. of Turk		Johannes Fantius	262.
147. subdued by Anicius. 73		Johannes de Monte Regio	296.
Images burned. 197. set up		John apostle	125.
by a counsell	168.	John Baptist	94.
Inaceus	18. 29.	John bish. of Hier.	105.
Inclination of the Romane		John the first bish. of R. 145	
empyre	133.	John the. ii.	151.
Indulph	187.	John the. iiii.	160.
Inger	185.	John the. v.	163.
Ingentas	118.	John the. vi.	163.
Ingelus	194.	John	
Inghenon	17.		
Inguineus	92.		

The table.

John the. vii.	177. 179.	John P. tr. of Con.	154. 155
John the. viii. the pere of the world	4834.	John huse	254.
John the. ix.	fol. 181.	John. ii. of Spaine	254.
John the tenth the pere of the world	4870.	John Willars	255.
John the. xi.	184.	John of Bedford	258.
John the. xii.	187.	John of Burgoins	255.
John the. xiii. the pere of the world. 4945. iii. monethes.		John Mortimer	256.
John the. xiv. & John. xvi. ibid.		John of Angew	263.
John the. xv.	fol. 190.	John wallop	274.
John the. xvi. the pere of the world. 4945. 4. monethes, & John the 19. five peres.		John alexo	282.
John the. xvii. the pere of the world	4921.	John bis. of Rochester.	283.
John the. xxi.	fol. 226.	John do	36.
John the. xxii.	234. 235.	Jon	28.
John the. xxiii.	253.	Jones	28.
John p. rnost of Africk.	148.	Jonathas	74. 75. 76.
John emp. of Const.	188.	Jonathan	96.
John king of Eng.	215. 216. 217.	Jonas	37.
John king of Hier.	218.	Joram	36.
John king of Scot.	249.	Josaphat	35. 36.
John Prochcius	227.	Josine	74.
John Bailot	228. 229.	Joseph	20. 21. 22.
John k. of Bohemie.	233. 237.	Josephus	71. 101. 102.
John Canner	333.	Joseph Calphas	93.
John of heinault	235.	Josephus Arles	68.
John of Host	238. 243. 244.	Josephus son Canas	97.
John of Britaine	238.	Joseph by Ch. of hier.	107.
John of Normandie	239.	Josias	42.
John k. of F.	240. 244. 247.	Josua	27.
John of Millaine	240.	Josham	38.
John of Lanc.	241. 244. 247.	Jouius	133. 280.
John hauruth	243.	Ireland subdued 211. rebelled 216. was invaded of Scot.	233
John Galeati ⁹ of Hier.	247.	Ireneus	110. 112.
John galeatus of Mil.	255.	Isaac patriarche	18.
John of Portugale	247.	Isaac of Isaacus	213. 215. 265
John of Beverley	165.	Isaac of Italy	157.
John of Cumae	249.	Isabell of Port.	278.
John holland	250.	Isabel quene	235.
John Oldcastle	254.	Isacius Angelus emp. Const	213. 215.
John Bieu	219.	Isacius Comenus emp. of Constantinople.	195. 196.
		Iocrates	57.
		Iagenus	48.
		Iaites	94.
		Iobolash	33.

The table.

Juliane	276.
Julis	16.
Julmael	17.
Julmael Dophle	271.
Julraell	19.
Julraells kingdome began.	34.
Julraells inhabited first.	12. 132. of con-
stante. 161. of Saracens. 176	
of Hungare. 182. 185. inua-	
ded of Lombardes.	151.
Julalus	23.
Julall	63.
Julba	85. 91.
Julball	7. 12. 14.
Julbalda	17.
Juldas	55. 58.
Juldas Machabens.	73. 74.
Juldas Mathathias	76.
Juldas Galileus	90.
Juldas Gaulonites	90.
Juldas bis. of Hier.	107.
Juldith	47.
Juldith of Fran.	176.
Julguth	77. 78.
Julian emp.	112.
Julianus bis. of Hier.	106.
Julian martyr the pere of the	
worlde	42. 12.
Julian cardinall	267.
Julianus Caesar. 126. emp.	
and apostata.	127.
Julius	31.
Julius Caesar. 79. 82. 83. 84	
85.	
Julius Frontinus	103.
Julius Severus	107.
Julius the. ii. bis. of Rōe. 271	
272.	
Julius Agricola	
Julius Brutus	48. 62.
Julius Viscus	91.
June	16.
Jupiter	15.
Jupiter Verus	14.
Jultes	251.

Justinian emp. 145. 146. 147	
Justinian the. ii. em. 163. 164	
165.	
Justinus philol.	108.
Justine martyr	110.
Justinus emp.	144. 145.
Justinus the. ii. emp. 151. 152.	
Justus capitaine	150.
Justus bis.	106. 107.
Justus Jonas	280.
Juvenale	104.
Juvenius	74.
Juvenius pteft	124.
Juvian emp.	127.
Julon.	34.

K	Katherine of Fran. 255	
	Katherine Dowager.	
	282. 283.	
	Katherine Hawerde.	
	285. 286.	
Katherine Latimer	288.	
Kedwoldus	158.	
Kenewinus	162.	
Kenneth	189. 176.	
Kenneth Kalas	155.	
Kenolphus	169. 172.	
Kenwalcus	160. 161.	
Kimerus	61.	
Kingilus	158.	
Kingolphus	157. 159.	
Kimhi	214.	
Kinimachus	44.	
Kinnantill	152.	
Knights of the Rhodes.	285.	
Kiptim.	230.	

L	Laban.	39.
	Labas Medra.	46.
	Labores	34.
	Labienus	81.
Labyrinth builded	27.	
Lacelles	291.	
Lacedemonia builded	22.	
Lacedemonians kingdome be-		
gan. 32. ended	39.	
Lacede		

The table.

Academion	26.	Alensglus	155.
Archares	81.	Aena	47.
Arctantius Firmianus	123.	Anthichides	49.
Adilaus of Hung.	199.	Antonyne	160.
Adilaus the.iii.	215.	Antulus	71. 81.
Adilaus the.iii.	226. 228.	Leo the first bysh of R.	137.
Adilaus of Naples	251.		139. 140.
253.		Leo the.ii.	162.
Adilaus of Hungarie and		Leo the.iii.	173.
Boheme. 259. 260. 263.		Leo the.iii. the pere of the	
Laelus	113.	world	4807.
Lago	43.	Leo the. v. the pere of the	
Lamachus	53.	world	4866.
Lambert	268.	Leo the.vi.	fol. 184.
Lamech	7. 8.	Leo the.vii.	185. 186.
Lampares	28.	Leo the.viii.	194.
Lampeto	30.	Leo the.ix.	194. 195.
Lampides	28.	Leo the.x.	273. 274. 276.
Lampertus de ramponibus.	234.	Leo emp of Const.	140. 141.
Lampacus	42.	Leo Eclaurus emp.	166. 167.
Lanfranke	198.	Leo a Senatour made emp.	
Lanahbert	182.	of Constantinople	164.
Laobicea ouerthrowen.	100.	Leo the.iii. emp.	172.
taken by Cassius.	86.	Leo the.v. em. of Const.	175.
Laomedon.	27. 29.	Leo son of Basile emp.	180.
Laostenes	34.		181.
Lapithes	29.	Lochrates	41.
Lapis	27.	Leomedon	63.
Larke	289.	Leonard Gray	285.
Latinus	30. 31.	Leonard Halgraue.	277.
Latinus Silulus	32.	Leonides	49. 113.
Latine tongue inuented.	29.	Leonistae	217.
corrected	31.	Leontigildus	151. 152. 153.
Latines kingdom began	31.	Leopald	231.
Latines warre	42. 61.	Leoschenes	62.
Lavinium	31.	Leostratus	42. 49.
Laudze.	153.	Lepidus	80. 86.
Laudzike	279.	Lerudeus	152.
Laurence Dykel	227.	Lesbius	42.
Lazarus of Syria	244.	Lesbus	24.
Leachus	63.	Lescon	42.
Leil	36.	Lestrizon	21.
Lelestes	37.	Leucippus	20.
Leie	37.	Leu bysh.	107.
Leina	71.	Leuinus	66.
		Leuine	223. 227.
			228.

The table.

Lewis the son of Charles great
 emp and k. of Fr. 174. 175.
 176. 179
 Lewis the second, son of Lo:
 thaire. emp. 178
 Lewis stamater emp and k.
 of Fr. 180.
 Lewis the. iii. son of Arnolph.
 emp. 182.
 Lewis the. 4. of Bawerie emp
 233. 234. 235. 236. 238. 239.
 Lewis King of German. 377
 178. 179.
 Lewis son of Lewis stamater
 k. of Fr. 180.
 Lewis the vii. son of Charles
 emp. k. of Fr. 184. 185.
 Lewis the viii. of Fran. 190.
 Lewis the great k. of Fr. 203
 Lewis the younger after som.
 the. viii. of Fr. 206. 207.
 208. 209.
 Lewis father to Saint Le:
 wes. 200. 209. 191.
 Lewis the. 9. after som the. 2
 of Fran. 216. 221. 222. 225.
 Lewis the. xi. son of Phillip
 le beau. 233.
 Lewis the. xii. after som the.
 xi. 263. 264. 265. 267.
 Lewis the. xiii. after som. xii.
 270. 271. 272. 274.
 Lewis of Han. 236. 247.
 Lewis of Hung. 240. 246.
 Lewis of Hung and Boheme
 274. 276. 278.
 Lewis Gonzaga. 242.
 Lewis of Angew. 246. 256.
 Lewis of Dile. 252.
 Lewis Dolphine. 258. 262.
 Lewis Patriark of Aquila.
 226.
 Libanius Rhet. 127.
 Lifer pater. 27.
 Lilius. 58. 72.
 Lilius Crassus. 77.

Licinius Musinus. 100
 Licinius emp. 122. 123. 124.
 Ligustia. 68.
 Lincus. 27.
 Linus bis. 101.
 Litorius. 137.
 Lique. 88.
 Lilius Dzusuf. 78.
 Locrine. 32.
 Lorus. 77.
 Lodike. 96. 102.
 Lollian. 118.
 London funded. 32.
 Longho. 20.
 Longinus. 151.
 Lorraine spoiled of Hung. 183
 Lord Wshers. 283.
 Lozde Lile. 290. 291.
 Loth. 15. 18.
 Lothaire the son of Clodow
 144. 147. 149. 150.
 Lothaire the. 2. king of Lo:
 sons. 157.
 Lothaire son of Lewis the
 mild. 175. 176. 177. 178.
 Lothaire nephew to Charles
 simple. 187. 189.
 Lothaire emp. 205. 206.
 Lothaire of kent. 163.
 Luane. 93. 100.
 Luc. Vitellius. 95.
 Lucius Tarquinius. 46.
 Lu. Apponius. 93.
 Lu. Pomponius. 98.
 Lu. Bassus. 102.
 Lu. Antonius. 105.
 Lu. Tarquinius. 45.
 Lu. Quictus. 106.
 Lu. Cletus. 109.
 Lucilla. 111.
 Lucius bis. 177. 207. 213.
 Lucius Hiberus. 147.
 Luchinus. 238.
 Luctak. 105.
 Luctatus. 68.
 Lucullus. 80. 81.
 Lucas

The table.

Lucus. 12.
 Luc. 110. 151.
 Lud. 81.
 Luo Hardibzss. 36.
 Ludgate. 181.
 Lu wallue. 187.
 Ludoncus Pontanus. 263.
 Lugdus. 23.
 Lupibzand. 164. 165. 167.
 168.
 Lura. 154.
 Lumbardes enter Italie. 151.
 Lupus. 162.
 Luus. 26.
 Lurber. 280.
 Lurbozns. 281.
 Lya. 19.
 Lycopedes. 30.
 Lyrurgus. 21. 26.
 Lyrba. 151.
 Lyncolne shire rebellion. 28.
 Lysba. 31.
 Lysander. 154. 55.
 Lysas. 73.
 Lysmachus builded. 64. ouer:
 thowen. 55.
 Lysmachus. 50. 63. 65. 66.
 Lysdolphus. 186.
Macedons kingdom be:
 gan. 38. ended 73.
 Macedonius. 125. 127.
 130.
 Macedon one of Ostris. 20.
 Macrianus. 214.
 Madan. 313. 34.
 Magdalen college in Ox. 161.
 Magneus. 125. 126.
 Magus of Dorwar. 193. 194.
 Magus of Denmark. 24.
 Magog. 13.
 Mago. 76.
 Mahardates. 98.
 Mahomet. 158. 250. 51.
 Mahomet son of Amurates.
 261. 262. 263. 265. 266. 297.
 298.
 299.

Mahedowald. 193.
 Mahbeth. 193. 194.
 Mahalchel. 7. 8.
 Mahonianus emp. 140.
 Mahatesta. 250.
 Mahachias. 46.
 Mahago. 149.
 Mahdwine. 191.
 Mahcoline. 186. 191. 195. 197.
 201.
 Mahcoline the mayden. 229.
 Mahichus. 86.
 Mahot Tages. 18.
 Mahamelus. 24.
 Mahmercus Temelius. 53.
 Mahanah. 37. 38.
 Mahanasses. 62. 68.
 Mahanardus. 275.
 Mahanakeus. 23.
 Mahancinus. 76.
 Mahandanes. 44.
 Mahanes. 119.
 Mahania. 129.
 Mahaniches. 119.
 Mahilius. 34. 56. 57. 59. 72.
 Mahilius Torquatus. 61.
 Mahinfrede. 222. 223. 224.
 Mahango Can. 222.
 Mahannus. 16.
 Mahinga. 43.
 Mahinil. 285.
 Mahirathus. 124.
 Mahiratus. 125.
 Mahierall. 104.
 Mahicellus. 67. 76.
 Mahirion here the pere of the
 worlde. 4103.
 Maharis. 59.
 Mahircoman. 109.
 Mahir. Cullius Ciceron. 82.
 Mahir. Crassus. 83.
 Mahir. Antonius. 107.
 Mahir. Alur. Anton. 109. 116.
 Mahircus bis. 107.
 Mahircus emp. 116.
 Mahircus rebell. 118.
 D. II. Mahircus.

The table.

Maccusius bish	146.	Masmissa	71. 74.
Mardocheus	51.	Masrazell	132.
Mardonius	48. 49.	Mallot Mahum	66.
Marke Euang	100.	Mallins Scalager.	237. 238.
Marke Smeton	283.	Malthathias Silos	68. 73.
Margaret queene	263. 264.	Malthathias	46.
Margarer.	267. 268. 299.	Malthias	97.
272.		Malthew byl	274.
Margarete of Savoye.	271.	Malthildis of Maude of Ita-	204.
Margaret queene of Scot.	274.	lie.	
Marie the Virgin	88.	Malthias of Hung.	263. 265.
Marie Rose	291.	266. 269.	
Marie of Hung.	247.	Malthusalem	7. 8.
Marie of Burg.	266. 267.	Maude emperesse	203. 205.
Marius	78. 79. 80.	206. 207. 209.	
Marius sonne of Ar. er. Brit		Maurotius	135.
102.		Maurigatus	172.
Marlyne	141.	Mausolus	57.
Marques Dorset	273.	Mauritius	146. 153. 154. 155.
Marques of Exe.	287.	Maxentius	122.
Marques of Suffolke.	261.	Maximilla.	110.
Marmozoes	150.	Maximinus	115. 122.
Marpesia	30.	Maximilian Hercul.	120. 122.
Mars Italus	28.	Maximus emp.	116. 140.
Marsellus	95.	Maximus the Romaine cas-	
Martles	44.	pitaine. 129. of Brit.	130.
Martius	37.	Maximilian of Austria.	262.
Martius	19. 97.	267. emp. 268. 269. 270.	
Martilius Felinus	267.	271. 272.	
Martianus emp.	138. 140.	Maxwell	287. 260.
Martina	160.	Maynus	67.
Martine bish. of Rom.	160.	Meandrus	47.
Martine the. ii. bish	180.	Meades	35.
Martine the. iii. bish	186.	Medidus	39.
Martine the. iii. bish.	227.	Medus	13.
Martine the. v. bish	254.	Megapilus	47.
Martine by M. of Turon.	130.	Meardales	98.
Martine Swart	268.	Melancton	275. 280.
Martine Luthere	275.	Melanthus	38.
Martine of Rosseine	287.	Melchella	242.
Martius	41. 73. 77.	Melcha	15.
Martinus capitaine	150.	Melchisadech	16.
Martine Dipins brother of		Meleagus	66.
Fran.	163.	Melcnasser	231.
Martius Turbo	106.	Meles	40.
Marton College	227.	Melga.	130. 132.
			Melino.

The table.

Melito 110.
 Melitus 154.
 Mellicola 31.
 Memnon. 23. 30. 54. 62.
 Memphis 26.
 Memphisius 34.
 Memmius 49.
 Manasses 40.
 Menander. 62. 63.
 Menander heret. 104. 107.
 Menophis 17.
 Menos 60.
 Mephes 22.
 Mercurius bis 146.
 Mercurius 23.
 Merodach 40.
 Merianus 77.
 Meroneus 118.
 Merres 44.
 Messapius 20.
 Messana 40.
 Messallian 128.
 Messaraphus 262.
 Messalina 98.
 Mesentius 31.
 Messenes warre 36.
 Metalles founde 7.
 Metellane 88.
 Metellus. 68. 75. 77. 78. 79.
 80. 81.
 Metho 222.
 Metius Suffellus 42.
 Mizentius 30.
 Mirena 34.
 Micha 35.
 Michael of Constan. 174. an
 other. 229.
 Michael Walbus of Consta.
 175.
 Michael son of Theophylus
 of Const. 177. 178.
 Michael Paphlagon 193.
 Michael Malaphates 194.
 Michael the elder 195.
 Michael son of Dukas. 198.
 199.

Michael Paleologus. 223. 228
 227. 229.
 Michael Conne. 226.
 Micheas 38. 39.
 Midas 28. 40. 41.
 Miletus 29.
 Millaine taken of Marcell⁹
 69. of Charles. 171. of the
 french men. 274. of Sforza
 261. spoiled of Barton ant
 119. yelded to the gothes.
 147. to Frederike. 220. spy
 led of Frid. Barb. 210. taken
 of Lewis. 270. recovered by
 Charles the v. 276.
 Milo & oaldier 182.
 Miliades 49.
 Minos 29. 30.
 Minolaure 28.
 Minutia 61.
 Minutius Fundanus 107.
 Mnomemolinus 169.
 Milippa 77.
 Mithheus 116.
 Milena 43.
 Mispheutulos 22.
 Mitreus 30.
 Mithridates of Pont 61.
 Mithridates Arfaces of Par
 thia. 69.
 Mithridates of Parth. 75.
 Mithridates of Pont. 77. 79
 80. 81. 82.
 Mithridates of Iberia 95.
 Mithridates of Armenia. 98.
 Misael 44.
 Mincithus 30.
 Moab 18. 36.
 Modestus 10.
 Modoke 229.
 Modon 33.
 Mogallus 105.
 Mogus 16.
 Monica 131.
 Monctarius 278.
 Moncy first coined. 29. first
 made

The table.

made of silver in Rome the
 pere of the world. 3708.
 Marianus, heret. 110.
 Mophs. 61.
 Moplus. 31.
 Mordake. 166.
 Mordred. 147.
 Mordred Steward. 255.
 Mopha. 14.
 Mopha. 38. 68. 219.
 Mophas. 23.
 Mopha. 61.
 Mopha. 13.
 Mopha. 276.
 Mopha de B. 290. 291.
 Mopha. 254. 284.
 Mopha. 21. 23. 25. 26.
 Mopha. 92.
 Mopha. 21. 25. 2.
 Mopha. 85.
 Mopha. 251.
 Mopha. 153.
 Mopha. 194. 149.
 Mopha. 280.
 Mopha. 110.
 Mopha. 7.
 Mopha. 29.
 Mopha. 48.
 Mopha. 290.
 Mopha. 23. 40. 41.
 Mopha. 219.
Nabis. 71.
 Naburhodonosor. 42.
 43. 44.
 Nachor. 14.
 Nabad. 35.
 Nage. 65.
 Nago. 65.
 Nages. 29.
 Naples taken. 147. of Ezech
 157. by Lewis of 3. 249.
 of Philip. 260 of Charles
 259. recovered of Go-
 thes. 148. of Ferdinand. 271.
 of Frenchmen. 271.

Narcissus. 113.
 Nates of Pers. 127.
 Nates eunuke. 145. 149.
 150. 151.
 Natus. 109.
 Natus. 21. 74.
 Natus. 117.
 Natus. 34.
 Natus kingd. began. 187.
 Natus. 296.
 Natus. 38. 41.
 Natus. 40.
 Natus. 43.
 Natus. 43.
 Natus. 17.
 Natus. 55.
 Natus. 127. 131.
 Natus. 51.
 Natus. 11. 12. 13.
 Natus. 35.
 Natus. 54. 56.
 Natus. 61.
 Natus. 125.
 Natus. 118.
 Natus. 141.
 Natus. 7.
 Natus. 99. 100. 101.
 Natus. 104. 105.
 Natus. 31.
 Natus. 115. 117.
 Natus. 245. 270.
 Natus. 73. 116.
 Natus. 62. 116.
 128. taken. 201.
 Natus. 122.
 Natus. 174. 181. 191.
 Natus. 41.
 Natus. 58.
 Natus. 53.
 Natus. 104.
 Natus the 1st. of Rome
 178.
 Natus the 2d. of. 195.
 Natus the 3d. of. 226.
 Natus the 4th. of. 228.
 Natus the 5th. of. 261.
 Natus.

The table.

Nicol Malgraue.	284
Nicolaus de Lira.	234.
Nicolaus de Regio.	237.
Nicolas rebell.	240.
Nicolaus Florent.	249.
Nicolaus Piceaninus.	259.
Nicolas tower.	261.
Nicolas heremite.	268.
Nicolas Carew.	284.
Nicomides. 66. 73. 77. 79. 81	
Nicolstrata.	29.
Niger.	112.
Ninias.	17.
Ninius.	12. 14.
Ninus.	12.
Noe.	7. 8. 10. 17.
Noema.	7.
Noes Floud.	8. 9.
Nozbanus.	80.
Nozadinus.	208.
Nozmandie possessed of Noz- maines. 182. subiecte to Henrie the first. 202. spo- led by Robert of Millaine 205. subiect to Frenchmen. 223.	
Nozris.	283.
Nozhampton felde.	263.
Nozus.	180.
Nouatianus.	117.
Roma Pompilius.	40. 41.
Rumantia.	76
Rumerianus.	120.
Rumi ce.	38.
Rycius Felulanus.	34.
Ryla.	28.

O Badia.	35.
O beleriscus.	175
Oceanus.	13.
Oecham.	234. 239.
Ochozias.	36.
Ocozias called also Othalias.	36.
Oinus.	31.
Oita.	141.

Orcania.	98. 100.
Octavianus Caesar.	89. 87
Octavian bis.	210
Otauius.	73. 80.
Otauius of Bist.	123.
Odo of Burg.	213.
Odenatus.	118.
Odiwaldus.	160.
Odo acer.	142. 143
Odofredus.	215.
Otolampadius.	246. 280.
Ota.	170.
Otedike.	170
Otreus.	159. 167.
Ozigeo.	10.
Olanus.	191. 192
Olbis.	29.
Oida.	43
Olimbias.	143
Olimbiades begin.	39
Olimpius	143
Olimpias	63
Olimpius lieutenant of Fla- lie. 191.	
Olimpus	30
Oluar	142
Omarima	92
Onerer	141
Oule	284. 286
Oretus	191
Orias	63. 68. 72
Oromarcus	90
Oria	26
Ophiusta	20
Ophrageneus	35
Ophratus	35
Opinus	77
Oppian	120
Optatus	271
Oreanes	236. 250
Orades	97
Odonus	175
Odonius li. of Hispanie.	180.
Odonius the li	183
Orestes	31. 47. 54.
Orestes.	

The table.

Dietes emperours capit. 141
 142.
Digital beginning of mā. 3.
Digen 113. 115. 116.
Dima 19.
Dimilda 112.
Diolius 132.
Diontius 280.
Dipewaldus 159.
Diphanes 258.
Diphheus 29.
Dithopolis 23.
Dius 24.
Dibiet 177.
Dicus 28.
Dica 39. 40.
Diochor 35.
Dioythor 37. 38.
Dike 179.
Dioxius 93.
Ditrogothes 132.
Dwald 159. 160.
Dwald bis. of Sates. 199.
Dwie 160. 161.
Dtris 15. 17. 20. 21.
Dranes 48.
Dtho emp. 101.
Dtho emp. of Ger. 185. 186.
 187.
Dtho the ponger emp. 188.
 189.
Dtho the. iii. emp. 189. 190.
Dtho of Thuring 196.
Dtho 215. 216.
Dtho the. v. emp 216. 217.
Dtho of Sic. 195.
Dtho of Buar. 196. 197.
Dtho bis. of Colaine 196.
Dtho bis. of Balon 200.
Dtho Freigenis 208.
Dtho of Burg 230.
Dtho of Hung. 231. 232.
Dthoratus 225. 226.
Dthomannus 231.
Dthontell 27.
Duide 188.

Dalrus 78.
Dwen 245.
Dwen of gleader 251.
Drford vniversitee first be-
gan. 177.
Drpntes 31.
P
Pee 176.
Pachetes 53.
Pacorus 86. 101.
Paganus 170.
Palatus 28.
Palantium 29.
Palinurus 68.
Pallas 15.
Palmer 288.
Palmeri 119.
Pampilone destroy. 177.
Pandion 27. 28.
Panetus 43.
Pannias 28.
Pansa 86.
Pantenus 111.
Pannonie wasted 173.
Partheon 105.
Papacie begunne 155.
Pipias 104. 214.
Piprius Cuesor 63.
Piprius Carbo 78.
Paradise 6.
Park. 282.
Piris 27.
Paris Alexan 30. 31.
Paris subdued by frenche
men. 135. besieged of
mans. 180. subdued by E.
glissh men. 257.
Piracles 60.
Piramidus 15.
Pirithimispates 106.
Pirithia 13.
Pirithians 30.
Pirithacus 175.
Pascal. bis. of Rome 175.
Pascal the. ii. 202. 203.
Piscalis 163. 173.
Pascen.

The table.

Patrentus.	143.	Perdica.	50.52.63.
Patrent.	217.	Perennius.	111.
Pates.	286.	Perkin warbek.	270.271.
Patrick Wepbourne.	251.	Pericles.	39.51.52.
Patricius a monk.	270.	Periander.	43.
Patroclus.	133.	Peridurus.	67.
Paul conque. by Lumberdes		Peripatetic.	59.
152. besieged of Pipin.		Perolas.	141.
170. by Charles. 171. burnt		Peronius.	263.
of Hungarians. 184.		Perpenna.	77.80.
Paul apost. 95. imprisoned.		Perseus of Maced.	72.73.
99. put to death. 101.		Perseus.	27.28.
Paul the. i. bit of Rome. 170		Perrians overcome by Alex	
Paul the. ii.	264.	an. Severus. 115. of Gale	
Paul Fomoxus.	278.	rius. 121. of Belizar. 145. of	
Paulina.	94.	the Rom. and Latians. 149	
Paulinus Saxon.	100.	of Martine Justine. 150.	
Paulinus b. l.	140.	chased by Civerius. 153.	
Paulus Amilius.	72.73.	Perseus.	36.
Paulus Simofalenus.	118.	Perusina.	43.
Paulus Arlinus.	252.	Peruina.	112.
Paulus Gynisus.	257.	Perthes.	161.
Paulus Castrensis.	263.	Pescenius Niger	112.
Pausanias.	55.56.59.	Peter.	101.
Pausanias.	42.	Peter the. ii. kyng of Hung.	
Pausanias.	244.245.248.	193.194.	
249.250.		Peter the heremite.	201.
Paites an other Turk.		Peter b. l. of Rome.	205.
267.		Peter Leo.	208.
Papne tiptot.	228.	Peter emp of Const.	217.
Pezalus.	28.	Peter of Arago.	227.
Delagius heret.	134.137.	Peter Spalding.	233.
Delagius of Sy.	165.167.	Peter Alipape.	236.
Delicene.	276.	Peter the first of Spain.	
Delafus.	31.	242.243.	
Deloponeus warre.	38.	Peter Embacart of Pile.	
Deloponeus kingdome be-		249.	
gan. 14. named Megilea.		Petrarcha.	238.
ibid. subiecte to the Turk.		Petrus.	185.
260.		Petroneus.	96.
Delops.	28.	Petrus Comestor.	208.
Demetrius.	30.	Petrus Longobardus mar-	
Demetellus.	80.	ster of the senten.	208.
Demetrius.	143.	Petrus Blascensis.	209.
Demetri.	158.159.160.161	Petrus de uenise.	209.
Demetri.	40.58.	Petrus Hispani.	223.
		Petrus	

The table.

Petrus Bembug.	271.	229.231.232.	
Petubastes.	37.	Philip the. v. surnamed Long	
Petullus.	103	234.	
Petus.	190	Philip of Maloys k. of fr.	
Peuingerus.	276.	236. 237. 238.	
Phaeton.	18.	Philip brother of Henrie emp	
Phacca.	39	215. 216.	
Phylla.	168.	Philip of Burg.	244. 271
Phalaris.	42.	Philip quene of Englande.	
Phalech.	11	244.	
Phailus.	60	Philip of Millaine.	255. 256
Phantas.	74.	257. 259. 261.	
Phasca.	38.	Philiperle Palat.	271. 280.
Phaoxtes.	42	Philip of Castile.	271.
Pharnabazus.	54. 56.	Philip Melancton.	276.
Phariseis.	76. 80.	Philippus bis. of Hre.	106.
Pharnases.	81.	Philippicus. 165. emperor.	
Phaselus.	86.	166.	
Phazozinus.	107	Philo	95.
Pharamund.	134.	Philopemenes.	71. 72
Pharao.	25	Philotas	93.
Phelastus.	38.	Philomelus.	60
Pheredus.	37.	Philocrates.	56.
Phemonoe.	28.	Phocas Sylus.	37.
Phestus.	30.	Phocas	157.
Philadelphus.	263	Phaeniz	27.
Phileni.	56.	Phozbas.	24. 35.
Philip the vt. kyng of Maced.		Phozoneus.	20.
42.		Phormio.	53.
Philip father of Alexander.		Photinus.	126
56. 60. 61.		Phraates.	92. 95.
Phillip Aridenis.	63.	Phoilla.	170. 180.
Philip the. xxxvii. k. of Maced		Phulbelochus	37
69. 70. 71.		Phulastat	39.
Philip of Syria.	73.	Phydon	38.
Philip.	74	Phylcon	77. 79.
Philip of Jude.	92	Pichtes.	62. 98. 99.
Philip apost.	95.	Picentines warre.	67.
Philip emp.	116	Picua Merandula.	267
Philip the first of fr.	196.	274.	
Philip Augst son of Lewes		Piers Morgan	273.
of fr. 212. 213. 214. 215.		Piers of Gaulton	233.
216.		Pigins	271
Philip son of S. Lewes of		Pilat.	93. 95
Fraunce. 225. 227.		Pinarus.	72
Philip the sayre of fr. 228.		Pipin.	164. 165.
			31

The table.

Pipin son of Charles Martel. 168. 169. 170. 171.	Pompon. Strabo. 79.
Pipin kyng of Italie. 174.	Pomp. Lælius. 267.
Pipin kyng of Guian. 175	Pontanus. 293. 270.
Pirkheimerus. 276	Pontanus. 115.
Piscanes ouercom. 222. of the Genow 227. obteyned libertee. 236. subdued to Venice. 272.	Pontius. 65.
Piscatus. 246	Poole. 285.
Pisistratus. 46.	Popilius. 60. 72. 73
Pismiers fought. 259	Poppa. 110.
Pittacus. 44	Poppus Sabinus. 94.
Plus the first bishop of Rheims the yere of the worlde. 4105.	Pozrec. 48. 45.
Plus the. II. fol. 263	Pozsena. 48.
Plus the. III. 271.	Poztius Festus. 99.
Placidia. 133. 134. 135	Pozphirius. 116.
Placilla. 131.	Pozus. 62.
Placine. 93.	Pozthumius. 48. 65. 69
Platine. 267.	79.
Plato. 51. 56.	Pozthumius vigiliensis. 54.
Plantius. 75.	Pozthumius rebell. 118
Platruide. 166.	Praesto Ioannes. 271.
Plagra. 27.	Praetus. 28.
Plenneus. 22.	Priamus. 31
Plenratus. 70.	Primus. 106.
Plinie the yonger. 104.	Printing inuented. 262
Plinie the second. 106.	Pylca. 110.
Plotius. 116.	Pzobus. 99. 119. 120.
Plutarke. 107	Pzocas. 38.
Pogius. 254	Pzocopus. 128.
Polemius. 101.	Pzoculus. 120.
Polemon. 99	Pzodiges. 79.
Policarpe. 104. 109. burnt. 110.	Pzometheus. 22.
Policrates. 46. 111.	Pzotagozas. 60.
Polibozz Virg. 276	Pzulias. 69. 71. 73
Pollitian. 267.	Pzyminas. 34.
Polybius. 66	Plammeticus. 42.
Polybus. 28.	Plammenitus. 46.
Polyphedes. 30.	Plammites. 56.
Pomerane. 275.	Plammus. 38.
Pompeius. 76. 80. 81. 82. 84.	Pseudo. 128.
	Pseulenses. 35.
	Ptolomæus Alortles. 58.
	Ptolomæus Lagi. 63. 64. 65.
	Ptolomeus Philadelphus. 65. 67.
	Ptolomæus Ceraunus. 66.
	Ptolomæus Euzeg. 68. 75.
	E ii. Ptolomæus

The table.

Ptolomeus Philopater. 69
 Ptolomeus Epiphanes. 71.
 Ptolomeus Philome. 73. 74.
 Ptolomeus Physcon. 77. 79.
 Ptolomeus Alexander. 79.
 Ptolomeus Sother. 79
 Ptolomeus Dionysius. 80.
 83.
 Ptolomei Astronomer. 109.
 Ptolomays. 225.
 Publ. Deit is. 61.
 Publ. Ostorius. 98.
 Pulcheria. 113.
 Pu'el de dieu. 257.
 Pplemenez. 77.
 Pynciades. 34.
 Pyrrhus. 31. 63.
 Pyrrhus of Eptre. 65. 66.
 Pyrrhus of Bita. 80.
 Pythagoras 47.
 Pythias. 56.
 Pytholaus. 60.

Q.
 Qadrius. 107
 Questores 54
 Quincellin⁹ 157. 158
 Quintus. 50
 Quintus Cicinnatus. 50
 Quintilius. 51. 71. 72
 Q. Pompeius 76
 Q. Serrilius. 79.
 Q. Uirus 92
 Q. Uibius Sereus. 93
 Quintilius, emp 110
 Quintilian. 104
 Quirites 15

R
 Rabi Salomon. 206.
 Rachitis 169.
 Rachel 19
 Rac. imle 157
 Rachius 169
 Radamanthus 27
 Ragafrede 169
 Ragimbertus 164
 Ragoss 60. 61

Raimirus 179
 Raimirus the. II. Hsp. 184
 Raimirus the. III. 184
 Raimund 201. 211
 Raimund of Colons 221
 Raimundus Lullius 234
 Rainerius. 234
 Raimold Poole 285
 Rainsforth 288
 Raimo 211
 Raimon 206
 Raimulph of Chester. 207. 218
 Raimulph bis. of Dyham. 102.
 Rameses 26
 Rantes 28
 Rastiz 218
 Rathudibias 36
 Rauenna builned. 40. spoiled 153. taken of Belliz 147. of
 Aistulphus the pere of the world 4713. of Frider. emp fol 220. recovered by Julius bis. 272.
 Raulfe Pele 229
 Raulfe a fouwike 277
 Rebecca 18
 Rebelles 246
 Reeslundus 161
 Redargius 80
 Rees 200. 228
 Rees ab Dee 253
 Regaster 46
 Regertus 134
 Regilleanus 118
 Reginfride 174
 Regulus 65. 67. 68
 Reinold 217
 Remigius 144
 Remus 30. 38
 Renatus 268. 266
 Ren 11
 Reucine 271. 279
 Reuths 72
 Reuther 70
 Rhachisius 170
 Rhada

The table:

Rhidigastus. 132.
 Rhodamistus. 98.
 Rhymplinites 31.
 Rhe. 14. 15. 39.
 Rhodes named Ophiusa 20.
 subdued by Rhodias. 24. of
 Cassi. 89. made a province
 102. Spoiled of Syrac. 161.
 of Menec. 205. recovered of
 Hospitales. 232. taken of the
 Turke. 276.
 Rhomus. 28.
 Riccius. 280.
 Richard the. 1. of Eng. 213.
 214.
 Richard the. 11. of Eng. 245.
 246. 247. 248. 249. 250.
 251.
 Richard the. 11.. 267.
 Richard the second Norm. 190.
 Richardus de S. Mico. 206.
 Richard of Cornw. 219. 222.
 226.
 Richard Scrope. 252. 254.
 Richard Simon. 268.
 Richard bis. of Winchester. 272.
 Richard Huune. 274.
 Richard Pace. 276.
 Richard Cromwell. 288.
 Richardus. 154. 157.
 Richomie. 140.
 Ricarius. 140.
 Rimo. 70.
 Riols. 260.
 Ripa. 280.
 Riuala. 39.
 Robert of Guian. 181.
 Robert R. of Fran. 190.
 Robert Duke of Norm. 192.
 Robert Guiscard. 196. 199.
 Robert son of wyl. conq. 199.
 Robert Curthoyle. 200. 201.
 202.
 Robert of Flaunders. 201.
 Robert erle of Shrewsbury.

202.
 Robert of Malayne. 208.
 Robert of Gloucester. 207.
 Robert emp. 218. 219.
 Robert Bruce. 228. 229. 231.
 232. 233. 234. 240.
 Robert of Calaber or Naples
 230. 232. 233. 240.
 Robert Baldok. 234. 235.
 Robert hyng of Scot. 235.
 249. 252.
 Robert of Arthours. 236. 239.
 Robert Steward. 238.
 Robert Anoles. 244.
 Robert of Fife. 248.
 Robert of Albanie. 249.
 Robert. 271.
 Robert Constable. 284.
 Roboam. 34.
 Roderike. 165. 192.
 Rodianus. 79.
 Radoaldus. 161.
 Rodolph of Burg. 183. 184.
 Rodulph Duke of Suave.
 198. 199.
 Rodolph of Habisburp. emp.
 226. 228.
 Rodulph of Boheme. 231.
 Rodulphus Agricola. 269.
 Roger Erle of Hertford. 168.
 Roger of Duell of Sicili.
 200. 208.
 Roger king of Italie. 206.
 Roger Clifford. 217.
 Roger Mortimer. 235. 236.
 Roger Larington. 251.
 Roke. 237.
 Rollo. 182.
 Roma. 23.
 Romanellus. 24. 25.
 Romanus rebell. 141.
 Romanus lieutenant. 154.
 Romanus Diogenes. 197.
 Romanus emp. 182. 192.
 Romanus vanquished of
 Claudius Pont. 63. et Die
 C III panus

The table.

panz. 68. at Cicius. 69. at
 Cannas. 69. nere to Lacini
 us. 70. at Hippones. 72. at
 Sycurium and Alene. 73
 of the Numantines. 76. of
 Limbr. 78. of Sordiscians
 78. of Spartanes. 81. of
 Parthians. 83. of Germans
 99. of Friscians. 94. of Go
 thes. 104. of Hunnes. 132. of
 Totilas. 148. of Scaunes
 149. of Persians. 154. of Ra
 tharias. 161. of Grecians un
 der Otho. 189.
 Rome first builded. 23. 39. en
 larged. 41. ditched. 45. hurt
 with fier. 68. 100. 111. taken
 of Gothes. 133. of vandales.
 140. beleged of Aligis. 147
 taken of Totilas. 149. the
 second tyme. 150. recovered
 of Alises. 150. beleged of
 Agilulphus. 155. of Leath
 brand. 168. of Alstulphus.
 170. taken of Alenolph emp.
 181. of Henthe. 191. 199. of
 Charle. v. could. 278
 Romak. 126
 Roma. 36.
 Romilda. 156
 Romulus. 38. 39. 41.
 Romus. 27.
 Rosmund. 152
 Rotharis. 160. 164.
 Rouland. 172.
 Rowen. 139. 140
 Ropdon. 285.
 Robert of Bary emp. 251
 Radbert. 204.
 Ruellius. 280.
 Rufinus. 131. 132.
 Rutillus. 79
S Abachon. 40.
 Sabacius Saga. 16.
 Sibellicus. 267.
 Sibellicus. 117.

Sabines yelde. 45. be banque
 Med. 48.
 Sabianus. 116. 155.
 Sabinus. 170.
 Sabus. 13. 17.
 Sacre of Diep. 288.
 Sacroue. 93.
 Sadducel. 76
 Sadducus. 90.
 Sadolete. 280.
 Sdyates. 43.
 Saint Albonsfeld. 263.
 Sanctuaries. 93. 281.
 Sagitus. 185.
 Salathiel. 44.
 Salodine. 211. 212. 213
 Salard. 184
 Sale. 11.
 Sillum. 38.
 Silli. 41.
 Silicesus. 252
 Silmanasar. 39. 40
 Solomon. 34.
 Salomon Rym. 173.
 Salomon of Hung. 198.
 Salue regina ordeined. 220.
 Silenus Italianus. 110
 Silust. 88
 Samaria taken. 40. subdued
 78.
 Simgar. 28.
 Simnium destroyed. 65.
 Simnites warre. 61.
 Simos. 35.
 Simothes. 12.
 Simnites overcome. 64. of
 Cesar. 79. of Sph. 152. of
 Humbert. 152.
 Samri. 35.
 Samocatenus. 118.
 Simson. 35
 Simiel. 32.
 Simulius. 80.
 Sandaces. 49.
 Sanctius the gro. 183.
 Sanctius the. 11. 194. 195
 Sanctius

The table:

Sanctus the. iii.	210	Scerdeletus.	70.
Sanctus the. iiii.	227.	Schemata.	35.
Santes Pagnines.	271.	Schisme.	245
Saphandinus.	214.	Scipio.	69.70.71
Sapidus.	280.	Scipio Aflia.	71
Sapo.	124.125.126.127	Scipio Africanus the younger	72.74.75.76.
Sopozes.	116.	Scipio.	80.85.
Sappho.	44	Sclauines overcome by Bern	les. 148. of Alectaris. 162. of
Sara.	15.18.	Lewis. 178. received te faith	ibid. subdued by Bent. 184.
Sardanapalus.	37	of Dho. 187.	
Saracenus. 160. driven out of		Scoties begin. 64. 134. Fleine	206. of Edward the first, of
Sicill. 161. overcome of 26		Edward the. iii. 11.	
162. made tributarie. 163.		Scribonus	97.
overcome of Bulgares. 166		Scribonius.	80
driven out of Fraunce. 168		Seythia	13.
vanquished of Turkes. 170		Sebastianus.	133.137.
of Romans. 177. perced Ita		Sederhas.	43
lie. 185. overcome at Aquilg		Sedicion.	53
ibid. by Aleremund. 187. ex-		Segebert	159.
pulled Italie. 188. flaine at		Seianus	93.
Ancone. 213. vanquished of		Seita. 169. Sela	7.
Venes. 191.		Selchim.	17.
Sarpedon.	27.	Seleucus Afcianoz	64
Saruch.	23.14	Seleucus Gallinicus.	68
Sarzojus.	280.	Seleucus Ceraunus	68.
Satrabel.	112.	Seleucus Philopater.	72
Satron.	17.	Seleucus Demetrius bz0. 77	
Saturne.	12.	Selesia.	109.
Saturnius.	107.	Selinus.	273.275.
Saul.	33.	Sein.	8.10.
Senonacola.	263.	Semiramis.	16.17
Saxo.	225	Sempzonius.	69.71.72.87
Saxones overcome of Valent		Sempzonis	77.
129. came into Brit. 138. co-		Seneca	98.100.
uenanted with Brita. 140.		Seneca b.c.	106.
entred. 142. 143. overcome of		Sennacherib.	40.
Brit. 142 flaine of Suenia		Senscortis.	36.
153. of Charles. 167. 172.		Seschora	24.
Subdued of Charlemaine.		Sertorius.	80.81.
169. pelded to Pirin. 170.		Serapion.	111.
cam to Rome. 172. forloke		Seraph.	231.
the faith. 173. subdued of Ec		Sergius. 158. 163. 177. 182.	
bert. 195. rebel. 198.		Sermon	
Scalager.	248		
Scanderberg.	162.		
Scarus.	78.81.		

The table.

Servandus.	140.	Simoon son of Onias.	72.
Servius Tullius.	45.46.	Simō Jonachas brother.	76
Servius.	48.	Simon Herods setuant.	90.
Servilius Lepo.	78.	Simon son of Camuhue.	93.
Servilius Galba.	79.	Simon de Mountfozt.	124.
Servilius.	80	Simons.	288.
Selach.	34.	Simon son of Gioza.	102.
Seth.	7.	Sinnases.	95.
Seton.	285.	Siroe.	158.
Seuerinus.	159	Sifinnus.	165.
Seuerus emp.	112.123 140	Sicillus	41.
Seuerus hostilianus.	116.	Sicubuta.	155
Seuerus.	122	Sithaleus.	80.
Sewarde.	195.	Sixtus.	165.
Sextus.	58.	Smagadus.	153.155
Ser. Pompeius.	86.	Sme des.	47.
Sfoztia.	258.260.261.292	Smerdis.	34.
270.		Smith.	292.
Shaferus.	278.	Smyrna.	35.110.
Shafesburie.	36	Sociall warre.	79.
Shaxton.	291.	Socrates.	53.
Shingleton.	288.	Sodome.	17.
Sibilla Crithes.	40.	Sogdianus.	53.
Sicanus.	20.24	Soliman.	275.276.278.
Sicleus.	25.	Solon	44.45
Sicorius.	23.	Soluathus	171
Sigebert of west Saxo.	109.	Soloman	202
Sigefred.	174.	Sophie	271
Sigebert.	151. 52. 160.	Sophocles capitaine of La-	
Sigilbert.	158.	cacedemonians.	39. correct
Sigismund.	147.247.	the booke where it is made ca-	
Sigismund of Hung.	148.	pitaines of the Atheniens.	
247.251.		the pere of the world.	3195.
Sigismund emp.	253. 254.	Sophocles of Athenes.	52
255.258.259.		Sophonias	42
Sigismund of Austrich.	268.	Sorinis	30
Sigisulcus.	135.	Solarinus	26.18
Siguinus.	55.	Solius	86
Silius.	78.98.	Soltjenes	96
Silio.	171.	Soler	110
Silvanus.	126	Solzimus	269
Silvester the 1st.	194	Spaines kingdome beganne	
Simoon son of Cleopas.	100	1128. luke hispaine.	
Simon.	72.87	Sparetus	24
Simonides.	41.	Spartacus	60
Simon Brech.	41.	Spartus	22
		Spencers.	

The table.

Spencers.	235.	Sulpitius.	70.71.79
Sperus.	23.	Susanna.	43.
Spinaces.	36	Swayne.	191.
Spinning enuented.	7	Sweating like esse.	268
Stantlay.	222.	Swenon.	186.191.194.
Stacius Surculus.	99.	Swordplayers.	21.
Stacius Priscus.	109.	Sibilla Heropila.	42.
Staurobates.	17.	Sycion.	28.
Stelenus.	26.	Sydo.	201.
Stella.	280	Sylla.	79.80.
Stephan apost.	95.	Syllanus.	78.
Stephane the second bis. of R.	166.	Sylualdus.	150.
Stephane the iiii.	171.	Sylures.	98.
Stephane the. vi.	181.	Sylus Postham.	31.
Stephane the. vii. 184 to rectre		Symeon bis. of Hier.	104.
the boke where it is written		Symon.	64.
the second.		Symon magus.	95.98
Stephane the. viii.	185.	Symeon of Bulgare.	184
Stephane the. ix.	195.	Symmachus.	143.145
Stephane of Constan.	186	Synode of Consta. against	
Stephane of Hung.	190	Mac. 130.162.	
Stephane the serod of Hung.	204.	Synode of Ephesus.	137
Stephane the. v. of Hun.	225.	Synode of Chalced.	138.
Stephane Cursus.	202	Synode generall at Const.	149.
Stephane of Eng.	206.207.	Synode at Rome.	168.188.
208.		198.	
Stephane the. iii. of Hung.	210.	Synode of Nicea.	173.
Stephane Edworth.	225.	Synode of Frankford. ibid.	
Stephane de Columna.	237.	Syphax.	70.71
Stephane Niger.	296.	Syracius.	111.
Stephen Hamelton.	284.	Syracuse builded. 40. banque	
Stelichorus.	44.	shed of Atheniens. 53.	
Stillico.	131.132.133.	Syrus.	330
Stiphatis.	41.		
Stioza.	146		
Strapula.	142		
Stratas.	56.		
Strato.	36.		
Sueropilus.	178.		
Sueuus.	21.		
Suetonius Histop.	140.		
Suyptingus.	96.		
Suittilla.	157.159		

The table.

Carcon.	29.	Themistocles	49.50
Carpia	40	Theo	58
Carquani Dileus.	27.	Theodebald	220
Carquinius Dile. 42. 43.		Teodas	98
44.		Theodebert	149.155
Carquini ⁹ Superbus. 45.46		Theodebert of Fr.	157
48.49.		Theodobert of Spaine	164
Carquiniens	60	Theodozich	139.144.145
Carrachus.	41.	Theodozicus	142.143
Casilo.	154.169.170.	Theodozich of Fr.	155.157
Catian	110	162.164.167.	
Catius	39	Theodozich of Alacia	205
Caulerus.	237.	Theodomir	141
Caunales.	30	Theodotius	129
Caris	186	Theodotius emp	130.131
Cetus	150	Theodotius the yonger emp	133.135.138
Telephus	30	Theodotius capitaine	155
Telephorus	107	Theodotius the iii. emp	166
Teleuias.	56.57	Theodoz	178.195
Temnes	60	Theodorus	115
Tempest	284	Theodorus bil of R.	160
Temple begun. 34. repaired.		Theodorus the ii.	181
36 newfunded. 46. fini-		Theodorus bil. of Raue.	162
shed. 47. purified. 73. reedifi-		Theodorus Lieutenant.	160
ed. 77.88. destroyed. 102.		Theodorus Calliope	161
Tendelilius	149	Theodorus	67.69
Tentes first invented.	7	Theodorus the Goth.	146
Termouth	23	Theodowalde.	166
Tertullian	113	Theophilus	110.111
Tertwin	273	Theophilus bil. of Alex.	132
Tetabilis Triston	27	Theopompus	116
Tetillus	118.119	Theophilaste liuerenant	164
Teuer	68	Theophilus emp.	176
Tedolina	154	Therippus	34
Teukelburie fild	165	Therius	72.73
Thaamas	282	Thelus	29.30.
Thaborites	255.258	Thelpiens	37
Thalestris	162	Thellalus.	20
Thaies	40	Thellandus	30.
Thamis	253	Therps	13.
Thare	14	Thaumantius	81.85
Tharsus	37	Thendis	146.149
Thetie	214	Thentones	23
Thelafius	17	Thimbron	55
Thelachus	37	Thimeus	32.
Thelafius	170	Thi:	

The table.

Thimus.	129.	Tigur.	81.
Thola	130.	Timolauz.	128.
Thomas Aquine	233.	Timoleon.	60.61.
Thomas Drefie	251.	Tindall.	280.283.
Thomas Gray	254.	Tissamenus.	31.
Thomas Munecute.	257.	Tissaphernes.	54.
Thomas Beket.	210.211.212.	Titus Aluidius.	98.
Thomas Bagley	257.	Titus. 101.102. emp.	103.
Thomas Broughton	268.	Tobias bil.	105.
Thomas Girardine	268.	Tolwin.	285.
Thomas Hamarde	273.	Tomlet.	141.
Thomas Kneuet	273.	Tongader.	227.
Thomas Molfey.	275.	Constall.	276.
Thomas Fitzgaret.	283.284.	Tonos Concoleros.	37.
Thomas Moore.	283.	Torquatus	59.
Thomas Gilby.	284.	Toston.	195.196.
Thomas Pers.	284.	Tornaz.	148.149.
Thomas Marton.	287.	Traiane emp.	105.106.
Thomas Seymour.	288.	Treherne.	123.
Thomas Audley.	290.	Trapezanitus	250.
Thomiris.	45.	Transamundus.	143.
Thurion.	207.	Transmund of Lombardie.	168.
Thrasibulus.	55.56.	Tribellius.	104.111.
Thrasila	140.	Trebellio.	165.
Thrase subdued of Philip p		Trebonius	85.
pere of the world. 3619. made		Trenouant.	52.
anounce. 102. ouerridde of		Treptolemus.	26.
Go hes. 128. spoiled. 130. of		Treners.	17.
Humies. 137 againe. 151. in		Tribunes.	518.
uaded of Thelelius. 170. in		Triton.	13.14.
uaded of Bulgares. 162.		Triphon.	74.76.
Thracians founded.	11.	Troie.	25.
Thuricon.	13.14.	Troia.	31.
Theris.	30.	Troiphaz.	25.
Thurimacus	18.	Trollus.	31.
Thurismund	139.	Tros.	28.
Thulcanes	21.	Tubal.	7.
Thules.	173.	Tubalcayn.	Ibidem.
Thuleus.	2135.	Talcan.	101.
Thyestes.	29.	Tulga.	119.
Thyrenus.	27.	Tulla.	45.
Tiberinus.	30.	Tullus Hostilius.	41.42.
Tiberius 87.90. emp. 90. 92		Tumperc.	163.
93.94.95.		Turkey.	273.
Tiberius emp.	152.153.	Turpaneus.	163.
Tigranes.	81.		
		Tur	

The table.

Turkes first Inuaded Asia.
170. slaine of Fulco. 205. of
Waldwine. 207. inuaded of
Lewis the french kyng. 207
208. vanquished of Can-
berlans. 250. at Taurinum
262. in walachie. 296. at
Vienna. 281. their kyngdome
beginneth. 230.

Turnus. 31.
Tuthemosis. 23.
Tybernius Silvius. 35.
Typhon. 21
Tyzidates 98. 100.
Tyrmas. 39.
Tyreus. 39.
Tyrus. 14
Tyzum. 14

U.

VAdemarus. 126.
Uadian. 276
Uagorus. 68
Ualamir. 141
Ualens bish. 110
Ualens emp. 128. 129. 130
Ualentinian. 108.
Ualentinian emp. 128. 129.
Ualentinian the yonger emp.
129. 130. 131.
Ualentinian emp. 135. 137.
139. 140.
Ualerian. 117.
Ualerius. 60. 119
Ualerius Gratus. 92. 93.
Ualla. 259
Ualla. 134
Uandalas. 132. 133.
Uandalus. 22.
Uaphres. 44
Uarus. 90. 92.
Uaschi. 50
Uectaris. 162
Uecterius. 154.
Uencellaus. 224.
Uencellaus the. II. of Boheme
227. 231.

Uencellaus of Hung. 231.
Uencellaus of Boheme 243.
Uencellaus of Boheme emp.
246. 251.

Uerere builded. 139.
Uenecians vanquished of Pi-
pine. 174. of Saracens. 177
of Genewales. 241. 246. of
Storia. 261.

Uenecians warre. 271
Uentidius. 89.
Uerbenue. 28.
Ueremunde. 171. 172. 187.
Uertanus. 133.
Uerone restored to the emp.
220. taken of the Venecians
252. of Nicolas Piliem.
259. recovered by Maxim.
272.

Uerrina. 141.
Uesozes. 10.
Uespasian. 97. 100. emp. 161.
101. 102. 103.

Uesta. 10.
Uesuuius. 103
Uetilius. 75
Uffa. 143.

Uignerus. 168
Uiage in Afrike. 248
Uibrianus Crispus. 103.
Uibius Gallus. 117

Uictorinus. 109. 118
Uictor. 111. 112. 195. 199.
Uictorinus Rheto. 226.
Uidas. 280.

Uienna. 281
Uigenius. 67.
Uigilius. 146.
Uinder. 101.

Uirgil. 87.
Uirginus. 51
Uincet. 122.
Uirrius. 75. 76.

Uitalis Michael. 209.
Uitellianus. 144
Uitellius. 96. 111.
Uilla

The table.

Aligis.	147.
Aliza.	164.
Alues.	280.
Aladiscus.	210.260.269.
Alisbone.	281.
Alises.	11.
Alidis.	150.
Alada.	100.
Alodia.	103.
Alologes.	98.109.
Alolanus.	65.
Alolusianus.	117.
Alonores.	92.
Alotiger.	137.138.140.141.
Alotimer.	140.
Alotiporius.	148.
Alotumnus.	17.
Alaxanes.	119.
Aladiscus.	200.202.
Albane the.ii.bis.	200.201.
Albane the.iii.bis.	213.
Albane the.iii.	224.
Albane the.v.	242.243.
Albane the.vi.	245.247.
Albanus Rhegius.	280.
Albanus.	280.
Albinia.	50.
Alceolus.	191.
Alia.	39.
Alrianus.	76.
Alsinus.	280.
Alsula.	130.
Aluncalan.	266.
Alter.	138.142.143.

V Alia.	134.
Wallop.	288.
Watte Tyler.	140.
Wayuota.	270.281.
Walter of Manny.	239.
Warres of Delopone.	52.
Warres of Syracul.	53.
Warre social.	59.
Welles.	163.
Weston.	283.
Welshmen.	163.

Welshmen subdued.	171.
White sect.	250.
Wichom.	170.
Wilson	285.
Wisigothes.	132.
Witcliffe.	243.
Wutholley.	290.
Wido.	181.182.184.
Woll first vled.	7.
Woulfe.	282.
William.	183.
William the.ii. of Norm.	184.
William barde of Norm.	193.195. conquered Engla.
197. kyng of Eng. 197.198.	199.200.
William Rufus.	200.201.
William sonne of Pen. Duke	of Norm. 204.
William sonne of Robert	Carters. 205.
William of Sicilie.	209.210.
213.	
William. Scotte.	210.211.
William of Gouc.	217.
William of Halland.	221.
Williamus Placoti.	227.
William Horton.	227.
William Malace.	230.231.
William Douglas.	240.
William Walworth.	246.
William Wapntlet.	261.
William bis. of Lincoln.	272.
William Bulmer.	273.
William Shyngleton.	231.
283.	
William Treap.	282.
William Tyndale.	283.
William Lumley.	284.
Wyledome.	288.

X Antippus.	97.
Xenophanes.	36.
Xenophon.	57.
Xeres.	19.49.53.
Xiii.	Xilus.

The table.

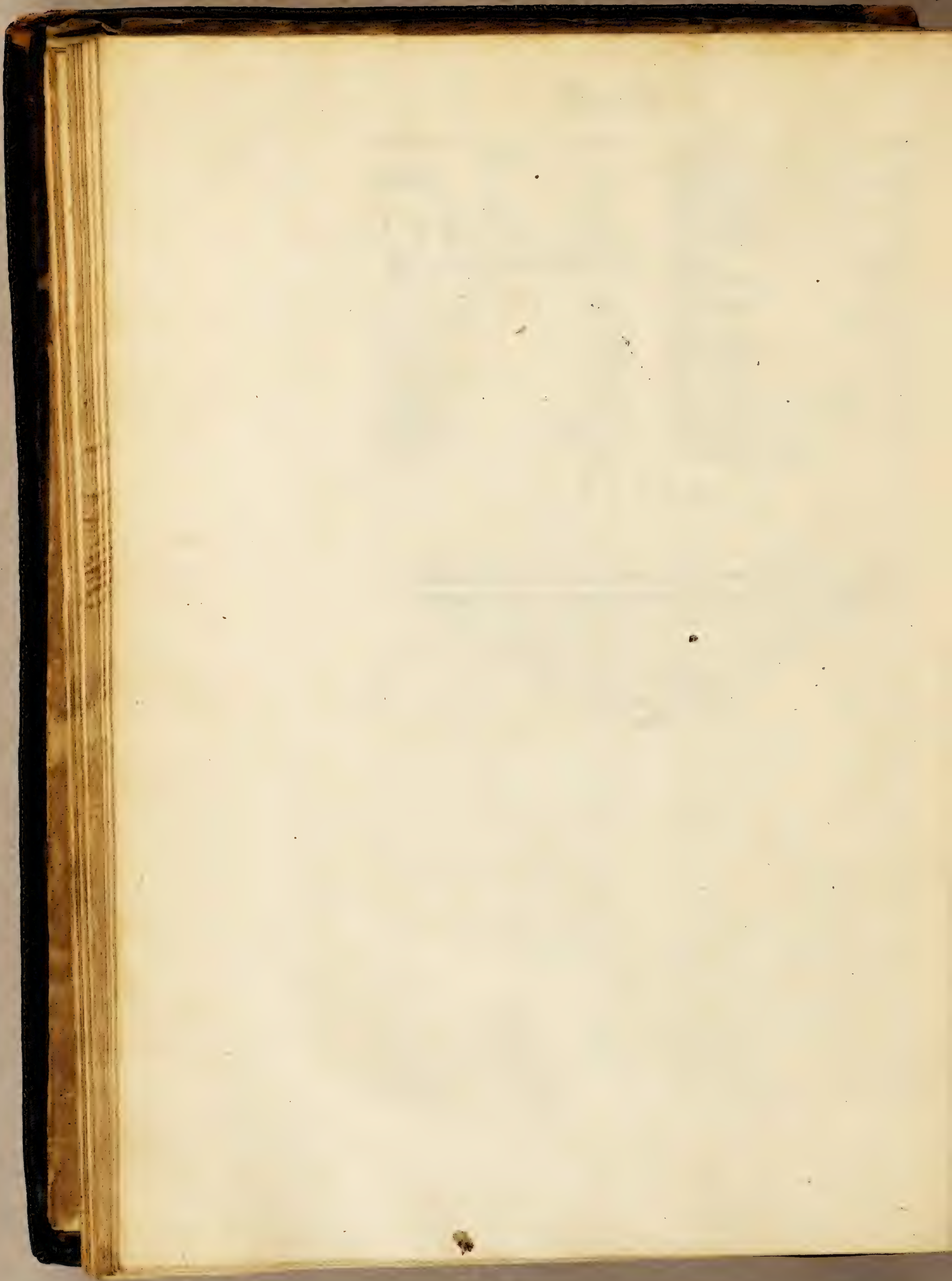
Elfus.	107.	Zenobia.	119.
Pozke.	34.	Zenon.	93.
		Zenon emp.	141. 142. 143.
		Zensa.	259.
Z Zacharias.	36. 47.	Zepherinus.	112.
Zacharia.	38.	Zenippus.	31.
Zacharias bis	105. 168.	Zetus.	27. 28.
	169.	Zieglerus.	280.
Zaleucus.	42.	Zizimus.	267.
Zambaces.	142.	Zoen.	193. 194.
Zarach.	35.	Zorobabel.	46.
Zara.	30.	Zopirus.	47.
Zalius.	276.	Zozimus.	134.
Zares.	150.	Zainglius.	276. 280. 281.
Zebenna.	118. 119.	Zulemon.	169.
Zenes.	27.	Zuentebaldus.	181.

F I N I S.

Thus endeth the table made for the spacie finding out of any name or other thyng that ye woulde like for. in this **Epi-** tome of **Chronicles**, by the numbre of the leafe, and in as many places welhere, as any man is spoken of: to the intent that ye shulde not spende muche tyme in serchyng out it that you desire to know.

V

X



¶ Of the vse and profite of hysto-
ryes, and with what iudgement they
oughte to bee redden.



ALBEIT FOR MANY CAUSES
(whiche we shall hereafter recyte) the rea-
dyng of hystories doth indifferently auayle
all men, yet mooste pecyallye it pertyneth
to kynges and greaite prynces, whole booke
it maye be worthely called, because that the
knowledge thereof is mooste profitable and necessary to all
these, whiche haue the gouernaunce of comune weales.
For not onely the hystories of the Gentiles, but also of the
holy scriptures, doo in euery place make mencyon of
theym. The holy scriptures, besydes that they make vs
certayne of the wpll and woozde of God, and also of the
spyrituall kyngedome of Chyste, teache vs politticall ad-
ministracion, and set forth many notable examptes, which
in rulyng a publyke weale be necessary to bee knowne,
and whereby the myndes of prynces maye be dyrected to
the study of true nobilitye and vertue. The hystories of
the Gentyles declare the origynall and begynnyng of
greate empyres, and for what causes thete haue chaun-
ced in theim so gret and so straung alterations & greuous
commocions. In the same is also conteyned preceptes of
offices and vertues, whereby the comune weales may
moost prosperously be preserved, contynued and aduanc-
ed. And for this cause hystories are moost worthy to be
called the bookes of good pryncis and noble men. Nowe,
forasmuche as vnto euery prynce there belongeth a dou-
ble vertue, that is, a politticall or externall, and a fayth and
feare towarde god, Examptes of them bothe be shewed
to vs out of hystories. Therefore we wpll fyrste speake
of ciuile vertues. Prynces, yea and all other, that haue
auctorite in greate affayres and hygh matters, oughte
these examptes and actes chyselye to consyder, wherby
they maye be admonished, by what means they maye
mooste prosperously carye theim selves in the gouer-
naunce of the weale publike. They must sette before theire
eyes the examptes of good kynges and rulers, and of them
must

of the vse and profyt

must they lerne the necessary dutye and the vpryght trade of gouerning their empyers, that in their reignes, besides the vtilitie and benefyte of the publyke weale, they regarded nothing, that iustice and equitie they onely embraced, that all misdoemeanours and offences they greatly punished: and agayne, that towarde good men and pacible they were alwayes beneficiall and gentyl, that for euery cause they woulde not rayse by warres, but by wynginge at fauour, & kepe peace, and yet in defence of theyr royalmes, were neuer the lesse of an inuincible courage and redye will: finally that by their wysedome, power, and strength, they defended their dominions from all outward hostilitie, and the same in true religion, welth, quietnes, and in all necessary artes made to flourish. In all which qualities our most excellent & gracious prince Henry the eyghte, hath excelled, and is an example to theym all whiche shall succede. For in hym alone is confessed and heaped all the sundry good qualities of the auncient kynnges, by whiche they opteyned so great renome. Whiche qualities he hath so practysed in the gouernaunce of his realme, that I suppose there neuer was in any common weale, any noble prince and gouernoure whiche hath declared mo examples of wise doing, or shewed mo benefites and pleasures to his countrey than his grace hath. But to the purpose. For the contrary parte.

In the examples of tyrannes they maye obserue dyuers thynges: as, The ende of them to be miserable, and that through theyr crueltie many mischeces and daungerous comocions have chaunced in theyr common weales. As it appereth how Pharao for tyranny perished, and for lyke cause the Romain kynnges were exiled. Princes haue oftentimes destroyed one the other, only for pryde, disdain and enuy, and that many tymes begun vpon nothyng. Euen as it was the only cause of the cruel warres betwene Cesar and Pompei. The Romaine hystoryes shew, that the desyre of noueltie hath oft been the stirer of moost greuous warres. And the sect and reygne of Machomet had none other begynnynge but of heresy and dissencion of the articles of the fayth. It auailleth them muche that bee in auctoritie, to marke these thynges in the redyng of hystories,

of Hystories

yes, that they lerne to beware, foresee, and auoyde lyke thynges in their gouernance. For the same chanches daily happen, all be it the persones nowe and than be changed in the commune weales, neuerthelesse as pertaynyng to the similitude of busynes and trouble, the worlde remaineth the worlde, and lyke vnto it selfe. Therfore most truly Thucydides (who was a man excellent in the knowledge of warrelare, and also wrote the greatte and longe warre, and other sundry thynges, whiche chanced among the Grekes) sayth, Hystories be a treasure, whiche ought neuer to be out of our handes, that therby beyng ayded, we maye the more commodiously handle suche busynesse and like chanches in the commune weale, for as much as the causes often tymes chaunce almoste lyke.

¶ Furthermore there be exammples founde in hystories, conuenient for euery man priuately in his degree, as magistrates ought to be obeyede, and that they neuer escaped unpunished, whiche haue rebelled against theym, euen as Dathan, Abialom, Catiline, Brutus, Cassius, and such lyke for their sedicion haue ben worthily punished. Of the fidelitie of frendes, as Ionathas laued the lyfe of kynge Dauid. Of the punishment for homicide, at ultetie, and such lyke offences, as it appereth by the example of Dauid. But what shal ned many wordes. Euen as in euery arte paternes be geuen to folowe: lykwys in hystories be painted befoze our eyes exammples of all kyndes of vertues. But yet in exammples and dedes it is more euidently perceyued, what the dignyte of vertue, and agayne, what the basenesse of dyshonestie and vices bee, than in bare preceptes, because that exammples, set as images befoze vs, do not only openly teache, but also bothe warne and stirre our myndes, so that therby wyth a certayne desire and desyre they be kyndled towarde vertue and honesty. For who in hert can be so stubborne and hard, that will not be moued, if he rede anye thyng notable, that is either worthy prayse, or els exammples bitterly to be abhorred.

I haue shewed briefly how in reacyng of hystories exammples of politicall vertues and ciuyle affayres ought to be obserued, Nowe it pertyneth to a true chrissten man, (who aboue all thynges oughte to esteeme godlynesse, to

A. II.

knowe

of the vse and profyt

knowe, that he maye gather also out of hystories, exam-
ples of faythe and feare of god: For these be the specyall
vertues of good men, which in the syghte of god be mooste
available. Al be it that the hystories of the gentyles doo
not teache, that god careth or hath oughte to do wyth vs:
yet a godly mynde neuerthelesse shall consyder, that the
publyke weales in the worlde be conserued by the power
of god, and that is the worke of god to punyssh and re-
uenge all opprestyon, and vyolence, y^e and that vnto the
heathen God gyueth excellent qualities. For princes can
not preserue their empyers agaynst the assautes of Sa-
than, wythout the syngular benefyt of god, and the ayde
of theyr owne vertue and wysedome. And so by thys ma-
ner a good man maye well suppose, that these actes and
punyshmentes be the workes of god, and therby maye lern
the feare of god. As that tyrannes haue been greuously
punysshed accorpyng to thys sentence: He that taketh the
sworde, that is, whiche wythout auctoryte vsurpeth the
ryght of reuengyng, he shall perishe by the sworde. Con-
trarywysse, it is euident, that good prynces bee preserued
and defended by god, and that also the Ethnykes did well
perceyue, in that theyr princes had great assiaunce in the
helpe of theyr goddes. For Homere the poete sayth: God
casteth his thyelde in the batayle, to defende the prynces,
He feigneth also euery pryncce to be vnder the protectyon
of his god, as it appereth by the goddesse Pallas, whiche
alwayes was presente wyth Achilles. But this thyng is
more playnely exprest in the hystories of the holy scryp-
ture, as in Ioseph, Abraham, Moses, Dauid, Ezechias, and
the other prynces and kinges, whom god alwayes preser-
ued. And their examples be set before the eyes of all other
prynces, that they maye certaynly know, that in lyke ma-
ner god wyll defende all good kinges. For thys difference
is betwene the holy and prophane hystories, that in them
be shewed the testymonies of the workes of god, and the
whiche do not onely entreate of cyuile matters, but chief-
ly doo represente vnto vs the kyngdome of god, that god
geueth his word, that of his mercy he wyll saue vs, wher
in the hystories of the gentyles be ignorant. Therfore prin-
cipally the hystories of the holy scripture ought to be kno-
wen

went to all chryſten men, that therby they maye learne the doctryne and ſtabliſhement of faith.

¶ Firſt how all thynges were created of god, what was the originall of ſinne, that agaynſt ſinne Chriſte inſtituted his byrgdome, gaue bys woorde, and that he ſhoulde come to take away ſinne, and ſaue vs. Alſo how god, whā he had gyuen his woorde, preſerued alwayes the reygne of Chriſt, and that the reygne of Chriſte, that is, the true beleuers from the begynnyng of the worlde, walked vnder the croſſe, and neuertheleſſe were preſerued. That Satā wyth all the power of the worlde aſſaulted the woorde of god. Moreover, that God meruaylouſly perſormed bys promyſe aboue the opinyon and capacitie of mans wytte. Alſo that examles bothe of horryble vengeance, and alſo of grace and forgyuenes be ſhewed to vs of God, So vnto kynge Dauid and other chanced remiſſion of ſyns, that by theſe examles we myghte bee comforted and beleue, that god wyll forgyue. Neyther thys is to be neglected that for the cōſyrmacion of our myndes, God hath gyuen vs all ſortes of prophecies of externall kyngdomes, that by the fulfilling of them, we maye haue a teſtimony that our woorde is of god, neyther that any other ſaythe than ours, is true. And that we maye bee admoniſhed by them, whā Chriſt ought to come, and whā the conſumacion of the worlde ſhall be. Finally, for the ryghte vnderſtādyng the prophecies, it ſhall be very expedient to knowe the ſucceſſe and alteracion of the monarchies and kyngdomes, wyth the computacion and noumber of the yeres, whiche be in the hystories of the Gentiles exactly ſet forth: the knowledge wherof, euen for thys cauſe is neceſſarye for chryſtians, that they maie the better vnderſtāde the prophecies, and of theſe the more certaynely iudge. Certes euery man maye by theſe thynges eſteeme, what pleaſure and profyte is gathered in readyng of hystories, and the fruſtefull commoditie therof ought woorthily to ſtirre and compell euery man to knowe them.

The origiuall of man

Of the origynall begynnynge of man, after the false
opynion of the Ethnike philosopher.

The philosopher of auntyent tyme (who
wythout knowledge of the very true gods
head, many hundred yeres gone, have sette
oute hystories in wrytynge) were of diuers
opynions, concernyng the origynall begyn-
nyng of man. For some of them beleued the
worlde to haue been a thyng vncreated, that is to saye,
without begynnynge: and incorruptible, that is, neuer to
haue ende: and lyke wyse mankynde to haue been of ete-
rnall continuance. Other some of them were of opynion,
that the worlde was created and corruptible, and auou-
ched, that man toke the begynnynge of generacion by suc-
cession of tyme. For their imagynacion was, that at the
first begynnynge of thynges, bothe the skye and the earthe
had one sole forme and shape, the nature of the one wyth
the other intermingled, and in processe, the same bodies dis-
seuered, the vniuersal worlde to haue receiued this order
whiche we se at this presente. And firste the ayre to haue
founded the same continuall mouynge, and the fyre parte
thereof, by reason of lyghtnesse, to haue mounted to the
highest places, the Sonne, and other sterres, of the same
cause to haue gotten theyr courses, and what was myn-
gled wyth moysture, styll to haue remayned in the first
place, by reason it was heauy, and coulde not ryle, whiche
inferiour thynges, beyng mixed or heaped together by com-
mixon, the sea to haue ben produced of the moyste or ly-
quyde thynges, and of the harder stuffe or matter, the earth
in conclusion to haue remained clammy and nesh. When
this earth, at the firste begynnynge, was through the fer-
uente heate of the sonne settled and growen to a thycker
and more massy substance, than the vppermoste partes of
the same wythin a shorte space, by the power of the heate
swelled into litle bunches, and certayn humoures in ma-
nye sundrye places gathered and congeled together by it
selfe, in whiche humoures dyd arysse certayn corrupcyons
of rottennes, couered througheout with a lytell thynne
scumme or creame, lyke as it chaunceth in the marshes of
Egypte

Egypte, and in deade standynge pooles, whan the feruente heate of the ayre dooeth sodenly parche the colde earthe, than whan the heate cometh to moyste thynges, anon is wroughte generatyon, by reason that in the nyghte tyme, the ayre rounde aboute enuironeth it wth humoure, whiche in the daye is by the vertue of the sonne made harde. After certayne space of tyme, the sayed putrefactyons beyng broughte to their utmostt extente (approchynge as it were the tyme of deliuerance) as soone as the sayd scummes or creames were thoroughly dized and broken, they broughte forth the shapess of all kyndes of lyuynge thynges. Whereof suche as had by chaunce receyued more heate, beyng made apt to flight, mounted vp in to the ayre: such as had remayning in them more of the erth, becam, some of them ccepers on the grounde, and some of them other beastes of the earth, suche as hapned to haue a watryshe nature, were carped into the element of their proper kynde, and were named fshes. Than the earthe after this, partely wth the parchynge heate of the sonne, and partlye wth the wyndes warynge ityll drier and drier, surcelled byngynge forth the beastes of any great quantitie, but those that were already engendred, broughte forth the others, eche of his owne kynde, through mutuall comixtion and engendryng one wth an other. And in the very selfe same wyse, they saye, that man also was at the fyrst begynnynge produced, and that he, seekinge his foode in the wyld feldes, long tyme lyued a saluage and rude lyfe, as vnto whome onely the fruite of the grasse and of the tyes dyd of it selfe mynister sustynance. They sayen furthermore, that the other wyld beastes were noyefull vnto men, whiche beastes to withstande, they assembled theym in companyes and for feare of the sayd beastes, for a common vtilitie, and that mutuall ayde and succor myght bee ministred by one to an other, they sought out places where to inhabite. And where the sounde of theyr mouth was suche as myght not be vnderstande, they made a distinction of one word from an other by littell and lyttel, and called eche thyng by a seuerall name. Albeit for as muche as they were placed in sundry corners or regions of the worlde, they used not all
one

The origiuall of man

no maner woordes or speach: and therfore there was (saye those phylosophers) sundrye fourmes and facyons of letters. And the companys of men fyrste assembled, they reporte, to haue ben the fyrst progenitours, euery company of his owne nacion, but the fyrst men, hauinge no maner stape of helpe or succoure, liued an harde lyfe, because they hadde no knowledge nor prouision to save and lape by the fruytes of the fyeldes to occupye afterwarde in tyme of neede. And hereof it chaunced, that in the wynter season beraye many, eyther by famyne, or els by reason of colde perished. In proces of tyme, kynge well taught by experience, they bothe soughte out caues to lye in, for aduoydyng and defendyng the extreme sharpnesse of colde, and also began to kepe truites in store. After this the knowledge of fyre, and of other thynges for mans use necessarye perceyued and lerned, the other commodities of mannes lyfe were in shorte space founde out. Finally necessitye beyng made the scholmaystres of thynges, ministred vnto the wittes of euery singular persone, cunnyng and expert practisynge: and vnto them were also geuen to adiutors to helpe them, handes, speeche or communication, and excellency of mynde. And those phylosophers, whiche were throughe perswaded, that this was the orygynall begynnyng of man, and dyd not referre the same to the prouidence of god, auouched, that the Ethiopes were the fyrste men of all that euer were, folowynge this coniecture, that the soyle of Ethiopia began before all other partes of the erthe to encrease in warmethe, by reason that the sonne is nearest to it, where as the erthe was of it selfe all dark, the and moyst, wherby it happened, that of the same fyrst proportion attemptyng of moysture and heate, man was ingendred, and that the same man after his procreacyon, dyd wyth better wyll and appetyte holde hym selfe in that parte of the earthe, where it hapned hym to be procreate, than to seke any other, for as muche as all thynges were vnto hym as yet vknown.

Other there be, whiche suppose the Scythians to be the fyrst people of the worlde, and that betwene them and the Egyptians was long contention, whether nacion was of moze antiquyte. The Egyptians alledgyng for theyn
that

that in the begynnynge of all thynges, whan that some contraries by the feruente heate of the sonne were euen parched and burned, other agayne by extreme colde were frozen, so that it coulde not ingender men, nor yet receyue nor susteyne inhabitautes, befoze that garmentes were inuented to saue the bodye from the violence of colde and heate, and yll places by remedye mollified: Aegypte alwayes to haue been so temperate, that neyther the winter colde, nor the somer heate myght greue hir inhabitantes, the grounde beyng mozeouer so fruitfull, that there is no lande so fertile of nouryshmentes for mans ble. Therfoze by reason it semeth, that there men shulde fyrst ingender, where they myght mozte easely be nourished.

¶ On the other parte, the Scythians supposed the temperatenes of the ayre to be no argumente of antiquitee. For nature, whan she deuided colde and heate into regyons, forthwith ingendred creatures apt to suffer the qualites of the places, yea and trees, fruytes, and herbes accordyng to the disposicion of the regyons. And howe muche moze sharper the ayre is to the Scythians, than to the Aegyptians, so muche the harder be they of bodye and wyl. Mozeouer, if the worlde, whych now is deuyded into elementes, hath ben confused all in one, eyther the water in the begynnynge surroundyng all thynges, or elles the fyre, whiche also ingendred the worlde, possellynge it, the Scythians in the originall of bothe begynnynge were the moze anciente. For if the fyre fyrst possessed all thynges, whiche by lyttell and lyttell quenched, gaue place to the earth, there was no place so soone disseuered from the fyre, by the colde of wynter, as the nozthe, in so muche as now there is no lande so behement colde. Aegypt, and all the east was very long, ere they were temperate, bycause that now they be euen seared with the feruent heat of the sonne. Or yf all the earth at the firste was covered wyth waters, certes the highest partes, the waters assuagynge, were fyrst discovered, and in the lowest groundes dyd longest abyde, and the sooner that euerye parte of the earth was dry, so muche the sooner began it to bring forth lynyng creatures. But Scythia is so hygher ouer all other countreys, that all waters seeme there to sprynge and
B. falle,

The originall of man.

fall into the greete meere Meotis, from whence it runneth into the seas of Pontus and Aegypt. Which Aegypt (of long time hath ben defended with the cares and charges of so manye kynges, fortified with so greate banks agaynst the violence of watres, trenched out with so many dyches, that where the water is kept out in one place, it may be receiued in another, coulde not be inhabited, unless Nilus were helde out) can not seme to be of any antiquitie, but rather appeareth to be a late countrey, either by the heappnges of kynges, or els by the castinge bp of the mudde of Nilus.

By these argumentes the Egyptians beyng overcome, the Scythians alwaye haue ben reputed the more ancient people amonge the Gentyles. But now I wyl leaue to wyte of the bayne fantasie of the Ethiopkes, whiche I haue here sette forth, to the intent, that the reders maye perceyue the blynde iudgmente of theym, whiche without the knowledge of god and his scriptures, woulde define the originall of man. And here consequentely I wyl begynne my fyrst booke, with the creation of man, accordinge as it is sette forth in the holy scriptures, the authoritee and certayntee whereof is moste sure: whiche I wyl continue untill the tyme of Abraham: durynge whiche tyme the worlde stode without prescript administration or certayne lawe, but onely was ledde by the lawe of nature. For in this hystorie I shall vse this order, and shall deuide my booke into thre ages, of the whiche the fyrste shall conceyue those thinges that were done betwene the tyme of Adam and Abraham: the seconde frome Abraham vnto the comynge of Christ, and the thirde frome the incarnation of Christ vnto this present tyme.

The fyrst parte of Man- questes Chronicle.



In the holpe scryptures dooe thewe, that when the heauen, the earth, and all the furnytures therof were created, on the fyrste daye Adam, the mooste excellent of all creatures, was by God almyghty made of the syme of the earthe, who breathed into him the breathe of lyfe, and the soule, wherby he was made like vnto the image of god.

Vnto this mooste perfecte man, god gaue suche grace, that without any instructions, but onely with the indowmentes of his origynall ryghtuousnes, he was soorthwyth perfectly seene and learned in all the lyberall artes: He was inspired also wyth the knowledge of the natures of all herbes, trees, mettalles, stones, byrdes, beastes, fyshes, woymes, and all other creatures. Moreover, vnto hym God gaue power ouer all thynges, that were on the earthe, and in the sea, so that vnto all beastes, fowles, fyshes, and woymes, Adam dyd geue a propre and a conuenient name, accordyng to the natures of theym, such as they be called at this daye. Then was he broughte by the almyghty lord into the pleasaunte place of Paradyse, replenished with all pleasure. The felicitye of whiche place S. Augustine dooeth in thys wyse descriue: Man lyued in Paradyse as he wolde, howe longe he willed that whiche God comanded, he lyued hauyng the fruyte of god by whiche goodnesse he was good: he lyued without any necessitie, beyng in his power so alwayes to haue lyued. Meate was ready, that he shulde not hunger: drynke, that he would not thyrst: the wood of lyfe, that age shulde not dyscolue hym. In hys fleische he was perfecte healtie, in hys mynde no lesse tranquillitie. As in Paradyse is neyther heate, ne colde, so in his inhabitantes is no offence of good will, nothyng at all sorowfull, nothyng vainely glad. The true ioye was continued by God, to werte whome out of a pure herte issued charite, con corde of mynde, watching of the bodye, and without anye laboure, the custodie of the commaundement. There he myght occupye hym selfe, not

There The yere
of the of the
wynde. of 1478

3682

man was
soorthwyth

man was
soorthwyth

man was
soorthwyth

man was
soorthwyth

man was
soorthwyth

of the vse and profyt

for any necessity, but only for recreation. *Wher e no need*
 and account indement, that of all the trees in Paradyse he
 might lawfully eate, so that he abstained fro the tre of the
 knowlage of good & euil. **Th** God perceiuing that as yet
 ther was no creature made like vnto a man, which might
 be an helper and companion vnto him, he forthwith caste
 Adam into a slumber, and toke a ryb out of hys syde, fyl-
 lylng the place with fleshe, wherof he made the woman,
 and vrought her vnto hym, whome whan Adam sawe, he
 lired. *This is now* **T**his is nowe bone of my bones, and fleshe of my fleshe,
 she shalbe called woman, because she is taken out of the man, vher
 fore man shall forsake his father and mother, and shall cleane vnto
 his vvyfe, and they shalbe two in one fleshe. The lorde blessed the m
 and sayed, Encrease and multiply, and fyll the erth, and subdue it,
 and be ye lorde ouer the fysbes in the see, the foules of the ayre,
 and all beastes that moue on the earth. **B**ut man, whan he
 was in this hygh felicitye, coulde not perceyue it, for the-
 rough the craft of the enuious serpent (whych a lytle be-
 fore for his outragious pryde was dzyuen out of heauen)
 and the prouocatyon of the woman, he transgressed the
 commandemente gyuen to hym by god, wherfore they
 were dzyuen out of paradyse, and made subiecte to deathe
 synne, and all kyndes of misery, for the earth was restrey-
 gned, that it shulde no more brynge forth frutes of it selfe,
 but by sweat and peynfull labors they shoulde leade their
 lyues. **T**han came syckenesse vppon them, and heate and
 cold began to assaile theyr tender bodyes. **F**or whan they
 began to synne, god byd open the power of Sathan, and
 agaynst hym, of the seede of the woman, he promised that
 Chyste shuld come, and destroy the power of Sathan, and
 deliuer vs free from death and synne. **T**hys was the fyrst
 declaracion of the gospell, whych began the kyngdome
 of Chyste and the Church. And so Adam and Eua tooke
 comforte of the promyse of Chyste, and of these two pers-
 ons the church beganne.

After that they were thus exiled out of paradyse, the ho-
 ly scriptures do testifye, that they broughte forth chylzen,
 and that Cayn was the first chyld begotten, and after many
 other, Abell. **T**hese two brethren were the founders of
 two contrary ctyes, Babel and Hierusalem; by the one

is vnderstande confusyon, and by the other the bysson of peace. Their father taughte them to feare god, and wor-
shipp hym with sacryfices, Cayne was of an unhappy dys-
posicion, geuen vnto all vices, and was the firste that tyla-
led the earthe he offered alwayes the mooste vyle thynges
vnto god. Abell the yonger, was of contrary condicions:
he gaue hym selfe to vertue, and in all thynges that he
wente about, he thought god to be present, his occupacion
was in keepynge of bestes, and gaue vnto god the best of
all thynges. For in theyr sacryfices his offering, with spere
descendynge from heauen, was forthwith consumed, but
his brothers remayned vntouched. Wherefore Cayn (per-
ceyvinge that his brother was of God preferred before
hym) with malice, and disdeine therat stirred, slewe hym.

In this bystorie is declared the anger and fure of the
deyll, and also the infirmite and weakenes of man, be-
sydes the gracious and earnest sentences of the iudgemente
of God, and of the terrible vengeance of god for the effusy-
on of bloude, whiche were to long to recite in this place.

After that Cayne, the fyrste murderer, fled from his fa-
ther, he bullded the fyrste cytie in the orient, and named it
Enoch, after the name of his first sonne. Hys chyldren in-
uented al kyndes of craftes and sciences. Finally he was
punysht for the murder that he committed, and perpe-
shed by suche a kynde of deathe.

Aball, the son of Lamech by Ada his wyfe, first made
the portatyn tentes, for to feede his cattell, & ordered hys
flockes, disseuerynge the shepe from the goates, and founde
out the certayne tyme whan the rammes shoulde be put to
the ewes, and taughte it other.

Tuball, his brother, a man of singuler wytte, inuented
the science of musike, by the strokes and noyse of the ham-
mers of his brother Tubalcayn, whych was a smyth.

For deloyting in the sound of the hammers, by the weighe
of theim, he perceyued the proporcions and tunes, that
the hammers gaue, and thereby deuyled the pynccples
of musike.

Tubalcayn thei brother, and sonne of Lamech by hys
other wyfe Sela, first inuented the fynyng out of mete-
tall, and the workynge therof.

The firste parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.
131

The yere
before
Christe.
3831

A Poema also founde out the vse of trolle, wyth the ears
dyng, spynnyng, and weauynge therof.

After the death of Abell, and crile of Cayn, Adam, whā
he was an. C. xxx. yeres of age, begate Seth, who gane
him selfe to vertue, and to encrease and sette forth the
gloze of god. Of this Seth the holy fathers were begot-
ten, whose posteritie continued, but the posteritie of Cain
was destroyed in the vniuersall flood. Iosephus wyrteth,
that Adam and Seth made two columnes or pillours, one
of brasse, the other of stone (for they foresawge an exter-
mination of all thynges to be, one by the power of fyre,
the other by the violence and greatnesse of the waters)
graued therein those thynges, whiche they hadde inuented
wyth the prophetes, by the whiche the woorde of God
myghte be preserved, so that they shoulde remaine as a
perpetuall monnment to theyr successors, to declare what
had been doone. He wyrteth furthermoze, that they di-
uided the yere into. xii. monthes, and fyrste obserued and
taught the course of the celestiall bodyes. For it is vnpos-
sible, that mans wyt coulde attayne to the vnderstantyng
of so hyghe and dyscyle thynges, excepte god had shewed
the knowlage therof.

136

3727

Seth, in the. xcs. yere of his lyfe, begat Enos. He began
to call vpon the name of the lord. What of this? Dyd
not his father and graundfather call vpon the lord? Was
there euer any iust man, that called not vpon him? What
fore that was that properly attributed to him onely, why-
che is commune to all good men? Because (after S. Au-
gustyne) there ought to be vnderstande in Enos the felow-
shyppe of godly men, because he lyued not after the power
of the worldly felicitye, but accordyng to the wyll of god.

326

3637

Caynan was borne in the. 91. yere of the lyfe of his fa-
ther Enos, he is the fourthe in order of the fathers from
Adam, in the genealogy of the ryghteous men, but begote
ten in the thirde generation. For in the fyrste generacyon
Seth was borne, in the seconde Enos, in the thyrde Cay-
nan: in the fourth Malalehell: in the fyfte Jared: in the
sixt Enoch: in the seventh Mathusalem: in the eighte La-
meth, and in the nynt was Noe borne, who is the tenth
to Adam. For proprely (accordyng to the mynde of S. Au-
gustine

gustine, the beginning of Adam was no generacion, but a formacion: Nevertheless the plasmacion of Adam is reckned among the generacions, where he is accompted in the fyrst. Seth in the second, and so consequently, whyche maner is moze bled.

In the 70. yere of hys lyfe, Caynan begat Malalehell, that whyche Macrobius doeth onely a trybute unto the Egyptians shulde haue ben moze better attributed to the Hebrewes. Amonge whom ther was alwayes a certayne course of the yere, whyche by the circuitte of the same was obserued. The yere was than of. xii. monethes, as it is now: the moneth conteyned that tyme, as it dothe now, the hole course of the moone, the daye lykewyse of. xxiij. houres, wherby woorthely is refused the errours of them, whiche woulde the yeres of that age to be. x. tymes shorter than they be now. which the holy icrypture testifieth to be false. The flood began in the. vi. C. yere of the lyfe of Noe, in the. xviij. daye of the seconde moneth, and celled the. xx. daye of the same moneth, in the yere folowinge, in whiche place the. xi. moneth is read. Whereby it appereth, that there was no fewer monethes in a yere, than there be now. And as they liued than muche longer than we do now: so it is playne, that they had farre greater bodies than we haue now. Saynte Angustyne writeth, that he hym self sawe in Utica, the thicke to the of a man, of so credyng greatnesse, that it myghte well haue made a hundred of our teeth. And there he alledgeth the sentence of Pliny, that the longer that tyme passeth, the lesser bodies shall be ingendred.

Malalehell, in the. lxx. yere of hys lyfe, begate Jared. It hath been of long tyme in questyon, whether the fathers of this auntyent tyme were so longe wythout children, untill they were borne whiche be named in the genealogie, whan that the writer of this holy bystorye intended to come to the birth and life of Noe, notyng the tyme by succession of generacions, he onely recited those, from whom Noe was finally descended.

Jared, in the. 262. yere of his age, begat Enoche. There were two Enoches, one the fyrst sonne of Cayn, the other the seventh in the lyne of the iust men. By the name of the yere, a cite was builded in the earthe. The holynesse of the

The yere of the world. The yere before Christe.

379

4958

461

3502

829

3340

The origiuall of man

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
before
Christe.

688	3275	the later dooeth appere in that it is written, that he hath walked wyth god, and that he hath prophesied of the tymes to come.
		I n the .6. yeeres of hys lyfe Enoch begat Methusalem, the scripture doeth recite, he was of longest lyfe, presygnifying the eyght tyme of resurrection whiche shal begin in the laste daye, and neuer after haue ende.
875	3088	M ethusalem in the .187. yeere of hys lyfe begatte Lamech, after whose byrthe he lyued .782. yeeres, and dyed in the yere of the floude. He was bozne in that tyme, whan that wyckednes and malyce began to abounde vppon the earthe, not onely amongst the chyl dren of Cain, but also amonge those whiche were called the chyl dren of the godly. Thys Lamech was not onely a iuste man, but also a prophete, whan he sayed, he shal comfort vs.
930	3033	A dam our fyrste father deceased, whan he was .930. yere of age.
987	2976	E noch in this season was by god taken vp into heuen, whiche deede dooeth manifest vnto vs the immortallite that remayneth after thys lyfe, and that God wyll iudge the worlde, who wyll saue those that be ryghteous, and damne them that be wycked.
1057	9062	L amech, whan he had lyued .182. yeeres, begatte Noe, sayinge. This shal comforte vs frome the woorkes and laboures of sure handes in the earthe, whiche the lord hath cursed.
1556	2404	N oe, whan he was .500. yeeres of age, begatte Sem, Cham, and Japhet, not that they were bozne all at one tyme, but that before the fyue hundred yeere of his age he had begot none of them. After the recyfall of the byrth of the sonnes of Noe, forthwyth the holy scripture declareth the occasyon of the floude, because the worlde began to ware wicked: and there is reherled amonge the chyefe of their vices, the contempte of god, adultery, and crueltie, in the whiche they exercised all kyndes of holuptye and pleasure. For thus the terte hath: whan that men began to multiplye vpon the carthe, and brought forth daughters, the chyl dren of god, seynge the daughters of men to be fayre, tooke theym to their wyues. The holy scripture calleth the chyl dren of god

god, all those whiche descended from Seth, and the chyl-
 dzen of men those, whiche issued from Cain. For Adam
 commanded, that the chylzen of Seth shulde in no wyse
 couple with the chylzen of Cain: which long tyme was
 obserued, till that the zeale and loue of vertue decayed.
 God therby perceyving, that the wickednes of man was
 great vpon the erth, repented that he had made man, not
 that there is any suche passion in god, but that the scrip-
 ture so speaketh to vs after a familiar and worldly ma-
 ner: and therfore thzerned a destruction to the world by
 a floudde, and wolde therfore Noe to declare this. 120.
 yeres before it shulde come. In the meane tyme he com-
 manded hym, that he should builde an arke, that shoulde
 conteyne in lengthe. 300. cubites, whiche after the expo-
 sition of Hugo and S. Augustine, were. 300. perches, eue-
 ry cubite geometricall beyng six comon cubites: in widede-
 nesse it was. 1. perches, and in depenesse, from the byper
 decke to the bottome. xxx. perches, and the rouse ouer it
 in height one perche. This arke was not by mans power
 brought into the sea, but by the course of the waters, ry-
 syng by, it was bozne awaye, and rather by the diuine
 prouidence, than by mans policie, it was gouerned from
 rennyng to wecke. Noe began to builde this in the. 523.
 yere of his lyfe, before the floud, as Berossus witnesseth,
 78. yeres. In the. vi. C. yere, the seconde moneth, the lord
 saied vnto Noe, that after seven dayes this deluge shulde
 fall, in whiche space he brought into the arke, his stuffe,
 prouision, and al other thynges necessary for hym. Where-
 at euery man laughed, and toke hym as one madde, that
 dreamed of suche a floud. But finally (as it is wrytten in
 the gospell) thei were eatyng and drynkyng, they married
 and wer married, euen vnto the daye that Noe entred the
 arke, and wolde not knowe it vntill the deluge came, and
 destroyed them all. Not that it was vnknewen vnto them
 but that thei dispised to beleue it. For Noe shewed it to
 them as well in woorde as in deede. Also the buyldyng of
 the arke was a certaine declaracion therof, but thei were
 without faith and feare of God, for whiche cause they
 were worthily punished. Thus the tyme passyng, the. 17.
 days.

The firste parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

1656

The yere
before
Christ

2307

daye of the seconde moneth. Noe with his wife, and thre sonnes, and theyr wiues entred the arke. And beholde, so deynly there came together vnto him bestes of al kindes, not brought thither by man, but euen by the miracle of god. Neither did Noe take theym, but suffered theym as they came to entre, ne there came anye more than of breane beastes two, a male and a female, of cleane bestes seuen, foure males and thre females, of the which one male was reserved for sacrifice after the floud, the residue were kept for generacion.

¶ Thus they being entred, the lord shut the doore of the arke, and incontynēt the springes of the sea burst out, the windowes of heauen opened, the rain fel continually. xl. dayes, and xl. nightes, the waters swelled and rose aboue al mountaynes. xv. cubites. All lyuing creatures dyed, except fishe, and suche as mighte endure in the bowels of the earth. The waters encreased, a. Cl. daies, and on the. xlii. daye of Decembre, the arke stacke vpon the mountaynes of Armeny. The last daye of Ianuer Noe opened a windowe, and put forth a crowe, which straight waies returned. After seven daies he put forth a dooue, which came againe at nyght, bringinge a branche of Oliue with grene leaues: Neuerthelesse he tarped seven other daies, and put forth the doue agayne, whych neuer returned. Yet wold he not issue out, but remained for the comaundement of the lord, who commaunded him, not to go forth before the. xlii. daie of the seconde moneth: wherby it appeareth, that he remayned a full yere in the arke.

¶ Berossus the Caldei maketh mencion of this floude in this maner: Before the famous deluge of waters, wherby the hole world perished, there preceded manye yeaeres, which of our Caldians were faithfully obserued. They wyte, that about Libanum was a great citee of gigantes called Enoch, who were lordes of the world from the rising of the sonne tyl the sonne sette. They trustinge in the hugenes and strenght of theyr bodyes, with armure that they had inuented, oppressed all men. They deuised tentes, musical instrumentes, and all delycacies: they sedde with mans fleshe, and companied comunly with theyr mothers

mothers, daughters, sisters, men, and beastes: there was no wickednesse, which they omitted. Then many prophesied and preached, that a destruction shoulde come, whiche they did wyte in stones, but they scorned al thinges: There was one of these gianter, wiser then all the other in Siria, whose name was Noa: he with his thre sonnes, Ham, Japeto, Chem, and theyr wyues Titea, Pandoza, Noela, and Noegla, fearinge this destruction, whiche he perceluzed by the starres, began to make a shippe in facion of an arke. 78. yeres before the flood. In the same yere that the shippe was finished, sodainly the ocean swelled, and all the seas, floudes, and springes, rose aboue the mountaines, with continual rayne that fel from the heuens, wherby all mankinde perished, excepte Noa with his familie, who were saued in the shipp, whiche the waters bore vp to the toppes of the mountayn Cordeir, wher in my time remained part therof. These be the woordes of Berolus, who with his Caldeans are deceined in this, that they thinke Noe to foresee the flood by the starres, and not by the diuine reuelacion.

¶ When Noe had continued a yere in the arke, the waters being assuaged, and the erth dried, god commaunded him to come forth, vnto whom incontinent he buylde an aultare, and offred of beastes and byrdes a dylectable sacrifice. Then god instituted as it were a newe worlde agayne. First of al, he gaue his woorde, by the whiche he promised, that he woulde no more destroye the worlde with water: and for the confyrmacion thereof, he gaue the rayne bowe for a sure token betwene him and man. For in that bowe is exprest bothe the colours of water and fyre, the one part being blew, the other red, that it might be a witness of bothe the Judgementes, the one past, the other to come: Also he graunted libertee to eat flesh, whiche the holy fathers before the flood neuer vsed. Moreover, god gaue a newe precepte for the administration of external thinges, and commaunded more plainly, that whosoeuer shed mannes blood, his blood should be spilt agayne of theym, to whom it was lawfully committed, that is by the magistrates and rulers, for man is made to the similitude of god. This Noe sayth.

Call.

full.

The firste parte of

full vnto god, and an other father vnto mankynde, ha-
uyng in the space of .100. yeres his issue wonderfully in-
creased, beyng also throughtly learned in the knowlage
of diuine and humayne thynges, in the reuolucion of ti-
mes, in the histories of the worlde passed, but moſte ſpe-
cially in iuſtice and relygion, deuided the worlde into thre
partes, whiche he hym ſelf in the residue of his life pera-
grated, leauynge in all places perpetuall monumentes
bothe of his vertue, and also of his empire. He inuented
also the vse of wyne, with whiche he was made drunke,
so that he laye vnhonestly diſcouered. Who beyng ſene of
Cham, the father of Canaan, was of hym ſcorned, and
in deriſion broughte his twoo bretherne to beholde this
ſight: but they, moued with ſhamefaſtneſſe and honeſtee,
couered their fathers membris, and wolde not ſee them.
The whiche whan Noe perceiued, he bleſſed them, but
Cham he wolde not curſe, becauſe the lord bleſſed hym:
therefoze he curſed Chanaan his nephew, the ſonne of
Cham: who, as ſome ſuppoſe, derided also hys graund-
father. He liued after the flood .350. yere, and for his ſun-
dry benefittes, ſhewed vnto all nacions, they gaue vnto
hym diuers names: among the whiche theſe as the moſt
famous, bee celebrated: Noe, Ogyges, Fenix, Uranos,
Coelus, Sol, Protheus, Janus, Geminus, Junonius,
Quirinus, Patulcius, Bacchus, Voltumnus, Chaos,
Aleton. Seede of the worlde, and father of al goddes,
and princis. The Italians, after his diſceaſe dedicated
to hym, by the name of Voltumnus, a temple, and wor-
ſhipped hym with diuine honours and ceremonies. And
also his wife Neſta, for hir great prudence and benefittes,
obteyned theſe names: Erthe, Opis, Aretia, Neſta, Cy-
bele, the greates mother of the goddis, who taught the
maydens to kepe the holy fyre, whereof aroſe the erroure
and ceremonies of the virgins Neſtales. The residue of
their actes ſhalbe declared in order, as they were dooen.
¶ After the vniuerſall flood, the worlde by the children
of Noe, was ſhortly replenished with people. For god, or
nature, neuer yet fayled the neceſſitee of thynges. Of
them there aroſe many famous and mighty nacions.

Sem, the prince of Asia, called also Melchisedech, a
iuſte

fast and peaceable kyng, and priest of almighty god, from whom Chyste lineally descended, possessed all Asia with his children. For of Cham came fyrst the Persians: of As-
sur the Assyrians: of Arpharat the Chaldeans: and of
Aram the Syrians.

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
before
Chyste

Cham, the seconde sonne of Noe, prince of Aphyrike, called also Innus, Iucubus, Splyuanus, Pana, Saturn of Aegypt, the raiser and spreader of the wickednesse punished with the floude, inhabited the southe parte of the worlde, with his familie. Of Canaan, came the Canaanites, of Phuth the Libyans, of Mezraim the Aegyptians, of Chus the Aethiopians, and of Saba the Arabians.

Japhet, prince of Europa, called also Japetus Priscus, Dyzis, Maurus, Athlas, receiued of his father Noe, for his porcion, all the countreyes of Europe, from the Gades, called at this tyme the streictes of Marrock, vnto the greete ryuer Tanais. Of hym came these princis and nacions: Comerus Gallus, who fyrst reygned in Italy: Magog, of whom came the Scythians, and of them the Turkes: Madaus, of whom sprange the Medes: of Iauan the Grecians, whiche were called Iones: of Tubal the Spaniardes: of Mosoch the Moscouites: and of Tyzas the Thracians. I haue brievely declared, what parte of the worlde euery of the sonnes of Noe inhabited, whiche to the vnderstandynge of manye histories shall bee necessary.

Sem, the sonne of Noe, in the .100. yere of his lyfe begat Arpharat two yere after the floud. He fyrste builded the citee of Sale, called after Hierusalem. Of this Arpharat came the Chaldeans.

2304

Arpharat, whan he was .xxxv. yeaeres of aeger, begate Sale, who was father of the Indians.

2269

Sale, in the .xxx. yere of his lyfe, begat Heber, and liued after that .403. yeres. In the house of Heber continued the language, that afore was commune to all men, whiche after was called hebreue.

2239

Heber, in the .34. yere of his life, begat Phalech and Jectan, and liued after that .430. yeres. Phalec is interpreted Diffusion, because it chaunced hym to be borne in the tyme of the confusion of the tungen.

2205

C.iii.

Pha

The firste parte of

The yere
of the
worlde
1788

1757

The yere
before
Christe.
1175

2206

A Phalech, when he was .xxx. yere of age, begat Ken, and liued after .209. yeres. The fyrste yere of the lyfe of Ken was the first yere of the reigne of Nemroth in Babylon, where he raigned .lvi. yeres.

After the flood, mankinde being increased, the cytye and towre of Babylon began to be buylded amonge the Chaldeis. For Nemroth, after he had by force brought his borderers vnder subiection, exhorted to his enterpryse Nectan, comen of the stocke of Sem, and Suphuc, one of the chyldren of Japhet. For by these thre princes gouernance and fortune, the hole posteritee of See was ruled. Nemroth was a man veray bold and eloquent in tynge, and sayed: That the felicitye of man ought not to be ascribed vnto god, but that rather euerye man obteyneth it by his owne industrie. For which cause he perswaded the people to builde an high towre, ouer the whiche the water shuld not arise, and that the top thereof shoulde reache euen to the heauens. The multitude were ready to fulfill the commaundementes of Nemroth, esteeming the obeytaunce of god to be a greuous bondage, and builded the towre. But as soone as they began, God forthwith (as the holpe scripture testifieth) by this meane dashed the pryde of the buylders. That where so many nations gathered together, which in number were .lxx. vnto but one language or speche, god so confused theyr tongues, that euery one of theim spake in sundry speches, that the one might not vnderstand the other: wherby of necessitee the woork was lefte vnfinisshed, and they scattered abrode throught al the world.

After this varietee of tongues chaunced, dyuers kynedes of monstrous people were brought forth in sundry places. S. Augustine in his booke intituled by citty of god, writeth in this maner: God knowing in what similitude or diuersitie of the membres of mans body, the beaultie therof is comprehended, wold also bring into the worlde many monstrous people, that therby the pryde of man might be abated. Therefore what so euer maner men be borne in any place, so that they be creatures reasonable, mortal, and begotten of man, ought not to be doubted, albeit they be deformed, and contrary to our nature.

The

The first Monarchie.



It is to be vnderstand, that those things, which be done of magistrates and rulers, ought to be taken and honoured as the worke of god. We haue warned afoze i our p̄face, that god wold the world to be gouerned by. iiii. monarchies, ȳ policie, iustice, a coꝛrectiō might be kept amōg mē: therfoze many thinges be spoken of them in scripture. God did see forth these monarchies or empires to Daniel by two visions. The first vnder the similitude of a man, whose head was of golde, his bzeast of siluer, his bealy of brasse, his legges of yron, his fete, parte of yron, parte of earth: and howe chȝist the stone brake the fete, that the man should fal, and so the world to ende. Daniel interpreted this vision to signify the. iiii. monarchies. For (sayeth he) the golden head signifieth the first monarchie, which was of the Assyrians: the siluer bzeast, the kingdome of the Persians: the brassen bealy, the reygne of the Macedons: the yron legges, the empire of the Romaines: the earthen and yron fete, do betoke this present state of the empire of Rome, because that at this season it is of lesse power and reputation than it hath bene.

The foure beastes that were shewed vnto Daniel, signified the figure of these monarches. The Lion declared the strength of the Assyrians: the beare the power of the Persians: the leopard the valiant courage of Alexander: the fourth beast the puissaunce of the Romaines.

There is more ouer, that other cruel kingdomes shuld rise, whiche should ordeine harde and straight lawes against the religion of Chȝist: by whome is vnderstande the reygne of Mahomettes and Turkes at these dayes.

So faithfully God remembreth vs, that the histories of the world knowen, we maye consider the ende thereof to be at hande, and that by this meanes we maye establishe our sayth.

It appereth in the Bible that the first kyngdome was begun

The firste parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
before
Christe.

begun by Nemroth amonge the Babylonians, whom the scripture calleth a stronge hunter before the lord, that is a mightye prince, who by force brought people to his subjection. In that he was called a hunter, is signified, that he was a decelerer of soules, an oppresser of men: and for that he withdrew men from the true religion of God, he was so called.

1788

2175

This Nemroth, called also Nimrod, and Babylonians call Saturne, was the sonne of Chus, who was the son of Cham. He began the first empire, and reigned .56. yeres. He builded the towre Babel, whiche he left unfinished: and finally for his wickednes was of the infernal spirites rapte in to hell. Frome Nemroth, Berolus the Chaldee, and Metastenes the Persian, began their chronicles.

The firste Monarchy began among the Chaldeis, as Xenophon testifieth, and the posteritee of Cham reigned firste, of whome Nemroth had his beginnyng. All be it that Cham was cursed, yet god woderfully deferred both the punishment and promyse. Notwithstanding the empire dydde not continue in the handes of the posteritee of Nemroth. For among the Assyrians rose up a new king, dome by Assur, of whom Ninue was builded, who subdued the citee of Babylon, whiche Diodorus Siculus doeth wyte, and by this occasyon the Monarchy was changed from the Chaldeis to the Assyrians. Strabo and diuers other make mencion of the citee of Ninue, that standeth in Assyria, wherby it maye bee easily gathered, that Babylon and Ninue were two sondre cities, and not one citee, called by diuers names.

1797

2166

Comerus Gallus, in the .33. yere after the fyrst arryual of Janus in Italy, and the .1414. yere before the building of Rome, brought inhabitantes into the royaume, called after Italy, and was made the fyrst kynge thereof. He named the countrey after his owne name, and taught them bothe lawes and iustice.

1799

2164

Jubal, in the .142. yere after the Deluge, receiuyng Spain for his porcion, builded a famous citee of his own name, in that parte, whiche is now called Granada.

In the same tyme the prudente Samoths came into France,

Lanquettes Cronicle.

13

Fraunce, and there first reigned.

Oceanus, the son of Cham, first reigned in Aegipte. He by his sister Thetis had many chyldren. Then came vpon him the corrupter of mankinde Cham his father, the Aegiptian Saturne, who for the corruption of hys maners was surnamed Chamesenius, where he taught magike, and was had in great renoume.

Cog with his father Sabus possessed Arabia, Triston Libia, Chus Aethiopia, and Cetulus Cetulia.

Thuyfcon, one of the sonnes of Noe, bozne after the floud, with the chyldren of Iffus and Mesa, enhabited all the countreis from the mountain Adula to Ponthus, and from the great riuer Tanais, to the Ryne. He was the founder of the Sarmatians and Germanes, two mighty nacionis, and gaue vnto theym laue. After he had reigned. 150 yeaeres, he dyed, being of his people esteemed to be a god.

Reu, in the. 32. yeaere of his lyfe, begat Saruch.

Janus in this time brought inhabitantes into Hyzcania and Mesopotamia.

Ganges, of his owne name founded him an habitacion in India. And certayne people came out of Italy from Comerus, who inhabited Bactria.

Nemroth, the Babilonical Saturne, sent forth these princes with inhabitantes: Assyrius, Medus, Moscus, and Magog, who inhabyted the roialme of Assyria, Media, Moscouia, and Scithia.

Nowe that we be come to the habitacion of Scithia, we shal briezly declare theyr histories. The nacyon of the Scithians, bothe in theyr originall beginnynges and empires, were no lesse renoumed by theyr women, than by theyr men. They thys obtained the empyre of Asia, whiche they kept tributarie vnto them, vntyl the tyme of Xerxes, they them selves remaining continually without the subiection of other princis. They put to shamesfull flight Darius king of Persia, the ouerthrow Zopyrion the capitaine of Alexander with his armie: in like maner they slew Cyrus with all his power. They rather heard of the Romans, than felt them. Of theym arose the nacionis of the Parthians, people verely laborious and hardy in warres.

The yere
of the
worlde
1802

The yere
before
Christ.
2168

1805

2158

1812

2151

1820

2143

1825

2138

1828

2135

1833

2130

The firste parte of

warres. Among theim no crime is so greuous as thefte, for they, hauyng their substance and cattell without houses or other defence, might haue nothyng in sauegard, yf theft were not sharpely punished. As for gold and syluer they dispise as muche as other nacions desire it. This continence hath taught theim rightuousnesse, that they neuer desyre other mens goodes. For the desyre of riches is there, where the vse of it is. Whiche moderacion and absteinyng from other mens good, I wil the vnto all men: for than truely so great warres shoulde not so longe nor among so many bee continued, neither shoulde the sword destroye more men, than the natural course of deeth shuld take away. Certes, this semeth wonderfull, that nature shuld geue vnto theim that, which the Christians by the godly wisdom of Christe, by the long preceptes and instructions of holy men, can not attein vnto. Muche more preuaileth in theim the ignorance of vices, than in vs the knowlage of vertues. Finally from theim hath come people feared full and vengeable to all the worlde, as the Alanes, Hunnes, Gothes, Bulgarois, Slauians, Turkes, and Tartarians. Moreover the women of that nation, at the river Thermodoon reuenged the deathe of their husbandes, with the slaughter of theyr ennemies: and lest that some shoulde seme more happier than other some, they slue all the men that remained, and forthwith abhorred the desyre of matrimonie, calling it rather bondage than marriage. Neuerthelesse, whan that by warre they had obtained peace, and by theyr valiaunt prowesse had conquered a great part both of Asia and Europe, stablishyng theim a kyngedome by the name of Amazons: Than lest their nacion shoulde decaye through lacke of men, they vsed the company of theyr borderers. If men children were borne, they were either slain or sent to their fathers: the women they preferred, exercisyng theim not in sowyng, spynnyng, or idelnesse, but in feates of armes, ridyng, and huntynge. The right pappes of theyr children they feared of, that it shoulde be no lette to theim in shootynge. For whych cause they were called Amazons, that is, hauynge but one pappe. By this maner exercise they became so strong and hardy, that they feared not to fight
hande

hand to hand with the most valiant princes, Hercules, Thebesus, Achilles, and the great Alexander. But howe long time these women continued, or when they ceased, we can not certainly finde, yet we rede, that Minothea, one of theyr quenes, for the desyre to haue issue by the great Alexander, came with. 30000. women. 25. dayes iourney to him, and after thirtie dayes returned, beyng conceiued with childe.

Jupiter Belus, the sonne of Saturne, the seconde emperour of Babilon, reigned. 62. yeares. He founded and edified Babilon, more like a towne then a citee, and continued i peace until it was toward the end of his reigne.

Comerus, after the maner of the Scythians, frome whens he cam, taught his Italyans to make townes wth chariottes and wagons. Therfore in the Scythians tung they be called. *veii*, because they cal cartes *veias*. For long after the Scythians bled cartes and chariottes in stede of houses, vnder which they made theyr stables, and aboue theyr lodgings.

Tyrus, after he had founded Tyrum, with the chief of his people toke the sea, and inhabited Thracia. Arcadius then possessed Arcady, and Aemathius Macedonye.

Saruch, in the. rrr. yere of his life begatte Naphoz, which was the. xlii. in discent from Adam.

In this season bega the kingdome of the Sicponians, now called Mozea, where Aegialeus firste reigned. 52. yeres, and called it Aegialea.

Nachoz, when he was. 29. yeres of age, begat Thare, who was the. xix. in discent from Adam. This Thare in his youth begat Aram and Nachoz, but after by an other wife he had Abram. The childre of Aram were Lot, Sara, and Melcha.

Janus brought inhabitauntes into the fertil Arabia, who of his name were called Janniteans.

Cham came into Italy, and there, not finding Camer, rus, beganne to rule the people, and with his wickednes and vices corrupted them. Janus leauing inhabitauntes in Arabia, departed from thens, and came into Asphyke to Triton.

Triton lefte Hammon his sonne king of Libya, who

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
before
Christ.

1844

2119

1846

2117

1850

2113

1875

2088

1879

2084

1888

2079

1898

2069

1903

2862

D.ii.

take

The firste parte of

The yere
of the
world

The yere
before
Christ.

toke to wife Rheia his sister, but neuertheless unknowing to Rheia, he begat Dionisius on Amalthea, a young woman, whome he sente to be nourished into Nysa a towne of Arabie.

Belus began to be inflamed with the desyres of war, but being prevented by death, he committed to his sonne Pinus the charge, to dilate his empire. Whereto extended the golden worlde.

1906

2057

Pinus, the third emperor of Babylon, reigned .52. yeres. He was the sonne of Jupiter Belus, who first of all changed the golde worlde of Saturn, into the yron worlde violating the law of nature, wherby euery royalme was rather defended than enlarged by theyr priuate princis, whose iudgement and wyll was in steede of lawes, and were therto not chosen by ambition, but by vertue, and wisdom. But Pinus moued with a new desire of augmenting his empire, dyd first sette vpon his borderers, rude and ignorant in warres, than one victorie bringing forth an other, he subdued kynges. He put to death, Farnus the king of Media, with his wife and seven children. He drove Sabattus out of Scythia into Italy, and banquished those fierse and wild people, and deliuered Asia from theyr subiection. Than Asia beinge subdued, he ordeyned a Monarchie, and buylded Minue his regall citee, translating his empire from Babilon to Asiria. He first dedicated temples to Jupiter Belus, and Juno his parentes. Of his lignage and yeares this epitaph he did write.

Jupiter Belus is my father, saturne of Babilon is my grandfather, Chus the Aethiope saturne my great grandfather, saturne of Aegypt my great grandfathers father, coelus called also Phoenix Ogyges, vvas my great grandfathers grandfather From Ogyges to my grandfather the sunne, 131. times compassed about his sercle, fro my grandfather to my father. 65. times from my father to me. 52. tymes. Finally when he had reigned .lii. yeares, by the stroke of an arrowe, he finished all his labours and warres with his life. After whom succeeded his wife Semiramis.

1909

2054

Thuplcon, the first prince of the Germanes, instituted lawes for his people. Lykewylse did Juball amonge the Spaniards, and Samothas among his Galles. But
contra

contrary dyd Cham, the Aegyptian Saturne, for he ende-
uoured him to corrupt the Italians with his wickednes.

The yeres
of the
world

The yeres
before
Christ.

In Libya began strife betwene Rheia and Hammon for
the adulterie committed with Amalthea, and Rheia sought
for Dionisius, that she might destroye him.

Janus made his last voyage into Italy, where he found
Cham the corrupter of mankind, whome thre yere he
suffered, then appoyntinge to him certaine people, com-
maunded hym to depart thence, to whome came Rheia,
and wedded her selfe to him, then they bothe warred up-
pon Hammon, and expelled him his royaume, whyles
Cham reigned in Libya, he begat on his syster Rheia, Os-
yris, whom he named Jupiter. Europa, the second king
of Sydonia reigned. xlii. yeres.

1924

2039

Janus made his habitation in Janiculum a towne of
Tuscan, which he builded, where he ordeined his sonne
Cranus the gouernour of his comune weale, whom the
Romaines called Quirites.

1927

2036

Dyonisius the sonne of Hammon, with great power,
expelled Cham and Rheia out of his fathers royaume, and
retained with him Osyris, whom he adopted to his sonne
calling him by the name of his father Jupiter Hammon,
and gaue vnto him the hole realme of Aegypt.

At the same time was Pallas a maide cast out by the
lake Triton, who of the same Dionisius was adopted to
his daughter. She first taught the Libians all the feates
pertaining to warre.

There, in the. 70. yere of his life, begat Abraham, but
he had before by an other wife Nachor and Aram. Aram
begot Loth, Melcha and Abraham Jescha.

1949

2014

The end of the first parte.

Prologue to the second part.

Hereto extendeth the firste age, wherein is compre-
hended all suche thinges as chaunced betwene the
tymes of Adam and Abraham. For these be the
first two thousand yeres, during which time the world

D.iii.

Goode

The firste parte of

stode without any prescript administracion, or certayne lawe, by the woorde of god. The second age beginneth here at the byrth of Abraham, and continueth to the coming of Christ, albeit as touching the iust number of the yeres, this worlde is not complete: because, as we haue warned afoze, god hasteth to the consummacion thereof. Yet this is the verie and propre age of the worlde, in which circumcision and the lawe were geuen, with certayne policies, and the true veneracion of god also instituted. Wherin also the mightye kyngdomes and monarchies succeeded one an other. For the worlde neuer declared at any tyme his myght and power, as he dyd in this age. At this place Eusebius began his chronicles, who following the verities of the hebrues, might greatlye haue profited his posteritee, but because he ensued the grecke exemplars, he greatly erreth in computacion of yeaeres.

The second parte.



IN THE ende that ye shal knowe in what place the word and church of God was, we will shewe somewhat of the spiritual kingdome. Abraham, the prince of sayth, was borne in Ur, a towne of Chaldee, the 292. yere after y^e vniuersal floud, the 44. yere of the reigne of Ninus, & the 1262. yere before y^e building of Rome, whē the true honor & woode of god begā to cease in the royaume of Chaldea, Thare went fro thens to Mesopotamia, with his sonne Abraham, because he wold not be defiled with y^e wicked supersticions and idolatrie of the Babylonians. The scripture calleth this idolatrie y^r chaldeorum, that is, the fyre of Chaldee. For when in the sacrifices of the godly the fyre falling from heauen, burned theyr sacrifices, the vngodly folowinge the example of theym, kyndled theyr fire, and so instituted a new honouring of god, wythout the knowlage of the coming of Christ. This fire is called Ori masda, that is to say, the holy ster, whyche kynges
come

commanded to be bozne before them vpon horses : For the first occasion of idolatry, by this fier began amonge men, before that images were in vble. Therfore Abraham the mighty and renoumed father of the elect nation, lest he his countrey and kynnsfolkes, by the commaundement of god, and takyng with hym Lot, wente to sojourne in the lande of Canaan. From whens shortly after, thorough greate famine, he was constrained to go into Aegypte, where he, fearyng the foule lustes of the Aegyptians, woulde not be knowen of Sara to be his wyfe, for to auoide the danger that myght chaunce through the beaue-tee of hir. He there (as Josephus writeth) declared god to be the creator of all thinges, teachyng them the sciences of Arithmetike and Astrologie. Finally he retourned into Cananee, where he deuised the countreie, Lot choosyng Sodome, and Abraham Hebrō. After this Lot was taken, whom Abraham deliuered, and rescued the spoyle, which the pryncis of Assyria had taken, and receiued with blessyng of Melchisedech, kyng of Salem and high priest of almighty god (called also Sem the son of Noe) bread and wine: to whom Abraham gaue the tenth of his praye. The apostle sayeth, that this Melchisedech was without genealogie, because his progenie is not reuerfed in the scripture. Than Abraham begat on Agar his maid Ismael, of whom cam the Ismaelites, afterwarde called Sarracenes. Finally in the .99. yere of his age, beyng thysle blessed of God, and hys name increased, the promise of the euerlastyng testamente, by the circuncion of the fleshe confirmed, he, accorpyng to the commaundement of god, begate on the olde and barayne Sara hys worthy wyfe, the gentil Isaac, beyng bothe promised and blessed of god: whom he circumcised, and woulde have offered in sacrifice, had not god, seyng his prompt obedience, letted hym. At the lasse, whan this molle holpe patriarche had geuen Rebecca, the daughter of Bethor, to Isaac, to bee his wyfe, he died, beyng a.175. yeres of age, whose holy body his sonnes Isaac and Ismael buried in the tumber, where his wyfe Sara laye.

Hiberius the sonne of Juball, gouerned the Spaniards, of whom they were called. Hiberi.

The yere
of the
world

The yere
before
Chr. A.

1954

2009

200

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde
1956
1958

The yere
before
Christ.
2007
2005

Cogus the sonne of Samotes, reigned amonge the
Gaules, who buylded many towne.

Scolanista Semiramis, the widowe of Ninus, reigned
42. yeaeres, who excelled al other in chivalry, magnify-
cence, triumphes, victories, and richesse. She at the fyrst
feigned her selfe to be the sonne of Ninus. Than she be-
yng taken for a man, did so bāquish the contempt of hir
kinde with the worthynesse of hir actes, that she confes-
sed what she was, and what she had feigned her selfe: nei-
ther did thys diminishe the dignitee of her empire, but
greatlye aduanced the renoume thereof, that a woman
should not onely excelle al other women in manlye pro-
wesse, but also all men. She stronglye fortified Babylon
with sumptuous buyldinges, walles, and dyches, that it
seemed rather of her builded than enlarged. Furthermore
being not contente onely to defende the borders of her
kingdome, gotten by her husbande, but also brought Aes-
thiope vnder hir subiectiō, yea and made warre into In-
dia, wherin neuer one durst enter, but onely she, and the
great Alexander. Finally Semiramis, being in vnlaw-
ful desires, thirstinge bloude, and destroyinge all those,
with whom she had companied, was for the same desyre
that she had to her owne sonne) of him slayne. She first
invented the vse of breeches, and commaunded al the ladies
of her courte to vse the same, whiche vntill this tyme is
observed among the Aegyptians. Plutarch writeth, that
in her life she caused hir tūbe to be made, about the why-
che this saying was grauen. vwhat so euer king nedeth mo-
ney, opening this tūbe, let him take as much as he lyst.

Wherefore Darius opening it, found therein no monie, but
a certain letter, wherein was wyrtten, Except thou vvere a
riotous persone, & one that vwith money coldest neuer be satis-
fied, thou vvoldest not haue opened the chest of a dead carkeis.

The Aegyptian Iuno, otherwise called Isis, was bozne
of Rheia and Cham in Aegypt.

Sabastius Saga sayled out of Pontus into Italye to
his father Janus, who gentelly receyuing him, after few
yeres made him gouernour ouer the Aborigines.

Mannus the sonne of Thyselcon, reigned after hys fa-
ther among the Sarmatians, and Germanes.

1953

2002

Sel,

	The yere of the world	The yere before Christ.
¶ Selchim the thirde kinge of Peloponessus, now called Mozea, reigned. 20. yeres.	1969	1994
¶ Sabatius ordayned Sabu ruler ouer the Sabines, and Abozignes, he him selfe inhabitinge the countreie aboute Janiculum, where he decessed.	1979	1984
¶ Treuers, a cytie of Germanye, was builded in this time of Trebeta, the brother of Pinus.		
¶ Apis, the fourth king of Peloponessus, resigned. 25. yeres of whom that countreie was called Apia.	1989	1974
¶ Amonge the Spanyerdes reigned Jubalda, the sonne of Hiberius.	1990	1973
¶ In Crete now called Candie, reigned first Cres, of whō the Ilande was named.	1995	1968
¶ Semiramis, with a mightye power, indicted warre to Staurobates kinge of India, where she beinge overcome and wounded, by flight, saued hir selfe.	1996	1967
¶ Janus, after the death of Sabacius, ordyned Cranus kinge of the Italians, in the. 1211. yere before the buyldinge of Rome.	2000	1963
¶ Zameis Anias, the sonne of Pinus and Semiramis, the fyfth Emperoure of Assyria, reigned after the death of his mother. 38. yeres, he did nothinge worthe of remembrance, for settynge asyde all delyre of warres, he seemed to haue chaunged his kinde with his mother, and beinge seldome seene of menne, he spent his lyfe in the companie of women. Neuerthelesse he adourned the temples of the Goddes.	2000	1963
¶ Satron reigned amonge the Canles, he instituted publicke scholes of letters, that therby the wildenes of the people might be refrained and brought to a ciuile conformitie.	2007	1958
¶ Inghevon, the thirde kinge of the Germaines, succeded his father, as yet in vncertaine habitacions.		
¶ Noe, called also Janus, payed his debte to Nature, the. 350. yere after the vniuersall deluge. The Italians, after his decease, dedicated to him by the name of Mortumnus a temple. And woorthipped him with diuine honours and ceremonies.	Codem	Anno
¶ In this season Osyris with his wyfe Isis, syndynge out the vse of corne, began to teache it in Palestine, and than retournynge into Aegypte, dyd there inuente the ploughe,		
C		with

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.	With those thinges that appertayne to tyllage. Afterwarde they with Hercules Libys traualled throughe the world, teachinge all people their inuencions, whereby they ruled all nacions, excepte those that were vnder the obeysaunce, of the empyre of Assyria, and destroyed tyzannes, which op- pressed al nacions. Finally, whan he returned into Aegypt he was by his brother Typhon slaine, and hewed in. 26. pietes, according to the numbze of the conspiratozs: whose death his wyfe Isis and Hercules reuenged.
2014	1949	¶ Thelassius, the fyfte kynge of Peloponessus, reigned. 52. yeares.
2024	1939	¶ Abraham, by the comaundement of God, forsoke his pa- rentes, countrie, and kinsfolkes, and taking with him Lot, soiourned in the lande of Canaan. ¶ Necho Pharao toke from Abraham his wyfe Sara, for whiche deede he was by sundrie plages of god punysshed, and delpyered hir againe vndefiled.
2032	1931	¶ A lyttell before the death of Pinias, Chamesennus in a manner dzyuen out of all places, gotte vnto the Bactrians, whom by his magicall inchauntementes he had so bounde vnto him, that amongst them he reigned with great po- wer, where he gathered an armye, and inuaded the Assy- rians. Againste whome came Pinias, and slewe hym, and shortely after dyed.
2036	1927	¶ Abraham begate Ismaell on Agar the handmayde of Sara, of whom came the nacion of the Ismaelites, whiche after were called Sarracenes.
2038	1925	Arius the sixt emperoꝝ of Assyria, reigned. 30. yeres, he ad- ded to his empire Bactria and the mountaines Caspii.
2048	1915	Circumcision was instituted for an everlastinge coue- naunte to the posteritie of Abraham. The same time he re- ceined thre aungels, wasshed their fete, and standing vnder a tree, serued them at the table, the tree endured vntill the reigne of Constantius the yonger. In this yere God destroyed Sodome, Gomorre, Adama, and Semois: The cause Ezechiel writeth in this maner: This vvas the iniquitye of the Sodomytes, pryde, superfluytee of meat, abundance, and idlenes, they reched not theyr handes to the poore, and dyd abhomynacions agaynst nature. This place is now called the deed sea, whose lengthe and bredth

breadth containeth certeine miles, and at this daye is full of pitche, which boileth out continuall vapours, and is a witness of the deuine indignacion & punishment for so great wickednes. Therfore in this wise god sheweth oftentimes to the worlde, that he will iudge and punish the synners, and also preserve the righteous. Neuer thelesse Lot was saued with his daughters: but his wife, looking backe, contrary to the commaundement of god, was touned into a salte stone. Then Lot by the incest of his daughters, begat Ammon and Moab, the fathers of the Ammonites and Moabites.

Damascus the moste noble citie and principall sea of Syria, was first founded by the seruantes of Abraham. This citie is distant from Hierusalem sixe daies iourney. In the which the holi apostle Saint Paule was baptised, and was afterwarde by him conuerted. It was a certain while possessed of the chrysten men. But Saladin the great Souldan, toke it from vs.

Isaac the sonne of Abraham by his wife Sara was in this time bozne, a man beloued of God, of whose lignage Chyriste descended. He represented the fygure of Chyriste, whan God commaunded his father to offre him in sacrifice, wherby was signified that Chyriste should be an oblation, which should satisfy for synne and deathe. When he therfore should haue bene sacrificed by his father, and was come both to the altare and to his deathe, he exhorted his father, that with a good heart he should fulfill in him the commaundement of god: saying. My father, it were not iuste, that any should be bozne, yf he woulde refuse the iudgementes of god and his father, or wold not shewe him selfe obedient to theyr willes. After when he came to the age of .xl. yeares, he tooke Rebecca to wife: who being long time barreyne, at the last, by the fauour of god, brought forth two chyldren, the fyrst Esau, pryncce of the Idumeis: and Jacob, although the yonger, yet by the pleasure of god, bothe blessed of him, and also endued by his father with the right of the fyrste bozne was father to the .xii. patriarches. Finally, after many troubles and temptacions, with age also made blind, he gaue hys blessing not to Esau, to whome he woulde, but to Jacob, to

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
before
Chyriste

2050

1913

C.ii.

whom

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.	whom he would not. And so deceased a man endued with all vertue and of a. 180. yeares.
2057	1906	¶ Zigus reigned amonge the Spantardes.
2061	1902	¶ Aurunus, the sonne of Cranus, opteined the dominion of the Italyans.
		¶ Isaac, the sonne of Abraham, was sacryficed by his fa- ther in the. 13. yere of his lyfe, as Aben, Esra, and Salo- doo write. But Iosephus affirmeth it to be doone in the xxv. yere.
2066	1897	¶ Aegedius, the syxte kynge of Peloponessus, reygned xxxi. yeares.
2068	1895	¶ Aralius, the senenth emperoure of Assyria reigned. xl. yeares, he flourished in wiste and knowledge of warfare. and syx had in estimacion pompes, pzeious stones, and suche womanly delycates.
		Amongest the Germanes reigned Herminon. Wardus among the Gaules, by the inuēcion of sōges and musike was had in great honour.
2086	1877	Sara payed her debt to nature, and was buryed in He- bron. After whose deathe Abraham married an other wife called Cetura, by whom he had sixe sonnes. And gaue Re- becca the doughter of Bathuel, to his sonne Isaac in ma- riage.
2090	1873	¶ Aurunus in Metulonia halowed a wood to Cranus, reckening him for a god. He also dedycated a temple and ymage to Janus Voltumnus, and buylded a chapell to the god Razennus.
		¶ Apher, one of the sonnes of Cetura, the wyfe of Abra- ham, inhabited Libya: whose posteritee called the coun- treie Aphyrea.
2100	1863	¶ Thumirachus the. vii. kinge of Peloponessus, reygned xlv. yeares.
2102	1861	¶ Aurunus deceased: after whome amonge the Italy- ans succeded his sonne Palot Tages.
2106	1857	¶ Phaeton, with his people, came into Italy to Palot Tages, where findinge at the east part and mountaines enhabited with Frenche men and Abozignes, the plaine countreys wyth Janygenes, he possessed the weste partes, and shortly after retourned into Aetheope.
2108	1855	¶ The kyngdome of the Argives began, where Inachus firste

first reigned. 50. yeares.

Baleus, surnamed Ferres, the eight Emperoure of Assyria, reigned. 30. yeres, he was called Ferres, that is a conquerour or triumpher, because he ruled double the nations that Aralius did. In warre he was hardye and fortunat, and enlarged his dominion euen vnto the Indees. In the. 61. yeare of Isaac, the barreine Rebecca his wyfe, by the will of god, brought forth two chyldren. Esau and Jacob. Of Esau the Edomites had theyr begynninge in Arabia. Esau was called Edom, that is redde, because he solde his birth right, which God had blessed, for a meale of read potage, contempning the blessinge and benefite of god for the beastes sake.

Jacob was surnamed Israel, that is the pryncce of God, of whome the people of Israel, had theyr begynnyng. Afterwardes, in the. 71. yeare of his life, when Jacob had gotten the blessinge of hys father, he went into Mesopotamia, that he might auoid the displeasure of his brother, and to take a wife: where he serued seuen yeres his vncle Laban for Rachael his doughter, whiche fulfilled, Lya the elder was put in her stede, alledginge that it was not the custome, that the yonger should be first married. Thā he taried seuen dayes, and toke Rachael to wife, by a consicion to serue other seuen yeares for her. Upon these wyues, and theyr two handemaydes, begat he the. xii. holye patriarches, from whome descended the. 12. trybes of the Jewes. Of whose lyfe myghte innumerable thynges be wrytten, as of theyr fortitude, prudence, and godlinelle. Finally after many aduersitees by him sustained, he descended into Aegipte to his sonne Joseph, where he dyinge, blessed his children and nephews, whose corps his sonne Joseph sent agayne into the lande of Canaan.

They that be desyrous to reade the histories of Jacob at length, may resort to the holye byble, where in the end of the booke of Genesis, it is abundantly set forth.

Not longe afoze his death, he propheticd most plainly of Christ, and the vocacion of the Gentiles, whose prophecie, as Vincentius Gallus reherseth was this. Of the rocke of my sonne Juda shal be borne a virgyn of whom the lambe immaculate shal be borne, which is the lambe of

The yere of the worlde Edem	The yere before Christ. Anno
2110	1853

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.	of god, that by grace shall saue all men, whose kingdome shall be euerlastinge, and neuer corrupted. Therfore the great lord shall appeare in earth as a man, and shall take vpon him a mortall bodie, and shall eate as a man. His sterre shall arise in heuen, and he shall shyne in the earth as the sonne. The heauens shall open ouer him, and out of the temple no lyttel sanctificacion of glory shall come to him. He shall poure out the spirite of grace vpon vs, and you shall be his chyldren in the trnth. He shall be from Leui a priest, and from Iuda a kynge, he shall be bothe god and man, medyator betwene god and man: and shall take awaye all darkenesse, whiche is vnder the heauen: and there shall be ppeace through the vniuersall worlde. The voyce of the yll doers shall be agaynst him, not knowing his resurrection. But the bloud of his innocencie you shall receiue on your hedes. And in his passion the stones shall cleaue a sunder, the sonne shall be darkened, and all other thinges shall be troubled, the inuisible spirites shall tremble, and helle shall be spoyled, he shall open the gates of paradysse, and shall make the thretynge swoorde agaynst Adam to stande, and shall geue vnto his sayntes to eate of the wood of lyfe. Belial shall be bound by him. Then shall ye see Enoch, Noe, Sem, Abraham, Isaac, and me your father, rising in ioye from the ryght hande of god, and shall geue power to his chyldren to ouercome pernyous spirites: and as many as beleue in him on the erth, shall also reioyce. Then shall all men rise agayne, the godly to glory and ioye: the vngodly to shame and perpetuall damnacion: and most specyally he shall iudge Israel, whiche would not beleue in him. &c.
2114	1849	Tagus surnamed Dyma, reigned ouer the Spaniards, by whom the countrey was called Taga. At the same time beganne Marcus his reigne ouer the Germanes.
2124	1839	Abraham the most holy patriarch, in this tyme finished his last daye. After whose decesse there arose a great famine in the land of Canaan for whych Isaac wente to sojourne with Abimelech king of Palestine.
2128	1835	Apsis was the fyrst that was supposed to bee a god in Egypt, whom some call Serapis.

Ar.

	The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.
Armatrites, the ninth emperour of Assyria, reigned. 38. yeres, who beyng wholly giuen to voluptee and delycacies, dyd bothe inuent and amplifie those thinges, whiche appertained to pleasures.	2138	1825
Sicanus the sonne of Malot Tages, begā to reigne ouer the Italians, of whom the countrey Metulonia was named Sicania.	2141	1822
In this tyme Longho reigned amonge the Gaules.	2143	1820
Betus began his reigne ouer the Spaniardes, of whom the realme was called Betica.		
Leucippus, the eyght kyng of Peloponessus, reigned. 53. yeres.	2145	1818
In this season arose the ragious flod of Achata, wherby the hole prouince was almost destroyed.	2151	1812
Osiris, in Tracia destroyed the giant Licurgus.		
Phozoneus, the son of Inachus, the second kinge of Argiues, reigned. 60. yeres. He fyrste gaue lawes and iudgements vnto the Grecians. Not longe after the begynninge of his reigne Telchises and Carpathius kepte greuous warre againste him with doubtfull hope of victorie. But they beinge vanquished by him in battayle, were driuen out of their countrey, and ignorant of al thinges, supposynge them selues to haue ben betterly excluded from all mens company, toke for a sure possession the yle of Rhodes, before that tyme called Dphiussa.	2158	1805
Thessalus, the sonne of Grecus, fyrste reigned in Thessalia, whiche before was called (as Plinye testifieth) Emantia.	2166	1797
Deabus amonge the Spaniardes bsurped tyrannously the kyngedome, he was so called for the golde mynes and ryches, which he inuented & got, oppressing his subiectes.		
Bardus the ponger reigned amonge the Gaules.	2171	1792
Belochus, the tenth Emperoure of Assyria, reigned. 35. yeres. He had that name, bycause that with the rule of his Empire he exercised the offyce of the highe prieste of Iupiter Belus, and alwayes was occupied aboute diuinations and prophesyes.	2176	1787
Gambrius, a valiant man in armes, reigned ouer the Germans, and as their histories witnesse, was the fyrste that wooze a crowne. He inuented the makinge of beere, and		

The seconde parte of

The yere of the world	The yere before Christ.	
2117	1786	and taught his people to brewe it. In Aemathia, nowe called Macedonia, Macedon the son of Olyris began to reigne, of whome the prouince receiued that name. And aboute this time Olyris suppressed gian- tes, whiche began to vse tyrannie.
2180	1783	Jacob fled from his brother Esau, and wente to his bre- cle Laban, where after seuen yeares, he maryed Lya and Rachell, and by theim and theyr handmaydes, had the.12. Patriarches.
2198	1765	Mellapius, the.1r. kynge of Peloponessus, reigned.47. yeares.
2200	1763	Joseph, the sonne of Jacob and Rachael, a man mooste chaste and vertuous, was in this time bozne: He in his youth, by his excellent fauoure, vertue, and wysedome, excelled all his brethren, and was of his father above all the other beloued: for whiche cause and for his dreames: he was of his brethren had in great despite, and by theym sold into Aegypt, where after long imprisonment, in the 30. yere of his age, he expounded the dreames of Pharaon, by whome he was made president of Aegypte, and called the sauyour of the worlde. For God woulde, that by this merueilous occasyon, he shoulde come into Aegypte, that his power might be there knowen, and that helpe myght be ministred to Jacob and his familie in the tyme of fa- mine. This Joseph taught the Aegyptians bothe religy- on, and ciuill policies, whiche is mooste worthye to bee, ob- serued, that a man inspired with the holy ghosse, shuld in- stitute so harde and seuerer maner of administracion, and to drawe togither the hole royaume of Aegypte, a coun- trei so large and wyde, as it were the membres of one bo- dy. Wherby we may learne, that seuerite is mooste meete to keepe people in obedyence, and that it is of god appro- ued. For gentilnes corrupteth the common people. But to retourne to our purpose. After Joseph had gouer- ned the royaume of Aegypte by the space of.80. yeares, he there deceased, beinge.110. yeares of age, whose bones the Hebrues caried with theym into the lande of Behest, as Joseph bound theym to doo, in his death bead: The resy- due of his hystorie who so is desirous to reade, maye re- sorte vnto the holie byble, where in the ende of Genesis it

It is at large set furth.

The Italians beyng oppressed of the tyrranos gyantes in the tribe Palencan, called vnto theim Olyris.

Lucus began to reigne among the Baules, who gaue hym selfe to huntynge.

Olyris, subduyng all Italy, and vanquishyng those gyantes, kept the possession therof ten peres, and than leste Lestrigon his nephue, the son of Neptune, to be kyng ouer the Ianigenes.

Valus the second of that name, the .ii. emperoure of Assyria, moste famously and triumphantly reigned .52. peres: to whome willingly the Indians submitted them selues.

Joseph in this tyme was solde by his bzetherne to the Ismaelites.

Apis, the thirde kyng of Argues, reigned .35. yeaeres. He left his brother Aeglaleus kyng in Achata, and went hym selfe into Aegypt, where he was had in great honoz.

Sueuus began to reigne ouer the Germanes, a mā be rate frequent & prosperous in warres, of whom the Suiffes, a people in Germanie, berape fiers and warlike, toke their name. He builded also a noble citee called Tigur.

At the same tyme reigned in Fraunce Celta, of whome the people were called Celtes.

Lestrigon the newew of Olyris began to reigne ouer the Italians.

Olyris returned into Aegypte, and in a pillar, whych he shulde remaine for a perpetuall monument, he graued al his expedition of the worlde. Who after fve peres was slain of his brother Typhon with the consente of all the gyantes.

Busites in Phenicia, the other Typhō in Phrigia, Anteus in Libia, the Lomnines in Spayn, the Lestrigōs in Italye, and Plinus in Candye beganne to tyzannise the worlde.

Isaac, beyng .180. peres of age, blessing all his chyldren, dyed, and was buried in Hebron.

Joseph, by diuine inspiracion, expounded the dreames of Pharaο, declaringe the seven plentyfull yeaeres that were to come, and the seven barrain and hard yeaeres, whiche

f. l.

che

The yere of the worlde before Christ.

2205 1758

2208 1755

2209 1754

1752

1747

1746

1744

1743

1738

1734

1733

The seconde parte of

The yeres
of the
world

The yeres
before
Christ.

the shulde ensue, that shoulde cleane consume the abundance of the yeres pcedyng, by whose politike prouision Aegypt was relieved from famine, and Pharaos greatly enriched therby, for whiche cause he made hym Regente of his roialme, and named hym the saluioz of the worlde.

¶ Of this Ioseph Trogus Pompeius, and also his abbreuiatour Iustine, writeth in this maner. Ioseph was the yongest amongst the bretherne, whose excellent witte they fearyng, solde hym vnto straunge marchauntes, by whom he was brought into Aegypt. When he there with diligent study had lerned magicall sciences, in short time he grew in great fauour with the King. For he was both experte in prodigies, and also fyrst founde oute the vnderstandyng of dreames. Yea there was nothyng neyther of goddis lawe or mans, that seemed to hym vnknewen: in so muche, that he foreseying the bareynnesse of the fieldes to come, gathered the cornes. And so great were his experiences, that all his answers seemed not to come of man but from god, Moyses was the sonne of Ioseph, whose excellent fauour, besydes the inheritaunce of his fathers knowlage, dyd comend hym. But the Aegyptians, when they were plagued with the scabbes and filthynesse of body, were admonished, that they shoulde expell hym with all the sycke people out of Aegypte, lest that pestilence shoulde infect more. These be the wordes of Iustine. They that desyre the truthe of this historie, leat theim read the ende of Genesis.

The fertile or plentyfull yeres began now.

Herculus Lybius, the sonne of Olyris, and moste balliant captain of his warres, for to be reuenged of his fathers deth, toke his armour, and slue bothe the Typhons, one in Aegypt, the other in Phrygia, and also destroyed Belus in Phencia, Antheus in Lybia, Hylus in Candie, Lestrigones in Italye, the Geryones in Spayne. After whiche victories he substituted Hispalus kynge of Spayne. And in Fraunce, vpon Calathea the daughter of Celta, he begat Calathes, whiche was kynge after his grandfather, and builded there the towne of Aleria. In Italye he appoynted Thuscus kyng, of whome they were called Thuscans. Finally, after many notable actes by hym

2231

1731

2232

1731

him done, he deceased verase aged amonge the Spaniards, nigh to the Gades, where he was buried in a temple dedicated to him with diuine honoures.

The yere
of the
worlde
The yere
before
Christ.

2238

1725

The great familie of derthe beginneth. In the seconde yere therof Jacob with his sonnes, and nephues descended into Aegipte.

Lacedemonia, the noble citie of Grece, was in this time builded by Sparus the son of Phoroneus, in the region of Peloponessus, of whome it was called Sparta. This afterwarde was the moste myghtie and flourishing citie of all the prouince of Grece. Whiche kepte great and long warres with the Athenians, to the bitter destruction of them bothe. Unto these Lacedemonians Lycargus gaue lawes, and instructed them in those things, that pertaineth to humanitie.

2241

1712

Amosis reigned in Aegipt. xxv. yeres. In which time the Dynasties of Aegipt began to be called Pharaons.

2245

1718

Heratus, the .x. king of Peloponessus reigned 46. yeres. Hercules Lybius in ten yeres subdued the Lestrigones, and expelled them out of Italy. After whiche conquest he reigned peaceably. xx. yeres.

2251

1712

Argus the fourth king of Argiues, succeeded his father Apis, and reigned. 70. yeres, of whom his people were called Argiues. In his reigne Grece began to haue the vse of cornes.

2253

1707

Jacob, being in yeres. 147. deceased in Aegipte, and was by his children sumptuously buried in Hebzon.

2256

1707

Altadas, the .xii. emperoure of Assyria, reigned. xxxi. yeres, he consumed his time in delicacies, esteeming it a vayne thing to wast his life continually in labours and miseries, which should not be for the benefite and vtilitee of mankind, but to the destruction and seruitude thereof. Therefore his purpose was that as longe as he liued, he would his life to take fruition of ryche and gloze.

2263

1700

Mandalus after the death of his father, governed the germaines prosperously.

Gallathes, Hercules sonne, reigned ouer the Galles.

Prometheus, after the opinion of dyuers authours in this time liued: who as they dooe write, made menne of clay. Where in veray dede, beinge a wyse man, he reduced

The seconde parte of

The yere of the world	The yere before Christ.	
		ced theym from their former state of wilbnesse and igno- rance, to humanitee and knowlage. He also firste stroke fyrre out of the flynte, as Pliny wytnesseth. Furthermore he inuented the vse of ringes, but of yron, and appointed them to be woꝛne on the fourth fynger, in honour, & com- fort of the hert beine. Finally, vpon the mountayne Can- casus, he found out the occasion of lyghtnyng. Wherup- on they feigned, that he stole fire out of heauen.
2266	1697	¶ Chebron, the seconde kinge of Aegypt reigned. 13. yeres.
2279	1684	¶ Amenophis the third king of Aegypt reigned. 21. yeres.
2281	1682	¶ Hercules creted his sonne Thuscus pꝛince ouer the I- talians, he hym selfe beyng aged, returned into Spayne, where he decessed, to whom the Spanyardes dedicated a temple at his Gades, and in hys honoure buylded dy- uers citees.
2291	1672	¶ Plennus, the. 11. kinge of Peloponessus, reigned. 48. yeres.
2295	1668	¶ Namitus, the. 13. Emperoure of Assyria, reygned. xxx. yeres. He againe exercised his souldiours in warres, and accustomed them to labours, setting aside all delycacies and pleasures, and was gretly feared of the Syrians and Aegyptians.
2300	1663	¶ Mephres, the fourth king of Aegypt, reygned. xli. yeres.
2310	1653	¶ Joseph, in the. 80. yere of his reigne, whiche was in the 110. yere of his lyfe, finished his laste daye, before his chil- dren, bretherne, and nephues, and was buried in Egypt, he pꝛophecied their goynge foorthe, requyringe that they shoulde cary his bones with them into the land of pꝛomys- syon. Whereto extendeth the fyrst booke of the holye scrip- ture called Genesis.
2312	1651	¶ After the death of Joseph the people of god meruailous- ly increased, and liued quietly, vntill they died, to whom Joseph was knowen. Than by reason of theyꝝ great mul- titude, and abudance of goodes, they were of the Aegyp- tians greatly hated, and by them suppressed in miserable bondage, which they susteyned. 144. yeres, tyl that by the power of god they were deliuered.
2314	1649	¶ Mispharmatosis, the fift kyng of Aegypt, reigned. xxxvi. yeres, he was somewhat fauourable to the Hebrues. ¶ Vesperus, the brother of Hytim, reygned amonge the Spa.

Spaniards.

Harbon among the Gauls. And Theutonies amonge the Germanes, of whome they were so called, vnto hym they offered in sacrifice quicke men.

The yere of the world
The yere before
Christ.

Alteus, the son of Thulus, reigned ouer the Italians.

2316

1647

Mercurius the sonne of Maia, as certain authoꝝ doo specifie, in this time flourished. He inuented the makynge and plaine on the harpe. Manye other thynges be wyrtten of this Mercury by the poetes, whiche I do omit, because they be but feigned, and will falsifie the verite of his stories.

2323

1640

Crassus, the fift kyng of Argues, reigned. 54. yeres.

2325

1638

Pancalus the. xliii. Emperour of Assyria, reigned. 30. yeres, without any gloꝝ or renoume.

Atlas, the brother of Prometheus, and father to the noble woman Maia, a man of excellent wit and wonderfull contemplacion, in this tyme flourished. For whan he had by diligent study comprehended the course of the steres, he fyrst presumed to declare astrologie to the Grecians wherupon it was feigned, that he dyd beare heauen vpon his shoulders.

Bytim expulsyng his brother Hesperus into Italy, reigned in Spaine.

Hercules Alemannus reigned after his father kyng of the Germanes, a prince both iuste and puissant.

Lugdus reigned in Fraunce, of whom the prouince and people of Lyons were named.

Sicoꝝus reigned ouer the Spaniards.

Bytim, leauing his sonne Sicoꝝus kyng in Spayne, came into Italy, and there reigned, whome the Italians in their language, for the excellencie of his wytte, called Italus, he gaue his daughter Electra in mariage to Camboblascon the prince of the Tanigenes. And substituted his other daughter Roma queene ouer the Aborigines. His son Morges he created prince of the Italians. This Roma fyrst buylde Rome, a littell towne: after whose death because of the marches it was neglected, vntyl the tyme of Enadꝝus, who with the town repaired the name.

2336

1627

Luthemosis, kyng of Aegypt, reigned. ix. yeres.

2338

625

Orthopolis, the. xii. kyng of Peloponessus, reigned. F. llii.

2339

1624

lxiii. yeres

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde.	The yere before Christ.	Christ. yeres.
		In this time the royaume of Syria was soo named of
		one Syrus, which there inhabited. And the Aethiopians
		came from the river Indus, and placed them selues nere
		to the borders of Aegypte.
2349	1516	Amenophis, king of Aegypte, reigned. xxxi. yeares, he
		was surnamed Memnon the speaking stone, because (as
		it is written) his image gaue a voyce at the sonne rising,
		until the coming of christ, he was cruel to the Hebzees,
		oppressing them with scouring of dytches, and makinge
		of byrke, and then with sleying of theyr men childzen.
2349	1614	Morges, the sonne of Italus, reigned in Italy.
2355	1609	Spheras, the. xv. emperour of Assyria, reigned. 20. yea-
		res. Who by his worthy actes and wysedome was great-
		ly renoumed in Babylon.
		Morges made his cousin Camboblascon king of Italy.
		Aaron the sonne of Amram, nephew to Leui, and bro-
		ther of Moyles was bozne. Incontinent after whose birth
		Amenophis commaunded al the hebze childzen to be drow-
		ned. For Aaron was bozne without any ieopardy, but so
		was not Moyles.
		Whiles that the Hebzees were thus in miserie and
		thraldome entangled. God in a vision in the night appea-
		red vnto Amram, promysinge him a sonne to be bozne,
		who should both deliuer his people from the Aegyptians
		seruitude, and also ouerthrowe theym, beinge plagued,
		spoyled, and finally drowned in the sea. Whiche vision
		the chance of the thing declared to be true. Therfore as
		Moyles was bozne, his byrthe (by the will of God) was
		kept secret, and thre monethes was he nourished at home.
		But his father, fearing the crueltie of the Aegyptians,
		made a litell vessell of bulrushes, well pitched within,
		wherin he put the childe, and set it in the river, commen-
		ding it to the tuicion of that lorde, who before had promi-
		sed hym to be bozne. Then almyghty god, shewing that
		not by mannes prouidence, but by his, the effecte of all
		good thinges be opteined, saued this litel helpeles childe.
		For he caused Thermuth the doughter of Pharaos, to
		walke to the river side to spozte her, where she saue this
		vessell swimming on the water. Incontinent she comma-
		ded.

ded it to be brought to hir, and openyng it, founde therein
a wonderfull fayre and goodlye babe, for the whiche she
not a litell reioysed, and accoꝝdyng to the chance named
it Moyles, whiche signifieth, preserued from the water.

After this, for the fauour and towardnesse of the childe,
she adopted hym for hir sonne, and caused hym to be in-
structed in all the learnynges of Aegypt. It chaunced on
a tyme, that the kynge, for his daughters sake, tooke the
childe in his armes, and set the crowne vpon his heade:
whiche Moyles, as it were chyldishly playing, hurled it
to the grounde, and with his feete spurned it. But the
priest, the soothsayer, beholdyng this, cried out, & sayed,
that this was he, whom befoze he had prophesied shulde
be bozne, whiche wolde destrote the kyngdom of Aegypt,
except he were by deth preuented. But Termuth excused
the childe, alledgyng, that his age had yet no discrecion
and for prooffe therof caused bournyng coles to be put to
his mouth, whiche the childe with his tongue lycked:
wherby he euer after had impediment in his tongue. By
this meanes they furpe at that tyme was appeled. In
processe of time there arose cruel warres betwene the E-
thiopians and the Egiptians. The Ethiopians destroyed
Egipt, toke theyꝝ townes, ouerranne theyꝝ countrey e-
uen vnto Memphis, theyꝝ principal cyty. On the other
parte the Egiptians, by this necessitee compelled, fledde
for counsell vnto theyꝝ oracles and diuinations: where
they receiued answer, that they must elect an hebreue, ca-
pitaine of theyꝝ army, by whose helpe they shuld not on-
ly expulse the Ethiopians from theyꝝ borders: but also
bring them vnder theyꝝ subiection. Moyles, both for his
wisdomme and personage, was chosen soueraygne cap-
taine of this army, he so polytikely ledde his hoste, that
vnwares he set vpon theim, and at the fyrste battayle put
theim to flyght, wherein he slewe a great number. And
when they in no place were able to resyst him, they fledde
to theyꝝ strong citie Saba. In which, whiles they suffered
the siege, and Moyles often valyantlye and politikely as-
saulting theym, he was of the kynges daughter of Ethyo-
pe vehemently loued. Who not able to sustayne the po-
wer of loue, by certayne faythful ministers, requyred of
Moyles

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.	Moyles marriage: he bypon condicion to rendre to hym the citee, was contented. Whiche through the meanes of the mayde was quykely fulfilled, and he married vnto hir. By this occasion he subdued all Ethiopie, retourning to Egypt with great triumph: whiche prosperitee to the Hebrewes was hope of libertee, and to the Aegyptians cause of great feare. Wherfore they sought dayely occasion howe to destroye hym. Whiche Moyles perceyving diligently imagined to auoyde theyr deceytes, and denied hym selfe to be the sonne of the doughter of Pharao, chosynge rather to be afflicted with the people of god, than to enioye synfull pleasure of the worlde. Wherfore he slue an Egyptian, whiche oppressed an hebrue, and fled into Madian, not farre from the mount Sinai, where he was receiued into the house of Jethro, priest of that citee, who gaue to hym in marriage his doughter Sephora. There he continued. xl. yeres, and kepte sheepe. This haue I drawen out of the historie of Josephus, the residue of Moyles lyfe shall be declared after his retourne into Egypte.
2375	1588	Namelus, the. xvi. emperor of Assyria, reigned. xxx. yeres.
2377	1586	Phorbas, the sirte kyng of Argines, reigned. xxxv. yeres, he subdued the Ile of Rhodes. A littell before hys reigne was the citee Epidaurus buylded in Epira.
2378	1585	Dus, kyng of Egypt, reigned. xxxviii. yeres, he drowned not the hebrue children.
2382	1581	Romanellus, the sonne of Roma, was created prince ouer the Aborigines. At whiche tyme Sicanus beganne to reigne in Spayne. And in France Belgus, of whome the people were called Belgici.
1391	1572	Arogilus, other wise Proclutus, did fyrst make cartes. The citee Lesbos was buylded by Xanthus, and Cidon reigned in Candie.
2402	1561	Marathius, the. xiii. kyng of Peloponessus, reigned. xxx. yeres.
2405	1558.	Sparetus, the. xvii. emperor of Assyria, reigned. xl. yeres. In his tyme Babylon was sore brayled with an earthquake.
		Job, the sonne of Zareth by Bosra, a man most patient.

ent and holy, in this tyme flourished. Philo maketh him to bee before this tyme.

The yere of the worlde. The yere before Christe.

Cecrops the fyrst kynge of Athenes, reigned. l. yeres. he buylded Athenes, and instituted matrymonye amonge the Grekes.

2408

1555

Jasius reigned in Italy, and Siceleus in Spayne. At whose mariage the Egyptian Io was present.

Trophas, the. vii. kynge of Argines, reigned. 46. yeres.

2412

1551

Moses, in age. 40. yeres, fled for feare of Pharaon, when he had slaine an Aegyptian. Josephus saith, that it was for displeasure, because in the warres of Aethiophe, whereof he was captaine, he tooke to wyfe the kynges daughter of Aethiophe.

2414

1549

Acencris, kynge of Aegypte, reigned 12. yeres.

2416

1547

The Curetes and Coribantes buylded the citie Cnossion in Candy. And deuised the daunsyng in armours.

2419

1544

Io returned out of Italy into Egypt.

The firste civil warres arose betwene Dardanus and Jasius for the kyngdom of Italy, the Abozigenes fauored the parte of Dardanus, and the Janigenes with the Sicilians, the part of Jasius.

2425

1538

Deucalion began to reigne amonge them that dwelled about the mountaine Parnassus.

2428

1535

Achoris, kynge of Egypt, reigned. ix. yeres.

2428

1535

Paratus the. 14. king of Deloponeus, reigned. 20. yeres.

2432

1531

Cecrops in Cubora builded the citee of Athenes, whiche he named also Diadas.

2435

1528

The deluge of Thessaly fel, whiche destroyed al Thessalia, sayng fewe which fledde to the mount Parnassus where Deucalion reigned as kynge, who receiued theym gentilly, and nourished them vpon the ridges of the hill of Parnassus, as many as fled to him in botes or otherwise.

2437

1526

For whiche cause poetes fetned, that he and his wyfe repaired mankynde being vnterly destroyed with water.

In this tyme the worlde was also tormented with a plague of heate, whiche baynelye they attributed vnto the fables of Phaeton.

Chencres reigned in Egypte. xvi. yeres. Than Israel cryed vnto the lord.

Ascalades, the. xliii. emperor of Assyria, rayned.

2445

1518

The seconde parte of

The pere of the worlde	The pere before Christe	41. yeares, whiche bitterly broughte all Syria to hys subiection.
2448	1515	¶ Of Helene, the son of Dencaliō and Pyrrha, the Gre- cians were called Hellenes.
2452	1511	Chozinthus builded, which before was called Ephrus.
		¶ Romanellus, the son of Roma, reigned amonge the A- boziginēs. He had first the name of Saturne consecrated to hym. From this Saturne Eutropius began his histo- rie of the Romanes.
		Echireus, the .xv. kynge of Peloponessus, reigned .55. peres.
2454	1509	¶ Whan that kynge Pharaο without all measure bered the chylzen of Israel, god sente Moyses to delyuer hys people out of Aegypte, who after diuers miracles by him done in the sight of Pharaο, for confirmacion of his auc- toritie, lead them towarde the lande of promission, but then Pharaο changing his minde pursued the Israelites with moſte evgre crueltee, entending to haue bitterlye di- ſcoped them: for so muche as they had at that tyme noo place of refuge or succour. For on the one side they were inclosed with hilles, on the other with the sea, & he their moſt inſeſt enemye folowed at their backes. But here god declared that whan extreme necessitee happeneth, and al mans helpe faileth, he is readye and heareth the voice of his people. For at the prayer of Moyses and wailinge of the Israelites, the water of the sea contrarie to the natu- ral course therof went backe, and by the space of certain miles gaue way to the pesple to passe without daunger, whiche thing whan Pharaο and his hoste assaied to fo- lowe, and were in the deepest, the sea keppng againe his former course swallowed him with al his power. Where god shewed a newe example, that he woulde be reuenged of stubbornne, implous, and cruell tirannes, whiche bere and persecute his people.
		¶ The fifti daye after that the Israelites were thus de- parted out of Egypt, & were come to the mount of Sinai, the lawe of the ten commandementes was to them gene by almighty god, with a great and terrible magnificēce. At whiche time also god gaue to them a certaine politike gouvernaunce, and a speciall kyngdom, in which nothing wanted

wanted, that appertained to the true worshipping of god
priesthode, and ciuile iustice, to the intent that a certayne
people shuld be notably knowe, among whom the word
of god remained: and of whome chryste in time to come
should be bozne: So that among this people alwaye re-
mained the church, the kingdome, and the true worde of
god, vntyll after Chryste had suffered. Whereby all men
maye knowe, that the church hath alway bene: and that
god from the beginning of the worlde, both reueled and
preserued his worde among his people.

The yere
of the
worlde. The yere
before
Christe.

Lulus, in Spaine and Allobor in Fraunce reigned.

Acherres, kinge of Egypt reigned. viii. yeres

Hercules surnamed Desinas, flourished in Phenicia.

Aaron was consecrated high priest. Amalek subdued
by the Hebzeues. 2455

1508

The temple of Apollo at Delos was builded by Crisi-
stones, sonne of Ceerops.

Dardanus slewe his brother Jasius by disceite, wher-
foze he fled into Samothracia, where he lurked long. 2457

1506

Cozibanthus succeeded his father Jasius.

Crothopus the. viii. king of Argines, reigned. xxi. yeres.

Cranaus the second king of Athenes, reigned. ix. yeres. 2458

1505

In Candy then reigned Apteras.

Cherres king of Egypt, reigned. xv. yeres. 2461

1502

Amphitrid, the third king of Athenes, reigned. x. yeres. 2467

1496

Epaphus, the sonne of Io and Jupiter, buylded Mem-
phis in Acypte. 2471

1492

Armeus, called also Danans, reigned fine yeres king
of Egypt. 2476

1487

Erichthonius, the. iiii. king of Athenes, reigned. 50. ye-
res. He founde out the vse of siluer. 2477

1486

Lacedemon, the citie was buylded by Lacedemon the
sonne of Semeles.

Stelenus, the. ix. kinge of Argines, reigned. ii. yeres. 2479

1484

Kamesses, surnamed Egiptus, of whom it was called
Egipte, which before was named Aeria, dyene his bro-
ther Danans out of his realme, and ruled the same. 68.
yeres. At this Kamesses, Manetho the Egiptian priest
began his chronicle. And the kinges of Egypt for honoz
were called Pharaones. 2481

1482

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.
2484

The yere
before
Christe
1479

Aras, the son of Jupiter and Calisto subduing the Pelasgians, named theyr countrey Arcadia.

In the .31. yere of the Dukedome of Moyses, Atho, prince of Meonia, gaue vnto Dardanus part of his land, who incontinent left al his right in Italy, and went vnto his new possession, where he builded a citee, whiche after his owne name he called Dardania, that after was called Troy. Vnto this place Herodotus continued his historye, and finished it.

2485 1478

Here beginneth the kyngdome of the Troians, where Dardanus fyrste reigned. 64. yeres.

Amyntas, the .xix. emperour of Assyria, reigned . 45. yeres.

2490 1473

Danaus, the .x. kyng of Argiues, expelling Stelenus, reigned ouer them. 50. yeres. Diodorus writeth, that betwene the childre of Danaus and Aegyptus in one night was committed . 50. murders. After whiche, Danaus the author of al this mischief, was driven oute of his royaume, and fled to the Argiues: Where he perswaded them to this leudnes, that by their helpe, he expelled Stelenus, that receiued him boide of al helpe, and reigned there.

Dithya was rauished of Bozitrax.

2491

1472

Aaron decessed, Eleazar was constituted high priest.

2492

1471

Moyse ouercame the kinges of Amozrea & the Moabites, he deuided their land, and died in the mount Nebo being of age. 120. yeres. Whose eyes were neuer dimme, nor teeth lose, he was buried by angelles, and his sepulchre was yet neuer known vnto man.

Triptolemus sailed to Eleusin, and there taught them the vse of corne.

2493

1470

After the death of Moyse the Israelites had princes and gouernours, whiche were created partly by the aueritee of wyse men, partly set vp by the speciall callinge of god, by whiche princes, many noble and famous thinges were dooen. And so god declared, that he is presente, and dooeth faithfullye defende his people, although they maye seme for a certaine space to bee tolled in the waues of these worldy troubles and perilles. These gouernours after the custome of the hebrues were named iudges.

After

After Moyſes Joſua was ſecond Judge or duke of the Hebꝛues. And reigned. 28. yerres according to the hebꝛues computacion, he brought the childꝛen of Iſraell into the land of promiſſion. The ſonne prolonginge the daye, he ouerthꝛewe. xxi. kyniges, and deuoyded the land of Chananee to the Tribes. He was godly, ſapient, in warres myghty, in peace fortunate, and endued with al vertues, when he was. 110. yerres of age, he ended his lyfe.

Perſeus ſlew Gorgones, after which he ſayled from Grece into Asia, and there with greuous and long war, he vanquiſhed thoſe barbarous people, and at the laſt, beinge conquerour, gaue the name to the people ſubduid. For of Perſeus they were called Perſeans.

Thyrenus reygned among the Tanigenes in Italye 2498 fifty and one yerres.

Buſyris, the ſonne of Neptune in Aegypt, exerciſed his tyꝛanny in ſacrificing the bloud of his innocent gueſtes.

Lapis reygned in Candye. And Cyrene was builded in Libya. 2503

Phoenix and Cadmus went from Thebes in Aegypt into Syria, and reygned at Tyꝛus in Sidon. 2506

Chozar, the. 16. king of Peloponeſſus, reigned. 30. yerres. 2507

Liber Water warred in India, in whoſe army were woꝝ men called Bacchae, rather for their fury, the for any vertue. Afterius reygned in Candy. The great temple of Apollo at Delphos was burned by Plegra. 2513

Phoenix builded Bythinia, and gaue vnto the Phenicians certain letters to write by.

Romus reigned in Fraunce. 2515

Faunus Priſcus poſſeſſed the empire among the Aborigenes in Italy. 2517

Joſua deſeſſed. The ſeniors of the childꝛen of Iſraell gouerned them. xlii. yerres. Iſrael ſerued the lord all the dayes of Joſua, and the ſeniores, whiche lyued long time after Joſua, & knew al the workes of the lord, which he had done in Iſrael. 2521

Hypermetra, the daughter of Danaus, occupied the office of high prieſt among the Argiues. 2523

Pandion, the. 6. king of Athenes, reygned. 40. yerres. 2527

Kadamanthus and Sarpedon, kinges of Licia.

G. iii.

Belochus.

The pere
of the
worlde

The pere
before
Chriſte

1466

1465

1463

1460

1457

1456

1455

1450

1448

1446

1442

1440

1436

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christe.	
2530	1433	Belochus, the yonger, the .xx. emperor of Assyria, reigned .25. yeres. He was called of the Hebrews, as helpe writte testifieth, Chusan Reschataim, of Iosephus Chusartus. His daughter Actosa reigned with him .7. yeres.
2535	1428	Cadmus reigned in Thebes. The children of Israel fel from god, and he deliuered them into the handes of Chusan Reschataim, whom they serued .8. yeres.
		Mellus Paphus, Thasus, and Calista, citrees were builded.
2537	1426	Copeus, the .xviii. kynge of Peloponessus, reigned 35. yeres.
2538	1425	Othontel, the first iudge of Israel, of the tribe of Iuda, surnamed Zenes, gouerned them .40. yeres. He deliuered the children of Israel out of the handes of the kinge of Assyria.
2540	1423	Linceus, king of Argines, reigned .41. yeres.
2547	1416	Aminus Faunigena reigned among the Abozigenes in Italy.
		Amphion and Zetus reigned together in Thebes.
2549	1414	Pharao Menophis, king of Egypt, reigned .40. yeres. Tarquon Priscus reigned .34. yeres, amonge the Janigenes, whiche nowe be called Tyrrhenes and Thulchanes, for the knowlage of diuine thinges, which they learned of Janus.
2550	1413	Erichthonius in Troie reigned .46. yeres.
		Paris in France, and Testalibius Triton in Spaine, reigned.
2554	1409	Menophis, of some called Maro, buylded the Labyrinth in Egypte, accordinge to which, Medalus framed the like in Candye, where Minos reigned.
2555	1408	Belopates the .xxi. emperor of Assyria, reigned .30. yeres. He conquered the Perseans with the Arabies.
2560	1403	Armenia was taken by Cadmus. Cocleus Triptolemon reigned in Cleusine.
		Achaia was builded by Achaig.
2567	1396	Erichtheus, the .vi. king of Athenes reigned .50. yeres.
2572	1391	Laomedon, the .xviii. kinge of Peloponessus, reigned 40. yeres.
		Dionysius, called also Liber Pater, was bozne of Semele

Semele.

Ehud, otherwise Aod, of the tribe of Benjamin, subdued Israell. 80. peres. He deliuered them from the tyrannye of Eglon, kyng of Moabites, whome they serued 18. peres for the transgression of their lawe.

The yere of the worlde before Christe
2578 1385

Abas kyng of Argiues reigned. 23. peres.

2581

1382

An other Abas reigned that time in Thuschain.

Lampzides the. xxi. emperour of Assyria, reigned. 32. peres.

2585

1378

Cadmus taughte the rude Grekes theyr letters, and reigned in Thebes. After Zetus and Amphio droue him from thens, Zetus reigned. 55. peres in Aegypt.

2589

1374

Tros reigned in Dardana, of whome it was called Troie.

2596

1367

It is written, that in Pythia, the first prophetesse, was Phemonoe, who in hexametrum verses sang such thinges as were to chance.

2598

1369

Tantalus ruled the Phrygians, who before were called Meones.

2602

1363

Proetus kyng of Argiues reigned. xlii. peres.

For the rauishment of Canimedes, the warres of Canimedes and Tantalus began.

2604

1359

Sycion the. xix. kyng of Peloponessus, reigned. xli. peres, he named the countrey Sycionia, which before was called Aegialea.

2612

1351

Sozares, the. xxi. emperour of Assyria, reigned. xx. peres. In histyme the most swift horse Pegasus was found.

2617

1346

Perseus kept warre agaynst the persians.

Cecrops, the seconde of that name, kinge of Athenes, reigned. xl. peres.

Pelops tooke to wife Hypodamia.

Mars Italus, surnamed the yonger Janus, reigned amongest the Aborigines.

Meibenus, of the family of Metulonia, ruled the Thushanes.

2621

1342

Acrisius, kyng of Argiues, reigned. 31. peres.

2623

1340

Rhomus, gouerned the Spaniardes.

Ion, a balliant man, after his name called the Atheniens Jones.

Dionysius, called also Liber Pater, warred agaynst the

2632

1331

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christe.	
2636	1327	the Indians, where he builded the citee Pysa bypon the great river Indus.
2637	1326	Amphion reigned at Thebes, who (as it is sayde) with the excellēt harmony of his harpe euē moued the stones.
2642	1321	Lampares, the. xliiii. emperoure of Assyria, reigned 30. yeres.
2644	1319	Delops reigninge in Deloponessus, and i Olympus, as- sembled his power against Troy, and was vanquysshed by Dardanos.
2652	1311	Kausas kyng of Egypt, reigned. lxxvi. yeres.
2653	1310	Here ended the kyngdome of the Argiues: from whēs it was translated to the Micenes.
2656	1307	A moste cruell warre was betweene the Cretenses and Atheniens, to the destruction of them bothe, but the Cre- tenses being conquerours, bled their victorie extremely: for they decreed, that all the noble mens children of Athe- nes shoulde be deuoured by the Minotaur.
2657	1306	Palatus reigned in Spayne, and Galatas yonger in Fraunce, who subdued the Sarmatians, and builded Galata, where he also reigned.
2658	1305	Ilus reigned in Troy, who buylded Ilium.
2659	1304	Midas also in Phrygia.
2660	1303	Polybus, kyng of Deloponessus reigned. 25. yeres.
2661	1302	Pandion, in Athenes reigned. 25. yeres.
2662	1301	Perseus unwillingly slepyng Acrisius, went to Argos, and there reigned.
2663	1300	Curistheus, the first kyng of Micenas, reigned. 45. yeres.
2664	1299	Samgar, the. liii. iudge of Israell, with an ore gad. slue 600. Philistines, and deliuered Israell, he reigned but one yere.
2665	1298	Deboza, a woman, the. liii. iudge, iudged Israell. 40. yeres. She, with Barak the capitaine of hir army, ouer- thwe Jabin kyng of Cananees, who had oppressed Israell 20. yeres. Jabel also the wife of Aber killed Sisara, Duke of the hoste of Jabin, fleyng from the battaile.
2666	1297	Coeculus, sarnamed the yonger Saturnus, reigned amonge the Abozigenes in Italy.
2667	1296	Pannias, the. 25. emperoz of Assyria, reigned. 45. yeres.
2668	1295	Oleus gouerned the Chuschanes, whose armes was a serpente.
2669	1294	

Cadmus

	The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.
Cadmus toke to wife Harmonia the sister of Jafus.		
Olbis that time reigned in France.		
Aegeus, the son of Pandion, the .ix. kyng of Athenes, reigned. 48. yeres.	2671	1292
Atreus and Thyestes, after the death of Pelops, disu- ded the royaume of Peloponessus.	2632 2685	1281 1278
Picus, the pöger, was made kig over the Aborigines.		
Eutropius from Saturn to this Picus, did digresse.	2690	1273
Miletus builded.		
Tarcon, the .ii. reigned among the Thuschanes.	2694	1269
The nauigation of the Argonautes began.		
Phaechus, the .xxi. kyng of Sicvonia, reigned. 42. yeres.	2697	1266
Oryphens, the Thracian, in this tyme flourished, whose scholar was Muscus.		
Gedeon called also Jerobaal, the .v. iudge ruled Israel 40. yeres. He deliuered them from the power of the Ma- dianites, vnder whom thei were. vii. yeres. Slepng Oreb, Zeb, & Zalmona, theyz princis, with. 120000. of the Ma- dianites and Arabies. When he decessed, he lefte. lxx. sonnes behynde hym.	2699	1264
Atreus and Thyestes reigned together ouer the Myce- nes. 65. yeres.	2703	1260
Panges reigned in France.	2709	1254
Amenophis, the .ii. kyng of Aegypt, reigned. 40. yeres.	2710	1253
Laomedon reigned in Trope.		
Minos obtained the seas, and scoured them from Pyra- tes. He was the firste lorde of the Isles Cyclades, and inhabited theim with people.		
Sosarmus, the .xxvi. emperor of Assyria, reigned. 39.	2712	1251
peres.		
About this time Hercules perfourmed his great enter- prises, and for his herocall and princelye vertues was greatly commended: he was the sonne of Amphytrio and Almena. His father Amphytrio, for as much as he had for certaine displeasure slaine his owne brother, fled from Tyriutho his naturall citee vnto Thebes, where it fortuned Hercules to be borne, and there shewed the first proffe of his vertue strengthe and noblenesse. For when that Minya, which were at that time of great power be- seged the citee of Thebes, Hercules repelling their ene- mies.		

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
before
Christ.

mies, defended the citee, and toke the towne Orcho-
mon. This victorie wanne to hym great renoume. In so
muche that afterwarde other princes of Greece resorted
to hym gladly, among the whiche, he shewed him self al-
waie a maynteyner and defender of peace and iustice, and
helped such princis as were suppressed with iniuries, and
chastised the vniust deedes of other, and towarde theim,
whiche he dyd helpe, vled great gentylnesse, leying vpon
theim no greater bourdeyns, than they were able to su-
steyne. These wer the vertues, for the whiche he obtained
so greate renoume, as neuer prince had dooen before his
tyme. Furthermoze he deliuered the sea about Italy and
Spayne from pyzates and robbers, and for a perpetuall
memorie therof, comaunded two great rockes to be sette
vp in the vttermoste corners of Spaine and Affrike, whi-
che at this daye are called the columnes of Hercules.

Cacus in Spayne flourished.

2722

1241

The Lapithians and Thessalians contended togyther
with famous conflictes. The Thessalians were called
Centaures of the Lapithians, because that their hozsmen
rounnyng in the battayle, semed to haue but one bodye,
bothe of a horse and man.

2733

1240

Faunus, the ponger, reigned amonge the Abozignes.
his mother Picostata is thought firste to haue inuēted
the latine letters.

Euander, with hys nauy, came into Italy. 60. yeres
before the busynesse of Troie, where beyng receiued of
Faunus, and landes geuen vnto hym, he chose the hylle,
that now is in the myddes of the citee of Rome, where
vpon he builded a castell, and named it Palantium.

2725

1238

Hercules passing into Asia, ouercame and slewe La-
omedon the kyng of Troie, but yet in this victorie he vled
a heracie noble and princely moderacion, for he saued the
kyngdome, and would not destroy it, and deliuered the
possession therof to Priamus, as to the true inheritour.

2730

1233

Theseus the tenth kyng of Athenes reigned. xxx. yeres.
After the death of Aegeus, he gathered togyther all them
that dwelled in Attica, and brought them into a citee, and
one people, that before dwelled scattered i diuers places,
he coyned money, and strake therein an ore. Many other
worthy

woorthy actes he dyd, and was compargiton wth Herc^{les} The yere The yere
cules in all his noble actes and deedes. of the before
of the world Christ.

Mitrens the .27. emperoz of Assyria, reigned. xlii. yeres 1232

Melozes proclaymed warre agaynst the Scythians, of 2731.

whom he was banquished and put to flyght.
The Scythians by theyr captayne Tannales, made Asia
tributarie to them.

Hercules returned from Spaine into Italy, and in the
55. yere before the couming of Aeneas, he slew Cacus, &
gaue lawes to the Itilians.

Tannales made Sornus the king of Medea tributary. 2734

At this place Iornandes began his historie of the Gothes.

Of the Gothes the Parthians toke theyr beginning.

They dyue the original of the Amazons vnto this age.

Lampeto and Perpesia queenes of Amazonia.

Tiberinus, of the house of Uea ruled the Thulcanes. 2738

Abimelech, sonne of Gedeon, the .vi. iudge, tyrannous. 2739

he occupied that some thre yeres, he slue his .70. brethern,
the sonnes of Gedeon, and at the last was hym selfe mise-
serably slaine of a woman, castinge downe a piece of a
mylestone on his head.

Phestus king of Sicponia, reigned. 8. yeres.

Thola, the .vii. iudge, iudged Israel quietly. 23. yeres. 2742

Carthago was builded by Zano and Carthago Tyrias. 2745

Theseus, when he was fity yeres of age, rauished He-
lena. And was comitted to pryson by Aldoneus, bycause
he with Perithous, wold also haue rauished bys doughter
Proserpina.

Adzastus king of Sicponia, reigned. 4. yeres.

Ammenophos, king of Egypt, reigned. xxi. yeres.

Polyphides in Sicponia, and Atreus in Argos reigned.

Hercules ordained the plaies and games of Olympus, 2752

wherof cam the Olympiades, & the computacion therof.

Remus reigned among the Celtes.

And Erpthreus in Spain.

About this time, Telephus, the sonne of Hercules, by
Agas the sister of Priamus, reigned ouer the Gothes in
Moestia, he warred vpon the Greekes, theyr capitaine,
Theandrus he slue, and banquished Asar and Achilles,
dyuing the grekes out of his borders, but he was wounde

W. II.

ded.

The seconde partz of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.	
2758	1205	ded with a darte by Achilles.
2760	1203	Lycomedes king of Syca reigned. Tantanes, the. xxviii. emperor of Assyria, reigned. 32. yeres, he subdued the Aethiopes. Theseus, leauing Athenes, wandred abrode. After whom reigned Theseus. 24. yeres, of him Plutarke maketh mencion in the life of Theseus. But Iustine sayeth, that Demephon succeeded Theseus, who ayded the Greekes agaynst the Troianes, wherby he obtayned the kingdome.
2764	1199	Minos, gathering his power in Sicilie against Medallus, was slaine of the daughters of Cotalus.
2765	1198	Latinus, of whom the Latines tooke theyr name, ruled the Aborigenes. Jair the. viii. iudge of Israell, ruled them. 22. yeres. A man in all thinges prosperous, he had. 30. sonnes, who were the princes of. xxx. cityes, which were called the townes of Jair.
2768	1195	Paris Alexander rauished Helena, the daughter of Lyndarus. The Egyptians called her Venus guest, to whom they dedicated a temple at Memphis. Agamemnon reigned ouer the Grecenes. xlviii. yeares: he was soueraigne capitaine of the Greekes in the warres of Troie.
2773	1190	Penthiselea quene of Amazones flourished.
2774	1189	Mezentius reigned among the Thuscans. The great warres of Troie began for the rauishment of Helena, the wife of Menelaus, whom Paris tooke away with him into Phrygia: for whiche acte the princes and citices of Grece were so sore displeased, that by an vniuersall consent, they went vnto Troie, where ten yeres they consumed in most cruell warres, and at the last wonne the citee, whiche they cleane destroyed, wpth the kyngdome therof.
2776	1187	Thuozi, king of Egypte, reigned. vii. yeares. Euripilus, king of Gothes, the sonne of Telephus, for the loue of Callandra, came to the ayde of the Troianes, where he was slaine. Demnon also and the Amazons brought succoures to king Pyramus.

Poplus

Noplas reigned in Cilicia.

The Egyptians were now governed by a certayne power called Dynastia Dyapolitana, whiche continued 177. yerres.

In the first yere of this Dynastia, Troia was taken as Danetho sayth, Latinus then reigned among the Latines, who corrected the latine tongue, and of his owne name called theym Latines. 428. yerres before the buylding of Rome. In these warres flourished many noble and valiant men, as Priamus, Hector, Paris, Troilus, Agamemnon, Achilles, Ulysses, Atar, Nestor, Dares, Patroclus, and the yf fauoured Therites.

Delasgus, king of Sicponia reigned. xx. yerres.

Cargoris, called also Mellicola, by reason he was cunning in making of honny, begā to reigne in Spayne. Then the royaume of Spayne was governed by sundrye princis, by the space of. 1071. yerres vntil the empire of the Carthaginenses, which after. xxxv. yerres was vnder the dominion of the Romaines, vntil the later reygne of the Gothes.

Demophon the sonne of Theseus, reigned in Athens. xxxiii. yerres.

Aegisthus also in Mycoenas was king.

Aeneas, with. xx. shippes came into Italy to Latinus and Euander, he banquished Turnus, and wedded his wife Lavinia, he also buylded Lauinium.

Jepte the ninth iudge, iudged the Israelites. vi. yerres he deliuered them from the Philistines, whome (for the synne of ydolatrie) they serued. xlviii. yeaeres, he by an aduised bolwe sacrificed his owne daughter.

Ascanus reigned ouer the Latines. xxxviii. yerres. From his son Julius, descended the house or family of Julius.

Orestes after the death of Egysthus, ruled the Micenes.

Tanteus the. 29. emperour of Assyria, reigned. xl. yeaeres.

Colepne vppon the Rine, and Lisbone in Portugall, were builded.

Mesentius king of Etruscians, in this time liued.

After Jepte, Abellan the tenth iudge, ruled the Israelites seuen yerres.

Francus, the sonne of Hector, was receyued of the frenche

The yere of the world	The yere before Christ.
2783	1180
1784	1179
1786	1177
1789	1174
2790	1173
2793	1170

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.	Frenchemen for they lord.	From this place vnto the
2800	1163	tyrne of C. Cesar, every sort of people of this nacion had they puate princes.	
2802	1161	Aelen, or Abialon, the xi. iudge of Israell, gouerned them ten yeres.	
		The children of Hector toke againe Ilium or Troie, expelling the posteritee of Anthenor.	
		Rhampsinitus, the sonne of Proteus, toke vpon hym the gouernance of Egypt.	
2803	1160	Zeusippus, king of Sicyonis, reigned. 32. yeres.	
		Pyrrhus was slayne by Drestes in the temple of Apollo at Delphos.	
		Cissamenus the son of Drestes, reigned in Mycoenas.	
2809	1154	Ascanus, leauing his kingdome to his stepmother, builded Alba longa, and vertuously brought vp his brother Siluius Posthumus, the sonne of Aeneas & Launias.	
2810	1153	Abdon the xii. iudge, gouerned the Iewes. viii. yeres.	
2814	1149	Alba was builded. xxx. yeres after Launium.	
2817	1146	Drynies in Athenes reigned. 12. yeres. <i>manus</i>	
2818	1145	Samson, the 13. iudge, was the son of Manue of the tribe of Dan. He ruled the Israelites. 20. yeres., & deliuered them from the subiection of the Philistines, vnto whome they payed tribute. 40. yeres, he was a man most strong, whyche with his hand strangled a lion, and with the cheeke bone of an asse slue. 1000. Philistines, puttinge the reserue to flight. Finallye by the fraude of Dalila beinge deceiued, he was taken of his enemies, blynded, and playng before the princes of Palistine, toke in his armes the pillars, whereon the buildinge stood, he ouerthrewe the house, wherein were destroyed. lxx. Philistines.	
2824	1139	Amazons burned the temple of Diana in Ephesus.	
2827	1136	Syluius Posthumus, the thyrde king of the Latines, reigned. xxx. yeres, he was called Syluius, because he was brought vp in the countrey: and Posthumus, because he was bozne after the death of his father, of him all the kinges of the Albanes were called Siluii.	
		Ocnus, ruled the Thuscans. xlv. yeres.	
2829	1134	Aphidas in Athenes reigned one yere, after whom succeeded Timotheus. viii. yeres.	
2832	1133	Thineus, the xxx. emperour of Assyria, reigned. 30. yeres.	Here

Here ended the kyngdome of the Sicyonians.

In the time of Splyus Homere the poete flourished,
as Castiodorus witneseth.

Hytherto the house of Erictus reigned in Athenes,
which beyng destroyed, Melanthus succeeded in the king-
dome, and reigned. xxxvii. yerres.

Hely, the high priest, and. xliii. Judge of Isracell, reig-
ned. xl. yerres, after whome the holy arke was possessed
of straungers.

The Boeotians being driven out of Arna, by the Theb-
salians, inhabited the land, whiche nowe is called Boeo-
tia, before named Cadmeia.

Samuel was aboute this tyme borne.

The begynnyng of Britayn, and the first kyng thereof.

ALBEIT THAT this roialme of Englande maye
easily contend with any other nacion, for the anti-
quitee therof, as being continually inhabited with
people, from that tyme that all other countreys receiued
inhabitanes, yet forasmuche as by the often ciuill war-
res, and inuasions of outwarde ennemies, the monumē-
tes and remembraunces of the hystories passed beyng des-
troied, it hath caused no litell ambiguitee and darknesse
to the certayne knowlage of the originall begynnynges
therof. Wherfore by this occasion compelled, I wil bres-
ly ouerrunne the actes and yerres of those kynges, which
reigned, vnto the tyme that this lande was knowē vnto
the Romaynes. The hystorie of which tyme is full of er-
rors, and hath in it no manifest apparance of truth, as
beyng wrytten neither of no ancient tyme, nor yet by no
credible hystorian. For if there had remained any verita-
ble monument of these tymes, surely the worshipful Be-
da and Gildas, our countreie men, yea and Cesar the co-
querour therof, wolde not haue omitted them. Neuer the-
lesse I wil not discent from the comon opiniō therof, but
wyl also folow it as nere as I may, obseruing y^e iust com-
putacion of the yerres, and the conferment of hystories.

Write

The yeres
of the
world

The yeres
before
Christ.

2838

1125

2842

1121

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde
2855

The yere
before
Christ.
1108



BRUTE, after the bulgar opinion, sonne of Before Britayne knowen 1058
Silius Posthumus, in this time arrived
in this Ilande, wherein he begā the first to
reigne, and named it Britaine, whiche be-
fore was called Albion, and therein founded
the noble citee of London, whā he had re-
igned. xxiij. yeres, he diuided this wholle empire among

his thre sonnes, vnto Locrine he gaue the middel part of
Britayne, nowe called Englande, with the superiories
of all this Ile: vnto Cambre he gaue Wales: and to Al-
banact Scotlande. After whiche particion he deceased.

2856

1107

Aeneas Syluius the fourthe kyng of Latines reigned 1057
xxxi. yeres.

2860

1103

Dercylus the. xxi. emperor of Assyria reigned. xl. yeres 1053

2863

1100

The kyngdome of the Lacedemons and Corinthians
began. Eurysteus, the fyrst king of the Lacedemons, rei-
gned. xlii. yeres.

Athletes likewise fyrst kig of Corinth, reigned. 35. yeres.

Pyppinus gouerned the Thuscans.

2875

1088

Codrus, kyng of Athenes, reigned. xxi. yeres. He in the 1038
Peloponessian warres, for the saluagard of his countrey
in a poyze weede wylfully gaue hym self into the handes
of his ennemies, to bee slayne, whereby those warres
were fynished.

2878

1086

The arke of god was taken by the Philistines, in whi 1036
che warre perished the two sonnes of Hely, with. 3000.
hebryes, and Hely hym self brake his necke. Six mothes
was the arke among the Philistines, and than set to the
house of Aminadab, where it continued. xx. yeres.

2878

1085

Samuel, the. xvi. iudge, and high priest of the Israeli. 1035
tes, gouerned the a leuē yeres, according to the hebryes,
which we do folow. All be it Josephus saith, that he rei-
gned. 12. yeres, and with Saul. 17. yea and Eusebius doth
affirme, that Samuel and Saul reigned. xl. yeres.

2879

1084

Locrine, the sonne of Brute, reigned. xx. yeres, he 1034
was slayn by his wyfe Guendoleyn, for so much as
for the lous of an harlot he had forsaken hir.

2880

1083

The Peloponenses warred agaynst the Athenians. 1033

2887

1076

Latinus Syluius, the fift kyng of Latins, reigned. l. yeres. 1026
The

efore
ritayn
novven

The pere
of the
worlde. The pere
before
Christe.

The Judges or dukes of Israel were not by herpytage or naturall succession. And therfore the soueraine gouernance among them was vncertaine, sauyng onely in the roume of the hie prestes. But God added to them for helpe often times certayne wise princis, whiche he chose, now in one place, now in an other. Wherfore the Israelites findyng them selfe greued with his vncertaine gouernance, desired of Samuel their high prest, to haue a kyng to rule them as other countreis had: Samuel wold not doe any thyng vnadvisedly in so great a matter. And therfore asked counsaile of God: Who shewed him selfe to be greatly displeased with the vnlesfull request of hys people, and thretened that they shuld be thertoze greuously punished. How be it he graunted their request, and ordeined Saul to be their kyng. Here the power of kinges and gouernaunce of kyngdomes was ordeined and established by God. Wherfore it is to be marked, that god was not therfore angry, because he disallowed the power and auctoritee of kynges, but because he was displeased with the vnconstant mynd and affection of the people, in chaungyng that kynde of gouernaunce in the commune weale, that was by hym ordeined.

024

Saul, the fyrst kyng of the Hebreues, reigned. 2. peres. 2889
He from an asseherde was brought to the maiestee of a king. and whiles he folowed the admonicions of Samuel, he prospered and slue of the Ammonites and Palestinnes. 60000. But therwith bepyng elated, neglectyng the prophete, counsaillynge with Whyttones, slepyng the prestes, and contemnyng God, he was both of god and man forsaken: wherby he was ouercome with al his house, of the Palestines, and willingly killyng him selfe, was vnto his enemies a laughyng stocke.

1074

The holy man Dauid by the commandement of God, was anoynted kyng of Israell, of the prophete Samuel. Whom Saul (after the spirite of god had forsaken hym) partly for enuy that Dauid was so highly praised of the Israelites, and partly fearyng that he wold defeate him of his kyngdome, bered with continuall persecucion: duryng which tyme Dauid shewed many exammples, both of godly pacience and also of loyal obedience toward his prince.

Pythones

The seconde parte of

The pere
of the
worlde

The pere
before
Christe

2891

1072

prince. In so much, that when Saul (by the prouidence of god) fell in his handes: he onely cut a peece of the hem of his garment, in token that if he had list at that present, he might have slayne hym, and for that dede, afterward greatly repented, that he had ben so bold, as to cut the hemme of the garment of Saul his soueraigne lord and kynge, notwithstanding that he was his moste greuous enemy, and every houre sought his death.

David the sonne of Jesse, both kynge and prophete of almyghty god, after the death of Saul, reigned. vii. yeres over the tribe of Iuda, and than was admitted kyng of all Israell. He dyd that was good and ryght in the syght of god, and put his trust and confidence in the lord god of Israell, so that before nor after hym was not his lyke amonge the kynges of Iuda: he cleaved to the lord, and went not from his steppes, he dyd the comandementes that the lord had geuen by Moyses. Wherefore of hym god bare witnesse, that he was a man accordyng to his hert and desire: and to hym renewed his promises of the helth and saluacion that was to be loked for in Christe, so that for the certapntee therof, Christe of the prophetes is called the sonne of David. And furthermore David him selfe by the inspiracion of God, in his hymnes and Psalmes, most manifestly prophecteth of the conceptiō, byrth, lyfe, death, resurrection, ascencion, and beauenlye kyngdome of our sauour Christ. Wherefore among the prophetes and other holy men, his writynges were had in great estimacion, and of lyke auctoritee, as were the writynges of Moyses.

2895

1068

Isboeth, the son of Saul, was made king ouer Israel, Codrus in the Peloponessian warres, for the welch of his countrey gaue hym selfe to the death. After whome the Athenians had no more kynges but magistrates, by whom they were ruled. Of whom Codon, the sonne of Codrus, was fyrst, who gouerned them. rr. yeres.

Abiathar consecrated high priest of the Jewes.

2898

1065

David was chosen and anointed king ouer al Israe and reigned. 33. yeres. He expulles the Jebuseis, & made Hierusalem his citee, he banquished the Philistines, and brought the arke from the house of Aminadab to Hierusalem.

		The yere of the worlde.	The yers befoze Christe.
	rusalem.		
	Arion reigned in Corinth. xxxviii. yeres.		
14	G uendoleyn the wife of Locryne, governed this royaume of Britayn. xv. yeres, durynge the nonage of hir sonne Madan.	2899	1064
13	Cypales, the. xxi. emperour of Assyria, reigned. 38. yeres.	2900	1063
12	David committed homicide and adulteris, for whiche he was greuously punished. After this, Salomon was bozne vnto hym, he made all his borderers tributaries. accordyng to the diuine promission, from Euphrates and the great sea, to Egypt, than beyng in peace, he made the psalmes.	2901	1062
08	Argis gouerned the Lacedemōs one yere, after whom succeeded Archestratus, he reigned. 35. yeres.	2905	1058
03	Pyrcius Fesulanus ruled the Thuscans.	2910	1053
	Micena, now called Cuma, was builded in Italy.		
	M adan, sonne of Locryne, and Guendoleyn, toke on hym the gouernance of Britayn, which quietly he ruled. In the. xl. yere of his reygne, he finished his life, leuyng after him two sons, Menpicius & Manlius.		
7	Agastus gouerned the Athenians. xxxvi. yeres.	2916	1047
	Carthage, as many do write, was in this time builded by Carcedo a Tyrian: other say, it was builded by Dido.		
	Abisalon, Amnon, Adonias, with the other children of David: Nathan, Gad, and Asaph prophetes, in this tyme flourished.		
3	David in the. xl. yere of his reygne assigned Salomon to bee kynge, and gaue vnto hym the description of the temple.	2930	1033
2	Salomon, sonne of David and Bethsaba, the thyrtyde kyng of the Israeletes, a man aboue all other moſte wyse and ryche, reygned. xl. yeres, and at length by women, was seduced to ydolatry.	2931	1032
0	In the fourth yere of his reygne he began to bulde the temple of the lord, and finished it in the leuenth yere.	2934	1029
	Agvalaus in Corinth reigned. xxxviii. yeres.		
5	Alba Sylulus, the. vi. kyng of Latins, reigned. 39. yeres.	2937	1026
	Laosthenes, the. xxxiii. emperour of Assyria, reigned. xl. yeres.	2938	1025
	Labotes in Lacedemonia ruled. xxxviii. yeres.		

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christe		Before brittain knowen
2950	1013	P isens Thuscus in Italy reigned. lii. yeres.	
2952	1013	A rrippus gouerned the Atheniens. xix. yeres.	
2954	1009	M empzicius, the sonne of Madan, reygned here, in Britayne. xx. yeres. Betwene him and his brother Mantius was great strife for the soueraine dominion. But finally Mempzius slue his brother by treason, and after he had continued his reigne in tiranny, and al vntilful lustes the space of. xx. yeres, he was in hunting by wild beastes deuoured.	963 961 959
		Salomon walled Ierusalem, and builded many citees in Iury.	
2960	1003	The Thracians obteyned the soueraintee of the sea.	
		In the. xxi. Dynasti of Egypt, Smendis, called also Sesach reigned therein. xxi. yeres, vnto him Ieroboam fled, and there continued vntil the death of Salomon.	953
		Salomon in his latter age, deceyued with the loue of straunge women, worshipped theyr ydols, wherfore the kingdome of ten tribus was taken from his posteritee, and Adad, king of Syria, warred vpon him.	
2971	992	Ieroboam, the sonne of Salomon, fourth kinge of Iuda reigned. xlii. yeres, he neglectynge the counsaile of wise men, in releasing the greuous burthens of his subiectes, but rather thretning moze harder, caused tenne tribus to forsake him, and none folowed the house of Dauid, but onely Iuda. For Benjamin was geue vnto Paschan, the brother of Salomon: but neuertheles they faithfully ayded Iuda as often as they neded.	942
		In this yere also began Hieroboam his dominion ouer Israel, and reigned. 22. yeres, he made Israell to sinne in worshipping golden calues.	
		Thersippus, the fourth pryncce of Athenes gouerned them. xli. yeres.	
2972	991	Pyminas in Corinth reygned. 35. yeres.	941
2974	989	E branke, the sonne of Mempzius, reygned amonge the Britons. 60. yeres, he builded the citee of Worke, and the castels of Dunbar and Edinbrough.	939
2975	984	Sesach the kinge of Egypt, invaded Iudea, tooke Ierusalem, and spoyled the temple.	937
		Egyptus Sylus, the sonne of Alba, the. vii. kinge of Latines, reigned. xxxiii. yeres.	937
2976	987		Dozi

Lanquettes Cronicle,

35

Before brittaine knovven		The yere of the wozrde	The yere before Christe
935	Doristius in Lacedemonia reigned. xxix. yeres.	2978	985
930	Samos buylded, and Smyrna enlarged in the maner of a citie.		
	Pyriades, called also Pyrihidias, the. xxxiii. empe- rou of Assyria, reigned. 30. yeres, he with sundry incur- sions inuaded Hyrcania.	2988	980
	Ahinas, hie priest in Judea, Schemasa and Addo pro- phetes, and also Kameus and Adan.	2989	977
927	The Thracians possessed Bithinia.		
	Pseusenes, king of Egypt reigned. 41. yeres.		
965	Abias, the fourth king of the Jewes, reigned. 3. yeres, he ouercame Hieroboam in battayle.	2988	675
923	Asa his sonne succeded him in the kingdome of the Jewes, and reigned. 41. yeres, he was a iust man, he pulled downe ydolatrie, and ten yeres had peace.	2990	973
921	Madab, the seconde kinge of the Israelites, reygned not a yere.	2992	971
	Baasa the thirde kyng of the Israelites, reygned. 24. yeres. A wicked prince, who destroyed all the house of Hieroboam.		
913	Capys Siluius, the. vii. king of Latines, was kyng 28. yeres, he buylded Capua in Campayne.	3000	963
	Thuscus, the yonger, then ruling the Aborigines.		
	About this tyme, according to the prophecie of Hely, halfe the yeres of the wozld were fulfilled.		
	Zaruch, king of Ethiope, with a mighty power inua- ding Judea, was by Asa ouerthrowē. Afterwardes Asa confederated him selfe with Benadad king of Syria.		
907	In the. 36. yere after the diuision of the kingdome of the Jewes, Baasa ascended into Juda, but by the Syrians he was dryuen backe.	3006	957
906	Agelilaus (surnamed the great) the sixte kinge of the Lacedemones, reigned. 44. yeres: of whose excellēt wis- dome & prowes remaineth yet many remembzaunces.	3007	956
	Bacis in Corinth was king. 35. yeres.		
901	Phorbas gouerned the Atheniens. 31. yeres.	3012	951
900	Ophrateus, the. xxxv. Emperour of Assyria, reigned 20. yeres.	3013	950
	Jehozam, Azariah, the sonne of Ddad, Hananan, Jehu, prophetes, Jehu was slaine of Ela.		
	A. iii.		
	Hela		

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christe.		Before britayn knowen
3015	948	Herla succeeded his father ouer the Israelites. In the se- cond yere of his reigne he was slaine by Sāri his seruāt. Sāri destroyed al the lignage of Baala, and reigned but seuen dayes.	898
3016	947	Amri the sixt king of the Israelites reigned. 12. yeares, syre in Therla, and sire in Samaria, whiche he buylded, and ordeined the see of his kingdome.	879
3017	936	Ahab, the. vii. kinge of the Israelites reigned. 22. yea- res, he passed all his auncestours in wyckednesse, and toke to wife Jezabel. In his tyme the prophete Helias flourished.	886
3018	935	Nepher Cheres in Egypt reigned foure yeres. Capetus Syluius, the brother of Capis, was king o- uer the Latines. 13. yeres.	885
3031	932	A famine in this time began, which endured. iii. yeares. Josaphat, the. vii. king of the Jewes, reigned. 25. yeares, a prince both iust and vertuous, he ordeyned iudges in e- uery citee of Iuda, and commaunded the Leuites to read the law vnto the people, that they might therby learne to feare god.	882
3033	930	Ammenophis, king of Egypt, reigned. 9. yeres. Dphraganeus, the. cccvi. emperour of Assyria, reigned 50. yeres.	880
3034	929	B ute surnamed Brenesheld, as the bulgar histo- rye calleth him, reigned here in Britaine. xii. yeres. By the commaundement of Helias the prophete, all the priestes and prophetes of Baal were slayne.	879
3038	925	Amnis in Corinth ruled. 25. yeres. Joahas was high priest of the Jewes.	857
3040	923	Jehu, Obadia, Micha, Jehiel, and Eleazar prophetes, flourished.	
3041	922	Osochor, in Egypt reigned. 6. yeres. Liberinus Syluius, the. x. king of the Latines, reig- ned. 9. yeres. Of him the riuer of Liber was named, whi- che before was called Albala, because he was drowned therin.	873
3042	921	Agelas in Corinth reigned. 30. yeres. Decades gouerned the Acheniens. 30. yeres.	872
3043	920	Ahab ouercame Benadab, king of Syria. In the second conflicte he slue of the Syrians. 100000.	870

Lil.

Before brittaine knovven		The pere of the worlde	The pere before Christe
867	L Oyl, the sonne of Brute succeeded his father in this royaume of Britaine. He builded the citee of Caerleill, and reigned .25. yerres.	3046	917
	Spinaces, kyng of Aegypt, reigned .9. yerres.		
865	Achab, in the last bataille against Benedab, was slayn. After whom succeeded his sonne Ochozias, an ydolater, who reigned two yerres.	3048	915
863	Joram, the .ix. kyng of the Israelites, brother to Ochozias, reigned .xii. yerres. He was slayne by his servant, that succeeded hym.	3050	913
	Agrippa Syluius, the .xi. kyng of the Latines, reigned .40. yerres.		
	In this tyme the prophete Heliseus, and Homere the poete flourished.		
862	Archelatis, the .vii. kyng of Lacedemonia, ruled therein 60. yerres continually.	3051	912
	The mightie armie of Moab and Ammon, which rose agaynst Josaphat, god brought to nought.		
	Helias, the mighty prophete, after many miracles by hym dooen, at length in a fyrie chariot, was rapt into Paradise.		
860	Jehoram by his father Josaphat, was assygned to bee kyng ouer Iuda, he reigned .8. yerres, and after he was stablished in his kyngdome, slew all his brytherne, and made the people to synne.	3053	910
853	Perfusennes, kyng of Aegypt, reigned .35. yerres.		
853	Ochozias, called also Ahazias, the ninth kyng of Iuda reigned one pere: who also for his ydolatry was slayne.	3055 3060	908 903
	Joiada was high priest amonge the Jewes, who lyued 130. yerres.		
852	Jehu, the .x. kyng of Israelites, reigned .28. yerres, he beyng of Heliseus anoynted kyng, destroyed cleane the house of Achab, slew Joram, brake the necke of Jezabel, kylled the priest of Baall, and bourned the temple of ydolles.	3061	902
	Athalia, widow of Jehoram, after the deathe of his sonne Ochozias, clene extermined all the lignage of Salomon, sauyng Joas, a yonge babe, who by Joiada, the hygh priest, was saved, and whan she had tyrannously reigned .7. yeaeres, was by the commaundemente of the high		

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christe.	high priest slain.	Before britayn knowen
3065	398	Fellinus governed the Thuschans. 33. yeres.	848
3067	396	Joas, the. xi. kynge of the Jewes, and first of the house of Nathan, reigned. 40. yeres. In the seventh yere of his age he was proclaimed and anoynted kynge, and Athalia was slain. As long as he folowed the good admonicion of Joiada, he prospered: but after fallinge in to idolatry and other wickednes, he slue Zacharias the prophete betwene the temple and the aulter, for which dede, god punished hym by the Syrians, and after was slayne in his bed by his owne seruantes.	846
3071	392	L ad Hurdibzas, or Kathudibzas, sonne of Lepl, began to reygne in Britayne, he buylded the citees of Canterbury, and Winchester, & the towne of Shalisbury, whan he had reygned. 29. yeres, he decessed.	842
3072	391	Cudemus in Corinth reigned. 25. yeres.	841
3073	390	Diognetus, the. vii. prince of Athenes, governed the xxviii. yeres.	840
3082	381	Ascraypes, the. xxxvii. emperour of Assyria, reigned 41. yeres.	831
3085	378	Azabel, kynge of Syria, brought his army against Israel, and wasted al the countrey ouer Jordan.	823
3086	374	Mananis ruled the Thuscans. 28. yeres.	
		Joas repayred the temple.	
3086	374	Jehoiachas, the sonne of Jehu the. xi. kynge of the Israelites reigned. xvii. yeres.	824
3090	370	Aremulus Sylus, the. xii. kyng of Latines, reigned 21. yeres. He ordeyned the garrison of the Albanes vpon those mountaines, where Rome is now, and for his wickednes, was slayne with lightnyng.	823
		Lycurgus, the law maker of the Lacedemones, in this time flourished. He was a man so moderate and iust, that when he might haue reigned after his brother Polidecta, wold not take it vpon hym, but governed the royaume to the vse of his yong Nephew Cabylaus, to whom, being of age, he restored the kyngdom, and in the meane time garnished the citee with most honest lawes.	
		The seruantes among the Syrians slue al their masters, except one Strato, who at length was made their kynge.	
		Senscoris, kynge of Aegypt, beganne to reigne in the twenty	

Before britayne knowen	twentye Dynasty.	The yere before Christe	The yere before Christ.
820	After the deathe of Josada, the highe p[ri]est, kynge Jo[shaphat], as falling in to idolatrye, comanded the p[ro]phet Zecha[ry], the son of Josada, to be stoned to deathe.	3093	870
816	Aristemedes in Corinth reigned. 35. yeres.		
813	B ladud, the son of Lud, ruled Brittain. 20. yeres. He (as oure late histories witnes) builded the citee of Bathe, and made therein the hote bathes, and also by the vain trust of the arte of Pychromancy, wherein he was very studious, toke vpon him to fly i the aer, where he fel downe and brake his necke.	3097 3100	866 863
812	Wheredus, prince of Athenes, ruled thesm. 19. yeres.	3101	862
808	Azabel kyng of Iurie, spoiled Judea.		
807	Joas, of Israelites the . x. kyng, reigned. 16. yeres.	3105	858
	The other Joas, king of the Jewes, was of his owne seruantes slain in his bed. After whom succeeded Amasia, the . xii. kyng of the Jewes, who reigned. 29. yeres.	3106	857
804	Quentinus Syluius the . xiii. king of Latines, reigned 37. yeres. He by his buriall in the hill, whych now is part of the citee of Rome, gaue the name vnto it for euer.	3109	854
	Heliuseus the p[ro]phette about this time deceased, who beyng dead raised a dead man.		
802	Amos and Amasia p[ro]phetes flourished.		
	Diothion, kyng of Aegypte, reigned. 20. yeres.		
	Theleclus also in Lacedemonia reigned 21. yeres.	3111	852
	Amasia vauquished the Amalechites, Idumeis, and Gabaonites, in the batallie sleing. 10000. of them, and also takynge as many, whereby beyng elated, he adored straunge goddes, and at length prouokynge Joas king of Israel to the warres, was of him taken.		
	Tharus, and Anchiale, citees of Cilicia, were builded in one daye.		
	Hesiodus, a poete, and p[ri]est of the Muses, flourished in Helicon.		
794	L etice succeeded his father Bladud, and reigned. 21. yeres. He builded Leicester, and lefte after him thre daughters, of the whiche the yongeste, for hir wise dome, was chosen to be gouernour.	3119	844
793	Arifhron ruled the Atheniens. 22. yeres.		
	Joas toke Amazias king of Iuda, and beat downe the walles	3120	843

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.		
		walles of Ierusalem. In his place was Ozias his sonne constituted kyng by the people, who reygned. xi. yeres in the lyfe of his father, and .xii. yere after, he presumynge contrary to the ordynance of god to minister sacrifices in the temple, was therfore stricken with lepre.	Before britayn knowen
		Hieroboam the. ii. and. xii. kyng of the Israelites, reigned. xli. yeres.	
3123	840	¶ Tonos concoleros, called also Sardanapalus, the .38. and laste emperour of Assyria, reigned. xv. yeres, a man moze corrupt and effeminate than any woman.	790
		Jonas the pzophete about this time was cast out of the whales bealpe.	
3126	837	Tachelotis gouerned Aegypt. xlii. yeres.	787
3129	834	Hieroboam ouerthwe the Syzians, and recovered the citees, which they had taken.	784
		Cgemnon in Corinth, reigned. xvi. yeres.	781
3132	831	Phulbelochus, capitayn of the Babylonicall warres, and Arbaces, pzesident of Media, disdeignynge to be subiect vnder hym, who had rather be a woman than a man, conspired togither for the diuision of the empire, and by force of armes droue Sardanapalus to that poynte, that he bourned hym selfe with all his delicacies, (whiche he esteemed moze than all his empire) in a great fyre, onely in that, shewing hym selfe to be a man. Wherby the monarchie was deuided, Phulbelochus reigntyng in Babylon, and Arbaces in Media.	
3138	825	Arbaces began the empire amog the Medes, where he reigned. 28. yeres.	775
		Phulbelochus also reigned in Babylon. 48. yeres. He made Manahen, kyng of Israel tributarie.	
3139	824	Petubastis, was kyng of Aegypt. xxi. yeres.	774
3140	823	Tespheus, pzince of Athenes, gouerned the xxi. yeres.	773
3143	820	Marcius reigned amoge the Thuscans. xlii. yeres.	770
3146	817	Procas Sylulus the. xlii. kyng of Latines, reygned xlii. yeres.	767
		Alexander ruled the Corinthians. xxi. yeres.	765
3148	815	Ozias, in the beginnyng of his reigne beyng iust, subdued the Philistians, Arabies, and Ammonites, made them tributaries, and repaired the citee of Hierusalem.	764
3149	814	Finally by great abundance of welth and prosperitee, fallynge	

Lanquettes Cronicle.

39

Before britayne knowven	ling in to p ^r ide, and willing also to minister sacrifice bp pon the golden altare, was stricken with lepe, and by the p ^r iestes driven also out of the holy place.	The yere of the worlde.	The yere before Christ.
	That time, in Judea chanced a great earthquake, where by the mountayne Croge was clouen in sunder.		
762	Caranus, otherwise Gramaus first king of Macedon, 3151 reigned. 28. yeres. This Caranus with a multitude of grekes, folowed a flocke of gotes, toke Edissa, where he began the first fundemet of the kingdome of Macedone. Alcanes, in Lacedemon ruled. 37. yeres.		812
755	C ordeilla, the yongest doughter of Leir, ruled B ^r it ^{an} 3158 tayne f ^u e yea ^r es. She by the rebellion of hir two nephues, Morgan and Cunedagius, was take and cast in prison: where, for sorow she killed her selfe. Phydon an Argiue first found out the vse of weightes and measures.		805
752	Zacharia, the .xii. king of Israelites, reigned sixe mo ⁿ 3161 nethes, and was slaine by Sallum, who also continued not a moneth, but was by Manaben besieged, & destroyed. Manaben the .xiii. king of Israelites, reigned. 10. yea ^r es. who tirannously possessed the kingdome, and gaue vnto Phulbelochus great trefure to breake by his warres.		802
751	Etalus gouerned the Thuscans. 30. yeres. C unedagius and Morga jointly succeded Cordeill. 3162 la, but they continued not long togither: but there began strife for the souerain dominion, in whyche Morgan was slaine in a countye of Wales called now Glaumorgan. After whiche victo ^r y Cunedagius glo ^r y ously ruled the hole ple. xxxiii. yeres.		801
749	Oso ^r thon was king of Egypt. ix. yeres, the Egipcians 3164 called him Hercules.		799
747	Azarias high p ^r iest. Solarnius the second emperoure of Media reygned 3166 xxx. yeres. Metasthenes erreth muche, in that he writeth Mandanes to be second king.		797
746	Agamnesto ^r ruled the Athenians. xx. yeres. 3167 Procas king of Latins dying, bequethed vnto Amulius his roialme, and to Numito ^r his treasure.		796
744	Amulius Sylus the .xv. kinge of Latines, reygned 3169 xlvi. yeres,		794

B. ii.

Phacea,

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.		Before britayne knowen
3173	790	Phacee the firſte ſonne of Manahen, and .xv. kinge of the Iſraelites, reigned two yeres, and was traitterouſly ſlain by Phacee. Plammus reygned in Egypt. 10. yeres. Pheleſtens was the leauenth king of Corinth, he reygned. 12. yeres.	740
3175	788	Phacee ſonne of Kamalia. xvi. kinge of Iſrael, reygned 20. yeres. Numitor, the elder ſonne of king Procas, beyng eſpelled from his kingdome by his brother Amulius, liued on his owne lande, his daughter, becauſe ſhe ſhould haue no child, was made a byrgin Meſſale: Notwithſtanding in the ſeuēth yere of her vnckles reigne, ſhe brought forth two children, Remus and Romulus, at one byrth, wherefore according to the lawe, ſhe was buried quyk: but the yong babes, beyng caſte forth by the bankes of Tiber, were founde by Fauſtulus the kynges ſhepeherde, who broughte theym to his wife Acca Laurentia, whiche for hir rapacitie was called of her neyghbours, a wolfe. The children when they waxed towarde men, gatheringe a bande of ſhepeherdes and theenes, ſlew Amulius at Alba, and reſtozed theyr graundfather Numitor to his kingdome.	738
3176	787	Jotham, the .xliii. king of the Jewes reigned. 16. yeres, a prince vertuous and inuincible, he ſubdued the Ammonites, and buylded the ſumptuous gate of the temple. Coenus, king of Macedon, reigned. 12. yeres.	737
3179	784	Bochorus reigned in Egypt. 44. yeres, and gane vnto them lawes: in his time a lambe ſpake in Egypt.	734
3183	780	The Aniazons and Cymmerians made many ſodeine incuſſions into Asia, where they longe time made great waſte and ſlaughter. The mighty warres of the Peloponenſes and Atheniens, with all theyr power and force, was kepte, wherein by mutuall ſlaughter they were compelled as vāquiſhed to depart one from an other, and to forſake the warres. Naum and Micheus prophced among the hebzues.	730
3185	778	Antomenes, the laſt king of Corinth, reigned one yere, After whom they had no moze kinges, but perelye magiſtrates were choſen.	728

The

Lanquettes Cronicle.

39

Before britayne knowen			The yere of the world	The yere before Christ.
717	The kingdome of the Lydians in this time began, where Ardus first reigned. 36. yeres.		3186	777
	Phulassar the second king of Babylon reigned. 15. yeres, he was called also Teglatphulassar, he wasted and toke al the region Calatides.			
726	Here beginneth the supputacion of the Olympiades, the most sure kalender of the Grekes. For the games were celebrated and kept at the mount Olympus every fifty yere, in the kalendes of Maye, so that everye Olympiade contained foure yeres.	3187		776
	Aescylus governed the Atheniens. xxi. yeres.			
725	Here fayled the kingdome of the Lacedemones.	3188		775
722	Pyrrhus in Macedonia reigned. xxxviii. yeres.	3191		772
721	Achas, the. xv. king of Iuda, reigned. xvi. yeres, a wicked prince, who wilfullye made him selfe subiecte to the king of Babylon.	3192		771
720	The Lacedemons warred agaynst the Messenes. xx. yeres cruellye, for the violacion of theyr virgines in the solemne sacrifices of the Messenes.	3193		770
	Celias in Thulcain reigned. xxi. yeres.			
	Phacea and Kasim, king of Surie, besyged Achas the king of Iuda.			
718	Hosea deceitfully flewe Phacea, and was the last king that reigned ouer Israel. xix. yeres.	3195		768
	Pyrrhus, a poete of Athenes, was capitayne of the Lacedemones.			
	Pericles, and Sophocles wyter of tragedies, were constituted capitains of the Atheniens.			
	Hitherto Manetho continued his cronicle.			
717	Medius, the king of Media, reigned. xl. yeres.	3196		767
716	Ruallo succeded Cunedagius, a prince peccible and fortunate, he reigned. 46. yeres. In his time (as our chronicles say) it rained blood, wherof ensued great mortalitee of people.	3197		766
	Uria, high priest, Oseas, Esaias, Amos, Micheas, and Adad prophetes flourished.			
712	Salmanasar the third king of Babylon reigned. 17. yeres, he toke Osea kinge of Israel, and destroyed theyr kingdome, leadinge theym captiue into Assyria, by the vengeance of god, who suffered long theyr wickednes.	3201		762

B. iii.

In

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.	In Lacedemonia Ephorus was constituted theyr firſte magiſtrate.	Before britayne knowen
3204	859	Moſea rebelled, denyng to paye tribute to the Affyrians.	709
3205	758	Moſea of Iſraell deſired aide of Sua king of Egypt ag geiſt the Affyrians.	708
3203	755	Ezechias, the .xvi. kinge of Iuda reigned .29 yeres, a prince iuſte, vertuous and religious : who clenſed his countreie from ydolatry, and brake the braſe ſerpent, he brought agayne the true honouring of god, and reſtozed to the prieſtes their tenthes.	705
3210	753	Alcamenon gouerned the Atheniens two yeaes.	703
3211	752	In the yere .1554. after the vniuerſall floude, and after Comerus the firſt king of Italy. 1414. After the diſtruc tion of Troy. 432. And after Brute arriued in England 356. Rome was builded in Italy by Remus & Romulus.	702
		Romulus the firſte kinge of Romaines, the ſonne of Rhea ſilia, the virgine Veſtale, reigned 38. yeres. In the xviii. yere of his age, he beganne to make a litell citee on the mount Palatine, afterwarde he builded a temple, and made therof a ſanctuary, for the iuſtice of al tranſ greſſours: he ordeined lawes, and ſpecially, that no Ro maine ſhould exerciſe any handy craſte : but onely gene them ſelues to marſhall feates and husbandry. Wome adulterours, or drunken, to be puniſhed by death, he inſti tuted their ſacrifices, he vanquiſhed in battayle Acron king of the Cecinens, coſecrating his armour vnto Iu piter : he ouerthrewe the Antemnates, triumphed ouer the Sabines, receiued Tattus theyr king into the ſelow Myr of his kyngdom, toke the Fidenes, ouercame h Ca merines, conſtituted the hundred Senators, ordeined h Centurions, and appointed the twelue ſerieantes. Final ly in h marſhe Caprea, ſtriken with lightning, he was neuer after ſene, wherfore they ſuppoſed he was take vp to the goddis.	
3212	751	The Athenians altered the forme of their commune weale, choſyng a magiſtrate, whole power ſhuld endure 5. yeres, in whiche Carops firſt gouerned them.	701
		Rome, not able to containe in hir, two lordes, was the cauſe that Romulus ſla his brother Remus.	
		At that tyme alſo was Roma Pompilius borne.	

Before britayne knowven 700	In the nyynth yere of the rebellio of Osea, was Samaria taken, and the ten tribes led away captiue by Sal- man Assar.	The yere of the world	The yere before Christ.
	Thales Milesius, one of the seven wise men, flourished in naturall philosophy among the Grecians.	3213	750
695	Sennacherib the fourth kyng of Babilon, reigned siue yeres, he besieged Ezechias in Hierusalem, whose army the angel of god destroyed, to the number of . 185. thou- sand, and consumed their bodies in to dust, that the ayre shoulde not by them be infected. The kyng fledde with a fewe to Ninine, where after . 15. dayes, he was slayne in the temple of his owne sonnes.	3218	745
	The Lacedemones kept warre twentie yeres agaynst the Messenians, whose capitaine Aristomenes, hauynge an heary hert, slue alone 300. Lacedemones.		
692	In this tyme Sibylla Crithrea lyued, who prophesied most plainly of Christ.	3221	742
691	Ezechias, in his extreme sicknesse was healed by god, his lyfe was prolonged by . xv. yeres. The sonne, to the wonder of all the worlde, returned his course backward by tenne degrees.	3222	741
	Aesimedes magistrat of Athenes gouerned the . x. yeres.		
	Mydas reygned in Phrygia, and Aliactes in Lydia xiiii. yeres.		
690	Assaradon, the . v. kyng of Babylon, reigned . v. yeres.	3223	740
	Parus, Syracusa, Cathinio in Sicily, and Kauenna in Italy were builded.		
	The citee Messana was taken by the Lacedemones.		
686	Merodach the fift kyng of Babylon, reigned . lii. yeres, surnamed Baladad, he sent vnto Ezechias ambassadoys to signifie to hym how glad and how ioyfull he was, for that he had recouered againe his health.	3227	736
	Sabachon, an Aethiope, reigned in Aegypt . 22. yeres, he ouercame Bochorus, that was the . x. kyng.		
	Perdica, kyng of Macedon, reigned . 51. yeres.	3229	734
684	Hydromancie, or diuiniatio by waters was brought into Italy by Persians.		
682	Tarpeia, in rewarde of hys treasone, beyng oppressed with shielde of the Sabines, gaue the name vnto the hill Tarpeius, on whiche the capitol was builded.	3231	732
	Clidicus		

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.		Before britayne knowen
3232	731	Clidiscus gouerned the Atheniens. x. yeres.	681
3236	727	Cardiceas, called also Anticarmin, the. iiii. king of the	677
3237	726	Medes reigned. xiii. yeres.	676
		Meles was kyng of Lydia. xii. yeres.	
		Manasses, the. xvi. kyng of Iuda, reigned. 55. yeres, a	
		wicked prince, who rayled bp ydolles, defiled the temple,	
		sacrificed his childzen to the goddis, fylled Hierusalem	
		with the bloud of innocentes, dyspyled the admonitions	
		of prophetes, and put to death the mosse holpe prophete E-	
		lias, cutting hym in the midle with a saw, wherfore god	
		beyng displeased, reised bp the kyng of Babylon, who	
		with a mightie power inuaded Iury, toke the kyng by	
		a traine, and brought hym captiue to Babylon. Than in	
		his captiuitie, aknowlagynge god, he confessed his sin-	
		nes, and toke repentance, throug h which findyng grace,	
		he was restozed to his kyngdome, where he abolished all	
		ydolatry, restozed the true honoryng of god, commanded	
		that it shoulde be obserued, and iustly passed all the resi-	
		due of his lyfe in the feare of god. He also repayred the	
		walles of the holy citee, and ordeined garrisons in all	
		his citees.	
3242	721	Augustus succeeded Ruallo in this royaume of	671
		Britaine, and reigned. 38. yeres.	
		Hippomenes gouerned the Atheniens. 10. yeres.	
3244	719	The Carenses obtained the soueraintee of the sea.	
		The warres that were kept betwene y Lacedemones	669
3248	715	and Argiues began in Tyria.	
		Candaules reigned in Lydia. xvi. yeres, who throug	
		the sonde loue that he had to his wyfe, for hir excedynge	665
		fayzenesse, not contented in his minde therewith, but that	
		he must also disclose the secrets of matrimony, as though	
		silence shoulde haue been a preiudice to hir beantee, he	
		wed hir naked to his frende Gyges, by whiche deede his	
		frend beyng enticed of his wife to adulterie, became his	
		mortal enemy, and his wife also alienated hir loue from	
		hym to Gyges. And therfore afterwarde he was slayne	
		by the same Gyges.	
		Romulus beyng in the marishe Caprea, was neuer af-	
		ter founde.	After

Lanquettes Cronicle.

41

before britayn knowen		The yere of the worlde.	The yere before Christe.
664	After whose death the senatours chose ten iudges, who reigned a whole yere.	3249	714
663	Diocles the .v. kyng of Media, reigned .54. yeres.	3250	713
	Numa Pompilius, the son of Pomponius the leuenth kyng of Romanes reigned .42. yeres, A man endued both with wit and vertue, he kept no war, he ruled the people in peace, he apointed both lawes and customes, ordeined the sacrifices & priestes, erected manye chapels and temples, elected Martius high bishop, created the religion of the Secles and Salios, consecrated the virgines bestals, deuided the yere in to monethes, and to the ten monethes added January and February. Finally in the 43. yere of his reigne he died.		
662	Carachus, an Aethiope, reigned in Aegypt. 20. yeres.	3251	712
661	Leochrates ruled the Atheniens. 1. yeres.	3252	711
655	Joel, Naum, prophetes among the Jewes.		
	A pestilent disease inuaded Italy, for which cause Numa instituted the priestes Salios.	3258	705
	In this tyme, as many wyte, Homere the prince of greke poetes feigned his warkes: he bothe amended and encreased the greke letters, and fyrst set furthe the rules of grammer.		
651	Ablander governed the Atheniens. 10. yeres.	3262	701
648	Cyges kyng of Lydia, reigned .36. yeres, he, by the comendement of the quene, slew Candaules, because he had shewed hir naked to Cyges, and so obteyned bothe hys wyfe and his realme.	3265	698
	Midas reigntyng in Phrygia, with drynkyng bulles blond was poisoned.		
644	Two yeres was the roylme of Egypt without a kyng.	3269	694
643	Claucus Chins first inuented souderyng of mettalles.	3270	693
642	The Scottes feignyng their originall out of Spayne, wyte, that one Simon Brech, a Spaniarde, was elected to their kyng, whyles thei inhabited Ireland, before they knewe yet Scotlande. And that by hym and his successors they were guided by the space of .113. yeres, ere they arriued in Albion. This Symon brought with hym oute of Spayne, the marble chayre, in whych the kynges of Scottes were wont to be crowned, This chayre by Edward the fyrste, was taken frome theym, and broughte	3271	692
	L.i.		

The second part of

The yere of the worlde.	The yere before Christ.	The yere to Westmyster.		before britayn knowe.
3271	692	Perres an Ethiope reigned in Aegypt. xii. yeres.		
3272	691	Cyprias gouerned the Athenians. x. yeres.		642
3279	684	S illus, brother to Cargustius reyned in Britayne xlii. yeres.		641
		Benmerodach, the seuenth kyng of Babylon, reyned. xxi. yeres.		634
		Croton, Corcyra, Chalcedon, Phaselis, Sybaris, Locris, and Tarentum citees, in this season were builded.		
3280	683	Archeus, other wise called Argeus, was kyng of Macedonia. xxxviii. yeres, with great loue of his subiectes.		633
3282	681	Here the Athenians altered agayne the state of theyr citee, for abolysing the power of princes, they perely elected nine of the nobilitie to gouerne them.		631
3283	80	Stephinatis was king of Egypt. vii. yeres. After whom succeeded Pichepsos, a prince singular in astronomy, who reigned. viii. yeres.		630
3292	671	Ammon the. xlii. kyng of Iuda, reigned. iii. yeres. A wicked prince, wherfore he perished by the sworde of hys owne seruantes.		621
		Tullus Hostilius the thirde kyng of Romaines, reigned. xxi. yeres. He synne of the Romans bled purple, and ares or maces to bee borne before hym. Who supposinge the citee to ware feeble and weake with ease and ydelnesse, prepared warre, ouercame the Albanes, banquished the Volentes and Fidenates, beate downe Alba to the ground: of the Romans and Albanes were one people made. In the meane while the Sabines gathered an army, betwene whom a cruell conflict was made at the wood Malicusa, the array of the Sabines was broken, Tullus triumphed, enlarged the citee, addyng the mount Coelius. In Rome that time it rayned stones, and was vexed with the pestilence. The kyng taken also with syckenes, gaue him selfe to the institution of sacrifices. But finally he with his hole house being stricken with lightenyng, perished, whan he had with greate glory of warres reigned. 31. yeres.		
		The barefoot cerimonies were first made in Lacedemō.		
3295	668	Josias the. xix. kinge of Iuda reigned. 31. yeres. A		618
				suons.

before
britayn
knowen

The yere
of the
worlde.
The yere
before
Christe.

tuous and iust prince, for in his very childhod he began to seke the god of his father David. He purged his lande from al ydolles, ymages, and woodes, burned the bones of the priestes of Baal, and clensted all wickednes out of the citees of Manasse, Ephraim, Simeon, and euen vnto Nephtalim: he repaired the temple, that the holpe thinges might be couered. The booke of the lawe of Moyses whiche had been lost a longe tyme, was founde againe, whiche he red vnto the people. Finallpe vppon to muche presumption he made warre vpon the kyng of Aegypt, in whiche he was wounded, and died therof.

Leostratus was capitayne of the Atheniens.

Sybilla Herophila in Samos was greatly esteemed.

617
615

Plammeticus was kyng of Egypt. 44. yeres. He re-
refused into amitee the Ioues and Cares, whiche against
their willes arryued in Egypt, grauntynge them a place
to inhabite, he increased his holte with outwarde reti-
nues, he subdued all Egypt, and. xxix. yeres besieged A-
zotus, which at length he toke.

667
665

Archilochus, Simonides, and Aristoreus, the musici-
an, in this tyme greatly were esteemed:

613

Nabuchodonoser, the fyrste and. vii. kyng of Babilon
reigned, xxix. yeres.

663

Petius Suffetius, capitayn of the Albanes, for brea-
king his league, was with horses drawen in pieces.

612

Ardis kyng of Lydia reigned. xxxvii. yeres.

In this tyme Zaleucus the moste severe lawyer of the
Locrenses flourished, who commaunded the eyes of his
onely sonne, whiche was condemned for adultery, to bee
put out, lest that the generall lawe should be frustrate in
him. At length by the praiser of the people gaynsaying it,
he in suche wise moderated his sentence, that he comaun-
ded one of his owne eyes, and an other of his sonnes to
be put out, that the lawe might be fulfilled.

3301

662

Phaoites the. vi. kyng of Media, reigned. xxi. yeres.

610
606

Cypselus playd the tyrant in Corin. xxvii. yeres.

3303

660

Alba destroyed, and Byzance, called now Constantino-
ple, was builded by Paulanias, kyng of Spartanes.

3307

656

Alemes, Leschon, & Lesbins were had in great renome.

Pytrus in Ponto, Chanus, and Stagera in Asia
were

L.ii.

The second part of

The yere of the worlde.	The yere before Christ.	were builded.	
3311	652	Whalaris, tyranne of Agragentine flourished, vnder whome the cunninge artificer Peryllus suffered in his owne inuencion.	before brita knov 602
3318	645	Philippus the. vi. king of Macedon, reigned. 38. yeres. Callas kept five yeres warres with the Latines. Lamfacus, Abdera, Selinis, and Peristhenes, noble ci- ties, in this time were builded.	595
3323	640	Grece in this season first enterprised to vse the oracles of Apollo at Dodoneus. Damasia ruled the Atheniens.	590
3324	639	Ancus martius fourth kyng of Romanes reigned. 24. yeres. He was nephieu to Numa by his daughter. He kept warres with the Latines, toke Politoziū the second tyme, beat it downe to the grounde, broughte the people to Rome, encreased the citie, adding therunto the moun- t Auentine, and Janiculum, he made the brydge Subliti- us vppon Tiber, and builded the citee Hostia, the hauen or port of Rome. In this same time L. Tarquinius Pyrs- cus came to Rome with his wife Tanaquil.	589
3325	638	Phaoztes, in a conflicte made against the Assyrians perished. After whom succeded Cyaraces, the. vii. kyng of Media. 40. yeres. Psammitichus, the king of Egypte, soyninge wyth the Syrians in battayle, obteyned the victorie. Helchias high priest, Hieremias, Sophontas, Baruch, and Oida prophetes flourished among the Jewes. Iostas prouoking the king of Egypt to battayle was therin wounded, and died. Of whose deathe Hieremy the prophet made his lamentacions.	588
3326	937	Joachas, the. xx. king of Jewes, reigned thre monethes, and was taken and brought captiue into Egypt. In whose place his brother Joachim was constitute the. xxi. kyng of Jewes, and was king ouer the. xi. yeres. An in- solent prince, who not regardinge the prophecies of Hier- emie, but burning the booke therof, was finally slayn, and left vnburied like a beaste.	587

Iago

before
brittaine
knowven

586
584

577

576

75

74

I Ago, called also Lago, gouerned this rosalme of Britayne. xxb. yeres.

Millena fel from the Lacedemons.

Nabuchodonosor the great, the. ix. king of Babylon, called of the Jewes Nabucadnezer, reigned. xliii. yeres. He subdued the Syrians, Egyptians, Lybians, Iberians, and brought the Jewes into captiuitie. Finally he rebelling as it were against almighty god, by the compaignie of beastes, with whome (by the stroke of god) he was compelled to liue, was made humble, and acknowledged the godhead, to whom he gaue prayse & gloze, as al whose wates be iudgementes, and woꝝkes righteous, who also can humble the proud, and giue and take kingdoms as pleaseth him.

The Scythians entred as farre as Palestine, possessed al Asia, and molested Egypt with warres.

Joachim burned the booke of Hieremies prophesie. After which dede Nabuchodonosor made him tributarye.

Hierusalem was taken, the king slayne, and cast out of the citee vnburiel, accordig to the prophesy of Hieremy.

Joachim, called also Jechonias, the. xxi. king of Jewes, reigned thye monethes and. x. dayes, he yelded himselfe willingly vnto Nabuchodonosor, by the counsaile of Hieremie: who sente him to Babilon, with all the noble men, and oznamentes and iewels: amog whom also was the prophet Ezechiel.

In his stede Nabuchodonosor constituted Mathanias the fourth sonne of Josias, whom he caused to sweare by the name of the lord, that faithfullie he shoulde serue the Chaldeis, in token wherof, he named him Sedechias, the. xlii. and last king of the Jewes, who was king. xi. yeres, he finally for his arrogancie and vntruth both to god & man, was taken, blinded, imprysoned, and miserablly finished his life.

Periander, the tyran of Corinth, in this time liued. 3338
Sadyates was king of Lydia. xv. yeres.

Perasina, Mantua, and Dirachium buylded.

The game of Chesse about this season was deuised by wise men, to mitigate the mindes of heres of tyzans.

Dufanna, the most chaste matron of the hebꝝues, by

The yere
of the
worlde

3327

3328

before
Christ

636

634

627

626

625

624

two

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christe.		
		two false priestes was accused of adultery, but by the po- licy of yong Daniel he was purged and the priestes com- mitted to the fier..	before brita know
3342	621	Nechac called also Nechepsos, kinge of Egypte, reyg- ned. vi. yeres.	571
		Abacuk and Ezechiel beganne to prophesy among the Hebrues.	
		Draco, the lawe geuer of the Atheniens, wrote his la- wes with bloude.	
3344	619	Sedechias brake his amitee with the kinge of Baby- lon, and entered in league with the Egyptians. For whiche cause Nabuchodonoser returned and besieged Hierusalem, whiche he continued one yere, six monethes and fife dayes. After which the holy cite with the most sacred temple, miserably with pestilence famine, sword, and fyre was destroyed. The king him selfe, with all his nobilitie taken, his chyldren slayne before his face, his eyes pulled out, and sent in captiuitie to Babylon. Thus was the whole nacion of Jewes without respecte of age or kind eyther slayne or brought into Babilons bondage for theyr obstinacye against god & his prophetes and for the sinne and preuarication of theyr kinges, priestes, and all the people, the yere after the vniuersall floude. 1692. after the arriual of Brute. 492. after the beginninge of the kingdome of the Jewes. 458. after the buyldyng of the temple. 414. and after the buyldinge of Rome. 137.	569 566
3347	616	Quintus Marcius, the .v. kinge of Romans, reigned 37 yeres, he doubled the numbze of Senatoures, buylded the circuite, wherin the playes and pastimes were kepte ouercame the Sabines, encreased the bandes of hozsmen, subdued the olde Latines, fyrste entred Rome with try- umph, made the walles, and synkes to conueye the fylthe of the cite, and began the capitoll. Finally he was slayne by the sonnes of Ancus Marcius, whome he succeeded.	
3348	615	Quintus Marcius, the .v. kinge of Romans, reigned 37 yeres, he doubled the numbze of Senatoures, buylded the circuite, wherin the playes and pastimes were kepte ouercame the Sabines, encreased the bandes of hozsmen, subdued the olde Latines, fyrste entred Rome with try- umph, made the walles, and synkes to conueye the fylthe of the cite, and began the capitoll. Finally he was slayne by the sonnes of Ancus Marcius, whome he succeeded.	565
		Panetius first tyrannised Sicilye.	
3351	612	Animacus succeeded Iago in this royaume of By- tayne, wherin he reigned. 54. yeres.	562
		Enochida a capitaine of the Atheniens, Arleschokus an excellent poet, in this time flourished.	
		Aliace	

Lanquettes Cronicle.

44

efore
ritaine
novven
60

The yere
of the
worlde
3353
The yere
before
Christ
610

Aliaetes reigned in Lydia. 49. yeres.

Arion, the excellent harper, by a Dolphin (as it is sayd) was bozne through the sea.

Daniel, the most notable prophet, florished in Babilō. he in his youthe by his wysedome deliuered the innocent Susanna from death, expounded the dreames of Nabuchodonosor, and fynally cast into a denne among hungry lyons, was by the power of God p̄serued from harme. Afterwarde he prophecied bothe of the comyng of Christ and also of the empires of Babylon, Media, Persia, Grecia, and the Romanes.

Nabuchodonosor erected a golden stature or ydoll, whiche he commaunded to be adored, by whiche occasion the holye men Ananias, azarias, and Misael triumphed in the fyr. After this he sawe the vision of the fallynge tree, wherby he was warned of his falle. For shortly after he was tourned into a beastly fure, living in the woodes as a beast seven yeres. Finally he was restored agayn to his helth and kingdome.

Europs king of Macedon, reigned. xxxi. yeres.

Pittacus Miteleneus, one of the seven wyse menne of Grece, in this time excelled bothe in learninge and martial feates.

Naphres, was king of Egypt. xxx. yeres.

Cyaxares ouercam the Scythians, and recovered Asia

Sappho a poetesse and prophetesse, in this season was greatly renoumed.

Adzican, kinge of Penians, yelded him selfe and his to Aprius, who brought his army into Cirenica, where by them, at Asara his armye was ouerthrowen, put to flight, and slayne, excepte a fewe, who by flyght saued them selues.

Astages the viii. and last kyng of Medes, reigned 38. yeres. He gave his onely daughter Mandanes in marriage to Cambyses, a persia, of whom Cyzus was bozn, whiche Cambyses, at length was taken by his nephieu Cyzus, and deposed from his empire.

Harfles, a citee and fayre haven of Fraunce, in this tyme was builded vpon the Lumbards sea.

Solon, (who for his wysedom is called one of the seven wyse

3356
607
603
602
3364
599
3365
598
3369
594

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christe.	wylse men of Grece, gaue lawes to the Atheniens, among the which this is one: that euery man perely shuld shew to the magistrates, his substance and kynde of occupaci- on, wherby he honestly lyued. And that suche chyldren as were not by their parentes instructed in some honeste fa- cultee, shulde not bee bound in tyme of nede to find them necessaries. He ordeined also sharpe punishment for slan- derers, and theim whiche spake yll of dead men, and a- bolished the cruel and blouddie lawes of Draco, whych were tempered with noo equytee, but commaunded all transgressions egally lyke to be punished with death.
3373	590	Amilinus Cuiulmerodach the tenth kinge of Babilon, 540 reigned. 31. yeres, he in the beginnyng of his reigne toke out of prizon Joachin kyng of Jewes, & honoured hym aboue all the princis of Babilon, and his sonne Asir Je- chonias was also deliuered, who begat Salathiel, the fa- ther of Zorobabel.
3378	585	The eclips of the sonne, which Thales dyd pronostic- que, chanced nowe. Cyrus, among the shepardes chyldren in their playes, 535 was called theyr kyng.
3379	584	Asyages, to be reuenged on Harpagus, for the sauynge of Cyrus, gaue him his owne sonne to eate.
3381	582	The Hetruscians adorne Tarquinius with a golden crowne, a scepter, an yuorpe seate, and a purple besture. The fīue yeres warre betweene the Sabines and Ro- 534 maynes began. Asyages warred agaynst the Lydians. Asybarus, with his sonne Apanda, reigned in Media 532 xx. yeres, as Metasthenes writeth. The plaies of Apollo called Istmia and Pythia, were in this tyme fyrst kepte.
3382 3383	581 580	Alcetas was kyng of Macedon. xxix. yeres. The Scottes, as their chronycles shewe, in this tyme 531 began to inhabite Scotlande, where they liued long time 530 vnder sundry capitaynes as they called theim, vntill the tyme of Fergus, sonne of Ferquard, kyng of Irelande, who ayded the Scottes agaynst the Pichtes, and was the first kyng of Scottes, as they saye. The Sabines yelded them to the Romanes. Anaximander,

Before
britayne
knowen

Anaximander, a renowned philosopher and phisicion, in this time flozished. He taught the course of the celesti-
al bodiēs, and first made the Horoscopp or ascendent, and
also discriued the circuite of the land and sea.

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
before
Christ.

Archestratides was king of Athens.

517

Seruius Tullius the first kynge of Romanes, reigned 3386
44. yeres. He ouercam the Metentes and Petruscians,
subdued the Sabines, added the thzee hilles Quirinalis,
Fiminales and Aesquillinus to the citee, he dydde caste a
dyche about the walles, and firste of all ordeined the va-
luacion and numbryng of the people, whiche yet to al the
worlde was knowen. Under whō Rome beyng brought
to a valuacion, had. 84. thousand heades of citisens. Fi-
nally he was slayn by L. Tarquinius the proude, who
(Seruius yet liuyng) affected the kyngdome, by the en-
tiselement of his wyfe Tulla, the daughter of Seruius.

577

Claudia a virgin bestale, accused of incest, for hir pur-
gacion, went to the shalowes of Tiber, where fastenynge
hir gyrdle to a thyp there sticke, spake these wordes:
If I be a virgin, folow me. Incontinent she dzeue the
thyp out of the shalowes to Rome.

23

Anamasis kyng of Aegypt, reigned. 42. yeres.

3390

373

The playes exercised naked, were kept at Athenes.

Aesopus, a Phrygian, by fortune bonde, but in wpt free
and excellent, in this tyme flozished by feignynge his plea-
saunt fables.

28

Croesus, the last kyng of Lydis, reigned. xliii. yeres. In
the beginning of his reigne fortune fauoured him, wher-
by he gathered exceedynge richesse, by whiche he was so
elated, that he enterprised warres agaynst Cyrus kyng
of Persia, by whom he was taken, and set vpon a greate
pile of wood to be burned. Than Croesus, remembryng
the wordes of Solon, who had tolde hym befoze. That
no man coude be counted blessed or on all partes happy,
befoze the last day of his life, with a great exclamaciō cri-
ed oute, Solon, Solon, Solon. Whych wordes Cyrus
hearinge, caused of hym to be demanded, what he was,
whom he called vpon: than Croesus declared the whole
circumstance of the matter, whiche thynge Cyrus percei-
uing, acknowlaged hym selfe to be also a man, and soze
repented,

3402

562

M. i.

repented,

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
before
Christ.

repented, that he went about to burne hym, who was equal to hym in honour and riches, and hastily commanded hym to be deliuered from the fier: whom alwaies after he had in great honour, and bled much his counsaile. Herodotus at this Croesus began to write his hystorie.

Cyrus, by the counsaile of Harpagus, brought his army agaynst Astyages, and ouercame hym in battaile.

Here the hystorians do somewhat vary, for Metasthenes writeth, that Cyrus and Darius together baimquished Apanda, whom I suppose to be Astyages, and that they reigned also together. But I wil folowe the certaine computation and agreement of most hystories.

3403

560



Cyrus, the first emperor of Persia reigned 510 30. yeres, he ouercame the Medes & Chaldeis, and reunited the monarchy, bringing it into Persia, when the strong citee of Babylon subdued all Asia, toke Cresus kinge of Lydia prisoner, deliuered the Jewes fro the captiuitee of Babylon. Finally by the ouermuche desire of dominion, warringe in Scythia, was by Thomiris, quene thereof (whose sonne and armpe he had ouerthrowen) slayne, and with him 20000. Persians, whose head he caused to be cut of, and put into a vessel of bloud as a meete tombe for it, with these wordes: Satisfye thy Telfe vvith bloud, vvhych thou hast alvvay thyrted: He excelled all men in his time in goodly personage, wisdom, prouesse, and specially in memorie, which was so excellent that he knewe all the men in his army, and called theym by theyr sundry names, when they came to him, he also glorped in the gardenes and orchardes whiche wpth his owne handes he made, and the comely order of the trees that he had planted.

Chilon and Anaximines phylosophers in thys tyme flourished.

3404

550

Cyrabadug succeeded his father Bismachus in thys 509 royaulme of Britayne, as our Chronicles wyte, 1311. yeres.

Regallat

Before Britayne knowen	Regallat, the .xi. king of Babilon, reigned. iiii. yeres. Sennacherib kept warres with the Petrusians. 20. yeres, after whiche they yelded.	The yere of the worlde.	The yere before Christ.
507	Darius the tyran of Athenes, ouercominge the Me-	3406	557
506	garenses, by craft possessed theyr empire. xxxiii. yeres.	3407	556
	Labas Ardach, the .12. king of Babilon, reigned. 6. yeres.		
	Atis the sonne of Cresus, in hunting by chaunce was slayne with a darte, notwithstanding the great proupy- on and carefulnesse of his father, which befoze time dre- med that his sonne should perishe with yron.		
	Xenophanes Colophonius, a philosopher, in this tyme lyued.		
502	Amintas king of Macedon, reigned. 50. yeres.	3411	552
	Cresus raised warre against Cyrus.		
502	Balthasar laste kinge of Babilon, reigned. 6. yeres.	3413	550
	A prince geuen to voluptee, who abusinge the holpe beliers of the Jewes in his vicious bankettes, was for that cause slayne by Cyrus and Darius in the taking of Babylon. After this the hole monacchi was reduced to the persians.		
	Daniell sawe the mistery of the foure empyres of the Chaldeis, Persians, Greekes and Romains.		
498	Cresus king of Lydia was taken by Cyrus in battaile.	3415	548
496	Cyrus and Darius according to the prophesy of Da- niel, tooke Babylon, and slewe kinge Balthasar.	3417	546
	Daniel by the enuy of the princes, was chast into a den of lions, where by the power of god, he remained unhurt The same time perceyving the ende of the captiuyte to drawe nere, he prayed god in fasting, sacke clothe, and ashes to witte safe to bring his people to theyr lande, whose prayer was herde.		
495	Barathias, called also zorobabel, nephieu to Joachim	3418	545
	and Iesus the highe prest, with. 45370. Jewes were de- liuered free from Babylon by Cyrus, and retourned into theyr owne lande: where they repayred agayne theyr cy- tee, calte the foundation of the temple, renewed theyr la- wis, and sacrifices, albeit they were sometime letted by theyr borderers.		
492	Darius the second tyme reygned in Athenes.	3421	542
489	Polycrates, the fortunat tyran of Samos, ouercame the Lesbians, and entred in league with Amasis, at the	3424	539
	D. ii. laste		

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde
3430

The yere
before
Christ.
533

last by a trayne he was hanged by Dzelcs.

Malachias, Aggeus, and Zacharias prophetes liued. Before
L. Tarquinius the proude, the vii. king of Romaines britay
reigned. 25. yeres, he first brought into the citee the vse of know
bondes, whippes, stauces, donges, prisons, fetters, chai- 483
nes, banishmentes, and other punishmentes, he ouer-
came the Volscians, and Sabians, he subdued Suecia,
and Pometia, he made peace with the Thuscans, and
buylded a temple to Jupiter in the capitoll. Fynallye, he
siegyng Ardea, he lost his kingedome. For when hys el-
dest sonne Ser. Tarquinius, had rauished the noble and
chast matrone Lucrece, wife of Collatine, and she com-
playning this iniurie to her husbände, father, and other
frendes, in all theyr syghtes with a knife had finished hir
life: Then Brutus and Collatinus, takinge therof occa-
sion moued the people to a moze libertee, and so expelled
Tarquine frome his kingedome, he forsaken also of his
armye, came vnto Rome, where the gates were closed a-
gaynst hym.

3432

531

Cyrus in Scythia warringe agaynst Thomiris, the 481
quene of Massagetes, with. 200000. Persians was slayne.

3433

530

Cambyses his sonne, the xi. emperour of Persia, reig- 480
ned. 7. yeres & v. monethes. He added to his monarchye
Egypt, ouercomming Psammenitus the king therof, he
subdued the Aethiopians. He was a prince cruell and e-
brious, he slewe his brother, and sister. Among other his
cruell deedes, as it was seuerer so was it righteous, for he
caused a fals iudge to be slayne quyeck, whose skin he ha-
ged ouer the iudgement seat, to be had alwayes in reme-
braunce of those that possessed that place. He prohibited
the Jewes from buyldinge theyr citee, pulled downe the
temples of the Aegyptians goddis, where with a tempest
in the sandes he was destroyed, receiuing for his wicked-
nes condigne punishment.

3434

529

The Samyans buylded Cydonia in Candy.

Psammenitus, the last kinge of Aegypt, reigned one 479
yere, and was slayne by Cambyses: after whom the roy-
alme of Aegypt was brought vnder the monarchy of the
Persians.

Pythagoras, the famous philosopher, in this time flo-
rished

Before
britayne
knovven

risshed, whose schole was not occupied in naturalles and
astronomie as other, but in arithmetike geometrye, and
musike, whiche he reduced first into sciences, and albeit
that in his time none was comparable to him in wisdo, yet
would he not be called a wise man, but a philosopher
that is, a lover of wisdom, his doctrine was dyuine and
commodious, the whiche he teachinge to other, inspyred
them to kepe silence fīue yerres, and here him diligentlpe,
ere they demanded of him any question. He neuer would
do sacrifice with any bloud. He would eat nothinge that
had life. Finallye he continued his life in wonderfull ab-
stīnency and continency to his immortal name.

The yeres
of th
wo. d

The yeres
before
Christ.

473

Smerdes, the magician, the .iii. emperor of Persia, re- 3440
igned, vii. monthes. He by the Pieres of Persea, with his
brother was slayne. After whose death they consulted for
the gouernance of the empire, where Darius the son of
Hyaspis, through the admonicion of his friend Zoraba-
bel made a bolwe vnto almighty god, that he would re-
paire his temple, if he might be kynge, neyther was his
hope frustrate, for by neyghinge of his horse, and sodeyn
lightnyng therwith, he was saluted king.

523

Drestes, the presidente of Sardis, hanged Polycrates
the tyran of Samos.

Hypagrus and Hippas exercised theyr tyrannye in
Athenes.

474

Darius the sonne of Hyaspis, the .iust. emperoure of 3441
Persia, reigned. xxxvi. yerres. He by the neyghinge of his
horse, as it were by a certayn oracle, was declared king.
Csdzas and Nehemias call him Artaxerxes. He gaue
licence agayne to the Jewes to buylde theyr temple. he
constituted. xx. prouinces. & through the perswasion of his
wife Atossa enterprised to warre vpon Grecia.

524

Democedes, a notable phisicion, in thys tyme flourys-
shed, who beinge captiue to Darius, healed hym of his
foote, beinge wrenched, whiche before could not be re-
medied by all his phisicions.

Drestes, by his owne gard, through the menes of War-
gens, and commaundement of Darius was slayne.

475

Aggeus began to prophecie among the Jewes who re- 3442
buked theym, for that they were slacke in the woorkes of
the

525

D. iii.

the

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
world

The yere
before
Christ.

the lord.

Before
britayn
knowe

3446

517

Zacharias also prophesied the same time among them. Armonius and Aristogiton slue Hipparchus the tyrant and Leua an harlot, theyr concubine, whē with greuous tormentes she was forced to bewray them, she bit in sunder her tongue, and spit it forth.

Cleomenes, the king of Sparta liued. Meandrius by craft obtained Samos, expulsiſg Syloſo.

The temple of the Jewes was finished, and with great toye dedicated to the lord, wherein they offered theyr sacrifices, and celebrated theyr Phase in gratulacion that god had touned the herte of Darius to them.

3449

514

Babilon rebelled against Darius, and after long siege by the counsaile and helpe of Zopyrus, he recouered it. That time by his capitain Otanes, he restored Syloson to his realme.

3451

512

Megapilus sonne of Zopyrus, presidente of Egypte, kepte warres agaynst the Atheniens.

Darius, for the reuengement of Cyprus made a blage against the Scythians, he subdued the Getes, the Thracians yelded them selues, but the Scythians put hym to shameful flight.

3453

510

About this time chaunced the hystorie of Iudith, as Philo writeth. But some suppose that it was done before the monarchy of the Persians, for when the empyre was in theyr handes, neyther the Medes ne Assyrians had any king of theyr owne. Therefore this will I leaue vnto the iudgement of the reders. This moste chaste matrone Iudith stroke of the head of Holophernes, the moste terrible capitain of the Assyrians, and deliuered hir countrey from greuous affliction.

Megapilus was constituted generall capitayn of Darius armie in Europa, he tooke Berynthus, subdued all Thracia, banquished the Peones, and set ambassadours to Amintas kinge of Macedonia, to submitte him selfe, which ambassadours for theyr incontynence and drunkenesse were by Alexander the kinges sonne slayne. Tarquinius Superbus, the last king of Romans, with al his family, were expulsed the citie, for the rauishment of Lucrece, 244. yere after the buylding of Rome.

The

Before
britayne
known
458

The kinges beyng thus driven out of the citee, the state of the commune weale was changed, for the soueraigne dominion was in the gouernance of the Senate, among whome there were verely chosen two Consules, whose auctozitee in that office continued but one yere.

The yere

The yere

before
Christ.

508

L. Junius Brutus. & L. Tarquinius Collatinus were created the first consules of Rome. Brutus for the feruent loue to his countrey, commanded his owne sonnes and nephues to be beheaded, for that they had conspired to bringe in Tarquine again. After in a bataill fought against Tarquine he was slayne. Collatinus was deposed frome hys consulship, in whose place P. Valerius was substituted.

The Atheniens likewise elected verely magistrates.

Alagrus capitain of the Atheniens.

56

Tarquinius, with the ayde of Porsenna, kyng of Ve- truscians, besieged Rome, and had taken it, had not the valiaunte Horatius Cocles resisted them on the bridge Sublitius, whiles it was betwen in sunder behynd him, wherby a greate nuber of their enemies were drowned and he leapyng into the water, armed as he was, swam to his company.

3457

506

The same tyme Mutius Scauola, a senator of Rome went into the campe of Porsenna, to haue slain him, ther by to haue deliuered the citee frome that greuous siege, but he stroke an other in stede of the king, wherfore wha he was taken and brought before the king, and thretned, that he shuld for that dede be put to death, he looked aside and saw a great fire, wherinto he put his arme, and there helde it still, tyll it was bourned of, whiche sterne dede, and the wordes, that he sated, howe that thre hundred in Rome had sworne as well as he, to slee the kyng, caused Porsenna, to make peace with the Romains, and so brake bp his army, and went his waye.

The same tyme Chloelia a virgin, beyng in hostage with Porsenna, decetued hir keepers, and swam ouer Ti- ber to Rome, where she excited the people to defend their citee, and for that cause was honoured with an image set bp for hir remembraunce.

59

Danes successour to Megabizus, capitayn of Darius, toke Byzance, with diuers other citees.

505

Acestozides,

The seconde parte of

The yere of the world	The yere before Christ.		Before britayne knowen
3459	504	A lexandres, capitaine of the Atheniens.	
3460	503	The Romanes and Sabines fought together, in which battail the Romanes were victours, there were slaine of the Sabines. 13000. and were taken. 4200.	454
3461	502	Alexander, the .x. kinge of Macedon, reigned. 43. yeres. He was surnamed Bubaris.	453 452
		P. Valerius Publicola, the contemner of rycheffe, after he had beene fower times consul, died so poore, that he was buried by the common expenses of the citee.	
		The same yere a conflict was fought betwene the Romanes and Aruncians, wherin the Romans as victours triumphed.	
3463	500	The Jones and Atheniens tooke Serdis and burnt it. In the ninthe yere after the expulsion of the kynges, a newe dignitee was created i Rome, called the Dictator, shyp, whiche was of more power than eyther the consul shyp or maister of the horsemen, for they all were obedyent to the Dictatour, and he was not chosen but in dangerous warres, he continued longer in that offyce than fye monethes.	450
3464	499	The Persians overcame the Jones, and toke Miletū. M ardonius, receiuyng of Darius a mighty nauy, subdued the Thasios, and brought the Macedons in subiection. Here vnto Athenes, by tempest of the sea, he suffered a great wrecke, wherin there perished. 20000. men. He brought, to his no lyttell damage and hurte, Byzgis vnder his power.	449
		A conspiracie in Rome to byyng in Tarquine, but by industrie of the consul Seruius, they were apprehended and put to deathe. A. Posthumius the Dictator fought with the Latines, where he overcame and triumphed.	
3467	496	F errer, with his brother Porrex, ruled this lande of Britayn. 6. yeres, but it was not long ere they fell at ciuile discorde for the soueraigne dominion, in whiche Ferrer was slayne. And Porrex afterwardes, by his mother was killed in his bedde. Thus cruelly was the bloude and house of Brute destroyed, whan that this realme by the space of. 616. yeaeres had been gouerned by that lygnage.	446

The

before britayn knowven	The feastes Saturnales were instituted in Rome. Tarquine dyed at Cume. In Rome were constituted tribus.	The yere of the worlde.	The yere of the chryste.
444	The commo people rose bp agaynst the Senatours for	3469	494
443	defente of their libertee, but by the wisdome of Menim- us Agrippa, they were pacified, and had graunted vnto theim the tribuneshipp, that is protectours of the com- munalte.	3470	453
442	The Atheniens, by their capitain Callimachus, with the counsaill of Melciades, at Maratho ouerthrewe the army of the Persians, in whiche battail there fell of the Persians. 9300. of the Atheniens. 192.	3471	492
441	The Wolsces were vanquished, and peace was made. After the death of the two brethern Ferrer and Pozrer, this royaume was rent in pieces with ciuil warres, for lacke of one souerayn gouernour, whiche continued the space. of. 51. yeres, vntyl that the noble Dunwalle redu- ced the same into one monarchy.	3472	491
	Gelon, tyran of Sicily, reigned.		
	Darius receyvinge knowelage of the ouerthrowe of his army at Maratho, prepared in thre yere warre a- gaynst the Grecians.		
440	A great famine and pestilence in Rome.		
	Marcus Coriolanus, by the protectours of the commu- naltee was exiled, the Wolscians receiued him for their capitayn, they proclaimed warre agaynst the Romans, they tooke many citees of the Latines, & besieged Rome. Finally at the humble prayers of his mother, and wife, he relsed bp his siege, for whiche cause, the kynge of the Wolscians slae hym.	3473	490
38	The Aegyptians rebelled agaynst the Persians.	3475	488
36	Darius in the preparacion of his warres died.		
	Ferres the fiste emperour of Persia reigned. 20. yeres.	3477	486
	He succeded his father, in the will to serue and honour god, and dyd all thynges folowynge him, that pertained to religion, and vsed the Jewes liberally. He exceded all his predecessours in rychesse, and rayled bp all his po- wer agaynst the Grecians. He also subdued the Aegyp- tians, constitutynge his brother president ouer them.		
	Hamilcar, capitayne of the Carthaginenses.		
	D. I. Leostatus		

The second part of

The yere
of the
worl.

The yere
before
Christ.

Leostrotus of the Atheniens.

The lawe Agraria in Rome was made.

Before
brita
know

3478

485

3842

481

3483

480

Xerxes, with an army of .1000000. men, and a navy of 1208. shippes made his expedition into Grece. At his setting forth, upon the coste Sapiades, in a calme day, by a sodayne pyrey. 400. of his shippes were lost, he made a bridge over the stretches of Helespontus with his ships, wherupon his army passed over. When he came to Athenes, he bourned the city. The Grecians toke .xb. shippes of Artemisium, of which Sandaces was admyrall. The battaile foughte at the stretches of Thermopyle, where Leonides capitayne of the Lacedemones, with 600. men put to flight the great army of Xerxes, and ther, with very weynesse of fighting, dyed in the defence of theyr countrey. Themistocles likewise at Salamine, with a small numbze of shippes, destroyed the mightye nauye of the Persians.

That day, that the Grecians ouerthrew the Persians at Salamine, Gelon and Theron baynquished Amylcar in Sicillie.

3484

479

Amylco succeeded his father Amylcar in Carthage.

Athenes, Thebes, and Plataea, were destroyed by the barbarouse people.

Fabius fought a sore battaile with the Petruscians in whiche he was victour: he wold not triumphe because of the great numbze that was slayne.

3485

478

The familie of Fabius, at theyr owne charge for the publike weale, warred agaynst the Aciences, in whiche they were all slayne, except one, who by his prouesse and wisdom reuiued that name agayne.

3488

485

Dardanius toke Athenes, & receiued of Xerxes .30000 men, and caused the kinge to retourne into his roialme. They fought at Plateas, where they were put to flyght.

The same daye upon the sea Lenthichides ouercame them also. Ionia forsoke the Persians.

3491

472

Xerxes a freshe prepared warre agaynst the Grecians, Cymon the sonne of Myleiades, capytayne of the Atheniens ouercame him both on lande and sea, and compelled him to flee away in a litell fisher boote, where before scarce the lande and sea were able to receyue his power.

For

before
Britayn
known

For these warres thus vnfortunatly atchened, he begā to be contemned of his people, and at last was murdered by Artabanus his president.

The pere
of the
worlde.

The pere
before
Chr. Re.

421

A sedicion in Rome for the lawe Agraria.

The mistocles distroyng and duiuing away the Barbariens, reedified and wa led Athenes. At the lasse for al his benifites, by his bnnaturall countrey men, he was banished, and of force duiuen to go vnto Xerxes his bitter enemy, who rerepued him honourably, and wold haue sent him with an army againste the Atheniens: but he, chosynge rather to dye, than to be vnfaithfull to Xerxes, as els to destroy his countrey, poisoned him selfe.

3 492

471

Sedicion and pestilence in the citee of Rome. Urbina a virgin Vestale, for loosynge hir chastytee, was burped quicke.

Aristides of Athenes, for his wysedome, iustice and temperance was right noble and famous. He not withstanding that y Atheniens had exiled him without anye cause but onely for that he was counted to excell in iustice, yet at his departynge he prayd to god, that what so euer they desired, it might come to good effect and cōclusion. And when he was called againe from banishment, he neuer remembred any olde displeasure, in so muche that he alwaye honoured Themistocles, with whom he had perpetuall contention in the wealepublike. Of his temperance this was a great token, that notwithstandinge, he had bene in the greatest dygnytiee and offyces in the commō weale of Athenes, yet dyed he so poore, that he left not sufficient to burpe hym worshypfullye. And his daughters wer married at the cōmon charge of the citee. And to his son Lyelmacus was giue by the people one hūdred Minae whiche is of our money. 239. poundes. xi. s. viii. d.

Vnto this tyme Herodotus wrote his history.

419

Amilco, capitaine of Cartage, about this tyme, after many victories bothe on lande and sea, lost all his army by pestilence in Sicily.

3494

469

417

Artabanus, in hope to opteyne the empire, slue Xerxes, whome Artaxerxes to be reuenged of his fathers deathe with his sworde thrust him throughte the bodye, whan he had reigned. vii. monethes.

3496

467

A. II.

Artax.

The second part of

The yere of the worlde.	The yere before Christ.		
3497	466	Artaxerres the seventh emperor of Persia, surnamed long hande, reigned .xl. yeres. his dominion was from the furthest parte of Inde, vnto Aethiopia, ouer an. 127. prouinces, he embraced peace, and therfore was beloued of his subiectes.	before britay knowe 416
3499	464	Artaxerres made a great feast vnto his lordes, he put away from hym the queene Maschi, because she refused to come to him, and caused many maidens to be brought before hym: amonge whom in place of Masche, he chose Hester.	414
		Sicily was gouerned by the people.	
		Quintius builded in Rome the brothelhouses. The Romanes mustered, i which there were found. 124. 214. heades of citelins.	
3501	462	A pestilence in Rome, wherein the consules dyed. The Volscians besieged Rome.	412
3502	461	The Romanes triumphed ouer the Volscians with theyr alies. In this battaile the name of Volscians was almoste destroyed. For there fell of them in discomfiture 10470. taken prisoners with. xlii. insignes. 1250.	411
3503	460	Esozas, by the licence of Artaxerres, came from Babylon to Hierusalem with. 1775. Jewes, to repaire the lawe and citee of god, and to teache the people. For he gathered and brought in order the booke of holpe scripture, before scattered and destroyed, and inuented the hebre characters, whiche be vsed at this daye.	410
3504	459	This yere also Hester began to reigne as queene. Perdicas, kyng of Macedon, reigned. 28. yeres.	409
3505	458	The seruantes in Rome rebelled, they toke the capital by their capitaine Herdonius, and slue Valerius the consul.	
3506	457	The consules triumphed ouer the Volscians, the citee mustered, in whiche there were. 132419. citizens.	408
		Quintius Cincinnatus was chosen Dictatour fro the plough, who wpyng awaye the duste and sweate from his face, entred the citee, and receiued that high auctoritee: in whiche by his prouesse and wisdom, he not only deliuered the citee from the assaulte of theyr enemies, but also banquished them. After whiche victorie he surrendered his office and dignitie, and repayned agayne to his husbundry, whiche he diligently applied.	407

before
brittaine
knowven
406
405

A sedition. The ten Tribunes or protectours of the comynaltee were created.

A man perswaded Artaxerxes to commaunde all the Jewes to be slayne, bicause Bardocheus wolde not dooreuerence vnto hym. The king graunted, and the commandement was sent forth, and whan it should be executed. In the meane while Hester declared hir kynred, and deliuered the whole nacion from that mischiese. A man was hanged vppon the galowes, whiche he had prepared for Bardocheus, and the other was exalted into the kynges fauour, who (as Philo witnesseth) liued. 198. years.

Empedocles and Parmenides philosophers of Athenes in this tyme flourished. The first in musike was notable, the other sequesteryng him selfe from al company, on the mountayn Caucasus, deuised the science of logike.

Cratinus, & Plato, comedie wryters, and Aristarchus maker of tragedies, liued.

A dissencion in Rome for the lawe Agraria.

Reemias obtained licence of the kyng and queene Hester, to synp the Hierusalem. At this daye begynneth the computacion of the. 70. wekes of Daniel, euery weke cōteynyng seven yere, whiche synished at the death of Tiberius: after whom Caius caused his ymage to be set in the temple, vnder the name of great Jupiter.

Reemias, with the helpe of Eliash, high priest, sonne of Joachim and Hela Mosolla, son of Zorobabell, with other princis of the people, in. 52. dayes synished their worke. And for feare of the inuasiōs of theyr ennemys, thei helde theyr weapōs in one hand, and wrought with the other. The walles beyng builded, Reemias cōmanded the people to assemble, and recited vnto them the law and celebrated the feast of that moneth, he gouerned the people. 12. yeres, and after retourned vnto the kyng, as he promised. Not long after he repaired agayne into Iurie, where he wrote the booke of his owne gesses, and quietly synished his lyfe.

The Romaines had hitherto no certayne lawe to preserue common cōcorde and peace in their publike weale, wherby contrauerries and dissencions rose amōgst the. For which cause they elected ten men, whom they set in

The yere	The yere
of the world	before Christ
3507	456
3508	455

453

The seconde parte of

The yere of the woylde	The yere before Lxxij.	to grece, to wyte out the lawes of Solon, and to learne the customes also of other great cities, byng moreouer the counsel of the wyse philosophers. The ten tables wer drawen out, whiche were hanged openly in the courte of Rome. This is the originall of the Romain lawes, whiche they borrowed of the Grecians.	before britayne knowe
3511	452	¶ Hannibal & pestilence invaded the cytee, the Consule Quintilius dyed, in whose place was substituted Sp. Furius.	402
3512	451	The ambassadours returned from Grece with Solons lawes.	401
3518	450	The people of Rome altered the state of their commō weale, for in place of their Consules, they created tē men who had power geuen them to stablysh the lawes. The lawe of the ten tables was confirmed in Rome. Anaxagoras, a notable philosopher, mayster of Pericles, in this time liued. Sophocles, a poete of Athenes, and a wytyer of tragedies, flourished. Pericles, the valiant captain of the Atheniens, in this tyme was renowned for his wisdom and prowes. In all his tyme he nothing encreased his reuenues, but alwaies enriched the commune weale. Finally beyng sycke vnto death, the noble men of the citee coming to comfort him, talked among them selues, how by his marciall prowes, he was victour in nyne great batailles. Whiche wordes Pericles hearing, saide vnto them. That he muche mar- uailed that they extolled so much that thing, whereof the more part was in fortune, and had happened to other as well as to him; and that whiche was most to be praised, they spake nothing of it. For neuer man (saied he) in this cytee, by myne occasion, had cause to mourne.	400
3515	448	Appius Claudius, with his felowes, by force obteyned the souerain dominion. To the first, x. tables, two more were added. The x. men were deposed for their tyranny and lasciuiousnes, specially for the death of Siccius, and ravyshment of the daughter of Virginius, whom his father, to kepe hir vndefiled, with his owne handes slue. ¶ The Consules wer created again, and Appius cast in pryson	398

before brittaine knowven	pyslon and after eriled. Pericles capitaine of the Atheniens made truse with the Lacedemonies for.rrr.yeres.	The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christe
349	Hitherto writeth Dionisyus Halicarnassens.	3517	444
391	M Almutius Danwallo the sonne of Clote, duke of Cornwall, reduced his royaume into one monar- chy, beinge before, by ciuyl warres and dissention lacerated and broughte into dyuers dominions. He was the firste that was crowned kinge and constituted good lawes, which long after were called Mulmutius lawes, he gaue priuileges vnto temples and ploughes, and be- gan to make the.iiii.notable wayes in Britayn. In lon- don called then Trenouant, he buylded a great temple whiche some suppose to be S. Paules, some Blackewell haul. Finally when he had brought this royaume to welth and quyetnes, reigninge herein.40.yeres, he dyed hono- rably, leauinge after him two valyaunte and noble son- nes, Belinus and Brennus.	3522	441
388	The office of Censozes instituted in Rome. A famine in Rome, by which many for lacke were for- ced to thzowe them selfe into Tiber. An earthquake cha- ced also. The Fidenates rebelled agaynst the Romains.	3525	438
386	Columnius, kinge of Aetientes, commaunded the Ro- maine ambassadours to be slayne.	3527	436
385	The Romanes in reuenging the deth of therv2 ambas- sadours warred against the Fidenates, and Aetientes, Columnius was slayne, and the Romaines triumphed	3528	435
383	Judas the sonne of Elialib, was constituted high priest of the Jewes.	3530	433
	About this time the Atheniens confederated them sel- fes with the Corcirens. The Corinthians kept greuous sea warre with the Corcirens, in whiche, bothe partyes glozied to be victours.		
	¶ Aboute this time the warres of Peloponessus began. For the citees of Grece, after they had expelled the Persi- ans, being of greater strenght and power, waxed proude and insolent, and therby fell at disorde and variance a- mong them selves, and for lyghte and smal causes bered eche other with cruel deadlye and continuall warres: in		

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
before
Christe.

so muche that by them Grece was utterly destroyed, and
lastly lost their libertee, and were brought in seruage un-
der kyng Phillip of Macedon: and for their honest and
commendable lawes and fourme of gouernance, which
they had vsed before tyme, succeeded a dissolute order of al
thinges, and great corruption of maners. The first occa-
sion of this warre began betwene Corcyra and Corinth,
with whom the other citees toke part, so that all Grecia
was deuided. And the chiefe leaders of one part were the
Atheniens, and of the other the Lacedemoniens. These
warres (as Xenophon witnesseth) contynued .28. yeres.
with great varietee and change of Fortune. For somti-
mes the Atheniens, by the manhode and policie of theyr
capitaines had the vpper hand, sometime the Lacedemo-
nes. But in the ende, the Atheniens were bairquished,
their countrey destroyed, and the walles of the citee bea-
ten to the ground, and they put vnder the seruage of 30.
tyrannes.

before
britayn
knowe

332

431

An Eclipse of the Sonne.

Archelaus, the king of Macedon, reigned .24. yeres. 381

Archidamas king of Lacedemon.

The Atheniens in battayle on horsebacke ouerthrew
the Peloponenses in Phrygia.

Cleopompas, capitayn of the Atheniens, toke Throniū,
banquished the Locreans, droue the Arginens out of their
countrey, to whom the Lacedemones gaue landes to in-
habite vpon.

333

430

A sore pestilence toke the Atheniens. The Lacedemo- 380
nes ambassadours, taken by Sadocus, were slain of the
Atheniens.

334

429

Ditalces, kyng of Thrace, warred vpon Perdiceas, 379
and wasted the countrey of Macedon, but by the coun-
saile of Setheus, to whome Perdiceas had promised his
sister Stratenices in mariage: Ditalces retourned a-
gaine into his countrey.

The Lacedemoniens beseged Plataea in Grece, which
was confederate with the Athenians.

Lesbus forsoke the frendshipp of the Atheniens.

The Chalcidenses ouerthrew and slue the Atheniens.
The Atheniens by theyr capitain Phormio overcame the
Corinthians.

Before britayne knowen	Corynthians. Pachetes, capitaine of the Atheniens, toke agayne Mile and Lesbos. Platea was taken by the Lacedemo- nes and beaten downe. And Athenes shaken with diuers erthquakes, likewise the yles of Cuboea and Atalanta. A greuous sedicion and ruffling in Corcyra, where ma- ny of the noble men were slayne, and diuers of the com- mons fearinge to come to the handes of theyr aduersa- ries murdered them selles in the temples. The Syraculane warres with the Leontines in Sici- lie beganne.	The yere of the world	The yere before Christ.
378		3535	428
377	Agis king of Lacedemons, Demosthenes inuaded the Aetolians, he was bairquished and put to flyght. Demosthenes banquished and slue the Peloponenses and Ambzaciens nye to Argos. The Atheniens tooke Pilus, and put the Lacedemo- nians to great hurt and damage.	3536	427
375	Xerxes, the seconde, and eight emperour of Persia re- igned two monethes. Sogdianus y. ix. emperour of Persia reigned. 8. monthes A great drought in Rome and Bali. The Atheniens tooke Scandia, and Cythera, spoyled and bourned Thirca. An Eclipse of the sonne, and an earthquake in certain places of Grece.	3538	424
374	Darius, surnamed Nothus, the tenth emperour of Persia, reigned. xix. yeres he did muche damage to the Atheniens, for the olde rancour betwene them. Bzasioas, the Lacedemonian capitayne, got Amphip- olis toke Torona, receiued by dedicion diuers cities of the part of the Athenians, and besieged Lecythus. The Bocotians banquished the Atheniens at Delos, and toke it.	3539	424
373	Truce taken betwene the Atheniens and the Lacede- mons. The Aelientes ouerthru the Romanes, for which cause P. Mercus Emilius was elected Dictatour, who bayn- quished the Aelientes and Fidenates. Cleon, the capitaine of Atheniens recovered Sicioneia and Torona, which had gene by to the Lacedemonians.	3540	423
	D. i. At		

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.	At Amphipolis Brasidas vāquished and slue Cleon, him selfe being also wounded to death, after whom succeeded Clearidas.	Before britayne knowe
		The Lacedemoniens made truce with the Atheniens for .50. yeres, and buylded Heraclea.	
		The Atheniens, by the meanes of Alcibiades entred in league with the Argiues and other for .100. yeres.	
3543	420	Multurnum was taken by the Samnites, whiche by theyr capitaine Capp, was after named Capua.	370
3545	418	The Lacedemonies, by theyr capitayne Agis, ouerthwe and vāquished the Argiues, with whom also they made league.	368
3547	416	A commotion of seruantes in Rome, who conspired to destrope the citie with fier.	366
		The Atheniens toke Melos by dedicion, and kyllled all the youth, bringinge the residue to bondage.	
		The Athenians with theyr capitaynes Alcibiades, Ni cias and Lamachus, sayled into Sicilye.	
		And the sayd Alcibiades was incontinent sent for home, and should for certaine offences, haue ben banished. But he hauing knowlage therof fledde to the Lacedemons, whom he spured to warre vpon his owne countrey, and by his auctoritee withdrew many cities of Asia from the obedience of the Atheniens. Afterwarde he was called from banishment, and atcheued many great victories in the quarel of his countrey me, as shal after be touched.	
3548	415	Warres of Sicily were renued.	365
3549	414	The Syracusanes were besieged, and vāquished of the Atheniens. The Lacedemonies sent them succours with their capitayne Gylippus.	364
3550	413	Egipt left the Persians, and chose Amarteus to theyr kinge, who reigned .vi. yeres.	363
		The Thracians tooke Pycaestum, and patte al the people to the swoorde, withoute respect of age, who lyke wise by the Thebans were all slayne.	
		The Syracusanes obteyned a great victorie ouer the Atheniens. Nicias and Demosthenes wer slayne, & few of them retourned to Athenes.	
		Socrates, the famous philosopher, at this time flou rished in Athenes, he first inuented morall philosophye, and	

Before
Britayne
knowven

And so diligently ensued it, that he was counted the most wise and vertuous man than liuinge. But at the laste he being enuied of them, whiche then dyd beare chiefe rule in Athenes, was accused of Anytus Melissus the poete, and Licon the oratour, that he spake agaynst theyr gods, and corrupted theyr childen with peruerse doctrine. At whiche time he so contempned death, that he woulde suffer no man to speake for him: and therfore (as the fashion was) when he should drinke popson, with a ioyous countenauance, he sayd to Anitus: I bring the good lucke and incontinent died. But soone after the Atheniens repented theyr rashenelle, and were so sorre for his death, that of his accusers, some they slewe, and some they banished, and did sette by openlye the ymage of Socrates, made of copper, for a perpetuall memoire of his benefites and wisdomes.

The yere
of the
world

The yere
before
Christ.

362. The Lacedemons made amistee with Darius.

Whereto writeth Thucydides.

3551

412

361. The Medes forsoke Darius, and were again subdued:

Aboute Abidus the Atheniens triumphed vpon the Lacedemons and Syracusanes.

3552

411

Alcibiades, at Chalcedon obteyned a great victorie, he toke Byzance by treason, ouercam the Lacedemons, banquished Pharnabazus, and in his absence was elected capitaine of Athenes, whither he retourned with greate triumph, he was a man of goodly personage, actiue, eloquent, and of wytte quicke and excellent: and yet therewithal lacked not diuers vices, as dissolute lyuinge and lecherie and ryot, deceit and inconstancie, which caused men to meruaile, that in one man might be such diuers natures. Finally by the merues of Lysander, he was exiled, who being in Byzigia, the house wherin he lay purposely was set on fyre, whiche he escaped, and halfe naked, valiantly defended him selfe agaynst his ennemies, amonge whom he was slayne, and his heade brought to Pharnabazus capitaine of Persians.

Posthumus Antigillenses, the Romayne capitaine, after his victorie ouer the Eques and Volles, for his arrogancie, was slayne of the souldiours.

360. The temple of Pallas at Athenes was burned.

.M.ii

3553

410

.M.ii

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde
3554

The yere
before
Christ.
409

Lysander, ouerthrowe Antiochus, the Atheniens, & toke Delphinion and Ciona.

The Carthaginensis, with their capitayn Annibal, invaded Sicilie by sea.

A famine and pestilence in Rome.

3555

408

After the Atheniens had expelled their capitayne Alcibiades, the seconde time, thei were ouerthrowen & slaine by Lysander the Lacedemonian capitayne, nere to the citee Aegus, whiche by force of armes toke also Cerdyas and Lanoplacus, and after gyzt the citee of Athenes with a stronge siege: at whych tyme manye of them perished with honger and famyne, and yet were they so stubburne in their sentence, that thei not only refused all condicions of peace, but also publyshed, that who so euer exhorted theim to take peace, should be slayne. But in fine, after. 6 monethes, they were constrained with hunger, to yelde them selfe: at whiche tyme the Corinthes and Thebans woulde haue had their citee vtterly destroyed, but the Lacedemons woulde not vse suche extreme cruelte towarde that citee, whiche was alwaye counted one of the eyes of Grece, & by whome thei had receiued so great benefites in expulling the Medes and Perses. Therfore it was decreed, that onely their walles and towers should be caste to the erth, and to them prescribed a certayn forme of gouernance: accordyng to the which thei should lyue.

3556

407

Nepherites, kyng of Aegypt, reigned. vi. yeres.

3557

406

Drestes in Macedon reigned. 3. yeres.

Thyrtie men were elected of the Atheniens to gouerne their common weale.

Lysander by dedicion toke Samos.

Dionyse the elder by tyranny possessed Sicilie. The Carthaginenses banquished Gella and Camerina.

In Rome the Questores were elected of the comō people

3558

405

Artaxerres the. xi. emperour of Persia, surnamed Mēnon, reigned. xl. yeres, vnto Cyrus his brother by inheritance fell Ionia and Lydia, ouer whiche Tissaphernes was president. For whiche cause, and beyng desirous of dominion, prauely he wrought treason agaynst the kyng his brother: which being knowē vnto Artaxerres, caused hym to be taken, whom he cast in prison with golde fetters

Before
britayn
knowe
359

358

357

356

355

before
Britayne
knowen

ters. But at lengthe by the prayers of his mother beyng delyuered, he made open warre, gettyng on his part the Lacedemonies, and so fightynge in a bataile, Artaxerxes was wounded, but Cyrus was there slayne.

The. xxx. men began to tyrannise Athenes: by Thra-
sybulus, they were dainquished in Pyreo, where he was
slayne.

The popular gouernace of Athenes was again restored.

354 Archelaus, king of Macedon, reigned. 4. yeares.

Thimbron the Lacedemon receiued certayne citees of
Asia vnder his rule and gouernaunce.

353 About this time Dercillidas succeeded Thimbron. He
toke Larissa, Amaron, and Colonas, receiued the Acha-
nos by submission, restored the Sceoseos to libertee, sub-
dued Cergitha, possessed Acarges, and walled the. xi. cy-
tees of Athmus.

Wages was first graunted to the Romaine souldiours
of the common cost.

352 Agis with fier and swoorde wasted the prouynce of Ce-
lia, and restored the Greeke cities vnto their libertee. Af-
ter his deathe, Agelilaus was constituted kynge of Lace-
demonia.

351 This Agelilaus was of excellent vertue euen frome
his childehode, as in trouthe, Justice, temperance, noble
courage, liberalite and continence. Wherfore he was so
muche honoured, and prospered so well, that he subdued
to the Lacedemonies innumerable cities and countreys
in asia and Grece, whan one demanded a thyng of him,
whiche was vniuste, sayinge that he had promysed it: He
answered: If it were iuste, I promysed it, but if it were
vniuste, I spake, but I promysed it not: he neuer spake
with any woman, sauing his wyfe, but either in the tem-
ple, or afore all men, thinking those two places to be void
of suspicion. Whan he was demaunded, why he laye no
more richely than a priuate person, he answered: That
a prince ought to excel other men, not in delicacie, but in
temperance and moderate lyuing. Truly the lyfe of this
man was wonderful, and worthy to be an example to o-
ther princes, as it appereth in Plutarke, which wyrteth
at large.

The yere
of the
world

The yere
before
Christ.

3559

404

3560

403

3561

402

3562

401

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
before
Christ.

Belinus and Brennus, sonnes of Pulunnus, deuis- Before
ed this hole isle of Britayne, betwene theim: bnto britayn
Beline, as elder, was appoynted England, Wales knowe
and Cornewall: bnto other the northe parte beyonde
Humber, But Brennus, a young man, desyrous of glo-
ry and dominion, thinkinge hym selfe equall with his
brother in marciall prowes, was not therewith contente:
Wherfore he raysed warre against Beline: but in cōclu-
sion by the meanes of their mother, they were accorded,
and Brennus geuen wholly to the studie of warres, lea-
uing his countreie to the gouernāce of his brother, wēt
into Fraunce among the Galles: wher in the prouice of
Lyons, for his excellent qualitees, he was greatly este-
med of Siguinus king of that countreie, whose daugh-
ter he married, and of the Galles was made soueraygne
capitayne, when they made their expedition to Rome: of
which I shall hereafter moze largely declare. Beline in
the meane time both in ciuile iustice and also religiō, as
at that time was bled, encreased his realme, cōstituting
thre Archclamins, whose seass were at London, Port, &
Carleon, he finished the foure great wayes begun by his
father, subdued & made tributarie bnto him Denmarke:
In London he made the haven, whiche at this day retep-
neth the name of him, called Belines gate. and as may-
ster Leyland writeth (whose labour & industry, in mosse
diligent serching out of the antiquities of this realme, is
greatly to be commended) builded the tower of London
he married his doughter Cambra bnto a prīce of almain
called Antenor, of whom those people were called Cim-
bri and Sycambri. Finallye after he had reigned wpyth
his brother, and alone .26. yeres, he dyed and after the
pagan maner with great pompe was burned.

3563

400

Pausanias was king of Macedon one yere.

350

The warres betwene the Lacedemonies and Theba-
nes beganne.

3564

399

Amintas reigned in Macedone. vi. yeres.

34

Otis king of Paphlagonia, toke parte with Agesilaus.
Crippidas ouerthwe and put to flight Pharnabazus.
Lisander ledde his armpe into Phoece, where in a skyr-
mythe at a gate of a citee he was slayne, the Thebanes
erected

efore
ritayne
novven

The yere The yere
of the before
world Christ,

erected the token of theyr victorie.

Pausanias, the other king of Lacedemonia, for all the victories that he had atcheued for his countrey, was comdemned to die, for which cause he fled into Tegea, where he finished his life with sicknesse.

The Lacedemonians were vanquished by the partakers of the Athenians. Agesilaus was called out of Asia to succour his countrey: he vanquished the Thebians, overthrew the Thebians, wasted the lande of Argives, tooke Pyreum, and in ayde of the Achais, with fire and sword destroyed the lande of the Acarnanes. For which cause the Acarnanes made peace with the Achians, and entred in amitie with the Lacedemons.

45

Joannes, sonne of Judas, and brother of Jeshu, was high priest of the Jewes. 3568

395

The two brethren Phileni, for the dilatinge of the dominion of Carthage, suffered them selves to be buried quicke of the Cyrenenses.

In this time many cities of Greece fell vnto the parte of Pharnabazus, who with Conon preparinge a navye did great damage to the haven towne of Laconia: Conon repayed Pyreum, and the great walles of Athenes. In the felde of Mearus Strutas the Persian line Chimbrius and Thesadrius, put to flight and destroyed the Lacedemons. Teleutias toke Philocrates with .xii. myddes. Thrasibulus subdued all Lesbos, whom the Aspensians by night killed. Iphicrates, in the stretches of Abidos, meeting with the Lacedemons, obteyned a great victorie in whiche Anaribios was slayne.

Dionysie tyranne of Sicilye, aboute this time overcame the Lecrones, and shortly after he him selfe was vanquished by the Crotoniens.

Damon and Pitheas, an example of moste sure and rare frendship, in this time liued.

43

Argeus was king of Macedone one yere, after whome succeeded Amintas who reigned .xix. yeres. 3570

393

The citee Uele, after ten yeres siege was taken by Furius Camillus the Roman captain, for whiche victorie he triumphed.

42

The Faliscians yelded to the Romans being prouoked wth 3572

391

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
before
Christ.

3574

389

with the great faith and Justice of their capitaine Camillus, whiche restored againe to them the children of the noble men, when they were geuen into his handes by the reason of their instructour or scholl maister.

Psammites, kyng of Egypt, reigned one yere, after whome reigned Nephertites. 4. monethes.

The Atheniens besyged Egineas by lande and sea, and obteyned the soueraintee of the sea.

3575

388

Pectaneus reigned in Egypt. 18. yeres. Achaia by an horrible earthquake was so shaken, that ii. citees, Hebza and Helice, sank and were cleane deuoured of the earthe.

Teleucias in the hauē of Athenes, toke many of their thyppes and men.

M. Furius Camillus, after many benefites by him done to the citee, was by them most unkyndly exiled.

3576

387

Brennus, the moste valiant capitayn of the Galles, sonne of Pulinutius, and brother to Beline, in this yere, with the Frenche men invaded Rome, he first buylded and repayred beyonde the mountains, Millane, Paup, Bergomum, Comum, Brixia, Verona, Tridentum, Vincetia, with dyuers other citees, banquished the Clusines, ouerthrew the great army of the Romans, toke and burned Rome, slue y Senatours in their seates, besieged the capitoll, and had taken it, had it not beene valiantly defended by Manlius, who was awakened, with his compaigne, by the noyse of geese, and yet by fauynge were sore constraigned, wherfore they vsed this polycie: they cast out peces of bread in steede of stones, at their enemies: by which meanes the frenchemen, supposyng they to be well supplyed, and consydering the munition of the place, receiued of the Romans. 1000. li. weyght of gold, brake by their siege. But Furius Camillus reuoked from his exile, and made Dictator: proclaimed, that not wyth gold, but wyth yron he would deliuer his countrey, and with the bloud of the Galles, quench the fyre of the citee, and therfore had them prepare to battaile, in whiche the frenchemen, mynding more the gold than the fight: were by Camillus soone banquished, and the citee againe repayred in lesse than a yere. But of the deathe of Brennus

before Britayn knowen	nus, there is no certayntee, whether he was there slaine or retourned home, for some of our chroniclers write, y Beline was in that biage, but be that as it was, I wyll leauue it to the iudgemēt of the reders, he toke Rome the 721. yere after the arrīual of Bute in Britaine. ¶ Artaxerres made peace in Grece, commaunded them to leauue the warres, who so woulde do otherwise, to take him for his enmy, and restozed y citees to their libertees. 336 The warres in Dlynthius began, in which Teleutias was slayne, the Dlynthians triumphed. The Thebanes warred with the Lacedemones, with sūdy fortune. In Leucris the Lacedemones, were bair- quished, and Cleombrotus theyr capitaine slayne. The Thebanes erected Tropheum, that is a token of victo-ry The gaules desired amitee with Dionisius. Rome was edified. 335 ¶ The towne of the Vetruscians destroyed, the capitol buylded with square stones, a sedicion for the landes of the Cometiāns. The Carthaginenses, with theyr capitaine Hanno, in- uaded Sicily. 334 Thebanes with fier and swoorde inuaded the landes of Epidaures. Dionysius sent succours to the Lacedemones, who ouer- came the Siclonians, and toke Ceras: whiche done, they returned home. Archidamus, a Lacedemon, ouercame the Arcadians and Argīues, and toke Cronum. 333 Camillus toke Satricum, and banquished the Vetrū- scians & Volscians, and rescued again Atriu & Nepete. The Atheniens made a league with the Arcadians. The Aelians ouercame the Arcadians, and gotte theyr mountaine citees. Dionisius, the elder, by the decesses of his subiectes was slayne. 332 Mācius moued sedicion in Rome agānstē Cēmyllus and other nobles, for whiche cause he was condemned, and caste headlong from the rocke Tarpetus. Dionisius the yonger tiran of Sicily, began to reygne. 330 To this place Xenophon writethe of the actes of the P Grecianes.	The yere of the wozide.	The yere before Chr. 88.
	3577	386	
	3578	385	
	3579	384	
	3580	383	
	3581	382	
	3583	380	

The second part of

The yere
of the
world.
3586

The yere
before
Christ.
377

Grecians

Paufolus king of Caria, reigned whose wife Artemisia buylded for him a wonderful sepulchre, whiche was taken for one of the goodly woorkes of the world, of which all goodlye monumentes of dead men were called Paufolea.

The Athenians in this time were princes of Grecia. Socrates, the famous oratour, in this time flourished out of whose schole proceeded the most excellent oratours of Grece.

Xenophon, a philosopher of Athenes, disciple to Socrates, and follower of Plato in this time was renowned: he was an excellent capitayne. For he brought an army out of the extreme partes of Babilon, home to theyr owne countrey in safegard: and for his delectable stile in writing he was named the muse of Athenes, he made most excellent warkes of marciall feates, of huntinge, and keeping of hoxses, he liued. 89. yeres.

Plato, the prince of philosophers, in wisdom, knowledge, vertue, and eloquence farre exceedinge al other Gentiles, was borne in Athenes. Lyinge in his cradell, bees were founden to bringe honye into his mouthe, wythout hurtinge the childe: whiche the diuynours did interpretate, that from him shoulde flowe eloquence moste swete and delectable, he first lerned letters with Dion the grammarian, and exercised his youth in wrestling and feates of actiuitie, his name was firste Aristocles, and after for the big and brode stature of his bodye, he was surnamed Plato, vntyll he was. xx. yeaeres olde, he gaue him selfe to make amorous verses: whiche after he came to here Socrates, he bought and then most atteintly he folowed Socrates as long as he liued. And after that, he did not onely here the famous philosophers and Geometricians in Grecia, but also wente into Italye, Affrike and Egipte to learne the mysticall sciences, he sayled thise into Sicilie, where escaping the daunger of death, he was solde as a bondman, he deuided philosophie into thre partes, that is, morall, naturall, and ractonical. And by Athenes chace a place called Achademia, wheri he taught, wherof his disciples were called Achademici, and now all places

before
britay
know
327

before
Britayn
knownen
ces where learninge is exercised, be called Achademie **The yeres**
Furthermoze, he is called Diuinus Plato, for his excellēt **of the**
doctrine, whiche conteineth many thinges (as saint Au **world.**
gustine sayeth) that doth accorde with holy scripture: in **The yeres**
so much as therein is perceiued the first part of Genesis. **before**
vnto Spiritus domini ferabitur super aquas. and the gospel **Chz. Re.**
of S. John vnto, Et tenebre eum non comprehenderunt
with the mystery of thre persons, in diuinitie therein ex-
pressed, he died, as he was writinge, beyng of the age of
lxxxi. yeres.

Judas the high priest, slue his brother Iesu in the tem-
ple at Hierusalem.

225 **G**urgintus sonne of Beline, succeeded his father 3588 375
reigned in this realme. xix. yeres, he subdued
Denmarke compelling them to continue their tri-
bute, and in his retourne home, met with a flete of Spa-
niardes whiche were seekinge for habitacions, because
theyr countrey was so populus, and not able to susteine
them, to whom the king granted the isle of Irelande to
inhabite in, and to holde the same of him as theyr soue-
raygne lord. But the Socrates writte, that the Spaniar-
des arrived before this time in Irelande, which I haue
before declared.

224 Amintas, kinge of Macedon, vanquished by the Illy- 3589 274
rians, was forced to pay theyr charges, and to lay Phi-
lip in hostage, who being sent to Thebes, and committed
to the custodie of Epaminondas, was by him instructed
in all maner disciplines.

The Romans fought prouesperously with the Volsciās
and Latines, the Antiates submitted the to the Romans.
Alexander was king of Macedon one yere.

223 **T**he citie of Rome was. v. yeres without magistrates 3590 373
by meanes of a great discorde & variance that was moued
for promulgation of certaine lawes: in the which was de-
sired firste, that one of the consules shoulde be chosen a-
mong the commons: nexte, that debtes shoulde be dimini-
shed: thirdely that none of the nobles shoulde possesse o-
uer a certayne skinte of landes. Whiche lawes the noble
men would not in any wise suffre to take effect. And ther-
fore the tribunes, Licinius and Sextus, whiche deuyled
P. 1. those

The second part of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
before
Christ.

those lawes, letted and forbade any other magistrates to be chosen, the space of .v. yere, and then were they constrained by eternall warre for that tyme, to breake by their contention, which shortly after they renewed.

Epaminondas, a Thebane bozne, in sundry qualitees bothe of the body and mynde was renowned. In al kyndes of masike he was perfectly instructed, and daunced therewith exceedingly well. There was no vertue, that in hym was lacking, he oftentimes refused great summes of money and riche presentes sent to him by princes, although he were poore, sayinge: If the thyng were honest, whiche he were required to do, he woulde do it, bycause it was good, without any rewarde: yf it were yll and not honest, all the goodes of the worlde shuld not make hym to do it: If it were profitable vnto his countrey, he was bounden and redy to do it freely: yf it were otherwise, no ryche might counteruaile the loue that he bare to his commune weale. In bataile he ouercame the Athenians and Lacedemonies, and in one daye had the victorie of al Grece. Finally, in a conflycte at Mantinea, betwene the Thebanes and Lacedemonies, he was wounded vnto deth with a longe spere, the head remayning still in his body: yet retayned he lyfe, vntyll his hoste had the victorie, and than sayde: I haue lyued long enoughe, for I dye vnuanquished. He was so poore, that he was buried at the charges of the citee.

3591

372

Ptolomeus Aloxites craftely depriued Alexander both of his realme and lyfe, and reigned .4. yeres. 322

3593

370

Magoras, capitaine to Artaxerres, violated the temple of Hierusalem, reuenging the death of Iesu. 320

3594

369

Theo reigned in Egypt two yeres. 319

3595

368

Perdica slew Ptolomeus, and reigned in Macedonie .viii. yeres. 318

Agesilaus, king of Lacedemonia, in his returne out of Egypt, by a sodain tempest beyng driuen vpon the coast of Libya, dyed, whan he was .84. yeres of age.

Aristotle, the renowned philosopher, sonne of Nichomachus the phisicion, bozne in Stagira in Grece, consumed his youth ypotroustie: afterwarde he was scholar to the noble Plato, .xx. yeres continually, he excelled al men

before brittaine knowen	in Harpenesse of witte and knowlage in diuers sciences Wherefore king Philip of Macedon sent his sonne Alexander to him to be taughte, sayinge: that he thanked god, that he had a sonne borne in his time. This man began a sect, the folowers wherof were called Peripatetici, and taught after the deathe of Plato. xlii. yeres, he was banished out of Athenes because it was supposed, that he deemed not well of theyr goddess. It is wyrtten, that he died by this occasion: As he went by the sea-side he perceyued fishermen sittinge and doinge of somwhat, and when he asked what they did, they tolde him a riddle, which when by longe study, he coulde not alloyle for shame and sorowe he dyed.	The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christe
315	The Romanes instituted agayne theyr magistrates. Artaxerxes Ochus the xlii. emperor of Persia reigned xlii. yeres, he was a bloudy prince, who, besyde other tyrannies that he exercised, murdered his owne brethren he reduced the Aegyptians vnder the monarchie of the Persians, and at length was slayn of one of his officers.	3598	365
314	The Galles brake into Italy agayn, and by Camillus they were vanquished.	3599	364
313	Consules were agayne created in Rome, one of the nobilitie, the other of the cominaltie. In this yere also the nobilitie tooke vpon them the offices of Pretor and Edilis, for graunting to the commons the other consulship.	3600	363
312	Jaddas the sonne of Ioannes, and brother of Hanan, was high priest of the Iewes.	3601	362
	A pestilence in Rome. Camillus the second Komulus and father to his vnkinde citee, finished his last daye.		
311	Perdiccas foughte with the Illyrians, he was taken and brought to extreme myserie.	3602	361
	Artaxerxes of Persie, foughte vnfortunatly agaynst the Eegyptians, and loste many of his men.		
310	Philippus, father to great Alexander, obteyned the kingdom of Macedon, Pausanias and Argeus making also title to it, he subdued Amphibolis, warred with the Atheniens, and toke Bardillus king of Illyria.	3603	360
	Callimedes capitaine of Atheniens.		
309	In Rome, by an earthquake in the marketplace the earth opened, whiche made an horrible gulfe or pit, out of whi	3642	359
	P. iii. the		

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
woylde

The yere
before
Christe.

the issued such a vapour, that it infected all the citty with pestilence. The diuinitis declared, that this hole coulde not be closed til some noble man would cast him selfe in to it.

before
britayn
knowe

¶ Than Marcus Curtius, a worthy knight of Rome, for the saluagard of the people: armed at all pieces, riding on a great courser, richelye trapped, lepte into the gulfe and incontinente the earthe closed. The place was after called Curtius lake.

¶ When L. Manlius was accused of Pompeius the Tribune, for banishing of his owne naturall sonne T. Manlius, withoute gylte or trespassse, and was therefore likely to be condemned: the yonge man him selfe, whose banishment was objected agaynst his father, founde meanes to come into the chambze of the Tribune, and with his sworde drawne, forced him to sweare that he wold not continue in the accusaton of his father. Wher by he deliuered him out of daunger.

3605

358

In Grece, the warre, called Sociall, beganne, among the cities. 308

In the frenche warres T. Manlius bairquished and ouerthwe a frenche man of exceding greatnes, and toke from him a chiene of golde: for whiche he and all his lignage were surnamed Torquati.

3606

357

Dion obtained Syracusas and overcame Dionisius, The Romaines fought with the Tiburtines and Gaulles, in whiche they triumphed double. 307

3607

356

Guthelinus, after the deathe of his father, was crowned king of Britain. A prince sober and quiet who had to wife a noble woman named Marcia, of excellent learninge and knowledge. She deuised certain lawes, whiche longe time among the Britons were greatly esteemed, and named Marcians lawes. Finallye when this vertuous prince had reigned. 26. yeres he died

306

The Phenices and Cyprians forsoke the empire of the Persians.

Dion overcame the Dionysians, whiche possessed Syracusa, and deliuered his countrey: he was elected theyr capitaine.

3608

355

Archidamus, kinge of Sparta.

305

efore
rittaine
known

Philomelus, captain of the Phocens, got the temple of Delphos.

The pere
of the
worlde
before
Christe

The Tarquiniens banquished Fabius vnadvisedly fighting, and sacrificed, 307. Romanes.

Spartacus king of Bosphorus.

3609

354

In Sicily Dion was slain by his hyred souldiours. Calippus who was the causer of it, took on him the administration of the ylle.

Philip besieged and destroyed the city Athenes.

The Locrenses, meeting in battayle with Philomelus, were overcome, taken, and slayne. Upon this began a sedition through all Grece.

Artemisia quene of Caria.

3610

353

Hipparchus, son of Dion, expelling Calippus recovered his fathers royaume.

The warres of the Argiues and Lacedemones.

Philip being ayded with a bande of Thessalians overcame the Phocens, subdued Lycophrones, and hanged Diomarchus.

Fabius banquished the Tarquiniens and Falliscians. Phaylus, captain of the Phocens recoveringe a new power, went into Beotia, where fighting he was againe overthrowen and put to flight.

3611

352

The warres of the Lacedemons and Magapolitaynes, in whiche the Lacedemons obtained the victory by their capitaine Archidamus.

Contention in Rome for the election of consuls, in whiche the Senatours obtayned.

Artaxerxes with great industry recovered Egypt, Phoenicia, and Cyprus, he took Sidon by treason, and caused Demetrius the kinge, who betrayed the cite, to be slayne, Arymbas king of Molossia.

3612

351

The Romanes fought prosperously with the Tyburtyans and Tarquintensis, but so cruelly they raged on them for scourging, 348. of the chiefest, they also tyrannously put them to death.

Protagoras, kinge of Salamine, submitted him to the Persians.

3613

350

Artaxerxes subdued Egypte, and drove Nectanebus into Aethiope.

Mentor

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christe.		before britayne knowe
3614	349	Mentor the president of the sea coste of Asia by craft and force gotte al the cities and regions therabouts under the dominion of Artaxerxes.	299
		Spartacus king of Pontus dyed in whose place his brother Partolades was chosen, who reigned .38. yeres.	
3615	348	Philip invaded the Chalcidenses, by assault toke the castell Gera, compelled certayne townes to be under his obeisance, and expelled Pitholaus out of Thessaly.	298
3616	347	Peace given to the Tarquintases & other for .xl. yeres. The temple of Apollo at Delphos, with them that fled thither were all bourned.	297
		Popilius triumphed over the Galles, the pristinat possession of the consulships was restored to the fathers.	
3617	345	The Phocenses submitted them to Philip; for his beneficence, of all Grece he was called emperour.	296
		The warres of Fraunce renewed. M. Valerius, by the helpe of a crow, did bainequith and kil a mighty frenche man. For which cause he and his posteritie were called Corvini.	
3618	345	Timoleon, a Corinthean sayled into Sicillye, he arrived at Tauromenium, and got Syracusa.	295
		A pestilence in Rome, the Carthaginenses made league with the Romans.	
3619	344	Philip with fyre and sword wasted Illyria, delivred Thessalye from tyrannes, with his beneficence wan the cities of Grecia, with whom they tourned into amities.	294
3620	343	Dionysius yelded him to Timoleon, he forsaketh Sicillye, sayleth into Corinthe, and miserably led a privat life. Timoleon restored the Syracusanes to theyr libertie.	293
		Cersopleptus king of Thracia.	
		Corvinus warred upon the Volscians, banquished them, and in his triumphe solde .4000. of them in Rome.	
3621	342	Alexander, brother of Olympias, reigned in Molosso.	292
		A temple buylded in Rome to Juno Moneta.	
3622	341	In Rome it rayned stones, & the daye appeared as night.	291
		About this time the Scenical plaies or comedies wer instituted in Rome, to appease the wrath of the goddess.	
3623	340	Magoas popsoned Artaxerxes, and murdered all the kinges children, except Arsces.	290
		Philip leaving the siege of Byzance and Perinthens, made	

Before made a leage with the Atheniens & other cities of Greece The year The year
britayne The Carthaginēses encreasing theyr power with a new of the before
knowven armie, sayled into Sicily, where by Timoleō they were world Chyist.

The Romaines triumphed in a battail fought with the Samnites by the manhode of P. Decius the tribune.

The Carthaginēses came to Rome to congratulate theyr victoꝝ.

289 Arses sone of Ochus, the .xiii. emperor of persia, reig³⁶²⁴
ned. 4. yerres, being but yet a childe: but when he wared
greater, Kagoas fearing that he wold take vengeance
on him for the death of his father, slewe him also with al
the kinges bloud. Here ended the house of Cyrus.

Out of Grece came new inhabitantes to inhabit Sicily, whom Timoleon gentilly receined, and gaue lawes vnto the Syracusanes.

In Rome a conspiracye of souldiours began: the cyteasens were reconciled, the lawe of armes instituted, and the legions of souldiours ordeined, euerye of whiche contained .6000. footemen, and .732. hoꝝemen.

388 Philip bairquished at Cheronea the Boeotians and
Atheniens; suche as were taken: moued with the woꝝdes of Demades the oratour, he deliuered frely, and entered in amitee with the Atheniens.

The same honre in Italy a battayle was fought betwene the Lucanes and Tarentines, in whyche Archydamus king of Lacedemō, fighting for the Tarentines was slayne.

387 Mithridates king of Pontus, reigned .xxv. yerres. 3626

Philip by all the cities was called emperor of grece against the Persians.

Timoleon becaie aged pased his debt to nature.

The warres of the Romains agaynst the Latines, in the whiche Manlius Torquatus, and P. Decius wer cōfuls. Manlius caused his owne sone, a valyaunt yonge man to be beheaded, because he brake his aray to fight with his enemye, who had chalenged him. Decius auowed him selfe to death for the Romayne army, by whose meanes they obteyned the victoꝝ, for the oracle had given answer, that on the one parte the capitayne should

The second part of

The yere of the world.	The yere before Christ.	he slayne, on the other the hole hoste. Ragoas murdered Arses with all the kynges bloude, and procured Darius to be kinge. Pausanius slue king Philip in the Theater. The Latines submitted them to Emilius. Alexander surnamed the great, son of Philip kinge, of Macedony, reigned, 12. yeres. In his yowth he was in- structed by Aristotell in learninge, and according to his desires had like fortune, for beinge but 20. yeres of age, he vnderooke the enterpryse to conquere all the world, with an armie prepared by his father Philip, whiche was of 32.000. footemen, and 4500. horsemen, hauing no captain vnder the age of 60. yeres, that not in their leg- ges but in theyr armes they shuld put the hope of victo- ry: and so with most valyaunt courage did set vpon the whooles worlde, and had alwayes victoory of his enemies. In his first yere he was saluted emperour of Grece, but beinge contemned of the Thebanes, he bainquished them, and taking theyr city by force, he destroyed it, and solde the people.	before britay knowe 386 28
3627	336		
3628	335		
		Darius the xiiii. and last emperour of Persia, reigned 6. yeres. He was first made prince of Armeny by Ochus for his singular knowlage in warfare, and for the same cause was elected king by them that slue Arses. But af- ter, beinge with pride and baingloze elated, was by the great Alexander ouercome, and losse with his life the monarchy of the Persians. The Romaines subdued Latium and triumphed. Alexander with his armie passed ouer into Asia at Gra- niscus, he ouercame the Persians, tooke Sardis, Mile- tum, and Halicarnassus, subduinge all the landes vnto Phrygia, and obteyned al the religiōs as farre as Cilicia. Minutia a virgin Vestal, for incest was buried quicke. Manasses, brother of Jaddus, the prieste of the Jewes, contrary to the lawe, buylded a temple vpon the mount Garisin. Agathocles, the tyrant of Sicily, with a nauye sayled in- to Affrica, which he sore wasted. Ragoas, the murderer, with the poyson, which he pre- pared for to slea Darius, perished hym selfe, and so was woze	
3629	334		28
3630	33		25

maxim raybub
in ipsius
29. 2. 80

before
britayn
knowen

worthily punished for his mischiese.

Memnon, capitaine to Darius got Chion, & Antissa, with other cities.

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
before
Chr. We.

Darius, with a mightie army, met Alexander at Issus in Cilicia, where he was ouercome, & put to flight, his mother, wife and two daughters were taken, whom Alexander honourably and with great humanitie entreated. In this bataille there fell of the Aesians, 20000. footemen, and of horsemen, 1500.

282 Alexander came to Jerusalem, he was receiued of the highe priest Jaddus, by whose admonicion he did sacrifice. He afterwarde besieged Tyzus, and took it, and also Gaza.

3631

332

281 Agis kyng of Lacedemon.

3632

333

Alexander, without any great labour, obtayned Egypt, & buylded the cite Aleradzia. In the temple of Hammo by the priestes he was called god and sonne of god. Fro then he returned into Syria: where, passyng his army ouer the riuer Tigris, he fought agayne with Darius, in which he obtained a bloudy victorie.

280 Cecilius, the son of Guenthelme and Mercia, reigned. 7. yeres, of him there remaineth nothyng noble. But that (as the Scottes write) in the fyrste yere of his reigne, a people of Almaine, called Pichtes arrived here in Britain, and possessed those partes, whiche now be the Marches of bothe royalmes, Englande and Scotlande.

3633

330

Alexander toke Babylon & Susa, spoyled and burnt Persepolis the regall cite of persia. Bellus, presidente of Bactria wounded his lord Darius to death, whom Alexander apprehendyng, for his vnfaithfulness, caused to be tied to two trees, the tops beyng bowed & brought together, and so loused, wherby he was tozned in pieces.

Here endeth the Monarchy or empire of the persians, in the yere after the arryual of Brute. 778. Whā it had continued among theym. 231. yeres. And thus was the empire brought out of asia into Europe among the grekes, vntil the time y the Romans reduced it vnto them.

Alexander subdued Hyrcania, and fell into the riot of the persians, with drunkenness and fury, wherby he slug

Q. II. dyuera

The seconde parte of

At the pere
of the
worlde

The pere
before
Christ.

diuers of his frendes. He take Cedrosios and Euergetas
and subdued Arachosia

before
Britayn
knowe

Alexander, king of Epirus, ouercame the Samnites
and Lucanes in Italy. A muste in Rome and new cite-
zens ordeyned.

The Thracians by theyr capitaine Memnon fel from
Alexander, agaynst whom went Antipater, who ouer-
came them, & setteled the matters and estate of Thracia.

In the meane time also the Lacedemons with an host
foughte for theyr libertee, but they were banquished by
Antipater, and theyr kinge Agis slayne.

3634

329

7mo y^r with y^rrral
40 p^ru^rit

In Rome. 170. women were appzeended and condē-
ned, bycause they had prepared popson to destroye theyr
neighbour, which were cōstrayned to drinke that they
had prepared for the destruction of others.

3635

328

Alexander obtained Paropamisata, he buylded an other
Alexandria vpon the mountayne Caucasus. Dophis a
king of India, did submit him selfe to Alexander.

3636

327

The Lucanes yelded theim to the Romaines.
Alexander warred in India, fought with Cozus king
therof, who came with .60. princes and .400. Elephantes
with toures: and yet was he taken by Alexander and re-
stored againe to his royaume. Alexander buylded Picea
and Bucephala in memozy of his good horte, and tooke
by assault Agalassia.

3637

326

Arimbas king of Epirus.
The warres in Grece began, wherin Leoschenes the
Athenien was capitayne.

3638

325

Alexander subdued the Colseans.
Zoptrion, by the commaundement of Alexander, war-
red in Scythia, where he with .3000. was slayne.

3636

324

Thalestris quene of Amazons, for the desyre to have
sue by Alexander, came .35. dayes iourne to him and
after retourned being conceived with childe.

When Alexander, in thre yeres both to the greate pe-
rill of his, and destruction of many nations, had gotten
an empire scarce sufficient, for being vnuanquished of
east, in his mind also he had vauquished the west: through
whiche being blowen by with pride, he caused him selfe
to be named and honozed for king of al landes, and lord
of the

efore
rtayne
norven

of the whole world, and sente forth his nauye into the east ocean, to serche, if there were anye other worlde to conquer. But in his retorne homewarde, beyng in his moſte gloze at the citee of Babylon, abiding for the ambadaours of all nacions, was there poyſoned by his owne men: whom for his outragious crueltie and drunkenneſſe they began to detest. And thus Alexander with an inuincible courage, ended his life, and by Ptholomeus was buried in his citee Alexandria: where the space of ſeuene footes of grounde helde him, to whom before the whole worlde was to lyttel.

The Lucanes and Apulians cam into the ſocietee of the people of Rome.

A lawe ſtabliſhed in Rome, that no man for debte ſhuld weare prons.

K Amarus ſucceded Cecilius, and reigned. iiii. yeres in Britaine. 3640

After the death of Alexander, as the empyre was ſoone gotten, ſo likewiſe was it quickly deuided among his capitaines: euen as a pray ouerthrowen by the great lyon is greedely deuoured by the yong whelpes, and they alſo fell together by the eares, in parting of it. Antipater, for his part had Macedonie and Grece: Ptholomeus, Egipte, Aphrica, and parte of Arabye: Laomedon Syria Philotas with his ſonne, Cilicia and Allyria. Agropas for the greater Media, Antigonus, Phrygia. Learchus, Licia and Pamphilia, Callander Caria, Menander Lydia, Lyſymachus, Thracia and Pontus Eumenes obteyned Cappadocia & Paphlagonia. Theſe princes for the ſoueraigne dominion warred one on the other, til they wer almoſt deſtroyed.

Ptholomeus ſonne of Lagus, was king of Egipt. xl. yeares, he was ſpylde by horſemen, and after with the common aſſent choſen kinge.

Phillip, called Arideus, brother to Alexander, reigned vii. yeres in Macedonie.

Warre indicted to the beſtines: who Junius Brutus vanquiſhed. The Samnites warre wherein there were 20000. ſlayne, and the Romayns triumphed.

Eumenes ſue Peoptelemus.

A. iiii.

Per.

3641

323

The yere
before
Christ.

323

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christe.		
3642	321	Perdiccas brought an armie into egypt against Ptholome	before britay knowe
		The warres betwene the Athenians & Acolians began.	
		Dnias, son of Jaddus, was high priest among the iewes	
3643	310	E Lanus, called also Danus, was king of Britaine	271
		by nyne yeres.	
3644	319	Claudius Pontius, captain of the Samnites, over-	270
		threw and banquished the Romans, to their great shame.	
3645	318	Vappylus Curzor overcame the Feretanes, beat down	269
		the Samnites, tooke Lucernas with 7000. Samnites,	
		whom he brought in bondage.	
3646	317	The kyngdome of Asia began, where Antigonus reig-	268
		ned first. 18. yeres, who caused Eumenes, taken and be-	
		trayed by Alexanders souldiours, to be cast in prison.	
		Olympias, mother of Alexander, caused Euridices,	267
		and Arideus the king to be slayne.	
		At Syria in this time was much vexed by Ptholome	
		who toke Ierusalem also by fraude on the Sabbath daye,	
		and led away captiue a great number of Iewes.	
3647	316	Castander obtained the roialme of Macedony, and reig-	266
		ned. xix. yeres, he commanded the quene Olympias to	
		be put to deathe, who with a stout mynde, not fearing	
		death: offered her head to the hangman, and in the very	
		paine of death mynded hir honestee: for with hir han-	
		des she kept down her clothes, that no parte of hir body	
		should be sene.	
		Peace was made through all Apulia, & the Romans	
		gave lawes unto their allies.	
3648	315	Claudius, king of Illyria, brought by Pyrrhus. xix.	265
		yeres, and then restored him to his fathers kingedome	
		The warres of the Samnites were renewed, and they	
		put to flyght, in reuengement wherof, they besieged po-	
		stia and plisitia, cities confederate with Rome.	
3649	314	Satricula was taken, and Aurelius, master of the Ro-	264
		mayne horsemen slayne.	
3650	313	Castander assigned landes to the Abderites in the ex-	263
		treme partes of Macedony.	
3652	311	M Dindus, a cruell prince, began to reigne in Bri-	262
		taine, he (as our cronicles saye) foughte with a	
		kyng, who came out of Germany, & arrived here	
		& slue him with all his power. Moreover, as they write,	out

ore
ttaine
oyven

oute of Irishe seas came soothe a wonderfull monster, The pere The pere
whiche destroyed much people, wherof the king hearing of the before
would of his dalyaunte courage nedes fight with it: by worlde Chyke
whom he was cleane deuoured. When he had reygned ob an daridm.
bist. peres.

Here beginneth the kingdome of Syria, wher Seleu-
cus Nicanor first reigned. 32. peres.

Pestilence inuaded Rome. Pola with other cityes,
was taken.

In this place the Scottes began theyr chronycles at
Fergus: son of Farquahard, kinge of Irelande: who (as
they write) came with a great power out of Irelande to
theyr ayd, in the dissencion betwene them and the pitch-
tes: where by his wisdom and prowes, he so behaued
him selfe that he agreed those people and obtained suche
faueur, that they elected him to be theyr king, he reigned
among them. 25. peres, and finally, in passinge the seas
betwene Irelande and Scotland, he was drowned.

These histories of the Scottes (as they set them forth)
be full of errours, and agre with no other histories, for
they saye, that Fergus slue Coil king of Britain, when
there was no suche of that name, nor manye peres after
as it may in this booke playnly appeare. But I will take
the peres of the reignes of theyr kinges, as they write
them, whiche were from this time, vnto the cominge of
Cesar. 260. peres, for whiche cause, I haue here, for the
better agremente of the history, and computation of the
peres, begun to write of them.

Lysimachia in Thracia builded.

Callander caused Arlines, the wife of great Alexander 3653
with her son Hercules, to be put to death. 3654

Ptholome inuaded Ciprus.

In Rome the tribunes of the souldiours, that shoulde
gouerne the Legions, were ordeyned, with the two ad-
mirals of theyr nauy.

Ptholome and Callander, cofederates with Lysima- 3655
chus and Seleucus, warred against Antigonus, whose
son Demetrius fought with theym and was ouercome
by Ptholome.

Fabius Rutilianus banquished the Petruscians, and
gaue

310
309

308

The seconde parte of

The yeres of the worlde	The yere before Christ.			
3656	307	gave theym peace for .30. yeres	The Romaynes tryum- phed bothe of the Samnites and Vetruscians.	Before britayn knowe
3657	306		Demetrius Phalereus obteyned of Ptholome, & the Atheniens might be restozed to their popular gouernace Antigonus, and all the other princis, named theym- selues kinges.	257 256
			Demetrius, the sonne of Antigonus delpyered Grece from tyrāny, and ouercame and put to flight Ptholome in a battayle on the sea.	
3658	305		Fabius made proconsul, ouercame & bzonght in sub- fection the Samnites, and sold .4000. of theyr complices The Romaines triumphed againe ouer the Samnites, they renued their league with the Carthaginenses.	255
3659	304		Seleucus buylded diuers cities in Syria.	254
3660	303		G orbomannus, eldest sonne of Mordus, reigned xi. yeres. A prince iuste & religious, he renued the temples of his goddes, and gouerned his people in peace and wealthe.	253
			Symon sonne of Onias, surnamed the iust, was hygh prieest of the Jewes.	
			The auncient league was genen to the Samnites: the xxxi. towne of the Equians were taken, the Marrucii- nes, with other, confederated them with the Romayns.	
3661	302		In a certayne caue in Umbria .2000. armed mē were destroyed with smoke and fyre.	252
3662	301		Seleucus obteyned Babilon, and buylded Antioche, Ptholome, Cassander, Lysimachus, and Seleucus ouer- came and slue in battaile Antigonus king of Asia.	251
			Cleominus a Lacedemon, with a nauy of Grekes ar- riued on the costes of Italy.	
3663	300		Demetrius, sonne of Antigonus, succeeded in the king- dome of Asia, and reigned xlii. yeres.	250
			About this time the Romans began to vse barboours: for before they neuer shaued theyr beardes.	
			The lawes Valeria and Porcia were made, and the be- thops and diuinours were consecrated.	
3665	298		A great famine in Athenes.	248
3666	297		Antipater and Alexander, sonnes of Cassander, reyg- ned in Macedone. liii. yeres. But Justine writeth, that Philip succeeded Alexander.	247

The

Before Britayne knowven		The Samnites, being driven backe by Decius, entred into Hetruria, where they toke Ferentinum, and other townes, but by the consuls they were slayne and taken.	The yere of the world	The yere before Christ.
246		Fabius Rutilianus triumphed vpon the Hetruscians	3667	296
245		and Gaules. P. Decius auowed him selfe to die for the Romains. There were slaine of the Hetruscians & Gaules. 24000, and of the Samnites by Volumnus. 16300.	3668	295
244		Attilius Regulus subdued the Sabines, Posthumus the Hetruscians: peace was giuen to the Volscians and other for xl. yeres.	3669	294
243		Demetrius, king of Asia, obtained the roialme of Macedon, whiche .6. yeres he kept. Antipater, sonne of Cassander, slue his mother. Demetrius by fraud put to death Alexander and Philip: wherby he possessed the roialme of Macedon.	3670	293
		The Samnites and Hetruscians, wer banquished by the Romaines.		
242		A rchigallo, brother to Corbamanus, was crowned king of Britain, he was in condicions unlike to his brother, for he deposed the noble men, & exalted the vnnoble: he extorted frome men, their goodes to enrich his treasury, for whiche cause, by the states of the roialme he was deprived of his roial dignite, whan he had reigned. v. yeres.	3671	292
		Agid, called also Page, succeeded his father in the principalltee of the Jewes. x. yeres.		
		The Boeotians forsoke Demetrius, who he subdued and toke Thebes.		
		A pestilence, for which cause the ymage Aesculapius was brought from Epidaurus to Rome.		
		Fabius overcome of the Samnites, was rescued by his father, he triumphed over them, and put their captain Pontius to death.		
240		Pyrrhus banquished Pantauchus.	3673	290
		This Pyrrhus kyng of Epyre was a valiant and fierse warrior, sterne of countenance and terrible to behold, and seemed to be framed of nature to martiall prowesse. By a doubtfull answer of Apollo he was enduced to ayde the Tarantines against the Romaines, whom he overthrew in ii. great batailles: but with such losse of his		
		R. I. owne		

The second part of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
before
Christ.

owns capitaines, frendes, and souldiours, that he saide, before
if we ouercome the Romaines ones againe, we shalbe britay
utterly vndone. Wherfore maruellynge at the manhode know
and vertue of the Romaines, he sayde with a lowd voice
to his frendes: Oh, howe easie were it for me to subdue
the hole world, either to my self by the aide of Romaine
souldiours: or to the Romaines, if I were theyr kinge.
Samnium was cleane destroyed by the Romaines, and
the warres, whiche endured. 49. yeres, betwene theym
was finished, and all Italy pacified and subdued vnto
the Romaines.

3675

288

Ptolomeus, Seleucus, Lysimachus and pyrrhus king
of Epirus, warred againste Demetrius, whom they o
uercame & pyrrhus possessed the royaume of Macedony.
The citie Lysimachia, wyth an erthquake, was ouer
thowen.

3676

287

Etidurus, the thirde sonne of Morindus, & brother
to Archigallo, was elected kyng of Britain: A ver
tuons and gentill prince, who gouerned his people
iustly. When he had reigned. 6. yeres, as he was in his
tyng in a foress, by chaunce he met with his brother Ar
chigallo, whom moste lounghly he embraced, and soude
the meanes to reconcile him to his lordes, and than resig
ned to him his royall dignitee.

The Macedons receiued pyrrhus for their kyng. 7.
monethes.

3677

286

Lysimachus by fraude kylled Antipater, his sonne in
lawe, and possessed the kyngdome of Macedon, vii. yeres
Demetrius in Cilicia vanquished Seleucus.

3678

285

Ferichias, brother to Fergus, was chosen kyng of
Scottes, durynge the nonage of his brothers children,
who by Ferleg^s his newew, for the desire to reigne, was
slaine, whā he had reigned. xv. yeres, and Ferlegus, for
that act fled Scotlande.

3679

284

Demetrius submitted him to Seleucus.

3680

283

Ptholomeus phyladelphus, kyng of Egypt, reigned
xxxviii. yeres. A prince aboue al other geue to study and
learnynge, he made a libarte in Alexandria, whiche he
furnyshe wth innumerable bokes of al sciences, among
whiche as chiefe was the volume of Moyles lawe. For
the

before
britay
know

233

247

236

235

234

233

before
Britayn
known

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
before
Christ.

the king hearing of that diuine lawe was in Hierusalem being verie desirous to haue it translated, first discharged out of his bondage, al the iewes in his realme, who were aboue. 100000. Then set he Demetrius & Aristens to Eleazar h high priest with great giftes to the temple of god, desiring that the lawe might be sent with lerned men to translate it into Greke. Incontinente Eleazar sent. 72. interpretours, who commonly be called. Septuaginta interpretes. These the king honourably receyued, and sent them to Demetrius, clerke of his librarie in Alexanderie, who prouided a place for them, where they assembled daily to interpret the holy scripture: and in. 72. daies finishd it. Which being done, the king with great giftes dimitted them home.

The Lucanes, Brutians, Samnites, & Petruscians being confederate with the Galles, made a viage towardes Rome: But by Dolobella they were driuen backe.

The Galles slue the Romaine ambassadours, Cecilius the pretour, and. 13000. souldiours.

Archigallo thus restored to his royall estate, ruled the people quietly and iustely. x. yeres, and then changed his life with death.

Aggal Esly receyued the principaliter of the Jewes: & gouerned them. 8. yeres.

The Tarentines spoyled the Romaine navy, & wold not receyue the ambassadours of Rome.

Ptolomeus Ceraunus reigned one yere in Macedon, and was vanquished by the Galles.

Lysimachus being overcome in battaile of Seleucus died. Seven monethes after Seleucus by the fallhode of Ptolome, lost his life.

The warres of the Grekes against the Aetolians. Warre indicted to the Tarentins, they sent to Pyrrhus for ayde, he cometh, and with the helpe of his Elephan-tes ouercometh Leuinus the cosul. Pyrrhus wondring at the continency of Fabritius, in refusing his riche giftes which he sent to him, didde send Cynes to Rome for peace, blynde Appius Claudius perswaded theym to the contrary.

Antiochus Soter the second kinge of Asia and Syria,

Reign.

reigned

3682

282

3682

282

3683

283

3684

279

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
before
Christ.

reigned. xix. yeres.

before
Britayn
know

About these daies blode was sene to springe out of a well, and milke to fall from the cloudes.

Meleagrus was king of Macedon .2. monethes. After whom Antipater reigned. 45. dayes.

Softenes reigned in Macedon. 11. yeres, he ouercame the Galles in Macedon.

Pyrrhus was banquished by the consules: by flight he saved him selfe, and returned to Tarentum.

3685

278

The Scicilians after the death of Agathocles, because they were continually vexed with the warres of the Carthaginenses, sent for Pyrrhus, and gaue vnto him y^e dominion of the whole isle. 228

An other Brennus, capitayn of the Galles, which invaded Grece, after many spoiles there done, robbed the temple of Appollo at Delphos and to excuse his sacrilege sayed: that the goddes neded nothing, but they beyng riche, ought to parte they^r goodes to pooze men, but he being ouerthrowen by the power of god, for payne killed him selfe, his armye beyng destitute of a capitaine wth lightning, hayle, hunger, and pestilence was vexed, and for desperation killed they^r wiues and children, and so were scattered throug^h Asia and grece. But at laste they gathered agayne together, and aydinge Picomedes, the king of Bithinia, when they had gotten the victo^ry, deuised the countrey with him, whiche was called after Gallogrecia.

3686

277

Antigonus Gonates reigned in Macedon. xxxvi. yeres 227
he ouercame the Galles.

3688

275

Polypbius the historiographer flourished. 225

Hiero king of Sicily reigned.

Pyrrhus expelling Antigonus possessed Macedon.

The Tarentines called Pyrrhus out of Sicily to helpe them, whom Curius the consul baynquished, he triumphed, at which time in Rome the elephants wer first sene.

Pyrrhus lefte Italy and Sicilye.

3689

274

Haslor Nahum, prince of the Jewes, succeeded his father and reigned. 7. yeres. 224

The Peloponenses by trespas were deliuered to Antigon^o.

The warres of Pyrrhus against the Lacedemones.

after

fore
itayne
novven
223
After many greuous battayles by him fought in Grece at the assault of Argos, with a stone cast downe of a wo^o of the world man he was slayne. The yere. The yere before Christ. 273

Alexander the sonne of Pyrrhus, was kyng of the Epyrotes. 3690

The Tarentines hearing of the death of Pyrrhus solicited the Carthaginenses to take theyr part, whom the Romans ouercame and banquished.

222 Lidurus, afore named, after the death of his brother Archigallo for his pietee and iustice, by the general consent of the Britons, was again cholen king. But he reigned not passinge two yere, but er that his yonger brethren, Uigenius and Peredurus, raised war against him, and toke him prisoner, where he remained (as they wyte) in the tower of London, during theyr reygne.

221 Cleazer the high priest of the Jewes.

Alexander king of Epirus, got the realme of Macedon. 3691

Genutius the consul toke Rhegium, and sent the eight Legion whiche had forsaken the Romaines in the warres of Pyrrhus to Rome who by the commaundement of the people were whipped and after put to death.

20 Vigenius and Peredurus, after the taking of theyr brother, reigned together. vii. yeres. Uigenius the died, and Peridurus reigned after alone. 2. yeres.

Demetrius sonne of Antigonus, recovered the realme of Macedon, and depriued Alexander of his kingedome, who fled to the Arcadians.

Maynus, yongest son of Fergus, after the death of his uncle was king of Scottes, he deuised manye superstitious ceremonies to be vsed in his pagan lawe, and when he had reigned .29. yeres he died.

19 The Alexandrines sent by Ptolome to Rome, obteyned the amitie which they desired. 3694

In this yere, the Romans first coigned syluer. The Picentes first moued warre.

18 The Picentes were, ouercome, the Romaines triumphed ouer them, they buylded Primum in France, & Beuentum in Italy. 3695

17 Amos Scyzach, prince of the Jewes, gouerned theym 3696

The yere before Christ.

273

272

271

270

269

268

267

R. iii.

Warre

The seconde parte of

The yere of the world	The yere before Christ.	The yere of the world	The yere before Christ.
3699	254		
			There were founde. 27124. heades.
3701	262		The first warres betwene the Romans and Carthaginenses began in Sicily, in the which. Ap. Claudi ⁹ triumphed vpon Hiero and the Africans.
3702	261		Peace being made with Hiero and the Syracusans, he gave vnto the Romans .cc. talentes of syluer, and the Africans wer vanquished in Sicily.
			Idure, the third tyme was made king of Britayne who continued his later reigne honourably and lustly: but beinge fore brused with age and troubles, he finished his life, when he had nowe lastely reigned. iiii. yeres.
3703	260		Antiochus surnamed Theos, the thyrd king of Siria reigned. xv. yeres.
			Hanno, duke of Carthage, in a battayle vpon the sea was vanquished by Duilius the consul. Cornelius his felowe was taken by the Carthaginenses.
3704	259		L. Cornelius Scipio walked the isles Corsica and Sardinia. Hanno duke of Carthage was slayne.
3705	258		Drbonian reigned in Britayne. x. yeres.
			Attilius Calatinus, going to Camerina, fel into the holte of the Poenians or Carthaginenses, and by the helpe of Calphurnius was rescued. Anniball the elder being vanquished by the Romans, of his own me was hanged.
3706	257		Antippos king of Lacedemonia.
			The Parthians refused the dominion of the Syrians.
			M. Attilius Regulus with his companion vanquished the Carthaginenses, on the sea, & warred in Africa, wher they were victours. Regulus killed a serpent of wonderfull greatnesse, by Antippos the Lacedemon, he was overcome and taken prisoner.
			Arsaces invaded the realme of Parthia, suppressing Andragorus the president therof. Of him all the kinges of Parthia were called Arsaces.
			Theodotus the president of Bactria, commaunded him selfe to be called king.
3708	255		Upon the sea the Carthaginenses were againe overcome

		The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christe
fore ttaine ovven 204	come by the Romanes, and they also by the cost of sicilie with tempest were destroyed. Mathathias silas, receyued the p[ri]ncipalite of the Jewes, and gouerned them. x. yeres. The consules destroyed the sea costes of Africa, & returning victors into sicily, aboute Palinurus they suffered shipwreche.	3709	254
201	Metellus in sicily ouerthrew Asdrubal, and broughte 120. elephantes with great pompe to Rome.	3712	251
200	Manasses was made hygge p[ri]est of the Jewes. Regulus being fyue yeres kept in p[ri]son was sent by the Carthaginenses to Rome on his fidelitee, to obtaine peace, which if he could not, to retorne againe, and yeld him self p[ri]soner, but he dissuaded the senate fro making peace or exchanging p[ri]soners, and so returned to Carthage, to p[ri]son, wher with most valiant mynd he baimquished fortune.	3713	250
199	The cōsuls besiged Lilybe ⁹ : by Annibal the son of Amilcar, thei wer banquished, & lost most part of their army	3714	246
198	At the haue Drepanus the Romans fought vnluckly M organ was crowned king of britain, who guided the royalme peacibly. xiiii. yeres. The nauy of Carthage waited soze the sea partes of Italy.	3715	248
195	Seleucus Gallinicius the fourth kyng of syria, reigned. xx. yere. He put to death his stepmother Beronice, with hir yonge childe. For whiche crueltee many of his citees forsoke him, and receiued ptolome.	3718	245
93	Ptolomeus Euergetes the thirde kinge of Egypte, reigned. 26. yeres. He subdued Gallinicius, & obteyned Syria, Judea, Cilicia and other countreis.		
	Joseph ⁹ Arses, p[ri]nce of the Jewes reigned. 60. yeres, he was cōstituted gouernoz of the tribes of samaria.	3720	243
	Gallinicius suffered shipwreck, and was again restored to his royalme.		
92	In this tyme continuall warre was betwene the Romanes and poenians. Luctatius ouercame & banquished the Carthaginenses at the Isles Egates. In a short time after the whole nauy of Carthage, betwene Sicily and Sardinia, was almost	3722	241

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.		Before britayn knowe
3722	241	almost destroyed with tēpest. Wherby Amilcar desired peace, which was graunted. Here endeth the first war res of Carthage.	191
		Dozuidilla, the sonne of Maynus, was made kyng of the Scottes, who reigned. xxviii. yeres, he gaue all hys study and desire to huntynge, in so much that therof he made lawes, and continued all his lyfe in peace.	
		Demetrius, the. xxxv. king of Macedon reigned. r. yeres By the exundatio of Tiber, and fyze, Rome was soze wasted.	
3723	240	Onias, the sonne of iust Simon in this time flozished Arsaces buylded Dara.	190
3725	238	The Romayns warred with the Phaliscians, & slue 150000. of them, they fought also prosperously with the Galles.	188
3726	237	Cumenes, king of Bithynia, in this time inuaded Asia The warres in Ligustia, now called Lubarde, where the Romains triumphed, and passed ouer the great ry uer of Po.	187
3728	235	The Sardinians rebelled by the meanes of Carthage, but by y Romains they wer subdued, peace was renewed with the Poenians, and in all other places, the tēple of Janus was shut, which was not closed before, sens the tyme of Numa.	185
3729	234	Merianus, brother to Morgan, succeeded in the roy alme of Britaine, whan he had tyrannously reigned vii. yeres, he was deposed.	184
3730	233	Amilcar, with an army was sent into Spaigne, wher he dilated the empire of Carthage.	183
3732	231	Antigonus, the. 36. king of Macedon reigned. 12. yeres. Teuca quene of Illyria slue the Romain ambassadozs	181
3734	229	Armenes king of Cappadocia. Teuca quene of Illyria flozished.	379
3735	228	The warres of Illyria, the consules toke many citees and subdued both the roialm and the quene.	178
3736	227	Mal was chosen king of Britaine for his iustyce and temperance, which he gouerned. xx. yeres peacibly.	177
3738	225	Seleus Ceraunus, the. v. king of Syria, reigned. 3 yeres, and was slayne by the capitaines of Ptholome. The Romayns made a league with Amilcar.	175
		The	

before
Britayne
knownen

The warres of Fraunce began. The bishops contemned the citee with sacrifices: they buried quicke in the of the
ore market a frenche man and frenche woman, wpyth a world
Creke woman.

74

Mithridates Arlaces king of Parthia. 3739 224

At the first encountre betwene the Romanes and Galles the Romanes were shamefully put back: then C. Attilius coming to the rescue, was there slayne: but yet the Galles were overcome.

72

Antiochus the great the. vi. kinge of Syria reigned 36 yeres. 3741 222

171

The Romas at the river Adua, banquished the Galles. 3742 221

Prusias of Bithinia
Acheus of Taurus. kinge.

Cannarus of Fraunce.
Attalus of Asia.

Marcellus subdued the Galles that inhabited Lombardy, and toke Millan by force, the frenchemen put themselves and theyrs vnder y power of the people of Rome.

Demetrius king of Illyria, and Ariarates kynge of Cappadocia reigned. 3743 220

Antigonus banquished Cleomenes, and spoiled hym of his realme, obteyned Sparta, toke Tegeta, and was receyued of the Argives.

The Istrians were subdued by the Romanes.

Ptolomens Philopater the. 4. kinge of Egypt, reigned. xviij. yeres, he slue his parentes and his brother, and so inuaded theyr royaume. 3744 219

Phillip. 37. king of Macedon, gouerned the. 42. yeres.

The warres social betwene the Acheans & Aetolians.

Annibal the sonne of Amilcar, was ordeined capitaine of Carthage, like as he was of noble and valyaunte courage, so was he wise, gilefull, and of wonderfull polycy, wherby he wrought much scath to the Romans, against whom he conceiued such enmittee & wrath in his youth, that beyng a childe of. viij. yeres of age, he swore to his father, that his life shoulde payle hym, before he woulde leaue the hatred that he had conceiued in his hert towarde them. Wherfore in his childehode, beyng demaunded, whan the warres of Carthage and Rome shoulde haue

The seconde parte of

The were
of the
warre
3745

The were
before
Christ.
218

an ende, flinging the duste of the grounde with his foote, answered: They shall then be finished, when one of the partes is brought into thys fourme.

The beginning of Anniball his warres, he tooke Saguntum, the people of whiche citee were so faythfull to the Romaines, that after great famine by him susteyned, rather then they woulde yelde them to Anniball, burned them selves, theyr wiues, childzen, and goodes.

Aemilius toke Dimalis, a city of Illyria: the residue submitted them to the Romaines: Demetrius fledde into Macedonie.

Philip overcame the Illyrians, and droue theym out of Macedonie.

The Rhodians moued warre against Byzantians.

Theodotus by treason deliuered Ptolemaida and Tyrus to Antigonus.

3746

217

The warres of Syria, betwene Antiochus and Ptolemaeus, in whiche Antiochus was bairquished.

Annibal subdued the Galles as far as Pyrens, he overcame theym at the riner Rhodanus: at Ticinus he overthrew the Romaines: and at Trebisa banquished Sempronius with his army, he firste perced the mountaynes, making his waye with fire & vinegar, where he brought ouer his armye into Italye, beinge of. 80000. footemen 10000. horsemen, and. xx. Elephantes.

3747

216

The warre in Candy betwene the Egnosians & Lissas. Corn. Scipio subdued a great part of Spayn. A battayle at the lake Trasymenus, where Flamminius the consul was slayne, and the Romaines put to flight.

3748

215

Anniball obtained the noble victorie of Cannas, where Aemilius the consul was slayne, with two Questors. 21. Tribunes. 90. senators. 300. of the nobilitie. 4000. footemen, and. 2700. horsemen, and came within three myles of Rome.

3749

214

Mithridates warred vpon the Sinopenes.

Antiochus indicted warre to Archeus.

Philip kinge of Macedonie tooke Thebes and entered in league with Anniball.

Posthumus by the deceit of the frenchemen was slayn.

Marcellus overcame Annibal, and the Scipions banquished.

Before
britay
know
168

167

166

165

164

before
Britayne
known

The yere
of the
world
The yere
before
Christ

quished Asorubal in Spayne.

Fabius Maximus was created Dictator of Rome.

This man in his youth exercised bothe eloquence and prowesse, and therfore after became as well in armes as counsaile a capitaine most excellent, and subduyng many countreys to the Romains, triumphed fve times. At this time beyng made Dictatour against Anniball, he so tempered prudence with manhode, that by detracting of baill, and training Annibal from place to place, and at sundrye aduantages skymishynge with him: he minished his puissance, and pserued the publike weale of his countrey. In so much that Annibal (whan he had overthowen Minutius the Consul, and was constrained by Fabius, whiche came to the rescue to retyre with losse of his men) said: Wpd not I tell you, that this clowde wold at the last byrnyng vs a storme? Calling Fabius a clowde, because he houered vpon the hylls.

Rathak, brother of Dorisdilla, was made kynge of 3750
Scottes, who for his tyranny, in the seconde yere of his
reigne, was slaine by his owne lordes.

The poenians were overthowen by Fabius at Bene-
uentum.

Pleuratus kynge of Thracia, Scerdileus kinge of 3751
Allyria.

Hitherto writeth Polibius.

Sypbar kinge of Numidia, entered in amitee with the
Romaines.

Reuthar, son of Dorisdilla, a yong childe, contrary to 3752
the lawes of Scotland was made kynge: for which cause
Scotlande was vexed with ciuill warres, in maner to
the desolacion thereof, and the Britons entred and sub-
dued it, whiche they kepte (as the Scottes write) .xii.
yeres vnder their subiection, their kinge Reuthar beyng
expelled out of his royaume, and lyuing in Irelande: but
afterward by entreatee, vpon certain conditions, he was
again restored to his kingdome, and reigned in all .26.
yeres.

Anniball tooke Tarentum, and the Scipiones were
slayne in Spaine.

The Romaines were in such feare, by the comming of 3753
Annibal

213

214

215

216

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
woꝝ'de

The yere
before
Chrīst.

Anniball towards Rome, that thei determined to haue before
forsaken the citie, and to fle in to Grece. But by the pro britayn
wes and wisdomē of the yong Scipio, they were persua knowe
ded to the defence of their countrey, who (whan all other
feared to be capitaines, in so daungerous warres) tooke
vpon him to deliuer Italy from the power of Anniball,
beinge but .22. yeres of age, for which cause he was first
sent into Spayne with an army.

* This Scipio was of wonderful towardnesse even frō
his childehode, for beyng but .xvii. yeres olde, in a greate
battayle by Pausia in Lumbardy, he rescued hys father
whan he was enuyronned with ennemies, and in daun
ger to be slayne. After he had prosperously finished the
warres, that he had taken in hand, he was so greatly re
noured, that men came out of all countreys onely to see
and honour him. And as he was famous in marcial pro
wesse, so was he excellently well learned, and fauoured
learned men exceedingly: in so much as he refused to here
the ambassadours of Carthage, makynge entreatee for
peace, vntyll thei had brought to hym Terence the latin
poet: in whom he after so greatly delited, that it is sayde
he holpe hym to make his comedies.

3854 209

Attalus of Asia, Pleuratus of Thracia, Scerdiletus of 159
Illyria were kynges.

The Aetolians confederated theim selues with the Ro
maynes, and indicted warre to Philyp.

Scipio toke newe Carthage in Spaine, and sent Mago
prisoner to Rome.

3755 208

Fulvius the consull recovered Tarētum. Scipio ouer
came and banquished Hasdruball. 158

3756 207

Rimo gouerned this roialme of Britayn. xvi. yeres.
Philyp, kyng of Macedon, fought prosperouslye 157
agaynst the Aetolians.

Here vnto Lacinus Annibal ouerthue the Romains,
in whiche conflict Marcellus the consull was slayne.
Malerius wasted Aprica, and banquished the Cartha
ginenses on the sea.

3757 206

In Spayne Hanno was take, and the Carthaginenses 156
that were with him, slayne.

P. Sulpitius Proconsull of Grece.

Post

before ritane novven	Hofilins put Anniball to flyght. At Sena Afozuball, with his army was ouerthrowen and vanquished by the consuls, whose head Nero caused to be cast into the campe of Anniball.	The yere of the world	The yere before Christ.
5	Spaine was subdued to the Romans.		
4	The warre betwene Syphax and Masinissa began, in whiche Syphax droue Masinissa out of his roialme.	3758 3759	205 204
3	Scipio vanquished the Poenians, and Sempzonius ouercame Anniball.	3760	203
2	Ptolomeus Epiphanes, the .v. kyng of Egypt, reigned 24 yeres, he passed not the age of foure yeares, whan his father dyed. Wherefoze he was committed to the gouernance of the Romans, whiche was the occasion of great warres betwene Antiochus and the Romaines.	3761	202
	Scipio destroyed the campe of Syphax and Afozuball. Syphax was taken by Lelius, and brought to Rome.		
	Annibal was compelled to retourne to Carthage to the defence thereof, the .xvii. yere after he first entred into Italy.		
	Scipio and Annibal met together in battayl, in which Annibal was put to flight. The Carthaginenses desired peace: whiche was graunted to them, but .500. of theyr Hippies were drowned in the sight of the citee.	3762	120
	Here endeth the second warres of Carthage.		
	Peace was giuen to Carthage. Masinissa was also restored to his roialme. Scipio returned to Rome with great triumph, after whose chariot Terence the comical poete folowed as prisoner.	3763	200
	The warres of Macedon began because that Philip sent succours to the Carthaginenses. Ser. Sulpitius went into Macedon, where he toke many townes.	3764	199
8	The french warres arose, in which Fartus triumphed. Publius Pamphilus, entring into the landes of the Galatians, with all his army was enclosed.	3765	198
7	Quintius the consal ouerthwe kyng Philip. The Acheians stablished peace with the Romaines.	3766	197
6	A rebellion of seruantes in Rome, which by Corn. Lenulus were subdued and slayne.		
	Antiochus in Coelosyria subdued all the citees belonging to Ptolomeus.	3767	196
	Pablis, the tyran of Lacedemon, receiuinge the citee of Sili. Argh		

The seconde partz of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.	Argues, fel to the parte of the Romaines. Quintius in Thessaly put Philip also to flight. The Lombardes submitted them to the Romaines: the Billanners were banquished and slayn. Sempzonius in Spayne was kyled.	Before britayn knowe
3768	195	Antiochus repaired the citee L ysimachia. Peace made betwene Philip and the Romaines. The citees of Grece were restored to their libertee. A sedicion of seruauntes began in Thuscayn: P. Acili us subdued and hanged them.	145
3769	194	Anniball, bycause he wold not come in the Romaines daunger, fled vnto Antiochus. Quintius made war vpon Nabis prince of Lacedemō. Cato subdued the Spaniardes, and triumphed.	144
3770	193	Antiochus, perceiuinge that he coulde not get the roy alme of Aegypte, made his power against Asia, and toke Rhodes and Santos, and than by the prouocation of An niball, he prepared war against the Romaines. Peace was geuen to Nabis. And Quintius triumphed thre daies in Rome.	143
3771	192	Quintius reigned here in Brittain. 20. yeres Josephus, the son of Thobias, deliuered the Je. was from the furve of Ptolome.	142
3772	191	Corn. Scipio subdued the Lusitanes. Antiochus gaue vnto Ptolome in marriage his daugh ter Cleopatra.	141
3773	190	Philopoemenes, capitaine of the Acheans, ouerthrewe the souldiours of Nabis, slue moste parte of the armye, and spoyled the countrey of Lacedemon. Antiochus was put to flight, and driuen out of Grecia by Attilius Labrius.	140
3774	189	Scipio Nasica banquished the Galles, and triumphed ouer them. Anniball in a bataill on the sea was banquished of Cume nes, at Thiatyria Scipio Nasica subdued Antiochus, and granted him peace vpon condicion, that his domini on should onely extende no further, than the mountaine Taurus. Anniball fled vnto Prusias king of Bithinia.	139
3775	188	Philopoemenes ouercame the Lacedemones, brake down their walles, & abrogated the lawes of Licurgus.	138

L. Vebius

L. Vebius

efore
ritane
novven
6

L. Webius, by the Ligurians was inuironed with al
his army and slayne. Scipio triumphed ouer Asia.

The yere
of the
world

The yere
before
Christ.

Seleucus, called also Philopater the. vii. king of Siria
reigned. xii. yeres, he by the instigation of one Symon,
that was gouernoure of the temple of Hierusalem, sent
Heliodorus to haue taken away the treasure of the tem
ple: but by the angels of god he was let, & hardly escaped.
Scipio Africanus, after his manifold benefittes done
for the citee of Rome, was banished to Linternum. Crac
chus defended the cause of Scipio, and maried his youn
geste daughter. A daye also was appoynted to Scipio A
siaticus to aunswere his accusers.

3777

186

Keutha, cousin germain to Keuther, was made gouer
nour of Scotland, during the nonage of Thereus the son
of Keuther, who ruled quyetlye the roialme. xvi. yeres,
and then resigned the gouernance therof to Thereus.

3778

185

The wantonnes or delicacy of the Asians began to take
place in the citee of Rome, & cookes to be had in estimacio

Simon son of Onias high priest of the Jewes.

3779

184

The Romaines at Hippones were ouerthrowen. Cal
phurnius and Quintius subdued the Spaniards.

Hircannus, the sonne of Iosephus was made prince of
Judea, where he ruled. xvi. yeres. He, accordinge to Phi
lo was the last prince of the house of David. For after
his decesse the Machabeis obteyned bothe the principa
litee and office of high priest.

3780

183

Calphurnius and Quintius consules triumphed ouer
the Lusitanes and Celtiberians.

Cato the noble Censor in this time flourished, who was
very olde or he lerned the latine and greke letters.

Onias the sonne of Simon the iuste, was made high
pope of the Jewes.

3781

182

Philopoemenus, taken by the Mesteniens, dyed bynge
popson finished his life.

L. Quintius was sent to Prusias, to requyre Annibal
to be deliuered to the Romaines, but Annibal because he
would not come in theyr handes, popsoned him selfe.

Scipio Africanus died at Linternu vpon whose tombe
was written, O ingrate countrey: whyche hast not so muche
as my bones.

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.		Before britayne knowen
3782	181	A sedition dyd ryse among the Jewes for the chylde of Joseph. Demetrius, the sonne of Philip beyng accused by his brother Perseus, was poysoned by Mida presydente of Boeonia.	131
3783	180	A pestilence in Rome. Pinarus subdued the Isle Corsica to the Romanes.	130
3784	179	Fulvius Flaccus overcame agayn the Spaniards.	129
3785	178	Ptolomens Philometor, vi. kynge of Egypt, reigned xxxv. yeres, and synally dyed by excedynge ioye that he tooke of a victorie.	128
		Gracchus vanquished the Celtiberians, and Fulvius triumphed ouer the Ligurians.	
3786	177	Perseus, the. xxxviii. and last kynge of Macedon, reigned. xi. yeres, he warred agaynst the Romanes, and at the last was taken by Paulus Aemilius the consul, and brought prisoner in a triumph to Rome. His yongest son of necessitee to sustein his lyfe, was driven to occupie a smithes crafte. So vncertain is the state of fortune.	127
		The Histrians put to flight the Romanes, & overcome M. Licinius, with his men of warre. Manlius the consul subdued theim agayne, and vanquished their drunken kynge.	
3787	176	Sempronius Gracchus overthrewe the Ilienses and Balarians in Sardinia.	126
		Aepulo, pryncce of the Histrians was taken, and all hys countrey submitted them to the Romanes.	
3788	175	Jesus, called also Jason, brother to Onias, was highe priest of the Jewes.	125
3789	174	Antiochus Epiphanes the. viii. kynge of Syria, reigned xi. yeres. A prince geuen to falsehoode and mischiese.	124
		A schisme amonge the Jewes for the office of the highe priest.	
3790	173	Atellus reigned here in Bytayne. x. yeres. C laudius overcame the Celtiberians, and bitter ly vanquished them, after which time they obeyed vnto the empire.	123
3791	172	Popilius the consul receyued to hys rule and gouernance the Ligurians.	122
3792	171	The seconde warres of Macedon began.	121

before Britayne nowven		The yere of the world	The yere before Christ.
110	Araratres kynge of Thracia, desired amitee with the Romaines, which was granted to him.	3793	170
	Perseus, kynge of Macedone, overcame the Romans at Sycurium. Ap. Claudius sent into Illyria with an armie, was beaken backe, and put to flight at Uscana.		
118	Thereus, the son of Reuther, kinge of Scottes, reigned. xii. yeres, he for his tyrany and vicious living, by his lordes, was depzied of his kyngedome, and exiled out of his royaume.	3795	168
	Antiochus toke Hierusalem, spoyled the temple, forced the Jewes to forsake theyr lawes, & defiled the temple with an ydol. He also overcame Ptolome at Pelusium, and besieged Alexandria.		
	Eleazar, a Jew of .90. yeres of age, was slain, because he would not (contrary to his lawes) eate swines flethe.		
	At the same time seven yong men, with their mother, were put to terrible death, because they wold not offend their lawe.		
	Matathias with his fine sonnes, defended the cause of the Jewes, and slue Apollonius.		
	Perseus toke many cities of Illyria, and Martius the consul prosperously entred into Macedon with his army.		
117	Matathias died by an othe he bound his sonnes to preserve the lawes and wealthe of their countreys before their lyues.	3796	168
	Judas Machabeus governed the Jewes. xii. yeres. In shorte tyme he delyuered them from their enemies, and restored the lawes & sacrifices againe. He obtained the amite of the Romans, wherby the Jewes preserved their libertee. Then for the defence of his countrey, with praiyng and fighting he slue .35000. of his ennemys, with Pricano, the capitaine of Demetrius, whose head he did set vpon the castell of Jerusalem, his thretnyng hāde he hanged against the temple, and his blasphemous tongue he gaue vnto byrdes to be deuoured. Finally, after many batails prosperously by him fought, he was slaine by Bacchides a capitaine of Demetrius.		
	C. Popilius, and C. Decimus ambassadours of the Romaines restored Egypte vnto Ptolome, Antiochus at their commaundement returned into his royaume.		

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
before
Christ.

3797

166

L. Anicius subdued Illyria, and Gentius kinge thereof before submitted him to the Romanes. before Britayn knowe

Aemilius Paulus the consulle banquished Persus, & conquered al Macedone. Cn. Octavius arrived at Samothracia, whither Persus was fled, who being destitute of any succour, yeldid him selfe.

3795

165

Here endeth the kingdome of the Macedones. 116

The mooste pompous and royall triumph of Aemilius was shewed in Rome.

Judas purified the temple from Idols, and dedicated a temple unto the lord. 115

Pzusias, king of Bithinia, commended his son Pico-medes to the tuition of the Romanes.

Marcellus subdued the Galles of the mountaines, & Sulpitius the Ligurians.

Antiochus, hearing of the prosperous successe of the Jewes, in a fury purposed to destroye theym all, but god the beholder of all thinges, strake him with suche an incurable disease that wormes issued out of his body, whiche so putrified the fleche, that the savour thereof no man might abide, and so most miserably died.

3800

163

C Julius succeeded Catellus in the realme of Britain who quietly reigned. xx. yeres. 113

Antiochus Epater, the. ix. king of Siria, reigned. ii. yeares, he besieged, toke, and destroyed Bethsura, made peace with Judas, and after brake his promise and spoiled the temple.

3801

162

Alchimus by Lysias was constituted highe pzepte of the Jewes. 112

Antiochus slew Philip whom his father had left to be governour of his roialme.

3802

161

Demetrius Soter, brother to Antiochus Epiphanes, was the. x. kinge of Siria, and reigned. vi. yeares, he lying in hostage at Rome fled from thens, and slew bothe Antiochus and Lysias, but Alexander the sonne of Eupator fled away. 111

3805

158

Judas metinge in battaile with Betheron, slew him and overthrew al his army. 108

Judas by the people was apointed to the office of high pzepte, he also entered in league with the Romanes.

Josue

		The yere before Christ.
fore	Josine brother to Therenz, was made king of Scottes. The yere	
itayne	a prince geuen to peace and quiet, he reigned. 24. yeres. of the	
ovven	Judas committing battayle with Bachides, at Barzi. would	
6	son was slayne. 3807	156
05	Jonathas, the .xi. capitaine of the Jewes, brother vn	
	to Judas, gouerned them. .xv. yeres. He vanquished Ba	3808 155
	chides at the riuer Jordan: and finally was slayne with	
	a. 1000. of his men at Ptolomais, by the craft of Triphā	
04	Salica vanquished the Dalmatians. 3809	154
03	Alexander the son of Antiochus, tooke Ptolomais. 3810	153
01	Alexander entered in amitee with Jonathas. 3812	151
	Demetri ⁹ , toyning battail with Alexander, was slait.	
00	Alexander, called also Balans, the .xi. kinge of Syria, 3813	150
	reygned. 6. yeres. He married the doughter of Ptolome	
	kinge of Egypt.	
	The warre beganne betwene the Carthaginenses and	
	Masimissa, king of Numidia.	
	Scipio, called after Aphricanus, of his owne good wil	
	toke vpon him the warres of Spain: in which he fought	
	prosperously agaynst them.	
	Corn Salica prohibited the buylding of the Theater	
	as a thing vnprofitable and hurtful to good manners. 3814	149
	Jonathas vanquished Appolonius, surnamed Titus	
	toke Azotum, subdued Ascalon, and with great victo ^{ry} e 3815	148
	retourned to Jerusalem.	
	Ptolomeus for treaso ^{ry} wrought against him, forsoke	
	the alpaunce of Alexander, and gaue his doughter Cleo	
	patra vnto Demetrius.	
	The third warres of Carthage began, in which they	
	chose the two Asdruballes capitaines of their footmen,	
	and Phaneas capitaine of they ^r horsemen. Cato persua	
	ded the Romans vtterlye to destroy Carthage, confide	
	ring (as he sayd) the Romaynes to degenerate lytell and	
	lytel from the prowes and vertue of they ^r auncestours.	
	Wherefore if that mighty cytie shuld persist in that state	
	knowinge the igna ^{cy} , nicitee, and sluggishenesse of the	
	Romaynes, nothinge were more certayne but that they	
	would agayne contende for the empyre, and oppresse the	
	Romans, subduing them vnder they ^r power, but Scipio	
	Salica was of contrary opinion, he wold not haue Car	
	thage	

The seconde parte of

The part
of the
world

The part
before
Christ.

3716

147

charge to be destroyed. First because it were an unhonest thing, that the Romans should shewe so great tyranny and so cruelly to slea such a people. Moreover it were unprofitable: for without that towne, Africa could be kept in due obedience, excepte they woulde tourne all into a wilderness. Thysdelye, it was veray necessary that the Romans should haue such a citie aduersary vnto them whereby they people mighte be incited to prowesse and actiuitie, otherwise it shoulde chaunce, that they shoulde contend together in ciuile warres, if they had not a brode enemy, whome they shoulde feare. but in conclusion Cato obeyned, and Piso was sent to besiege Carthage. Phaneas with certaine of his men, fell vnto the parte of the Romanes.

before
Britayn
knowe

97

Massimilla dying, committed his sonne to the custody of Scipio.

3817

146

Adams, a man of a base state, whiche counterfayted himselfe to be Philip, inuaded Macedony, ouercam and put to flight Juuencus the pzetor.

96

Scipio besieged Carthage.

The Asians chose Ptolomeus, for they kinge, but he gaue it vnto Demetrius.

Demetrius, called also Picanoz, the .xii. kinge of Syria reigned. v. yeres.

3818

149

Scipio, after the continuall assault of six dayes, tooke Carthage, vnto whom Hasdrubal yelded himselfe. And albeit that Scipio permitted free flighte to all, yet in the spoyle of the citie was committed great slaughter. After when by the commaundemente of Scipio, the citie was tyred, the wife of Hasdrubal, with a stout courage, lepe into the fire, finishing her life with that deathe, whyche the first quene suffered. The citie burned continually. 17. dayes, shewing a miserable spectacle to her beholders. It is sayde that after Carthage was thus destroyed. Scipio wente to beholde the place, where some time that fayre and beautifull citie stode: and there seinge the myserable ruine and desolacion therof, with muche wepinge sayd: That he did forsee Rome in time to come, to lye in suche maner ouerthrowen and destroyed. The destruction of this citie was done. 679. yeres after the buylding therof

608.

608. yeres after the buylding of Rome, and, 693. yeres after the arriual of Brutus here in Britayne.

The same yere Corinte, a noble citee of Grece, was destroyed with fyre by Mummius the consul.

Metellus first in the stretches of Thermopile, and after in Phoea, ouercame the Macedones, brought Andariscus in his subiection, and recovered Macedony.

Mummius toke Corinth and destroyed it with fyre, wherof came the metalles of Corinth.

In this time thre notable triumphes were at Rome Scipia, triumphed ouer Aphrica, before whose chariot Hasdruball was led. Metellus ouer Macedonye, before whom wente Andariscus the conterfette Philip. And Mummius ouer Corinth, before whom was bozne the metalles and fayre tables of Corinth.

About this time, thorough the warres and dissencion of the Iues, there arose among them sundry sectes and opinions in theyr religions, of which there were. iiii. sorts.

The first were called Pharisei, that is, segregate or chosen. They vsed certayne constitucions of men beside the lawe of Moyses, by which they were segregate from the residue of the people. They reputed them selves better then all other, they obserued feigned fastes, prayed commonly in the stretes, that they might be sene and called maisters. Their learning was some what better then the others. For they taught the immortalitie after this lyfe, and that god would punishe sinne: they beleued also Messias to come to saue such as beleued, and to iudge suche as sinned.

The second sect were Sadduceis, they cloked theyr wickednes vnder a glorious name. For Sadducei is as much as iuste or holy. They taught, that there was nexther angel, spirite, nor life after death: that god gaue the lawe onely for this, that honestly and quietly we should lyue receiuing of god here in this life the rewards of iustice. They interpreted the scriptures according to the iudgement of mans reason: neither any other thing wold they here, & as concerning that which pertained to the maner of theyr liuing, they were plain Epicures. A wonderfull thing to be hard, that such ethnikal opinions shuld crepe

The seconde parte of

The pere
of the
worlde

The pere
before
Christ.

in amonge the pecular people of god, and that so farre, that openly they were not afrayd to teache, and constant
loe to affirme, that after this life, there remayned none
other life.

Before
britayne
knowen

These were the thirde who considering both the Pharaiseis and Sadduceis, vnder an honest pretence of name to folowe theyr lustes and desyres, neyther almoste to do any thing that was worthy for theyr profession: therfore thought thei to declare the seruicitee of their life in dedes and wold be called Celai, that is labourers, and studied to be sene holy and for the most part ledde an Anabaptistical life, absteyning from matrimony, and willinge all thinges to be comen among them, they delighted in cleane apparel, and praised before the sonne rising.

3819

144

Virgatus, a Lusitayne, rapted the Spaniardes against the Romanes, he ouerthrew Metilius, and destroyed al his army. 94

Demetrius entred into amite with Ionathas.

3820

143

Ptolemy a vertuous and gentil prince reigned in Britaine. b. peres. 93

Ptolomeus Euergetes, the. vii. kinge of Egypte reigned. 29. peres, a man very cruell and wicked, which delighted in effusion of blod, for he slue his sisters sonne in his armes: and many other abhominable actes he committed, whiche be not conuenient to be wryten.

Ionathas renewed amitee with the Romaynes and Lacedemones.

Plautius, ioyning battayle with Virgatus, was put to flight.

3821

142

Demetrius was taken by Arsaces king of Parthia, and put to death. 92

Mithridates, the. vi. king of Parthia, after he had subdued Demetrius, invaded Babilon, with al the regions betwene the riuers Adalpes and Indus.

Claudius the consul at the first conflict was put back by the Galles, but at the second time he obtained the victory, and slue. v. M. of them.

Cl. Ant.

		The yere of the world	The yere before Christ.
fore itayne novven 91	Cl. Unimanus was shamefully beaten and put to flight by the Lusitanes.		
	Antiochus Theos, the. xiii. kinge of Syria, reigned foure yeres.	3822	141
90	Jonathas betrayed by Triphon, was slayne.		
	Simon his brother was made the thirde capitayn of the Jews, and reigned. viii. yeres. he overcame Antiochus Triphus, and lastely by the treason of his sonne in lawe was slayne.	3823	140
	M. Pompeius subdued the Termetins, but by the Numantians he was vanquished, and forced to make an unprofitable peace. Viriatus was slaine by his owne men.		
8	C hrimus, kinge of Britaine, through his drunkennes as our chroniclers write, reigned but one yere.	3825	138
	Triphon, murdering his pryce Antiochus, invaded the kingdome of Syria.		
7	F elgen, son to Chyrimus, reigned. 2. yere in Britain.	3826	137
	Triphon, called also Diodotus, the. 14. king of Syria reigned. iii. yeres.		
6	Simon confirmed his league with the Romains.		
	Mancinus beinge overthrowen of the Numantines, and driven out of his campe, was forced to conclude a peace greatly to his dishonour.	3827	136
5	E ldred reigned in Britaine one yere.	3828	135
	Antiochus Sedetes the. xv. king of Syria, reigned ix. yeres. He was invited bothe to the mariage and kyngedome by Cleopatra, and after by the helpe of Simon, he slue Triphon.		
	In Rome a childe was borne with foure feete, foure handes, foure eyes, as many eares, and hauinge both natures. In the lande of Bonony corne growe out of trees.		
4	A ndrogus likewise reigned one yere in Britaine.	3829	134
	In Sicily a rebellion of. 70000. seruantes began, which moued a cruel sedicion.		
	Vrianus the son of Androgus succeeded his father in the realme of Britain, and reigned. iii. yeres, he wholly gaue him selfe to the despyres of the fleshe.	3830	133
	Numantia a noble citee of Spayne, by the assaulte of Scipio was destroyed. This citee by the space of. 14. yeaeres, with. 4000. of theyr owne souldiours, not onelye with		

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
before
Christ.

withstode. 40000. Romaines, but also vainquished the
ostentines. For whiche cause Scipio the yonger, who
destroyed Carthage, was sent thither. He enclosed the
cittie about with a great trench. Whā the Numantines
by long siege were sore famished, they determined to fi-
nish their misery with death: thā with a sodaine erup-
tion they brake forth vpon their enemies: And (if Scipio
had not ben there present) the Romaines had fled away,
so egerly they assailed them: but by the gret multitude
of the romaynes, they were driuen backe, and many of
them slayne: than the residue in good order retized into
the town, and closed their gates, where with the sword
poison, and fier they consumed them selves, their goods
and their citee, leuyng neither mā nor goods for a spoil
to the romaynes.

3831

132

Finnane the son of Josine, was made king of Scottes
a iust and vertuous prince, as they write, which gouer-
ned them. 30. yeres

The sect or religion of y priests Druides, in this time
was instituted in the isle of Man.

Simon, walkyng through the citees of Judea, wente
to Hiericho with his two sonnes Judas & Mathathias,
where by ptolome, his son in lawe, they were traiterous-
ly slayne.

Hitherto extendeth the booke of Machabeis.

Hircanus, called also Ioannes, son of Symon, &. lilt.
capitaine of the Iues, gouerned them. 26. yeres.

Antiochus, in the feast of tabernacles besieged Hiera-
salem, by gentlenes he subdued the Iewes, & graunted
them to lyue accordyng to theyr fathers lawes.

Not longe after that Carthage and Numantia were
thus destroyed, the Romans fel at dissencion. For Cra-
chus, protectour of the comminaltee, beyng displeased
with the nobilitie, because they noted hym to bee an au-
thour of the Numantine league made by Mancinus, to
wpon the fauoure of the people, decreed to diuide certein
landes among them. For whiche cause the Senat was
incensed to anger, and the people to pride. Wherevpon
a day of session was appointed, wherat the comons be-
yng also gathered, by the Senat they were driuen away
and

Before
britayn
knowe

82

		The yere of the world.	The yere of the Christe.
fore itayn novven 81 80	and Gracchus with. 200. slayne. Attalus, kyng of Asia, by his testament bequethed his royalme to the people of Rome.	3832	121
	E Lud, kyng of Britaine, reigned. v. yeres. Aristonicus, the son of Attalus, invaded Asia, and flue Licinius Crassus, with all his army.	3833	130
9	Phicomedes of Bithinia, Mithridates of Pontus, Ari- arates of Cappadocie, Ptolemaeus of Paphlagonie kin- ges, aided the Romaynes agaynst Aristonicus. Mar. Perpenna consull sent agaynst Aristonicus, over- came and tooke hym.	3834	129
	Metellus made a lawe in Rome, that all men shulde be forced to be married.		
78	Scipio Africanus the yonger, who destroyed Carthage and Numantia, beyng accused of his enemies, made an swere therof, and in the mornynge after was founde dead in his bed strangled, as som affirmed by his wyfe Sem- pronius, who was of the house of Gracchus.	3835	128
7	Hircanus did fyrst among the Jewes nourishe strangers Antiochus encounterng with Arsaces kyng of Parthia in batayle, was slayne.	3836	127
6	Demetrius the. xvi. kyng of Syria, brother unto Anti- ochus, reigned. iiii. yeres.	3837	126
75 74	Dedancius kyng of Britayne reigned here. v. yeres. In Aphrike there swarmed suche huge multitudes of locusttes, that they deuoured not onely all the frutes, her- bes, and rotes, but also dyd gnawe even the bitter bar- kes, whiche after with a sodeyn wynde being dreyuen to- gyther on heapes, were long tossed in the ayre, fell at the laste into the African sea, and by violence of the water were cast here and there on land, wherupon ensued such infection of the ayre, and pestilente saueur, that it caused great murrayn of bestes and byrdes: the putrifaction of whose carcasses did also the more augment the foresayde plague: through whiche there died in Numedye. 80000 men, and about the partes of Carthage and Utica dyed also aboue. ii. hundred thousand.	3838 3839	125 124
	L. Opimius first of all other by warre subdued the Li- gurians on the further side of the mountaynes. Alexander Zebenna, the. xvi. kyng of Syria, vanquish- ed	3841	122

The second part e of

of the
of the
world.

Eliz were
before
Eliz.

Heb Demetrius, and reigned.ii.yeres.

The Romaines repayed agayne Carthage, and flozed
it with new inhabitants.

Before
Britayn
knewe

Seleucus, brother to Demetrius, was put to death because he, without the consent of his mother, took upon him the crowne.

3843

120

Deionus reigned in Britaine .ii.yeres.

70

Antiochus Gryphus the. 18. king of Syria reigned. & peres, betwene hym and Antiochus Cyzicenus was continuall warre for the royaume of Syria.

C. Gracchus, and Ful. Flaccus, for stirring a new sedition in the citie, were slayn, with diuers of their faction.

M. Fabius the consull went forth agaynst Bituitus, a prince of the Galles, who with .150000. warriours invaded the dominions of the Romaines, and seinge the small noumbze of theym, layed in derision: that the Romaines were not meat inoughe for his dogges, but at the fyrste conflict he turued his backe, and losse in that iourney all his men: who by the swozde, and in the water of Rhodanus perished.

The hill Aetna burned more than it was wont, in so
much that it fired the towne Catina: to the reparacyon
wherof the Romaines forgaue them. x. yeres tribute.

3845

118

Garginius reigned. 3 yeres in Britayne,

68

3846

117

M. **M**artius the consull, inuaded the Galles, that dwell
vnder the mountaynes, who perceiuing they in selves not
able to matche with the Romaines, firste slue theyr wy-
fes and chyldren, and after burned them selves that none
of them should be vnder the Romaines subieciton.

Ascipia, king of Numidia dyed, who lefte Adharball
and Hyempsall his sons to succede, and Jugurth, whome
he had adopted.

3848

315

Crianus was king of Britaine. ii. peres.

65

3849

114

M Ptolomies called also Philcon and Soter the 64.
th. king of Egypt reigned. xvii. yeres, he was by
his mother Cleopatra expelled out of his realme, and af-
ter retourned agayne.

3350

133

B Cleopatra, drinkeinge the poyson: whiche she prepared for Antiochus Gryphus finished hir life.

Cato

fore
itayn
nowen

Cato in Thracia foughte vnfortunatlye agaynst the
Scordiscians.

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of the
Christe.

A muster in Rome, in whiche there was found 394336
heades of citsens.

The Cimbrians, a people, whiche inhabited that part
that nowe is called Denmarke, came with the Germans
to passe Italy and Fraunce, beyng in numbze abouts
300000. Against whom Pappius Carbo was sent, who
by them was soone overthrowen and slayne.

3851

117

The two betherne of Metellus in one daye triumphed
the one from Thracia, the other from Sardinia.

C Apenus reigned king of Britayn. iii. yeres.

3852

118

Jugurth, nere unto Circha, did putte Adherball
vnto flight, slue him, and toke Circha by dedicion.
Aulus Dulus vanquished and subdued the Scordiscians,
a nacion ryfen of the Galles.

Antiochus Cyrenus the. xii. kyng of Syria, reigned
xliii. yeres in batayle overcame his brother Gryphus,
and droue him out of his royaume.

3853

119

The warres of Jugurth began, whiche Salust berate
eloquently hath set forth. With cattall, money and gif-
tes he corrupted the consull, and many of the Romaines,
for whiche, whan he departed frome Rome, he saide: O
salable citee, whiche soone wolde be lost, if thou mightest
fynde a chapman.

Aulus, the brother of Albinus the consull, made peace
with Jugurth to the great dishonour of the Romaines.

3854

120

O Minus ruled Britaine. ii. yeres.

3855

121

Hircanus utterly subuerted Samaria.
Syllanus fought vnluckly with the Cimbrians.
Metellus overcame Jugurth, and toke many citices
and towne in Iudidia.

S Alius reigned in Britaine. ii. yeres.

3857

122

Hircanus died, after whom his sonne Aristobulus
succeeded: who not content with the dignitee of his fa-
ther, toke vpon him a crowne, and was the tyrryde kyng
of the Jewes, after the captiuitee of Babylon. He inco-
nient imprisoned his mother and betherne, & slue An-
tiochus his brother, his mother with hunger perished in
prison. After this, the tyrran, his bowels beyng tozned in

U u

bye

The second parte of

The yere of the world.	The yere before Christ.	his body, and vomittinge bloude out of his mouth, died, before whan he had reigned but one yere. britayn knowe
3858	105	L. Cassius with his army in Sauoy was ouerthrowen and slaine by the Tigurines. Marius vanquished Jugurth and Bochas king of Mauritanie. Bochas deliuered Jugurth prisoner vnto the Romans. Janneus, called also Alexander, brother vnto Aristobulus, reigned. 27. yeres: verie cruelly he put to deathe his own brother, and slue of his people in the space of xvj. yeres. 5000. and destroyed many of his townes. Finally by ouermuch ease he fell in to a quartane fener, of whiche he dyed: leauing after him two sonnes. The warres continued against the Cimbrians, Germanes, Tigurines, and Ambzones. Aurelius Scaurus was taken by the Cimbrians, and put to death by Belus their kyng.
3859	104	B ledgabredus was. 20. yeres kyng of Britaine. He delighted muche in musike, and gaue him selfe to the studye therof. Marius triumphed, hauinge Jugurth with his children led before his chariot. Serullius Cepio, and C. Manlius, with. 80000. Romans were destroyed by the Cimbrians who were so cruell, that they hanged vp all suche as were taken, and drowned the cattall in Rhodanus, the golde, silver, apparel, and armour beyng broken in peces, they hurled awaye. So that neither the vanquishers had any pray, nor the vanquished any mercy.
3860	103	Marius was chosen capitaine against the Cimbrians, for whiche he continued in the consulshipp.
3861	102	Durthus, kinge of Scottes, reigned. 9. yeres. A tyrannous and unfaithful prince, through whiche dealing his people rebelled and slue him.
3862	101	Marius, in two battailes at the water Sertie, vanquished the Teutones and Ambzones, sleying aboue. 200000. of them, whose wyues with noo lesse valiantnesse than the men, defended them selves, and that with so greates fury, that they did caste their children in the faces of the Romans: and after beyng taken because they might not be in

fore
itayne
orven

bee in the temples of Venus and Ceres, they hanged
themselves.

The residue of Cimbrians, with the Teutones, pas-
sed the Alpes, and wasted Italye: against whom Marius
and Catulus fought againe, and subdued theym. In re-
compence of Marius noblenesse, he was the fyrte tyme
made Consul.

Metellus was sent in exile to Rhodes. Marius behea-
ded diuers of the nobilitie in Rome.

Metellus, by the consente of all the people was reuo-
ked from exile.

Ptolomeus, called also Alexander, the .ix. kyng of E-
gypt, reygned .x. yeres, his brother Philcon beyng expel-
led out of his roialme.

Philippus, the laste kyng of Syria, reygned .ii. yeres.
After his raygne the kingdome of the Syrians felle into
the handes of the Romaines.

A Rchemalus was kinge of Britaine two yeres.

Cwyn the first, Durstus brother sonne, was cho-
sen kyng of Scottes, he buylded the castel of Don-

nasage, and in a battayle made on the parte of the Pict-
thes againste the Britons, he was put to flighte, he was
the firste that caused his subiectes to bee sworne, and ru-
led theim .xix. yeres.

E Adolus raygned kyng of Britayne foure yeres.

In this time diuers prodigies were seen, as globes
of fyre burstinge out of the ayre with great noyse.

Among the Aretines also at a feast, bloude distilled oute
of breade, as oute of a wounde. It hayled continuallye
stones seuen dayes. In the partes of Samnia, oute of a
great rift of the erth, issued flammes of fyre, whiche se-
med to touche the heauens. Than also al kyndes of tame
beastes left their stables and pastures, and with impite-
ous roying and cryng fled vnto the woddes and moun-
taynes: yea and dogges, whiche can not liue without the
company of man, wandred about houlpyng, after the ma-
ner of wolues. Not longe after these wonderfull tokens
thus seene, folowed the ciuile warres betwene Marius
and Sylla: in whiche perished. 15000. citisens. 2600. of
knightes. 90. senatours, and. 15. consules.

U iii

Dustus

The yere
of the
worlde
3863
The yere
before
Christe
100

92

98

97

96

94

93

92

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christe.		before britayne knowen
3872	91	M arius raised the people of Italy against the Romanes, promysynge them the citie: but he was slaine in the meane time.	41
3873	90	The sociall warres of Italy began, in whiche the Picentes, Vestines, Marsians, Pelignians, Marrucines, Samnites & Lucanes, who many yeres had bene vnder the Romanes, fell from them.	40
		M. Seruilius was slaine in Asculo, and Seruilius, Calba beyng taken by the Lucanes, escaped by the helpe of a woman.	
3874	89	Pola was taken by the Samnites, Posthumius the Pretor, with Rutilius the cosul, wer both slain in bataill. Marcius ouerthruwe the Marsians. Jul. Cesar banquysed the Samnites, and Cecilius ouercam the Salutians.	39
3875	88	R odrianus was king of Brittain. ii. yeres. Piconiades and Ariobarzanes were restored to their roialmes of Bythynia and Cappadocia.	38
		Pompeius Strabo brought in subiection the Picentes, Vestines, and Marsians. Sylla ouercame the Samnites and subdued the Hirpines. Cato banquysed the Marsians, and in winnyng their campe was slayne.	
3876	87	Arethas after Antiochus was king of the lower Siria. Ptolomeus Sothor the tenth kyng of Egypte, reigned viii. yeres.	37
		Ariobarzanes, and Piconiades, were drisen out of their realmes by Mithridates kyng of Pontus.	
		The sociall warres of Italy, beyng scarcely pacified, Incontinent there began two warres more daungerous and cruell. For whan Sylla was elected capitayn of the warre againste Mithridates, who inuaded Asia and Achaia: Marius was greuously displeased, that Sylla, a yonge man, should be preferred before him. Wherefore he brought to passe, by the heaipes of the Tribunes, that Sylla shuld be called home again, and he to be chosen capitayne of that warre. As soone as Sylla had knowlege therof, he came with his army before the citie, and there slue the ambassadour of Marius, and incontinent after brake into the towne, where fyghtinge againste Marius and Sulpitius, he put Marius to flighte, and slue Sulpitius, and so appointyng Cn. Octavius, and Cozn. Cinna	na

Lanquettes Cronicle.

84

fore
itayne
ovven

na to be consuls, he departed to Asia.

Redargius reigned king of Britaine. iii. yerres.

Sylla vanquished Archelaus toke Athens and put Mithridates with his army to flight.

The year
of the
worlde
3877
The year
before
Christ
86

Mithridates invaded Asia, and by an open proclamation commanded, al the Romaines that were in Asia in one daye to be slayne, whiche were aboue the noumbze of. lxxx. M.

Cinna beinge expelled out of the citee by Metellus, toynded him selfe with Marius, they entred the citee, slue Metellus and many other, outlawed diuers of the citizens, and destroyed the house of Sylla, whose frendes that remained, fled into Crece to him.

Marius, being the seventh time made consull, dyed in the first moneth of his consullship, whose sonne called al. so Marius continued the ciuil warres.

Marre was prepared against Sylla, he made a league with Mithridates, and committed all his affayres there to Lucullus.

S Amulius reigned in Britayne. ii. yerres.

Sylla by the senate was called home, and Cinna was slayne of his owne army.

At this place Suetonius began his hystory of the Cesars.

Sylla entered Italy, ouercame Porbanus. Scipio yel. ded him selfe, and Pompeius tooke part of Sylla.

P Enisellus was made king of Britaine, who gouerned it. iii. yerres.

Sylla fought many bataills against Marius and at the last slue him.

Pompeius, when he had slayn Carbo, recovered Sicily, subdued Aphrike, and destroyed Domitius and Hiarbas king of Mauritanie, he triumphed beyng but of the age of. 24. yerres.

The Gothes with theyr kinge Sithlacus, wasted the landes of the Germanes.

Sylla was made continuall dictatour, who as soone as he entered the citee, contrary to his promise caused. 3000. men to be slayne, he proscribed or put out of hys protection many citizens, and exercised great tyranny: as when M. Catulus sayde. With whom shal we lyue, if in warre we

85

84

83

82

81

80

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christe.	we kyl the armed, and in peace the vnarmed.	before britayne knowen
3834	79	Ptolomeus Dionisius, the .xi. king of Egypte reyg- ned. 30. yeres	29
3835	78	Pyrrhus ruled Britaine. ii. yeres. P Alexandria, called also Salina, wedowe of Alex- ander Janneus, gouerned the Jewes .9. yeres. She had by her husbände two sonnes, Hircanus the eldeste, whom she made high priest, and Aristobulus, who after hir death contended for the dominion of the Jewes. The Pharisees, vnder thys Alexandria, gouerned the commune weale of the Jewes. Sylla gaue vp and forsoke all offyces, and lyued a pry- uat life, he wrote his commentaries, and dedycated them to Lucullus.	28
3836	77	Sertorius, a noble and valyant man of Rome, beyng of the faction of Marius, fledde from Sylla into Spayne where he was receiued of the Lusitaines, and made their captain, he made greuous warre agaynst the Romans. Sylla died, and was buried in the fyeeld of Mars. Lepidus the consul, woulde haue moued a newe sedy- tion, but Catalus his felowe prohibited him.	27
3837	76	Aporus was kinge in Britaine. ii. yeres. C Serullius subdued Cilicia, and brought the Tana- res in subiection. Metellus was sent into Spayne, agaynst Sertorius. where fortune was variable betwene theym. Perpenna toynded him selfe with Sertorius.	26
3838	75	Pompeius was sent into Spayne to ayde Metellus a- gainst Sertorius, where fortune was contrary to him.	25
3839	74	Inellus, the son of Caporus, a iuste and vertuous prince, gouerned this roialme of Britayn. 4. yeres. G illus, bastarde son of Ewin, after the death of his father toke vpon him the goneruance of Scotlande: but he continued not longe, for thzough his falshode and cruelteie he was driuen out of his roialme, and at the last when he had not reigned fully thye yeres, he was slaine in Irelande. C. Scribonius overcame the Dardaniols, and entered as farre as the riuer Danubie.	24

fore ritaya hovven 23	Ptolemydes, king of Bithynia, bequethed his royalme vnto the Romains, whiche Mithridates invaded, and ouercame Cotra the Romane captaine Chalcedonia. Lucullus ouercame and put to flyght Mithridates, both on lande and sea.	The year of the worlde. 3890	The year of the worlde. 73
22	Tigranes, king of Armenia, toke Ptolomais in egipte. Mithridates entred in league with Sertorius.	3891	72
	Certain sword players, which taught in Capua, wēt from theyr schole, and gathered a great numbze of companions, who with murder, rauishmētes, rapines, and bourninges filled all Italy.		
21	Ewin, the .ii. Nephew to kynge Finneane, was chosen kynge of Scottes: he reigned .17. yerres, & than resigned his regall power vnto Edeir the .3. Nephew of Durilus.	3892	71
	The warres of Macedone began, in which M. Lucullus triumphed.		
	Lentulus and Cellius consules were sent against the sword players and fugitiues, of whom they were ouerthrowen. Wherefore that warre was committed to the charge of Crassus, who quickly batinquished them.		
	Sertorius was traitrouslly slayn i Spain by Perpenna.		
	H eliuss the sonne of Danellus, reigned not ful one yere kynge of Britaine. Of this pzince the Isle of Elp toke the name.	3893	70
	Crassus batinquished the sword players. Pompeius ouerthrewe Perpenna, and broughte the Spaniards in subiection.		
	L udo, the sonne of Hely, succeded his father, and reigned .xi. yerres in Britain. As sone as he was made kynge, he refourmed the state of his cōmon weale, for he amēded his lawes, and toke away all vsages that were nought. Moreouer he repaired the citie of Londō, the called Troynouant, with faire buildinges and walles, and buylded on the west parte therof, a strong gate whiche vnto this tyme reteyneth the name of him, and is called Ludgate. Fynally he dyed, leauyng after hym two sonnes. Androgeus, and Theomantius, who being not of age to gouerne, their vncle Cassiuelane obtained the crowne. Our chzonickers wryte, that Londō toke the name of this Lud.	3894	99

The second part e of

The yere of the weyld.	The yere before Christ.		
		Hircanus the .8. king of the Jewes reigned one yere, before betwene him and his brother Aristobulus began civyle warres.	before britay knowe
3395	68	P. Lucullus subdued Macedony, & L. Lucullus Armeny. Aristobulus the .9. king of Jewes, reigned .6. yeres. He overcame his brother Hircanus at Hierico, where an a- grement was made, that Aristobulus shoulde reigne as kinge, and the other to leade a private life. Lucullus banquished Tigranes, and put him to flight Lachares kinge of Bosphorus, one of the sonnes of Mi- thridates, was receyved in amitie with Lucullus.	18
3896	67	Cn. Pompeius in .40. dayes scoured the Mediterrane Leas from Pyrates. The warres of Candy began, whiche Iland Metellus in thre yeres subdued.	17
3897	66	Libya, by the bequest of Appie kinge therof, came to the handes of the Romaines.	
3898	65	Cn. Pompeius was assigned general capitayn against Mithridates.	16
3900	63	Hircanus by the counsaile of Antipater fled unto Are- tha king of Araby and then denounced warre agaynst Aristobulus.	15
3901	62	Pompeius, by his capitaine Afranius, overthwe the Arabians. Hircanus was again king of the Jewes, and reigned xiii. yeres.	13 12
		Pompeius banquished Aristobulus, toke Hierusalem spoiled the temple, entred into the holy sanctuary, made the Jewes tributarie, and gave the office of highe priest unto Hircanus.	
		Scaurus, presidente of the lower Syria, made peace with Aretha king of Arabia.	
		Pompeius receiued Tigranes king of Armeny vnder his subiection, and in battayle overcame the Iberians and Albanes.	
		Pharnaces, the son of Mithridates made warre upon his father, and besieged him in a castel, who being desti- tute of all helpe, noz finding any mercy in his son, firste paysoned his wife, concubines and daughters, and then him selfe. Thus ended Mithridates his life, a prince of great	

great wisedome and meruaylous industrie, whiche perfectly could speake. xxi. languages, he lyued. 72. yeares, reigned. xl. and kept war. xxx. yerres continually against the Romanes, hauing alwaies in his company philosophers, and cunning men.

¶ Marcus Tullius Cicero, was consul of Rome, with C. Antonius, whose diuine eloquence, abundant learning Harpenesse of witte: dexteritee in actes, and most ardor loue toward the common weale of his countrey can not be sufficiently expressed by no mortall mannes tunge or penne. His auncestours were named Cicerones because that Tullius Appius a noble King of Volscis, and one of that progenie, had on his nose a marke like a chich which che is a kinde of pulse called Cicer. He so profyted in the eloquence of Greke and Latine, that not only his companions were in a meruellous admiration of him but also Appolonijs, the most excellent orator at that tyme, in hearing him, was greatly abashed, and keepinge silence a long space, sayde at the laste: Truly, Cicero I prayse the, and meruaile at the, but I lamente greatlye the fortune of Grece, when I consider, that not onely noblenes in dedes of armes and marciall affaires, is taken frome vs by the valyante and puillance of y. Romans, but also that the great prayse and gloze of learninge, whiche was only left vnto vs is now by the translated to Rome. Whiche saying was founden afterwarde very true, for loke what subtilitee is in Logike, what commoditee and secrete knowlage in philosophye morall and naturall: he knew and declared the same in latine in most perfecte eloquence. And (whiche is to be wondred) at notwithstanding, that he being a verie ponge man, came to practise in Rome, and had studied abundantly the ciuile lawes, and was meruailously occupied in greate and weighty causes, and after that he was senator, was continually (as it semed) most busye about the weale publike, yet he that doeth reade his workes (althoughe we haue not the thyrd parte of them, whiche he wzate) shall thynke, that he neuer did any other thing but reade great auctours, and wzate booke. And yet did he exploit by his wisedome and diligence many great enterprises, for the commodi-

The second part e of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
before
Christ.

fee and sauegarde of his countrey, as well in warre as before
in peace. For the whiche the Senate and people gaue to britayn
him firste before anye other, the name of Father of his knowe
countrey.

Catiline enterprised his conspiracy, whiche by the
great wisebome and diligence of Cicero was suppressed
and Catiline slayne in battayle by Antonius, who list to
reade the history at length, let him resorte to a booke in-
tituled the conspiracy of Catiline, translated into english
by Thomas Paynell, where it is abundantlye and ela-
quently set forth.

3902

61

Pompeie, after he had subdued Armenta, Cappadocia
Paphlagonia, Media, Chelcis, Iberia, Albania, Syria,
Cilicia, Mesopotamia, Judea, and Arabia, triumphed,
when he hadde twice before triumphed for winninge of
Spayne and Affrike. At this time he brought into the
common treasure of golde and syluer, in money & plate
xx. thousande talentes, whiche (if they were comunon ta-
lentes) amounted to xx. hundred thousande poundes, yf
they were the great talentes. 27. hundred, and 26. thou-
sand. 641. poundes. 13. s. 4. d. besides that was geuen to
the souldiours whiche had serued in his warres, where-
of may be gathered, the wonderfull riches of y^e Romains.

3905

58

CAssinellan, the sonne of Heli, as our bulgar histo-
graphers write, after the death of his brother Lud
was made gouernour of Britayn: which he ruled
xix. yeres. In the 8. yere of his reigne Julius Cesar, who
warred long time in Fraunce, made the first biage of a
ny straunger into this realme, & after subdued it: where
vnto this time it remayned unknowne to the Romains.
France was appointed to Cesar for his prouince: whi-
ther he was sent with .x. legions: there to remaine for .v.
yeres, he in nine yeres reduced into the fourme of a pro-
uince all that parte, which is included within the moun-
taines Pyrenes, Alpes, and Cedenna, and the ryuers of
Rine and Rhoue, and the ocean sea, he warred also vpo
the Germaines on the other side of Rine, and overcame
the Britaines. In al his warres fortune was but thise
contrary to him, for in Britaine by force of the tēpest his
naue

ore taine pyen 7	naup was destroyed, in France a legion was banquished at Gergonia, and in the costes of Germany his ambassa dours were slayne.	The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christe
	Ptolomeus, king of Egypt driven out of his realme, came to Rome.	3906	57
	Cato being compelled, tooke Cipers for his prouince and subdued it.		
	Clodius protectour of the commynaltie, appoynted a daye to Cicero to be exyled.		
	Alexander the son of Aristobulus, escaped from the Ro maines, and invaded Iury: but by Gabinus he was ban quished and taken.	3907	56
	Cicero in the .xvi. moneth of his exyle, by the consent of all the people was called home with great honour.		
	Gabinus, by the perswasion of Antonius, restored Ptolome to his realme.	3908	55
	Edeir, after the death of Ewin, tooke on him the go uernance of Scotlande, and ruled it .38. yeres. In the time of his reigne Britaine was subdued to the Romai nes, and Scotlande also troubled with sundry seditions.	3909	54
	M. Crassus, in his voyage toward Parthia, entred Bi erusalem, and spoyleth the temple of al the treasure, whi che Pompeius left untouched. And then passinge the ry uer Euphrates, fighting with the Parthians, was slaine with al his army.		
	A fyre chaunced in Rome, by whiche .14. stretes were bourned.	3910	53
	Clodius was slayne by Milo, who moued a sedicion in Rome.	3911	52
	The peface of Thomas Lanquet to the second parte of the histories of England.		

I have hitherto briefli runne ouer the liues
of .72. kinges, which reigned here in Bri
taine from the arriual of Brute vnto the
comming of Cesar: the history wherof (as
I said before) is very vncertaine & obscure.
Yet neuerthelesse I haue not barped from
the vulgar opinion therof, but haue brought the same in
to a moze certaine order, conferring them with the other
histories

F.iii.

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
world

The yere
before
Christe.

hystories and gesses of the world, wherby they haue a bet-
ter apparance of truth. But now, that I am come to this
time, in which the Britons beganne to be knownen to the
Romaines, and other nations of the world, hauing also
the helpe of credible hystoriens, whiche before I lacked,
I shall the more veritably and in better order set forth the
our hystories. And for the better declaracion of this chro-
nicle, you shall vnderstande, that the numbres set in the
inner side of the page, signifie the yeres of the reignes of
the kinges of Brittain, wherby may be perceiued in what
yere of the reigne of a kinge, anye notable thinge in the
world was done. As for the hystorie of Cesar I haue ga-
thered it out of his comentaries, and out of the worship-
ful Beda whome I thinke more credible than our newe
hystoriens.

Anni-
rum
brit-
tannie.

3911

52

Vhen C. Iulius Cesar had warred seven yeres in
Fraunce and Germany, conuincing vnto that part
where Calais and Bolayne now stande, he deter-
mined to make warre into Britaine: whiche vntill that
time remayned vnfrequented and vnknownen of the Ro-
maines. His quarell was, because that in the warres of
France, he perceiued the Frenchmen to haue much suc-
cour and ayde from thence. Wherefore preparinge. lxxx.
shippes he sayled into Brittain. Where at the first being
wounded with an harde and sharpe batayle, and after with
sodein tempest his nauy almost destroyed, he returned
again into Fraunce, there to winter his men. The next
springe, his nauy beinge newe rigged and encreased, he
passed the seas agayne with a greater army: but whiles
he went towarde his enemies on lande, his shippes ly-
ing at anchor, were againe by tempest almost lost, for ey-
ther they were driuen on the sides, where they stuck fast
or els being driuen one vpon another were destroyed so
that xl. perished, the other with much labour were sa-
ued. Upon lande also his horsemen at the first encounter
were vanquished, and Labienus the tribune slayne. At
the seconde conflict, not without great daunger of his
men, he put the britons to flight, and pursued them to
the river Tamis: on the further side wherof Cassiuella
with a great multitude of people was keepinge the ban-
kers.

7

3912

51

8

ni res kes, but they not hable to resiste the violence and force of The pere The pere
a bi; the Komatus, hid them selues in woodes, & with sodeine of the before
ie. eruptions oftentimes invaded them. But in the meane worlde 2 hills
time they strongest citee Troynouat, submitted it self to
Cesar, deliuering vnto him hostages: whiche exāple also
the other cities folowed. Whereby Cassiuelan after ma-
ny losses, was constrained to giue pledges, and to agre
that Britaine should be tributary to the people of Rome
Then Cesar, like a conquerour with great nōumbze of
prisoners, sayled into Fraunce. Thus ended the warres
which he made in Britain, whereby he rather opened o
waye for his successors to come to the same, thā that he
deliuered to them the dominion thereof. This conqueste
was made. 2255. yerres after the vniuersall floude. 1057.
after the arriual of Brute. 722. after the buyldinge of
Rome, in the second pere of the. 182. Olimpiade, the. 1116.
pere before the conquest made by Willā of Normandy.
and. 1595. yerres before this present pere of our lord. 1547
Cassius president of Siria, drove the Parthians from
thence.

Cleopatra, quene of Egipte, reigned. xxi. yerres. She
was the lasse of the house of Lagus, and by the Aleran. 3914
dines was chosen quene, albeit she had a younger bro-
ther whom Pompeius receiued into his tuition, and by
him was driuen out of hir royaume: yet Cesar restored
hir againe to hir realme, and bled her company family,
arly and after Cesars death. Antonius wedded her, who
warred against Augustus: of whom he was overthrowē
for sorowe wherof, she closed her selfe in a tombe being
on liue, and having two adders suckinge on her brestes,
so died. She was a woman excellinge in plesantnes
quickenes of witte, and sumptuous rōtte, in so muche
that at one banquet contending with Antonius in exceſse
of fare, she drank aperle resolved in vineger, which was
esteemed at. 100. Sesterium, which after Rudel amon-
teth to the value of 250000. crownes, of our money to fif-
ty thousand poundes.

The ciuile warres betwene Pompeius and Cesar be-
gan, in which. ccc. M. men perished. Cesar in his his at-
tence required the second time to be consul. Marcellus
the

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
before
Christe.

the consul withstode it, and the senate also decreed, that Cesar should not entre the city, without he dismissed his armye. For whiche cause Cesar being displeased, came fro Gauesia, passing ouer Rubicon, to Ariminum. In the meane while Pompeius, with the consules, fled to Dyrrachiu in Grece, and Cesar entred Rome, spoiled the tresour, and besieged Marsiles.

Aristobulus, being deliuered by Cesar, went into Iudea, where he was poysoned, and Alexander his son put to death by Scipio.

1916

47

Cesar in Corfinio, by submission receyued the armye of Domitius, and suffered him to go frelye awaye. In Spaine he banquished Petreus & Afranius he returned to Marsiles, and tooke the towne. From thence he went to Dyrrachium, where he was ouercome and put to flight by Pompeius, and 2400. of his men slayne.

And Thessaly they met in the felde Pharsalia, wher a cruell and doubtful bataile was fought: but at lengthe Pompei was put to flighte, and losse. 15000. of his souldours.

1917

46

Pompeius, fleeing to Alexandria in Egypt was slaine by the cutours of the yonge Ptolome, and his head sent vnto Cesar. Who seing it, wept. Thus ended the noble Pompei his life, who for his sundry and incomparable victozies, was surnamed the great, he was indued with many noble and princely vertues both of body & minde he had so good a grace in his visage, that from his child hode he moued the people of Rome most entierly to fauoure him, and also for his singular beneuolence, cōtinnence of liuing, martial experience, pleasantnes of speache, fidelitee of maners, and easines in speaking to, was meruailously esteemed, he neuer required any thig without thankes, or granted any thing but with a glad countinaunce. In his visage appered alway both nobilitie and gentilnes, so that when he was in his flourishing youthe, there shined in him maners both princely and reuerent. When he was sent into Sicily by Sulla percepuing that the souldours, which were vnder his guiding, scatered and robbed the countreys as he went he commanded euery one of theyr swordes to be signed with

before
britayn
know

12

13

with the seale of his ringe, that they shoulde do no wrong to any man by the waye, wherin he declared him selfe to be not onely a valyaunt, but also a iust and righteous capitaine.

The yere
before
Christ.

Cesar entered Alexandria, and beinge prouoked to battail, he banquished theym, and sette on fyre the nauye of the Egyptians, the flame whereof innaded the lybrarye of Philadelphus, wherein were burned. 40000. bookes. The kinge rebellinge agayne, was slayne with all his armye, and Cleopatra his sister, restored to the royalme.

Then went he into Pontus against Pharnaces, the son of Mithridates, whom at the first encountre he ouerthwe

C. Julius Cesar, of whom the Romaine princes were called Cesares, was the first among the Romaines that toke on him the name of emperour, & reigned not fullpe three yeres, he brought the monarchy of the world vnder the Romaines. In this yere he warred against the Pompeians in Aphrike, and banquished theym at Taplus, where he toke theyr campe, and. 60. elephantes.

45

Cato for greefe and sorowe of herte that he had, that his countrey should by Cesar be brought in seruage and thraldome, slue him selfe in Utica. Juba, the kinge of Mauritane: hired one to ryd him of his life. Petreus and Scipio kylled them selves. And Cesar commaunded the Nephews of the greatte Pompei, and his daughter Pompeia, to be put to death.

Cesar entred Rome with four triumpes, and was created the fourth time consull, and continuall dictatour, taking on him to be monarche of the whole impire, whiche thinges brought to passe, he prepared to make warre against the sonnes of Pompei, in Spayne, where fortune was diuers betwene them. And in the last battayle whiche was at Munda, a towne in Spayne, they foughte so close and harde together, and suche slaughter was made that the old and assured souldiours of Cesar were not ashamed to gene backe, wherby Cesar despairinge to wyne that fielde, would haue killed him selfe, lest after the renoume of so many conquestes and victories, he shuld haue fallen in the power of those yonge men, whose father he had banquished. But finally, succouring his men, the ar

44

The seconde parte of

The pere
of the
worlde

The pere
before
Christ.

*Philip
city*

mye of the Pompeis was put to flight, the one of the byr Annir
therne beinge slayne, the other fleing away. After whiche gum b
battayle, Cesar finished those ciuile warres, whiche dur tanni.
ring the space of .v. yerres, troubled the whole worlde.

Antipater by Cesar was constituted procuratour of Judea

Cesar returned to Rome, he reformed the state of the
common weale, amended the calender, reducinge the or
der of the pere, to the course of the sonne, founde out the
cause of the leape pere, and in his honour and memoꝛye,
the people attributed to him the moneth Quintilis, whic
che after his name was called Iulius. But he contynued
not passing .v. monethes in rest, for waringe insolent a
gainste the senatours, and takinge theyꝝ lybertee frome
them, there conspired against him to the numbꝛe of .260.
senatours and gentilmē, among whom Brutus and Cal
sius were chiefe, Whiche in the Ides of Marche, when
Cesar came into the senate house, with .xxiii. woundes, he
was slain among the senatours. Thus Cesar lost al that
whiche wyth the bloude of .lxx. M. citezens, and .1192000.
his ennemtes, he had gotten. And as he had filled all the
worlde with his ciuile bloud: likewise nowe he filled the se
nate with his owne bloud. After this sorte Cesar finished
his life, a man in featnes of warre excellinge al other, he
wrote no man swifter, and red no man faster, at one time
he could endite foure letters at ones, he was furthermore
of suche clemency, that those whome he had subdued by
warre, with his great gentilnesse, wonne them to be hyꝝ
veray frendes.

About this time there was sene in the element, thre
sonnes in one cercle. And in the suburbes of Rome an ore
spake vnto his plowman: that in dayne he dꝛoue him, for
thozily not al onely corne, but also men shuld fayle.

Dolobella was substituted in the place of Cesar, his
souldiours at Smyrna killed Trebonius, one of the mur
derers of Cesar.

Antipater redefined the walles of Iherusalem, he ordey
ned Herode president of Galilee.

Theomantius, the sonne of Lud, and newe to Cal
siuelan, succeeded in the roialme of Brittain, and rei
gned quietly .xxiii. yerres.

C. Ce.

ni res C. Cesar Octavianus Augustus, the second emperor of Rome, reigned in all. lvi. yeres, that is to saye, twelue with Antonius and Lepidus, and. xliii. alone. As soone as he herde of the death of his vnckle Julius, he hasted from Appolonia to Rome to possesse his inheritance, and to reuenge the death of Cesar, here the ciuile wars were againe renewed, for the senate fauored the kylers of Cesar, but Antonius wold haue suppressed them with ciuill warre, for whiche cause he was iudged by the senate to bee an ennemye to Rome, and the consules, Vircius and Pansa, with Octavianus, were sente agaynst him: by whom he was vanquished, but the consules were slayne. Than Antonius fled vnto Lepidus, maister of the horse men, by whose meanes he was recõciled to Octavianus, and they thre toyntly toke vpon them the gouernaunce of the publike weale.

Malichus poisoned Antipater, president of Judea.

A greate numbze of the nobilitie in Rome were outlawed by these thre men among whom also M. Cicero, the eloquent oratour was one, who, for soo muche as he had driuen Antonius oute of Rome, and by his sharpe oracyons caused him to be proclaimed enemye to the weale publike, made the faide Antony so much his foe, that in the treatie of peace betwene him and Octavius, he demanded Cicero, to do with him at his pleasure: whiche was graunted of the vnkinde Octavius, whome Cicero had brought vp, and caused to be made the chiefe gouernor of the Romaines. Wherefore Antonius sent one Herennius (whom Cicero had saued from death by his eloquẽce) to slea him, who pursued him as he fledde oute of the citee: whiche thing Cicero perceyuing, abode his comming, lying in a horse litter for weakenes, and prepared his throt to Herennius, who strake of his head, and his right hand and brought them to Antonie: who caused them to be sette ouer the place of ciuile iudgements in Rome.

Cesar and Antonius, committinge the charge of the cistle to Lepidus, went with their power against Brutus and Cassius: who had taken Laodicea, pursued Dolobella to death, bered the Tharsenses, toke and spoyled Rhodes, but in Phillippo, by Cesar and Antonius, they were

The yere
of the
world

The yere
before
Christ.

3922

41

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
before
Christ.

3923

40

vanquished, and slue theim selues. After whiche bataille Annire they deuided the empire betwene them, Cesar takyng for gum br his parte Spaine, Fraunce, and Italy, and Antonius all tanni. the orient.

Pachorus, king of Parthia, indicted warre against the Iues: Antigonus, by his ayd, was constituted king, and toke Phaselus and Hircanus. Phaselus sought his own death, with knockinge his head againste the stones, bys handes beyng not at libertee: and Hircanus, eares were cut of by Antigonus.

L. Antonius, brother to M. Antonius, moued a newe sedicion in Italy againste Cesar, but at Perusia he was vanquished, and by the entreatee of the senat, was reconciled to him.

Cleopatra popsoned hir brother, caused hir syster Aristonoes to be slain in the temple at Ephesus, and than went to Antonius in Cilicia, whom she folowed.

3924

39

Antigonus the .xi. kinge of Iewes, reigned .3. yeres, he was the last of the Iewes, that was king ouer them.

In this yere Herode, by the senate of Rome, was also appointed to be king of the Iewes.

3925

38

Mentidius vanquished the Parthians, and droue them out of Syria: he slue Mzodes the kings son the same day, that he before had slayne Crassus.

3926

37

Ser. Pompeius, the son of great Pompei, reised war in Sicily, Cesar and Antonius went againste him: but finally a peace was made betwene them.

3927

36

Herodes the .xii. king of Iewes, and firste of any stranger, reigned .37. yeres he besieged Hierusalem, and toke it by the helpe of Sosius presidente of Syria. Antigonus was taken and sent vnto Antonius, who put him to deth. Ananelus was constituted hygh pzieste by Herode, and streight depriued.

3928

35

Hircanus beyng deliuered out of prison, came to Hierusalem to Herode.

3929

34

Herode slue Aristobulus the high pzieste, and restored Ananelus againe to that office.

3930

33

Pompeius bzake the peace made with Cesar: he was drien out of Sicily, and fleyng towardes Asia, was slaine.

Hitherto extendeth the hystorie of Appianus of the civil warres

ireg
n Bri
n is

warres of Rome.

Antonius by reason toke Arrabanes king of Armeny, of the
whom he bounde in siluer chaines, to make him to con- world
fesse, where his treasure laye: whiche whan he had got, 3931
was therewith elated, and moued warre against Octavi-
anus, and put awaie his wife Octavia, the sister of Octa-
uius, and married Cleopatra, the quene of Aegypte.

Octavianus Cesar subdued the Iapides, Dalmatians,
and Hungarians.

About this time, on the further side of Tiber: in a com- 3932
mon tauerne, ther sprang forth a fontaine of oyle out of
the grounde, whiche for the space of a day ran abundant-
ly abroad,

The warres betwene Cesar and Antony began, in whi-
che Antony was overcome and put to flight. 3933

They mette again at Pharos vppon the sea, where be-
twene them was fought a cruell and doubtfull battaile, 3934
till Cleopatra, with xl. shippes fled, after whom folowed
Antony: wherby his men were discomfite, and he for so-
rowe, thruste him selfe through with a sword, and halfe
alyue was brought to the tombe, which Cleopatra made
for her selfe. Cleopatra, perceyuing that she was kept for
the triumphe of Cesar, escaped frome hir keepers to the
tombe, wher Antony laye, and there arayed in gorgeous
apparell, settinge to hir breastes two adders, dyed in
that maner. *ne gestured
mimic*

Cesar in the remembraunce of his victorie, builded the
citie Nicopolis at Accium.

An earthquake in Iury, wherby. xxx. M. people perished,
Herode toke parte with Cesar, and discomfited the
Arabikes.

Jelus, the son of Sabetes, was hygh priest of the Iues.
Here ended the kyngdome of the Egyptians, whiche
after this time, was gouerned by a presidente of the Ro-
manes.

Cesar returned from the orient, and entred Rome with 3935
three triumphes, and in token of peace, shut vp the temple
of Janus, whiche in. 200. yeres before was neuer shutte.
In his honour, by the consente of the senate and people,
the name of Augustus was geuen to him, & the moneth

P. iii.

Sept

The yere The yere
before
Christ.

32

31

30

29

82

The seconde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde
1536

The yere
before
Christ.
27

Sextilis, in the remembrance of his birth and victories
was called August.

Herode put to death his wyfe Mariamnes, and other
his nere frendes.

Corn. Gallus president of Egypt.

Cesar opened the temple of Janus, and made warre a-
gainst the Cantabrians and Asturians, two mischeuous
people of Spaine, whom he bairquithed. Thither came
vnto him the ambassadours of India and Scythia, desy-
ring the amitie of the Romaines.

1538

25

M. Crassus subdued the Thracians, and Corn. Gallus, 18
president of Egypte, kyled him selfe: in whose roine suc-
ceded Sempzonius.

1540

23

All Spayne by Cesar was subdued, and the temple of 20
Janus shut, but it was opened againe through the com-
mociions of the Germanes and other nations.

Herode deposed Iesu the hyghe p[ri]este, and constituted
Simon, whose daughter he married.

1541

22

In this time Grece by Tiberius & Drusus was subdued.
Drusus, the son in lawe of Augustus, broughte in sub-
jection the Germanes, with other people bo[rd]ring about
them. Tullus in affrike ouercom the Mosulanes, and Ce-
tulanes, and Piso subdued the Vindelicos.

Peace was made with the Parthians, who restored to
the Romaines their baners taken from Crassus and An-
tonius,

Cesar added to the dominyon of Herode, Samaria,
Gaza, and diuers other regions.

Virgil and Horace, most famous poetes, in thys tyme
flourished.

1543

22

Cesar sayled into Syria, he graunted to Herode the pro-
uince Iudamitides, and wrote hym amonge the no[m]-
bre of his frendes.

1544

19

Umbelinus, the sonne of Theomantius, reygned
king of Britayn. xxxv. yeres. Of him there is no no-
table thinge wyrtten, but that in his reygne oure
sauour Iesu Christe, the veray light of the worlde was
borne of the virgin Mary.

Herode pulled cleane downe the temple, builded by Zo-
robabell and Esra, after the captiuitie of Babylon, and
with

anni re-
gum bri-
tanni.

16

ni r e?
m Bri
ni:

with moſte ſumptuous buyldinge reedeſſed an other, ac-
cording to the figure of Salomons.

Elwin the thirde ſonne of Edeir, ſucceeded his father
in the roialme of Scotland, & reigned .7. yerres. A prince
giuen al to vice & lechery, ſoꝛ beinge not contente (as they
write) with a 100. concubines, with whome he myghte
fulſyll his luſte, but he made lawes, that it ſhuld be laulful
foꝛ his ſubiectes: to haue as many wiues as they myghte
kepe, that the wiues of the commons ſhould be commune
to the nobles, and that the loꝛde ſhould haue the mayden
head of al birgines dwellinge in his loꝛdeſhippe: whiche
laſt lawe endured untill the time of Malcolm Cammore
and from thens untill this time they pay a fine foꝛ the re-
demption of theyꝛ maydenhead. When he hadde thus
continued .7. yerres, in exerciſing his tyrannye and fylthy
luſt, he fell in hatred of his loꝛdes, and by theym was de-
poſed and ſlapne in priſon.

The moſt bleſſed and pure birgin ſainct Mary, mother
of our ſaluour Jeſu Chriſt, was boꝛne of the holpe ma-
trone ſainct Anna.

Herode finiſhed the temple, & the people with great ioy
did celebrate a feaſt

Herode gaue wiues vnto his ſonnes, ſoꝛ he maried A.
riſtobulus vnto Beronices, the daughter of his ſiſter Sa-
lome, and Alexander to Glafira, the daughter of Arche-
laus king of Cappadocia.

Metellane nephew to Edeir, was choſen king of Scot
tes a vertuous and quyet pꝛynce, who peaciblye reygned
.39. yerres.

M. Agrippa ſubdued Boſphorus, in whiche expedition
Herode was.

A domeſtical ſedicion beganne in the houſe of Herode.
foꝛ Salome his ſiſter accuſed Ariſtobulus and Alexander
of Parricide, ſoꝛ which cauſe theyꝛ father calke theym in
priſon.

About this time Herode presumed, to open the tombe
of Dauid, truſting to haue there ſome great treaſure: but
when he had founde a precious beſſell, and woulde haue
entered further, a fyre yſſued out of the darke. and deſtroy-
ed two of his men, wherby he was let from his pouꝛpoſe.

Warre

The yere
of the
world
3946
The yere
before
Chriſt.
17

15

12

11

10

9

The seconde parte of

The yere of the worlde	The yere before Christ.	Warre betwene Herode and the Arabians, in whiche Herode was victour. Herode caused his sones, Aristobulus and Alexander, to be hanged. There flourished at this time in Rome many learned men as Virgil, Horace, Ouide, Saluste, Lilius, Horfensi us, Antenorius, with many other. Cesar the thirde time closed the temple of Janus: uni- uersall peace was throughout the whole world, he stabli- shed his publike weale with good lawes. Cyreneus presidente of Siria, did first describe and num- bre the people of Judea.	Anni. re- gum bri- tanni. 13 16 18 19
3956	7		
3599	4		
3961	2		
3962	1		

The peface of. Tho. Lanquet to the thyrde
parte of his chronicle.

In my former booke I haue declared those thinges
(accozdinge to my power) which haue chaunced du-
ring the time that the lawes of nature and Moys-
es were in theyr force, taking my beginnynge frome the
creacion of the first man Adā. And continuynge the same
throughe the thicke mistes and darkenes of the olde wo-
rdes I am nowe at length come vnto the birth of the new
man, our saluour Iesus Christ, where I purpose with
Legales, ceremonies, shadowes and errours of the an-
cient tyme to finishe those partes, and nowe with the bryght
beames of that euerlasting son, whose risynge hath light-
ned all the worlde, to begin this my laste booke.

When Cesar Augustus by the wil of god had stably-
shed most sure peace throughe the worlde, our redemer Je-
su Christe veraye god and man, vpon whome peace way-
ted, was borne in the .xlii. yere of the reigne of Augustus
after the diuersall floude. 2305. yeres frome the byrthe of
Abraham. 2012. yeres. After the departure of the Is-
raelites out of Egipte, 1509. yeres. From the arriual
of Brutus in Englande. 1107. yeres. After the building of
the temple by Salomon. 1029. yeres: from the buyldinge
of Rome, 752. yeres. After the captiuitie of Babylon
614. yeres, and in the laste yere of the .194. Olympiade.
But here is to be noted, that the first yere of our Lorde
hath

and re: hathe but. 7. dayes, after some computacion, for he was
umbris bozne the. 25. of Decembre, and the firste of Januer solo,
anni. wing, began the second yere.

The yere of the worlde. The yere of Chy



ESVS of Nazareth kynge of Jewes, 3962

and onely heade of chrystyanes, with the father and the holy ghost, one eternal god, and almighty Lorde of all thynges begotten by his father god in euerlastingnesse, and in the fulnesse of tyme taking fleshe of the pure virgin mary, by the worke of the holy

ghost, and beinge veray god and man, accordeinge to the holy oracles of the prophetes, to redeme with his bloude the straying shepe and lost grose, was bozne in Bethlehe a citee of Iuda: where incontinent, by the glorificacion of the angelles, the agnicion of the sheperdes, the veneracion of the wise men, the prophesy of the holy Simeon, and the admiracion of the doctours, he was had in honoure. And then from the. 12. yere of his lyfe, in age, wysedome, and fauour, bothe wyth god and man, encreased: he was in the. 15. yere of Tiberius reigne baptised in Iordane by Iohn, to the example of his, and so executed all thinges, subduing his fleshe with fastinge, the dyuel with prayer, and the worlde with humilitie. At whiche tyme the werkes of Daniel beinge fulfilled, he taughte euery where mooste constantlye even to the crosse, partly with his mighty woordes, and partely with his effectuall woordes the kingedome of god, that is the true knowledge of god the father, and his exceeding charitee towarde mankynde, with the sure confidence in him: the son of god: declaring also the waye of helth, and the mutuall loue with the rewarde of the faithfull, & punishmentes of the unfaithfull. Then for the confirmation of his doctrine and faith, euery with a litle becke, he commaunded calmenesse to the elementes, helthe to all diseases, lyfe vnto the deade, obedience vnto the quicke, detection vnto thoughtes, abolition vnto synnes, and flight vnto the deuell. For all this, after all the passions and labours of mans miserie, whiche he suffered (sinne onely excepte) whereby he witnessed hym selfe

The thirde parte of

The yeres
of the
worlde.

The yeres
of Christ.

selte to be a veray man, and after the innumerable doctes Anni
mentes and benefictall deedes (passing mannes power) o gum
penly shewed vnto his unkinde people the Jewes, by whi tanni
che he declared him selfe to be true god, as it was befoze
written in the prophetes: he was by the elders of the Je
wes, and people (his disciple Judas Scarioth betrayinge
hi n) taken, accused, endited, scorned, scourged, crowned
with thornes, crucified betwene theeues, and even than
all thinges fulfilled, with the quakinge of the erthe, and
darkenesse of the sonne, he died. After whiche beyng bu
ried, he loused hell, and the thirde daye folowinge, lyke a
conquerour of sinne death, and hell, he rose againe, from
whiche time beinge .xl. daies conuersant with his, in the
xxxiii. yere of his lyfe, with glorious triumphe he ascen
ded to the heauens vnto his father, from whence he cam.
Where beinge the onely mediatour, intercessour, and ad
uocate of his, sittinge on the righte hande of god, his fa
ther, shall in the ende of the worlde, be iudge ouer all the
liuing and the deade, rendyng to euery man, accordyng
to his deservyng, to the faythefull certainlye life, but to
the vnfaithful euerlastyng death. Than good and euill
segregated, with the whole worlde purged and pacified,
our lord Iesu Christe, the onely and veray almighty em
perour of the worlde, as he hath from the beginninge, soo
dothe he now, and for euer shall reygne: to whom euerye
knee of celestiaall, terrestriall, and infernall creatures shall
bow, and euery tongue shall confesse, that Iesus Christe
is the lord, to the glorye of God the father: to whome bee
all glory worlde without ende. Amen.

3924

Eusebius Cesarensis began his ecclesiasticall histoye
at this place. Christ in the eight day of his natyuite was
circumcised, on the .xiii. worshipped of the wise men. The
seconde of February he was presented in the temple, and
the night folowing, Ioseph being warned by an angell,
fledde with Iesu and his mother into Egypte, from the
dangier of Herode: who couetyng to destroy Christ, com
manded al the children within Bethlem and the borders,
beinge vnder the age of two yeres, to be slayne, whiche
slaughter done, he woulde haue killed him selfe, but be
yng let by his seruaunt, he died within fye dayes, when
he had

20

he had resigned. 17. yerres.

Archelaus the. 13. kynge of Jewes, resigned. 18. yerres, and finally was banished into Fraunce. In the first yere of his reigne a sedicion was moued againste him, in whiche. 3000. were put to death.

An other sedicio began, firste by Judas Galileus, and after by Simon the seruant of Herode, who taking vpon him a crowne, was bairquished and slaine by Cratus. The last was raysed by Athonges a shepeherd: For why che there were hanged by Marus. 2000. men.

A greate famine invaded Rome, so that Augustus expelled all straungers out of the citee, and a great number of seruantes. The cause Drosus doeth ascribe, that Cesar praised his nephieu Caius, in dispisinge to woozshyp the god of heauen, whan he was thereto warned by the priestes at Hierusalē, at what time he passed into Syria.

Tiberius in. 3. yere subdued al Illyria, which lieth with Italy, Poicum, Thrace, Macedony, the ruder of Dardow, and the Adriaticall sea. This warre next vnto the warres of Carthage, was most greuous.

Quintilianus Marus, with thre legions, was slaine by the Germains, whose ouerthrow was as greuous to the Romans, as was the biage of the Cimbrians into Italy.

Archelaus toke the wyfe Glafira, his brother Aleranders wydowe, contrary to the lawe. And after throughe his insolency, he was by Augustus banished to Vienna in Fraunce.

Here ended the kynngdome of the Jewes, and Turpe after this tyme was redacted into the forme of a prouince, and ioyned to Syria.

Judas Canlonites, associatynge to him Sadduceus a Pharisei, and the chiefe of the sect of the Esscans, moued a sedicion for payng of tribute: wher vpon ensued much theste, slaughter, and burninge of the temple.

Tiberius, with an army passed the Rhyne, to warre vpon the Germanes.

Jesu Christ our lord, beyng but. xii. yerres of age, and thre monethes, was founde at the feaste of Easter, disputynge with the doctours in the temple: and was brought home by his parentes to Nazareth. what other thinge he

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Chryst

3964

3

3966

5

3969

8

3970

9

3972

11

3973

12

3974

13

The thirde part e of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ.

dyd vnto the .xxx. yere of his lyfe, the Euangelistes make
no mencion.

anni re
gum Bi
tanni

3975

14

Augustus & Tiberius, mustering the people of Rome,
founde .9370000. men.

3976

15

Germany beyng subdued, Tiberius triumphed ouer
the Allyrians.

3977

16

Augustus Cesar finished his lyfe at Nola, and was bu-
ried at Rome in the speld Martius, whose death the Senat
so lamented, that they saide: that they woulde eyther he
had not ben boyn, or els being boyn, that he had not died.
Tiberius priuily caused Agrippa to be slaine.

Claudius Tiberius Nero Cesar, the .iii. emperor of
Rome, son bothe by marriage and adoption to Augustus,
reigned .23. yeres, he was metely politike and fortunat in
warre, well learned, and endued with muche eloquence:
but with a verate mischeuous, cruel, couetous and disceit-
full wit, feygning to do that thing whiche he wolde not,
and not to do that, whiche he would. In sodeine answers
he was better, than in those whiche he studied for. At the
firste he feygned, that vnwillingly he toke vpon him the
greuous and troublous charge of the empyre. And wher-
as certain of his counsaill moned him to leaue exactions
of the people, he answered: that it was the office of a good
shepherde to shepe his shepe, and not to pyll theim. It is
written, that he put to deathe a smith, who had inuented
to make a glasse flexible, laiyng to his charge, that if he
shoulde lyue and teache other, that golde and siluer shoulde
nothings be esteemed. He suppressed the Getulians, and
craftily circumuented Marobodus the kinge of the Sue-
uians, he poisoned also Drusus and Germanicus the son-
nes of his brother Drusus.

The printer.

Hitherto the said yong man Thomas Lanquet conti-
nued this history called the Epitome of Cronicles, & was
than attached with a greuous sicknesse, whereof he dyed,
whan he was of age .xxiii. yeres: on whose soule god
haue mercy, and the same folowed and finished, by Tho-
mas Couper, who after instant request to him made, was
at length content, to take vpon him the paine, for he well
considered

considered, what labour and trauaill it was, accordinge to the first inuencion, to searche and reade ouer so many and diuers histories and cronicles, to accomplishe the saide purpose.

An epistle to the reader.

From the beginninge of the worlde, to thys tyme of the byrth of our sauour Christ, the studious younge man Thomas Lanquet, not without great labour and diligence, broughte hys Cronicle. Whose enterpryse, and the honest affection, that he therein declared towarde his countrey, I thinke worthe memorie. For if he might haue gon through as he bego, and wel brought forwarde the same: vndoubtedly it woulde greatly haue delighte d them that take pleasure to reade the notable and famous thinges done longe before our tyme. For he hath briefly set forth the gestes and actes of forayne and straunge countreis, and therewith inaigned the historye of this realme of Englande, after the opinion of most writers, euen from the firste arriuing of Brutus, in such wyse, that a diligent reader maye gather, the variable state and condicion of all countreis and nacions at all tymes. But death (whiche spareth no man, ne can bee eschewed) brake his course, and (as it were) trypped hym in the myddes of hys rase, that he coulde not attayne to the marke, wherat he ranne. Wherefore, lest they that desyre the profitable knowlege of histories, should be destituted of so great a commoditee: and lest the fruites of so diligent a labour shoulde lye hydde, and tourne to the pryte of no man: At the instance of certaine of my nyghest frendes, whose requestes (the matter so standing) I could not well denie: I haue taken vpon me to fynishe this cronicle, although in dede. I greatly dispaired, that I shoulde be able to accomplishe the same. But when I considered, firste, though it were an harde matter, yet might it be overcome with labour: than, howe profitable the exercise shoulde bee for me, to reade and peruse so many good auctours, as were necessary for the performaunce of the same: Thirdly, howe honeste a labour it was, so to employe

The thirde parte of

ploy the vacant tyme that I had from other necessary bus-
sineses. I shoke from me vnprofitable bashfulnesse, and
haue enterprised, not onely to finishe this worke, but al-
so (after the ouersight and correction of other men) haue
suffered the same to be published. Wherefore you (gentyll
reader) shall take well in worthe this my boldnesse, and
perswade youre selfe (as the trouthe is) that I was me-
ued to this exercise, rather of good wille, to p'ospyte my
natural countrey, and to do pleasure to other men, than
for any fauie or aduancemet, that I hoped might come
to me therby. And if I se, ye take it well in gree, vndough-
tedly you shal encourage me hereafter, to goo in hande,
with some exercise, that shal perchaunce tourne to moze
p'ospyte, and pleasure, of them whiche be desirous of ho-
nest knowlege. Vale.



After the deathe of Octavius
Augustus, the second Cesar, that thin-
ges happened in Rome, that sometime
doeth in all comen weales, at the de-
cesse of great princes and rulers, that
is sedicio, vnquietnesse, and trouble.
For the souldiours being as than in
Pannonie, raised a greate sedicion, &
in their rage beate & murdered diuers of their tribunes
& other officers, which comocion after much peines was
lastly quyeted by Drusus the sonne of Tiberius. In like
manner, & for like causes, was great trouble & vnquietnesse
in the hoste that lay in Germanie. At which time, when
Germanicus their captaine, exhorte them to quietnesse,
the souldiours obstinately refused the empire of Tiberi-
us, & profered to make him their emperour, but Germa-
nicus wolde rather haue slaine him selfe, with his owne
weapen, then by such vnlawful meanes, to obtaine the im-
periall auctoritee: And moreover, the commons of the ci-
tie of Rome, & diuers of the nobles also, hauing in their
heartes (as it were) a naturall hatred towarde the Mo-
narchie, or highe power of Cesars: diuised and imagined
with them selves, diuerslye, howe to extinguishe the im-
perial auctoritee, & bring the citee to her priuinate forme
and

and gouernaunce of consules, which thing they more earnestly desired, for so much as they had as yet, fresh in memorie, the sweetenes of theyr ancient libertees, and the same of manie noble men, which by Julius and Augustus, had bene outlawed and put to death. And also because they feared the proude and cruell nature of Tiberius, who was named to succede Augustus in the empire. But al this notwithstanding, Tiberius with such craft and dissimulation handled the matter, that he not onely obteyned the imperiall auctoritee, but also seemed to take it vpon him against his will.

There was at this time no notable warre, savinge that the Romaines made fierce warre vpon the Germanes, rather to reuenge the infamy: that M. Marus had receyued at theyr handes, than to enlarge theyr empyre which at this time had spred it selfe well ner ouer all the world.

In Judea Herode and Philip, buylded and repayred certaine cities and towne in the honour of Cesar, which made theym rulers. Herode which was also called Antipas, walled the citee called Sephoris, and named it Antheocradoia, & in like maner the citee Bethaurata, which he called Julia.

Philip buylded Pansada aboute the well of Iordaine, and named it Cesaria. He erected also Bethsayda nye to the riuer Genasar, & gaue it to name Julia Drionima.

Germanicus Cesar, the Romaine capitaine, nye to the wood Cesia, batinquished and slue the Germanes, called Marci.

Juba a man of excellent learninge, kinge of the Moors, Abagarus of Mesopotamia, and Bardascanes of Babylon.

Calpurnius, the first sonne of Cimbalne, began his reigne ouer the Britons, & reigned about, 28. yeres. This man was valiant, hardy, welthy & trusted muche in his strength. And for he thought the Romains had theyr tribute wrongfully, he therfore of great courage, denied to paie tribute, for which cause, Claudius, the. v. emperour, came into Brittain with a great power to claim againe the payment therof, as shall after be shewed.

Valerius Gratus was president of Judea, he fyrste beganne

The yere of Chyze

171

The thirde parte of

The pere
of the
worlde

The pere
of Christ.

gan to sel the roome and office of the high p[re]st, whiche example other being after in his auctoritee, folowed.

Ann
gum
tanni

Businesse beganne among the Parthians, through the death of theyr kinge Phraates, whiche was murdered of his bastard son by the counsaile of his own concubine. Theromusa, to the entent that his son might succede in the kingdome: But the parthians deposed the bastarde, and obtained of the Romains, Monones the legitimate sonne of Phraates, and made him theyr king, whom shortly after vnconstantly they agayne deposed.

Germanicus, nie vnto the riuier Elburgis, ouercame and put to flight the Germans called Cherusci. The riuier Tiberis ouerflowed the citee of Rome, where of great ruine and decaying of buyldinge, and mortallitee of people ensued.

A lawe was published, wherby all inchaunters, southerners, and they whiche had knowlage in mathematicall and magical sciences, were banished out of Italy. And also that the Romaines, at theyr table, shoulde not be serued with so riche and sumptuous plate.

Cecinna an vnder capitaine of the Romaines ouerthrew the Germans, with theyr two capitains Armenius and Inguionerus.

A great commocion was like to haue bene in Italye, through the insolente boldnesse of one Clement, the seruant of Agrippa (whiche Agrippa was priuely putte to death by Tyberius) For this seruant a good space after his maisters death, came abrode, and named him selfe Agrippa, to whom bothe in age and person he was not muche vnlike, by whiche meanes he gathered to him great companies and cam toward Rome: but shortly after his companies were disparted, and he taken and put to death by Tyberius.

Germanicus Cesar triumphed for his great victories in Germany. In the whiche he seemed to bring againe the glorie and reuenge, that M. Marus lost before: for so muche as he brought in his triumph the same insignes, and standerdes, which were taken in the scumfure of Marus. Tyberius for enuy condemned Archelaus king of Cappadocia, and made his kingdome a prouince.

In

In Asia. xii. cities were ouerthrowē with an earthquake. The pere of the world
 Valerius made Ansell, the sonne of Fabus, his prieste of the world
 in Judea, and deposed Anianus.

Rebellion and warre began in Affrike, by one Tacfarinas, 3980
 nas, whiche was banquished and chased by Furius Camillus proconsull of Affrike, but not soo, that he ceased to rebelle.

Diso was made president of Surry.

Germanicus beinge enuied of Tyberius the emperoz 3981
 for the prosperous successe of his warres in Germanie, was remoued from that prouince, and sent into Armenia where he ordeyned Zenon king of Armenians and made peace with Artabanus and the Partheans. And shortly after through the counsaill of Tyberius, he was poysoned by Diso and his wife Placine: whose death brought gret sorowe and heauienes to the hole citee, for so much as they loued him entierly for his swete and gentille behauour. In so much that oftentimes when he came to Rome, he was in great danger to be smothered with the thrange of people, that preceed about onely to behold him.

A lawe published, that no woman, whose grandfather, father, or husband had bene a gentleman of Rome, shuld openly gaine by the filchy misusing of hir body, whiche thing was befoze time permitted, so that the woman dyd professe and aknowledge the matter befoze the officers called Ediles.

Cleazarus, sonne of Anna, was made byshoppe of Hierusalem.

Diso, after his retorne from Asia, beinge appeched of 3982
 certaine Romaines, for poysoninge of Germanicus, fearing to be condemned, murdered him selfe.

Tacfarinas, renewing war in Affrike, was ouerthrowen the second time by Decius the Romaine capitaine.

Frontinus Capito, proconsul of Asia.

Simon the sonne of Camithus was ordeyned high priest in Judea by Valerius Lu. Apronius pretour of Affrike.

Certaine citees rebelled in Fraunce by the intisement 3983
 of Sacroutr, and Florus, Florus, lest he should be taken of the souldiours of his aduersaries, flue him selfe.

Joseph called also Caiphas, succeeded Simon in the by-

Aa.

Thopzike

The pere
 of Christ

19.

20.

21.

22.

The thirde parte of

The pere
of the
woylde

The pere
of Christ.

Hopyske of Rome.

Annica
gum br
tanni.

3984

23

There reigned so great flatterye in Rome, that Tyberius going out of the senate, vled to saye, I men ready to seruitude and bondage.

By the occasion of many sanctuaries, was muche sedition in the citees of Grece. For so much as theues, detours, bondmen, and all suspecte and misrule personnes gathzed thither, as to a sure defence and garison. For whiche cause the senat of Rome ordeined fewer sanctuaries and a meane to be set in the libertees of theym, whiche remained, that the largenes of theyr priuileges mighte not thens forth be cause of so great businesse.

Artabanus king of Parthia.

Tacfarinas, was ones againe discomfited by Junius Blelas proconsul of Affrike.

3985

24

Seianus, whom Tiberius had aduanced to hie dignitee in the citee of Rome, by auoutry corrupted Iunia, the wife of Drusus, Tyberius sonne, and caused her to poison hir husbände: hopinge by that meanes at lengthe to obteyne the imperial auctoritee, to the which the said Drusus was nexte and rightefull heire. But this Seianus, being cast out of the emperours fauour, for sorowe thereof slewe him selfe.

Stage players were banished out of Italy.

3986

25

Tacfarinas, king of Numidie, whiche oftentimes had rebelled in Affrike, was bitterlye subdued and slayne by Dolobella.

M. Ubius Serenus was appeched of treason in Rome by his owne sonne, and for the same banished.

3988

27

Pilate beinge ordeyned president of Iudea, at his first entre to flatter Tiberius, caused the images of Cesar to be brought into the temple of Hierusalem, whereby rose a great sedition. For so muche as the Jewes beinge therewith greuously offended, offered theym selfe rather to the death, then they wold suffre any images in theyr temple. Pilate in lyke maner vled the treasure, called Corbona contrary to the custome and lawe of the Jewes, and by cause diuers of the Jewes shewed them selfe greued therewith, he beat and slewe a great numbze of them.

Corillus king of Gothes.

Puno

ni. re: **Mundus**, a yong gentelman of Rome, rauished the chaste **The pere**
 m bi: matrone named **Paulina**, whom, for so much as he cold of the **The pere**
 ni. not corrupt by none other meanes: he brought his bngra world **of Egypt**

clous purpose to passe by the false trecherie & vntruth of
 the priestes of **Isis**, whiche feigned, that they were mo-
 nished by an hozacle, that **Anubius**, the god of **Aegypte**,
 wold haue the company of the sayd **Paulina**. To whom
 the chaste woman gaue light credence, bicause it was thā
 counted a great renoume, to haue to do with the goddes.
 And by this meane was **Paulina**, in the night season, a-
 bused by **Mundus**, in the temple of **Isis**, vnder the name
 of **Anubius**, whiche thinge beyng after disclosed by **Mun-**
dus him selfe, the priestes were put to deathe, the temple
 beaten downe to the ground, the image of **Isis** thzowen
 in to **Tyberis**, and the yong man banished.

Poppus Sabinus, subdued the **Thracians**.

In Rome. 50. thousande men were hurte and flaine
 with the fal of a theatour, as they were beholding the ga-
 mes of the sword players. For whiche misfortune **At-**
tilius, whiche set forthe those plaies, was banished.

There were in the citee of **Rome**. 4. **Jewes**, which had 3590
 conuerted to their religion, a noble woman named **Ful-**
nia: and hir intiled to geue purple, and other riche trea-
 sure, to the temple of **Iherusalem**: whiche they vsed onely
 to the maintenance of their owne pleasure, wherof when
 the senat had knowlage, thei sharply punished the doers:
 and for that cause expelled all the other **Jewes** oute of
Rome.

Certaine of the **Germanes**, called **Frischis**, rebelled by
 meane of a great soweage or exaction that was of them le-
 uied, for payment wherof, they were first constrained to
 sell their cattell, than their goodes, and landes, and last-
 ly their wyfe and chyldren. In this rebellion they putte
 the **Romaines** to the worse, wherby the name of the **Fris-**
chians was famous in **Germanie**.

Tyberius Cesar wareth so negligente, that he permit-
 ted the prouinces of **Spaine** and **Surpe** to be without le-
 gates and gouernours, and suffered **Armenia** to be pos-
 sessed of the **Parthiens**, and **Mesia** to bee iruaded of the
Danes and **Sarmacians**, and **France** of the **Germanes**:

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde
3991

The yere
of Christ.
30

by meane wherof, the power of the empire somewhat be
of Christ. cated.

Anni-
gum. b.
tanni.
14

The holy man John the Baptist, beyng sent of god as a
messenger or tydynges bringer of our helth and saluati-
on, began to prepare þ way against the coming of Christ.

Our saviour and redeemer Jesus Christ, after he was
baptised of John, began to preache and sprede abrode the
kingdome of god.

Caratak, king of Scottes, reigned. xxi. yeres a prince
more balaunt than fortunate, and gaue his holle minde
and courage, to defende his realme and subiectes frome
the seruage of the Romains, with whome he kepte longe
warre, and aydeth the north Brytaines.

3992

31

Tyberius Cesar, vnto this tyme dissimulynge his cruel
and naughtye nature, declared him selfe openlye to the
worlde, falling to pleasure and fylthy lyuing: in so much
that he bled to banket two holle daies and a nighte toge-
ther: wherfore of his owne souldiours, for Claudius Ty-
berius Nero, he was called Claudius Tiberius Nero.

3993

32

Sainct John, because he iustly rebuked Herode for ke-
pyng of his brothers wyfe, was cast in prison, and after
beheaded, at the castell named Macherunta.

3994

33

Our saviour Christ, whan he had finished the legacy of
god the father, & opened the doctrine of eternal life, to his
vnhynde people the Jewes, offered him selfe wyllynge
to the masse cruell death of our redemption, payng the
raunsome of that bondage, to the whiche we were thral.
and in daunger. At whiche tyme of hys passion was a
great erthquake, and at syre a clocke of the date, so terry-
ble a clype of the son, contrary all naturall course that
for great darkenes it semed to be very nighte. The third
day folowinge he rose again from deth to life, conquering
ones three mightie aduersaries, to whose tyrannie we
were subiecte, that is deathe, sinne, and Satan. On the
xl. daye declarynge him selfe to be a mightie and puissant
conquerour, he ascended to the righthande of the father,
wher he remaineth as the only and perpetuall defendour
and meditatour of his people, from whens, according to
his blessed promise, the .50. day he sent his heuently spirit,
and quaplynge in this poete the promulgation of this tale

in

in the mount of Oreb, for even as the children of Israel The pere of the
 50. daies after their deliuerie frome the captiuitie of Ae- of the
 gypt, and bondage of king Pharo, receiued the law writ world
 ten with the finger of god: so in like maner his blessed a-
 postles, the verie children of god, the fiftie day after our
 deliuerance from the spirituall Egypt and seruage of
 Pharo the diuell, receiued his heavenly spirite, the true
 comfortour, which should leade them into all truth, and
 writte the eternall law of god in their hertes.

The Jewes began to persecute the apostles, and mar-
 tyred Stephen, stonyng him to death.

Sainct Paule the elect vessel of god beyng called by a
 vision, was made of an open aduersarye and cruell per-
 secutour of the church of Christ, the most faithfull apo-
 stle, and true doctour of the gentiles. Amonge whom he
 taught the word of god, with so great fruite, and encrea-
 sed so largely the Christian faith, that he was after wor-
 thyly named the chiefe of the apostles.

Symon Magus, whiche had seduced the people of Sa-
 maria, with Magicall artes and witchcraftes, was by
 Philip conuict of his errour, and baptized.

Candaces also the Eunike of the queene of Moors was
 converted to the faythe of Christe, and baptized of
 Philippe.

Pilate, after the death of Christ, as witnesseth Teren-
 tian, wrote to Tyberius the emperour of the deathe, her-
 tae, and miracles of Christ, who, after that he had publi-
 shed the same in the senate, wold haue had Christe to bee
 ascribed and numbred among the gods of the Romans:
 but the senators would not consent thereto in any wise,
 because that Pilate wrote to the emperour of that mat-
 ter, and not to them. But Tyberius continued in his sen-
 tence, and defended on paine of death, that no man shold
 persecute the Christian people.

James, called the brother of Christ, was ordeined by
 thop of Hierusalem.

Tyberius the emperour, because he woulde not be dis-
 quieted with the busineses of the comon weale, but ouer-
 lye at rest and idleness, departed frome Rome to the Isle
 of Capres, wher he gaue him selfe only to riot & pleasure.

Ca. iii.

Saincte

3995

34

The thirde parte of

Chapter
of the
worlde
3996

The yere
of Christ

Saint Paule went to preache the gospell in Arabla, and after retourned to Damascus.

The byrde, called Fenix, aboute this time came in to Egypte.

Philo, a Jewe of Alexandria, a man verie eloquent and wel learned, was famous. He wrote agaynst appiane, and defended the Jewes both grauely and wisely: he wrote also diuers thinges in praise of Christian religion, wherfoze of Hierome he is numbred among the ecclesiasticall writers.

Arcta, king of Arabla, made fierce war vpon Herode, because that after he had married his daughter, and liued with her certain yeres, he lastly forsoke her, & kept Herodiades the wife of his natural brother being then liuing.

Sinnaces and Abdus, vnknowing to Artabanus, king of Parthia, cam in ambassade to Rome, desiring to haue Phraates to their kinge. Phraates shortly after sickened & dyed in Surrei, and than was Mithridates of Iberia ordeined in his place, wherof ensued deadly warre, betwene the Parthians, Armenians, and Iberian.

Paule retourned to Hierusalem.

Agrippa, a Iue beyng accused for speaking of certayne wordes agaynst Tyberius, was ledde to prison, at whiche time it was his fortune to meete wyth a southsaier, which tolde him befoze of his deliuerance, and wonderfull prosperitee, to the whiche he was after aduanced by Caligula and Claudius.

Pilate was commanded by Vitellius, prouost of Surrei, to go vnto Rome: there to aunswere to certayne complaints, which should be layed to his charge by the Jewes, for whiche accusations he was after deposed, and banished to Lions in France, wher (as Eusebius sayth) he slue him selfe.

Vitellius was made president of Iudca.

Lu. Vitellius president of Surrei.

Tyberius, after longe sickenes, the .xvii. date of the kalendes of Aprile, paide his dette to nature,

Caius Caligula, the son of Germanicus and .4. Cesar, was admitted to the empire, with so great reioysinge of the hole citee, that within lesse then thre monethes there were

anni re
gum bri
tanni

19

21

22

3997

36

3998

37

3999

38

4000

39

res
Bri
were. 150000. sacrifices offered in thanks geuinge to the
goddess. that he beinge of the stocke of Germanicus, hap- of the
pened to be theyr emperour. This man at the firste begin world
ning, was of maners right pleasaunt and commendable
But after he became so detestable in pride, incontineney
and beastly crueltie, that he seemed rather a monster of a
man, and filthye example of all vice, than a prince or go-
uernour of a publike weale. He vsed to sytte in the tem-
ple amonge the goddesses, sumptuously arrayed in purple
and golde, offering him selfe to be worshipped of the peo-
ple, he deflowred thre of his owne sisters, and tooke other
mens wiues violently frome theym. Often tymes he be-
wailed the condicion and state of his age, that it was not
made famous with any notable or gret calamities. of the
common weale, for certain displeasure that he conceived
towards the Romaines, he wished earnestly, that all the
people of Rome, hadde but one necke, that he for his plea-
sure might destroye suche a multitude. Throughe this
greate mutacion of maners in Caligula, happened this
prouerbe to rise: There was neuer a better prince at the
beginning, nor a worse tyran at the endinge.

Caligula deliuered Agrippa oute of prison, and in the
freede of his fetters and yres, gaue to him a crowne, and
a chiane of golde of the same weighte as his yrons were,
and made him kinge ouer that parte of Iudea, that Phy-
lyp gouerned before time. And not longe after added ther
to, the dominion of Herod, and condemned Herode to
perpetual banishment, where he died miserably.

In Iudea Vitellius deposed Caiphas, oute of the high
priestes roume, and ordeyned an other in his place called
Jonathan, the sonne of Anna.

Caligula commaunded diuine honoures to be geuen to 4091
him, and temples to bee erected in his name. Also that
his Images shoulde bee sette vp in all temples within the
empire, whiche caused grear offence in Alexandria a
citee of Aegypte: for so muche as the Iewes there beinge
would not consent in any wise to the worshippinge of the
Images of Cesar.

Caligula, retourning out of Germanie, where he had 4002
achyued nothing worthe memoze, caused his army to
be set

The yere
of 411.

40

42

The thirde parte of

The pere
of the
moide

The pere
of Christ

he sette in good orde, upon the sea bankes, and his spaine galles and other abilementes and engines of warre to be disposed against the Occian sea, as though he would conquer the sea: and then commanded his souldiours to gather Muske shells, saying, that they were the speire of the sea, which for his conquest and victorie was due to the temple of Jupiter.

Petronius, the president of Surrie, was commaunded by Caligula to enforce and compelle the Jewes to suffer his images in theyr temple of Hierusalem, whiche thing the Jewes very earnestly withstode, and desired Petronius, that he would put them all to present deathe, rather then they shuld live to see theyr lawe broken.

Great persecucion of the Jewes in Babylon, and also in a cite of grece named Seleucia, the causes wherof, Josephus writeth abundantly in his last booke of the antiquities of the Jewes.

The ninthe day of the Kalendes of February, Caligula was slaine by ²⁶ ~~Thereas~~ the tribune & other gentlemē of Rome, after whose death was founde in his closette, two litle bookes, one called a sword, an other a dagger. In them bothe were intituled the names of those senatoures and noble men of Rome, whiche he purposed to put to deathe. There was founde also a coffer, wherein were divers kindes of popson, wyth the which he entended to destroy a wonderful multitude of people.

About this time, Aegyptus was kinge of the Aethyopes, Sistringus of the Sarones, Lodzike of the Pectes. ²⁷

Claudius uncle to Caligula, was made emperour by the foolish rashenes of the souldiours, contrarie to the will of the Senate, and reigned .13. yeres. He was in his youth so sore bruised with painefull sickenes, that both his body and witte was dulled, and thereby made unmete to all affayres, as well politike as martiall. In soo muche that his mother Antonia, perceyving his untowardnes, sayd, that he was a moſtre or vnperfite worke of nature. And if she did note any mā of extreme foolishnes, she wold say, that he was more foole then her son Claudius. Of nature he was angry, fearful, suspicious, and somewhat inclined to crueltie, in eating and drinking very untemperat

4003

42

4004

43

perate moze giuen to dice plate than was comely: of the
 which (as some write) he made a boke. He was also be-
 rate forgetfull, in so much that when he had geuen sen-
 tence of condemnation vppon certain persons, and com-
 maunded them to be put to death, the next day folow-
 yng he would aske for the same men, to playe with him
 at dice: and because they came not in season, called them
 Muggardes, at his firste entre he wan the fauour of the
 people, but after he fel into so great contempt: that a gre-
 cian sayd to him openly in Greke, thou art an aged man
 and a foole: he was popsoned of his wife Agripina, to the
 entent her son Nero might succede in the empire.

The pete
 of the
 world

The pete
 of Lby

Scribonianus, capitaine of the Romains in Delmitia
 rebelled and named him selfe emperor. At whych time
 the host which fauoured Scribonian^s, could not by any
 meanes spreade the baners, nor remoue the standerdes
 out of their places: with whiche miracle the souldiours
 being meued, slewe Scribonianus.

Betus the sonne of Simon, bishop of Hierusalem.

Claudius the emperor, confirmed the kingdome of
 Agrippa, & added therto the hole dominion of Judea and
 Samaria, as Herode his graundfather had betoze him,
 by whiche occasion Judea was againe holpe subiect to
 one kinge.

James the brother of Iohan, was put to death by this 4005
 Agrippa, whiche had also to name Herode.

Claudius the emperor led an armie into Britaine, to
 claime againe the tribute, that was denied by king Out-
 derius, whiche he reconered without greatte warre or
 bloudeshede, as saye the latine cronicles: but the english
 histories assirmen that he had geuen to him strong bat-
 tle: In the whiche a Romayne capitaine named Vamo
 changed his shelde & armur, and put on him the armur
 of a Brito, and so mengled with the Britos entred there
 as the king was, and slewe him: at whiche time Aruira-
 gus, the kinges brother, seing that sodeine mischeue, ar-
 med him with the cognisaunce of the kinge, and soo for
 king continued the fighte, with suche manhode, that the
 Romaines at that time were put to the worse.

B h

Arul

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

4006

The yere
of Egypt

45

A Rustragus the yongest sonne of Cymteline, and Annal
brother of Cyderius, was ordeined king of Britum
tain. Claudius the emperour after diuers happes
of battail, toke kinge Aruicragus to his grace: and for so
much as he perceiued him to be a ballant prince, in toke
of frendshippe (as the englishe cronicles testify) gaue to
him his daughter in mariage named Genissa.

Claudius retourninge frome Britaine subdued to the
empire the Ilandes called Orcades.

Marlus succeeded Petronius in the prouince of Surry
who for enuy of Agrippa, deposed Mathias, and made
Eleoneus high priest in his roome.

4007

46

Agrippa, who was also called Herode, as he was ce
lebrating a solemne feast in honore of Cesar, for the ple
asantnesse of his speche, was named of the comon people
a god. And for so much as he did not refuse the name of
god, and diuine honours geuen to him, he was immedi
ately stricken with the wormy sicknesse, wherof he died
miserably within the space of .v. dayes, paying woorthy
punishment for depriuing god of his honour, and perse
cuting christ in his apostles.

A great dearth and famine in Iudea, which was great
lye holpen by the liberalitee of the queene of the Adhabe
bens. Sainct Paule also gathered amonge the gentiles
whiche were conuerted to the faith, for the reliefe of the
christians being in Hierusalem.

The Britons (because they kinge Aruicragus) as sayeth
the Scottishe historie) had repudiated his wife Maoda,
to marie the Romaine lady Genissa, hauing ayde of his
brother Caracake kinge of Scottes, rebelled as well a
gainst him as against the Romaines, and were brought
in subiection by Vespasian the Romaine capitaine.

4008

47

Herode, brother to the forenamed Agrippa, kinge of
Chalcis, obteyned of Claudius the ordinance of the tem
ple and his priestes of Hierusalem.

Ioseph son of Canus was made his priest by Herode

4009

48

Warre began in Parthia betwene Artabanus they
king and Gotarxis his brother, during which warre Ar
tabanus was chased out of his kingdom, and restored a
gaine by Iulius king of Adhiabens.

il res
n bris
pi.

Mithridates king of Armentie.

Certaine frenchemen, named Vedul, were admitted to beare office and dignities in the citee of Rome.

5 Messalina the wife of Claudius the emperour, a woman of so notable incontinence, that she would contend with the comon harlots in filthi pleasure, was enamoured upon a fayre yonge gentleman in Rome, called Silius and for to obtene moze comodiously her vnlawful lust she caused his wife, Silliana to be deuorced, and shortly after notwithstandinge she was wife to the emperoure Claudius than liuing, she was openly married to the said gentleman Silius, and bled him as hir husbände for whiche cause, after great complainte made to the emperoure by the nobles she was putte to deathe. At whyche time, excepte the officers had hastened hir execution, the emperour Claudius throughe his forgetfulnesse would haue graunted hir pardon.

The yere
of the
world
4010

The yere
of Chr
49

Catus Cassius president of Surret.

Mehardates kinge of the Assiriens. Abarus kynge of the Arrabes.

6 About this time Theodas and Judas of Galilee were famous, whiche seduced the people, saying, that thei wer great prophetes sent of god.

In like maner Simon Magus was of so gret estimacio in Rome, that Images were erected to him as to a god, But he was confounded by certaine of the apostles, whiche at that time by the prouidence of god were presente in Rome.

Herode king of Chalcis ended his life: whose kingdome Claudius gaue to the yonger Agrippa, son of Herode Agrippa, whom we spake of a litell befoze.

The Parthians, being wery of the cruel dominion of Gotarzis, whiche had by force & tyranny aduanced himselfe to that kingdome desired of the Romaines to haue Mahardates the son of Monones to be theyr kinge, who not long after was overcome in battaile of the said Gotarzis, & with great reproch driven out of his kingdome Vologeses, emperour of the Parthes.

Claudius, after the death of his wife Messalina, married Agrippina: throughe whome beganne muche busynesse.

B. b. ii.

ness

50

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

4012

51

nelle and trouble in Rome, for he endeavored to marie Annia
his sonne Nero to Octavia, daughter of Claudius, and
sought diuers occasions to cast Britannicus the impe-
rours sonne out of fauour, to the intent that Nero her
son might succede in the empire: which thing he brought
to passe,

The great and wise philosopher Seneca flourished.
Cumian⁹ was made prouost of Judea. In his time was
a sedicion betwene the Jewes and the Romaines in Ie-
rusalem, so that 20. thousand Iues were murdered one
by by preale and thrusting at gates and narrow streights
as they fled from the Romaine souldiours.

The people of Britaine, called Sylures, which vnder
the leadinge of the kinge Caratacus, hadde made sharpe
warre vpon the Romaines thespace of .ix. yeres wer van-
quished by P. Ostorius, and Caraticus with his wife &
children set to Rome, as prisoners: where for his manly
courage and noblenesse, he was gently intertaind of
the emperour.

Claudius toke by adoption Domitius Nero the sonne
of Agrippina to be his heire.

The people called Catti, invading and spoilinge the by-
per Germany, wer druen backe by L. Pomponius.

Claudius expelled the Jewes out of Rome.

4013

52

L. Vinidius Quadratus, president of Surie.

Rhadamistus, son of Pharasmanis, king of Iberias
invaded Armenie, and expelled his vnckle Mitridates
frome his kingdome. Whom Artabanus at that time
king of Parthians, by force of armes chased out of the
countrey of Armenie, and aduanced his brother Tyrida-
tes to that kingdome.

After the decease of Caratake, his yonger brother Coz-
breid was ordeined king of Scottes and reigned .18. ye-
res. He was of fierce and valiant courage, and being co-
federate with the Pictes, made often times war against
the Romaines in Britaine.

So great dearth in Rome, that they were not prouided
of vitailles necessarie for the citee for longer space than
foure daies.

4014

53

A sedicion betwene the Jewes and Samaritanes, in
the

at res
n bri
ni.

the whiche that one spoyled and robbed, that other with great crueltee, vntill the prouost of Surrei punished & put to death the auctours of that commocion.

The pere of the worlde
The pere of Christ.

The Pictes rebelled against the Romaines in Britaine and made warre vpon their lieutenant Ostorius.

The Cilicians began to make warre to their borders they were quieted by the helpe of Curti^o a Roman, whiche was sent with ayde out of Surie

Claudius the emperour, by the excittinge of his wife Agrippina, vbled much crueltee in Rome. 4015

54

Nero married Octavia the daughter of Claudius his father in lawe.

Claudius toke from the yonger Agrippa the kingdome of Chalcis, and gaue to him a greater dominton, that is the rule of Bethania, Trocironites, & Gaulonites with a part of Galilee.

Felix president of Iudea, by vnlawful meanes toke to his wife Drusilla, the sister of Agrippa, whiche befoze was married to Azizus king of Amasius.

A certain Aegyptian, naming him selfe to be a prophet desturbed the people aboute Hierusalem, excited theym against the Romaines, but his companie was scattered and many of them taken and slain by Felix the president of Iudea,

S. Paule was taken and imprisoned by the Iewes at Hierusalem 4016

55

Holemon king of Licia.

Agrippina, when she had poysoned Claudius hir husbande, kept his deathe secreete, vntill that hir sonne Nero was confirmed in the empire by the souldiours and the caused it to be published.

Nero the son of Domitianus, being adopted to be emperoure by Claudius, which married his mother, reigned 14. yeres. This man although he were brought vp by the reuerent and wise Seneca, yet by the ineuistable corruption of his nature becam horrible in al kind of misdoing, and so detestable in dissolute wantonnes prodigalltee, monstrous lecheries, beastli crueltee, and couctousnes that he seemed to be bozne to the destruction of the hole worlde, he was so greatly delited in singinge, and play

56

W b. iii.

play

The thirde parte of

The pere
of the
boyld.

The pere
of Abzist

playing with the harpe in sword playing and dylning of
cartes & wagons, that he did not only these exercises pri-
uately without al mesure, but also, wearing the garmē-
tes of minstrels, swordplayers, and other vile persona-
ges, wandred ouer all Italy and Grece, to seke and haue
cōmō games, wher he might trie maisteries & shew his
cunning in those feates: and at his retourne triumphed
in the cite of Rome, and sent into al countreis letters of
cōmaundemēt, to make supplications & retoyfinges for
his victories. In vncleane lust of the bodye so farpouly
raged, that he abstained not from mother, syster ne any
degree of affinitee and kinned, he toke in open marriage
a bodye of excellēt fauour, named Sporns and bled him
as his wife, he abandoned him selfe to filthy imbzasina-
ges of his owne seruantes, & in riotous spending of his
treasure he erceded, for he bled to fishe with golden nets
tes, whiche shoulde be drawen with cordes of purple, he
neuer wore one garment twise: he caused to bee putte to
death his mother, his brother in lawe, his .ii. wiues and
his instructour Seneca, hauing therto no iust cause nor
honest pretence, he cōmaunded the citee of Rome to be
set on fyre, and him selfe in the meane seasō with al sem-
blaunt of ioye sitting in an high toure to behold y same,
played vpon the harpe, and sang the destructiō of Troy.
The other examples of this mans crueltie and naughtie
life can not be numbred.

Ananus was ordeined the first priest in Alexandria af-
ter saint Marke the euangelist.

Portius Festus president of Iudea.

S. Paulus, which before time was cast in prisō was
sent to Rome, because he appeled to Cesar.

Pero committed the rule and dominion of the lesse Ae-
menie to Aristobolus the sonne of Herode, whyche be-
fore was king of Chalces.

There were in the time of Pero many famous lerned
men as Probus an excellent grāmarian, Stacius Sur-
culus, whiche taught rhetorike in Fraunce, Lucane a
famous poete, and other.

James for his sincere life, surnamed the iust was mar-
tyred by Ananus the hie bishop, and other prestes of Ie-
rusalem.

4018

57

4019

58

of Jerusalem.

in bri
ni

S. Marke suffered his martyrdom at Alexandria: after whom Anianus was made their bishop.

The year
of the
world
The year
of Christ.

14 Albinus succeeded Festus in the province of Judea who exercised great tyranny towards the Jewes.

4020

59

The commotion which in the first year of Nero began between the Parthians and the Romans, for the possession of Armenia, at this time increased wherein Corbulo, proconsul of Syria, by force of arms chased Tiridates out of Armenia, and burned their chiefe citie called Artaxata.

Nero the emperor after this time gave him selfe openly to such noughty and wanton living, that in the night season he would haunt brothel houses, and other suspect places, and often times breake up mens houses, doores and eyther robbe & beat them, or els ravish the their wives.

15 Nero, after that he had committed incest with his owne mother commaunded her to be put to death.

4021

60

16 In the countrey of Asia the cities Hieropolis, Calope and Laodicea were overthrowen with an earthquake.

4022

61

17 Paulinus Suetonius which kept the garrisons of the Romans in Britayne, went with a company of soldiers to subdue the yle of Man: in which meane season the Britons, under the leading of the quene Boada, which he had in her armie. 5000. ladies rebelled and slew of the Romans (which were left behinde) to the number of 70. thousande, but Paulinus at his retourne subdued againe the Britons and slew of them in one battaile about. 80. thousande. Boada that she might not come alive into the handes of hir adversaries slew her selfe. After the death of James, Simeon son of Cleopas was ordeined bishop of Jerusalem.

4023

62

18 Nero forsooke his wife Octavia, and caused hir to be beheaded, and then married Poppea, a woman of notable incontinencie.

4024

63

The king of Parthians renewed warre againe in Armenia, and with great reproche baintquished Petus the Roman capitaine, and slew many of his soldiers.

19 Corbulo at his retourne into Armenia, concluded a truce between the Romans and Parthians, on the condition

4025

64

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

dicion that their king would go to Rome, and be confir-
med of the emperor in the kingdome of Armenia.

anni
gum
tanni

Cestius Florus was made president of Judea after Al-
binus, by occasion of whose tyrannie and couetousnesse
the Jewes firste rebelled openly against the Romayne
empire.

4026

65

Rome was set on fire by commaundement of Nero, and
continued burning the space of .vi. dayes.

20

Nero to auoyde the infamie therof, layed the fault vpon
the chistian men, and vnder that pretence, he firste be-
gan most cruelly to persecute the professors of christes
religion.

4027

66

By the beastly crueltie of Nero many noble men were
put to moste shameful deathe, amonge the whiche were
Seneca, and Lucane men of excellent learninge.

21

Licinius Mulinus president of Surie.

Campaine was wel nere destroyed with wonderfull tem-
pest of winde, by the whiche, corne, fruite, and trees wer
greatly hurt: at the same time reigned a wonderfull pe-
silence in Rome.

4028

67

A blasing starre of meruellous greatnes, appered, and
continued the space of .vi. monethes.

22

The famous rebellion of the Jewes against the Romas-
nes began in this yere: wherby ensued the last destructi-
on of the citee of Hierusalem.

There was marvellous sedicion and trouble not onely
in Judea, but also in the citees of Aegypte, Scythya,
Surry, and al other places, where as the iewes were, in
the whiche the froward people suffered unspeakable mi-
series, euery citee well nere was filled with deade men,
and flowed with bloud.

23

4029

68

Vespasian a noble capitaine of the Romains was sent
by Nero to quiete and subdue the Jewes, which rebelled
in all partes against the empire.

Vespasian went first against the parte of Judea, called
Galilee, where after he had conquered and subdued cer-
taine citees, he toke prisoner a nobled man of the Jewes
called Iosephus, who was gretely enterteigned of the
Romains, because he prophecied that Vespasiane the
capitaine should be emperor and lorde of the worlde.

This

This was that Iosephus, whose werkes remayne at these dayes.

The pere
of the
world

The pere
of Chy

Peter, by the tyranny of Nero, was crucified at Rome.

Paule also, after he had constantly preached the word of god. 34. yeres, was put to death.

Euodius was made bishop of Antioche nexte after S. Peter.

4 Vindex and Galba, detestinge the cruell tyrannye and filthye life of Nero, rose agaynst him with a greate companie of Spaniardes and frenchemen. 4030

69

Nero was proclaymed by the Senate to be an enemy of the weale publike, and iudged to be drawen throughe the citee, and whipped to death: Wherefore he fearinge to come into the handes of his ennemies, fled vnto a manour of his seruautes in the countrey, where at the last he was forced to slea him selfe.

Great trouble folowed the death of Nero in the hole empire: for so muche as .iii. princes contended for the imperiall auctoritee, three ciuile battayles were foughten almost in one yere, beside that, there was great vnquietnesse in all other prouinces of the empire.

Galba, a senatour, descending of a noble and auntyent familie, was elected emperour by the frenchemen & spaniardes. His priuate life was excellent and famous, but after he obteyned the imperiall auctoritee, his couetousnesse alienated the hertes of men from him, wherfore the seuenth monthe of his reigne he was slayne in the myddes of the citee by the souldiours of Otho: who immediatly did succede him in the empire. Not longe after Vitellius was named emperour of the souldiours, beinge as then in Germanie. This Vitellius was a veray extreme and cruell tyranne, and therwith all a fowle glotton, and so immoderately geuen to excessive feedinge, that he was serued at one meale with .ii. thousand kinde of fishes, and vii. thousande fowles. This Vitellius sent an armie into Italye against Otho, with the whiche Otho foughte .iiii. battayles thise he put them to the worse: the fourth time hering that his souldiours were discomfited, for sorowe therof he slewe him selfe at Bizium, when he had reygned .iii. monthes. 4031

70

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere.
of Christ

In this passe time Vespasian was saluted emperour in the easte partes, of Licinius, president of Surie, and the hoste lying in Judea. Wherefore he sent an army into Italy, of the which the souldiours of Vitellius were discomfited, nere to Cremona: shortly after, Vitellius was taken and drawn throughe the citee, and so tourmented to deathe, and the deade carkass cast into Tyber.

The palace in Rome named Capitolium was burnt by the souldiours of Vitellius.

Linus the firste bishoppe of Rome after Peter.

Cremona, a famous towne in Italy, was spoyled and destroyed with fire by the souldiours of Antonius.

Sido and Italicus kinges of Suenia.

Vespasian, leuynge his sonne Titus with the greater parte of his armye in Judea, returned to Rome to establish the empire. This man came but of a base stock and family, but in valiant prowes and knightly courage he was to be compared euen with the best, for his wisdom and honestee he was highly commended, he neuer bare grudge ne malice towarde any man, weere he neuer so great an enemy. For the onely vice of auarice he was evil spoken of among his subiectes. It is sayed, that he advanced them to high offices, whiche were moste notable in couetousnes, that when they had gathered great treasures, he might for some pretended cause depose them, and haue theyr goodes. But he vled that treasure well which he obtained by such harde and vnlawful meanes. For he fauoured good letters meruailously, and gaue great salaries and stipendes to learned men.

Euax, the philosophier, prince of Arabies, Polemius of India, Pacorus of the Medes, Hirthacus of the Aethiopes, Beor of the Aegiptiones.

Corbzeid king of Scottes died, and left after him thre yonge sonnes, called Galdus, Tulcan and Brekus.

Titus, the son of Vespasian, remeued his hoste to the siege of Hierusalem: before whose comminge, the citty was deuided by discencion into thre partes: whereof the one kept the temple, of whiche sorte Cleazarus was capitaine: an other companie helde the nether part of the citee, and amonge theym one Iohannes was chiefe ruler:

The

4032

71

25

4033

72

27

at res
nbris
ni.

The thirde faction had the vpper parte of the citee, ouer them ruled Symon the son of Gioza, by which diuision & often skymishes, that wer bet wene them, much of their vitail and purueiaunce was destroyed. In soo much that shortly after the siege beganne, the citee was in so harde case, that a bussell of corne was solde for a talente: and the poore people forced to eat the leather of their bucklers and olde shoues, ore dounge, and that filthines (lyyng in the comon synkes) that vneth any man coude be holde without greete anoyauce. A noble woman by vn tollerable hunger was constrained to eat her own naturall childe.

At the same tyme Cerealis ouercam Cluists and Claficus, which rebelled with the frenchemen and Germans

The Scottes, because Corbreid Baldus. the eldest son of kyng Corbreid, was not of sufficiēt age, made Dardanus (the nephew of Metellane) their kinge, who for his semely personage was greatly beloued of his people. At the beginning of his empire he vsed the counsaile of his nobles: but after .iii. yerres, he lette all iustice and honestee, and slydde into moste vncleane bycs and cruell tyzany, and lastly endeouored to haue murdered Baldus with his bzetherne, wherfore the Scottes deposed and put hym to death, whan he had reigned .4. yerres.

M Artus the son of Aruiragus, an excellēt wyse man was ordeyned kinge of Britaine: In his time Lo. 4024
dyke, kinge of the Pictes (whiche were a people of Scythia) accompanied with the Scottes, invaded Britaine: and spoyle the countrey wyth sworde and fyre, as gainst whome Marius, with his knyghtes, assembled in al hast, and gaue to them sharpe bataill: wherin Leddyke, capitaine of the Pictes, was slayne: with a great nombre of his souldiours: to the which remayned, Marius gaue inhabitaunce in the further parte of Scotlande. And for as much as the Britains disdeigned to geue their daughters to the in marriage, they acquainted them with the Irishemen, and married their daughters, and grewe in processe of tyme to a great people.

The citee and temple of Hierusalem was taken and conquered by Titus, and in suche wise destroyed by the souldiours

C. ii.

diours

The peere
of the
world

The peere
of the
world

The thirde parte of

The pere
of the
world.

The pere
of Christ.

blouts, that bneeth a man woulde haue iudged it ones to haue bene inhabited, which thing chaunced. 1101. yere after the temple was firste buyloed of Salomon: the same daye of the monthe that it was firste destroyed by Nabu gadnazar kinge of Babylon.

In the tyme of the syege were slayne of the Iewes, 110000. ouer and besyde them whiche Vespasian slewe in subduynge the countrey of Galilee 17. thousande Titus sent into Alexandria, ther to be kept in most vyle and paynfull bondage. 2000. he broughte in his triumphe to Rome, of the whiche, parte he gaue to be deuoured of the wylde beastes, parte otherwise most cruelly were slaine: at whiche tyme appered the most terrible example of the wrathe and vengeance of god, for the contempte of his worde and veritee. For what herte is soo stonie or hard, that wyll not tremble for feare, when it considereth, that god toke soo sharpe punishment vpon his owne people, whom before he loued moste entierlye, and amonge al other nations of the world chose for his peculiar flock and byneyarde?

4035

74

Vespasian, the emperour, and Tityus his sonne, triumphed for their victorie and conquest in Judea.

Rufius Bassus was ordeined legate or graund capitaine into Judea: where he broughte in subiection certayne of the iewes, which rebelled in the towne named Macherus. Vespasian endeouored with honest lawes to restore the citee of Rome to hir pristinate fourme, beautee, and pleasantnesse: which was greatly corrupted by the vncleane lyfe of that monstruous emperour Nero.

4036

75

The temple of Jupiter in the Capital was repaired by Vespasian.

Celennius Petus, president of Surie, discomfited, put to flight, and toke prisoner Antiochus, kynge of Comagene, and sent him to Rome to the emperour.

4037

79

Here endeth the histories of Joseph and Egesippus de bello Iudaico.

Achata, Lycia, Rhodus, Byzantium, Samus, Thracia, Cilicia, Trachea, comagene were made prouynces of the empire.

Galdus, after the deathe of Dardannus, was ordeined

ned kyng of Scottes, the most balaunt and noble pynce
that euer reigned amonge the, and endued with many ex
cellent and princely qualitees. At the firste entree he pu
nished the wycked counsaylours of Dardannus, and af
ter called a parliament of his lordes, wherein many noble
actes were deuysed, and the naughty lawe of byng Cw
yn (by the whiche the wives of the commons were free to
the nobles) was abrogated and fozedoone. Of hym the
Scottes made many goodly remembraunces, in the ho
nour of his noblenes and great victories, that he atche
ued. About this tyme Petulius Cerealis was sent of the
Romaines as lieutenant to Britaine, where he discom
fited Galdus kinge of Scottes, banquished the Pictes
and Splugians, subdewed to the Romaines the coun
treys of Brigantes, ouerthrowe and chased Uodicia, the
daughter of the ballant woman Uoada, and quieted the
Kentish men and certayne other Britons, whiche rebel
led. After this Petulius, a Romain named Julius Fron
tinus, was lieutenant in Britain, who warred also against
the Scottes and Pictes.

Vespasian made enquirie of all the noble and balaunt
men amonge the Jewes, whiche were linially descended
from Dauid. Whereof ensued a sore and greuous perse
cucion amonge the Jewes.

Three citees of Cypres weere ouerthrowen wyth an
earthquake.

A sore pestilence at Rome.

Vespasian dyed of the flire.

Titus, the son of Vespasian, resigned. 4041. 85
4042. 81
He was excellently well learned, and of so pleasaunt, swete, and
gentle behauiour, that he meruailously deserued the fa
mour of all men. In so much that he was therfore named
comonly, the loue and delite of mankinde. He neuer dis
missed any man frome hym, without hope to obtaine his
request: sayng, that no man ought to go sadde from the
speache of a pynce. When he remembred, that in a hole
daie he had done no benefytte to any man, he saied to his
familiaris: frendes, I haue losse a daie: reputing that daie
lost, that he had not done some benefytte in, beyng admit
ted high prieste, he aduanted, that he toke that office vpon
hym

Ec. iii.

The pere
of the
worlde

The pere
of Christ.

4040

79

4041

85

4042

81

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.
4043

The yere of Christ
82
him onely to the entente to kepe his handes cleane from annu re-
bloudeshed: and affirmed, that him selfe woulde rather gum br-
die, than he woulde suffer any man to perishe. tanni:

The hyll in Campaine, named Vesulius, raged moze
beheimently with fyre than it was wont, and casting out
great flames, dyd much hurt to the countreys lyng ther
about. 10

A great parte of the citee of Rome was destroyed with
sodein mischaunce of fyre, which continued burning the
space of. lxx. daies.

Turpaneus about this tyme was king of Danes.

Titus the emperour, beyng sodeinly taken with an a-
gue, and perceiuing that death woulde nedes ensue, great-
ly bewayled, that his life shuld be taken from him cause-
lesse, for so muche as he neuer didde any thinge in all his
life, whereof it did repente him, sauyng one: but what
that thing was, he shewed not.

Anacletus was made the. ii. byshop of Rome after
sainct Peter.

4044

83

Domitian, by nature brother vnto Titus, but betaye
vnlike in maners, reigned. 15. yeres, whan he was firste
admitted to the empire, he vsed much to be in his secrete
oratorie alone, and there did nothing but take flies, and
picke them throug with a needle, wherfore whā it was
demāndid of. A Chrysus, who was with the emperour,
he wyttlye answered. Not so muche as a flie. At the be-
gynninge this Domitian shewed him selfe to abhorre soo
much from murther, that vneth he woulde suffer oren to
be kylled for their sacrifice: and beyng ordeined Censor
of maners, was very diligent in his office, but in the end
folowynge the steppes of Nero and Caligula: he became
a detestable and cruel tyranne.

In the tyme of this Domitian, a ballaunt capitaine of
the Romaines, called Julius Agricola, made war nyne
yeres continually upon certain of the Britains, Scottes
and Pictes, and discomfited the in many greate batails,
vntil that Domitian enuyng his succeſſe, remoued him
from that prouince, he subdued to the Romains, Auan-
dale, the Isle of Man, Carrick, Kyle, & Cuningham, wth
many

many other regions.

Domician ordeyned, that no man shoulde be gelded or made Eunukes.

Anianus, bisshoppe of Alexandria, ended his life: after whom succeeded Abilius. 4046

The emperour Domician, outlawed and put to deathe a great noubre of the noble men and ancient senatours of Rome. 4047

Quintilian was famous, & taught Rhetorike in Rome, receiuing his salary out of the emperours scheker. In his time were many other great learned men, as Cornelius Tacitus, the yonger Plinie, Sueton, Valerius, Flac-

cus, Patauinus, Juuenal, Marcial.

Domician passed the riuer Dounce or Dunaw, wyth an army against Darnopelus king of Gothes.

The Gothes baynquished and putte to flighte the Romaines, and slue theyr capitaine Fuscus.

Menander, a notable heretike, & disciple to Simon Magus, was famous in these dayes, teachynge, that no man could be saued oneles he were baptized in his name, and by his magicall artes wroughte wonderfull straunge thynges.

In the same time was Cherinthus an other heretike who taught, that Chyste shoulde come and reggne in the worlde the space of a thousande yeres after the resurrection, and then shoulde ascend into heauen, with his people where they shoulde liue alwaies in pleasures of gluttonye and lecherie.

A kinde of heretikes, called Ebionites, affirmed, that Christ was only man, begotten of man and woman and not god, they receiued onely the gospel of saint Mathewe and taught, that all partes of the olde lawe oughte to be kepte with the newe.

At the same time sprang the heresies of the Nicolaites, whiche beleued: that euery man might lefully vse euery woman that he lusted: whiche heresie was immediatly condemned, but god graunte that it be not rylen agayne in these our dayes.

The holpe man Ignatius gouerned the congregation of christians at Antioche

The yere of the worlde The yere of Christ.

85

86

88

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

About this time the power of the Romaynes beganne to
decaye in Britaine, for theyr capitaine Trebellius lost all
the countreys that Agricola had conquered, and by Gal-
das kinge of Scottes, with the ayde of the Pictes (as
theyr chrouclers write) was chased out of the boundes of
Scotlande, and glad to desire peace of kinge Galdus.

Policarpe ruled the church at Smirna, and Papias
at Hieropolis.

4053

92

Domitian the emperour, outraging in pride, gave com-
maundement, that he would be called lord and god.

4054

93

Domitian triumphed for his victory ouer the Danes
and Germans.

Clement succeded Anacletus in the bishoprike of Rome
and liued. ix. yeres.

4055

94

Abia king of Arabia, Helge of Norwage, Ingellus of
the Danes.

The emperour perceiuing to be plenty of wine, and be-
ray great scarcitee and dearth of corne and other graine
thought, that by ouermuche diligence giuen to the vine-
yardes, men shode neglecte the tyllage of the earthe: and
therfore commaunded, that in Italy, no man shoulde sette
newe vines, and in other prouinces, that the one halfe of
theyr vines shulde be cut downe to the ground.

4057

96

Domitian, folowinge the example of Nero, as well in
cruelte as other vices, reised the seconde persecution a-
gainste the Christians: at whiche time S. John the A-
pottle was banished into Patmos, he put to deathe al-
so the nephues of Iuda, called frater domini, as well for
that they were of the linage of Christ, as because they dis-
cended from the house of king Dauid.

4058

97

Simeon bishoppe of Hierusalem, after dynerse other
tourmentes, was crucified to deathe, whome one named
Iustus did succede in that bishoprike.

Domitian expelled out of Italy philosophers, and men
hauinge knowledge of the mathematicall sciences.
Domitian, for his cruelte beinge odible to all men, was
by a conspiracy murdered in his chambze, his owne wife
consenting thereto.

4059

98

Hitherto Suetonius continued his history.
Perna, an aged and wise Senatour folowed Domiti-
an in

an in the empyre, and reigned one yere. ii. monethes and
bist. dapes. He caused by decree of the Senate, that what
soeuer was enacted by Domitian, shuld be of none effect:
and gaue a generall commaundement, that al exiled per-
sons shoulde retorne home. wherfore S. John returned
from Pathmos, to the Ephesians: where he wrote hys
gospel.

Nerua commaunded, that all chyliden, whose paren-
tes were nedye, shuld be founde of the common cost.

27 Traiane, a Spaniarde bozne, after Nerua was admit 4060
ted to the imperpail auctoritee, and reigned. 19. yeres.

This man, if you consider in hym, the prosyte of the Ro-
magne empyre, whiche he greatly enlarged, or polytike
and civile gouernance, vndonbtedly he was a right good
and commendable pynce, but towarde Christian religio
impious and cruell. For he caused the thyrdo persecution
of the churche. When he was by certayne of his counsaill
reprehended for ouer much familiaritee with inferiours,
he aunswered, that a ruler ought to be of such behauoure
towarde his subiectes, as he wold haue the pynce to him
if he were priuate: when he ordeined any pretour, geuing
to him the sword, he wold say in this wyse: vse the sword
against my ennemies in iuste causes, and if I my selfe do
otherwyse than Justice, vse thy power vpon me also.

29 Gerdon was ordeined the thirde bishop of Alexandria. 4062
Zacharias the fourth bishop of Hierusalem.

From the deathe of Simeon, to the reigne of Adrian,
we reade of no sure succession of the bishops of Hierusa-
lem, for by the crueltee of the Emperours and their sub-
iectes, they were put to deathe well nere as faste as they
were ordeyned.

30 Euaristus the fourth byshop of Rome. bist. yeres.

Traiane ouercame the Danes, and made leage with
their kynge Decebalus, he triumphed for his victory ouer
the Danes and Scythians.

31 Traiane subdued dyuers nations to the Romaine em-
pire, as the Hybertians, Sauromatans, and the people of
Arabie and Cholchis. He broughte vnder hys possessyon
many citees, as Sileucia, Babylon, Ctesiphon: he made
a bydge also ouer the ryuer of Danubie, whiche had. 20,

Do.

arches

The
pere of
the world

The
pere of
the world

The third parte of

Ann
gu
ann

arches of square stone, euerye arche .150. fote in heygth, in
breadthe, 60. fote, and betwene euerye arche .170. fote, the
brydge was in length .9. hundred paces and one.

Dacebalus, kyng of the Danes, brake hys leage, & was
again vanquished by Traiane, and hys kyngdome made
a prouynce.

4065

104

Cobias the .v. bishop of Hierusalem.

Traiane set a nauye of shyppes in the redde sea, to the
entent to invade the borders of India.

In Scotlande, after the death of Galdus, succeeded hys
son Lugtak, an odious and myscheuous tyran, and was
as much hated of the Scottes for hys vice, as hys father
was loued for his vertue. He slewe many of the rich men
quelye to confiscate their goods, and committed the go-
uernaunce of the realme to most vnjust and couetous per-
sons, and with their companye was mooste delited. He de-
flowred hys owne aunes, sisters, and daughters, and
scorned hys wyfe and graue counsailours, calling them
olde dotyng fooles: wherefore in the .iii. yere of his reigne
he was slayne of his nobles.

Beniamin the .vi. bishop of Hierusalem.

4066

105

The sumptuous house that Nero builded in Rome cal-
led the golden house, was suddenly destroyed with fyre.

Four citees in Asia ouerthrowen with an earthquake
as Clea, Myrina, Mytanae, Tymae, and in lyke maner
two in Greece, and thre in Galatia.

The temple in Rome called Pantheon (whiche was de-
dicated to all the goddes) was destroyed with fyre.

John the .vii. bishop of Hierusalem.

4067

106

Mogallus, beyng ordeyned kyng of the Scottes after
Lugtake, at the begynnyng gaue hym selfe to folowe the
wisdomme and maners of his uncle Galdus, and obtained
diuerse great victories against Lucius Antonius the Ro-
maine capitayne: but in hys age he became odible in all
kynde of vices, and chiefly in auarice, lecherie, and cra-
ueltye. He gaue licence to theues and robbers to take the
goodes of their neighbours without punishment: He
fyre ordeyned the goods of condemned personnes to be
confiscate to the kynges vse, withoute respecte of wyues,
chyliden, or detours: for whiche naughtynesse he was
slayne

the epitome of cronicles.

for The The
yeare of yeare of
y world Chryst.

37 Matheas the. viii. bishop of Hierusalem.

The blessed martyr Ignatius, by the commaundement of Traian, was brought to Rome to be deuoured of wild beastes, at which time when he was led towarde Rome by ten men of warre, who for their cruelty he called Leoparides, by the way he confirmed all Christian men in the fayth, as well by prayers as letters, sayinge in this wise. So that I may finde Christ, and imbrace hym, I would there should come to me fyre, gybbetes, beastes, crashinge of bones, renting of all the body, and all the tormentes of the dynell.

And when he hard the roying of the Lyons which should deuoure him, he ioyously sayd. I am the wheat of Chryst, let me be ground with the beastes teathe, that I maye be founde to be pure and fine manchet.

38 Alexander the. v. bishoppe of Rome. xi. yerres.

4701 110

Plinius the. iiii. bishop of Alexandria.

Plinius the second was famous. He wrote to Traian of the persecution of the Christians, certifyinge hym, that there were many thousandes of them dayly put to death of the which none did any thing contrary to the Romaine lawes, worthy persecution, saying that they vsed to gather together in the morning before day, and singe hymnes to a certain god who they worshiped, called Christ: In al their other ordinaunces godly and honeste, wherefore the persecution, by commaundement of the emperor was greatly dimynished.

40 Hippus the. ix. bishop of Hierusalem.

Traiane ordeyned Parthamaspates king of Parthia

4073

112

41 Armenia, Assiria, and Mesopotamia, were made provinces

4074

113

42 Antioche was wel nere destroyed, and biterly subuerted with an earthquake: at whiche time the Emperoure Traiane being in these partes, escaped hardly the danger.

4075

114

43 Seneca the. x. bishop of Hierusalem.

4076

115

The Jewes in the ctye of Cyrene (sayinge that their Mellias was come) rebelled against the Romaines, and slue of the iiii. and of the Grecians dwellynge in the city and countre nere aboute, well nere. 220000. thousande

D. ii.

The pere of
the world

The pere of
Chryste

The third parte of

Annals
of the
world

and being not contented with that shamefull murder of men, bled therein most beastly crueltye, for they did eate the fleshe of the dead men, and gyrded them selues with the bowels, and annoynted their bodys with the bloud, and couered theyr heades wth the skynnes of the deade carcases.

The Jewes of Alexandria and Cyprus, beinge moved with the example hereof, slue in those partes. 240000. hauing to their capitaine one named Armenio.

4077

116

L. Quinctus, a capitaine of the Romaynes, expelled all the Jewes out of Mesopotamia, and slue of them many thousandes. For which cause he was of Traiane made president of Judea.

44

In Egypte and Cyrene were slayne an innumerable multitude of the Jewes by a Romayne capitaine named Martius Turbo.

4078

117

The Parthians deposed Parthemaspates, which was ordeined their king by Traiane, and bled agayne theyr former liberties,

45

Justus the second byshop of Hierusalem.

4079

118

The emperour Traiane gaue place to nature, some saye he was poysoned, other affirme, that he dyed of the bloudy fluxe.

46

4080

119

Adrian reigned after Traiane in the empire .xxi. yeres.

47

This emperour was of wyse so prompt and ready, that he seemed to be prepared for all matters, wherein he communed. In maners he was diuers, solepne of behaviour, meruellous in learning, and especially in the Mathematicals: also in physike, musike, caruing painting, and grauing very excellent, in dedes of armes expert, valiant. and hardie, a great fauor of learned men, and toward them bountefull and liberall, he neuer sawe a poore man whom he did not releyse and helpe out of his necessitee, and accustomed to bisitte sicke men twise or thise in a daye: his nature much inclined to emulation and bayne gloze, and would seme most excellent in all thinges, he was more delited with hunting, than was comly for an emperour. In so much that he erected sepulchers and tomes for his greyhoundes and dogges. At the beginning he was euell spoken of, because he put diuers of the noble

ble men to deathe.

Quadratus and Aristides, deuout and wellearned men wrote certayne booke to Adrian in defence of chrystian religion, by meanes wherof the emperour was moued to wyte to Minutius Fundanus, proconsul of Asia, that no man should persecute the chrystian people.

Adrian repaired the citee of Alexandria, whiche was before destroyed and pilld by the commocion of the iewes

48 The emperour Adrian remitted the tribute to dyuers cytees, and forgave all maner debtes, whether they pertained to him selfe, or to the comune treasure. 4081

49 Xistus, the sixte byshop of Rome. xii. yeres.

Plutarke the philosopher, Phauozinus, apuleus, Aulus Gellius appian, & many other lerned me were famous. 4082

Adrian, hauing knowledge, that the Romaines in Brytayne were ouerset by the Scottes and Pictes, went thitherward with a strong army, and without any notable battaille (as sayth the scottishe history) made a walle. 80. myles of length, which some of our cronicles attribute to Seuerus.

50 Iustus the. v. byshoppe of Alexandria.

M. Antonius, for his studiousnes and grauitie surnamed the philosopher, a man of merueillous lerninge and excellent wisdom was borne at this time. He was geuen to the studie of good letters euē frō his infancy, and by his parentes brought by therein veray diligently, so that he had prepared for him scholemaisters and instructors most excellent in al sciences, he was after, by the commaundement of Adrian, adopted to the empire by Antonius Pius. 4083

51 Adrian the emperour to the entente he would retaine his empire in quietnes, traualled thogh all prouinces pertaining to the Romaines as wel in Europe as Asia, and by the maiesty of his presence and great wysedome quieted dyuers comocions without warre or bloodshed. 4085

Cornelius the. 4. byshoppe of antioche.

Leuf the. xii. byshop of Hierusalem.

52 Adrian repaired Carthage, & gaue it to name Adria- nopolis. 4086

53 Eferem the. xiii. bishop of Hierusalem.

D. iii.

Collas

The
yeare of
the world
4087

The
yeare of
Christ.
126

4090
4092

129
131

4094
4095

133
134

4096

135

The thyrde parte of

Callus the sonne of Marius, was ordeyned kynge of the Brittaines, he was brought by even fro his yong age in Italy among the Romans, and there fore favoured them greatly, and payed the tribute truly. Some write that he buylded the towne of Colchester.

Joseph the .xiii. bishop of Hierusalem

Andas the .xv. bishop of Hierusalem: to his time al the bishoppes of that cite descended of some familie of the Jewes and were circumcised.

Minutius Fundanus proconsull of Asia.

Barchochabas, beinge of grete power and estimation amonge the Jewes, vexed with most cruel tourmentes, as many of the christians as would not deny Christ and his religion.

Antonius, a childe of wonderful beautye and fauour bred in Egypte, while Adrian was there in progresse, whom he loued so exceedingly, that he erected temples & ymages in his name, and buylded a towne in thos partes called Antonius, he affirmed also, that he sawe a sterre in the firmament, whiche should be called Antonius sterre, according to the name of the childe.

Telesphorus the .viii. bishop of Rome. vii. yeres.

Cumanes, the .vi. bishop of Alexandria.

Satan, the infest enemy of al trouth, which leaueth nothing vndon, wherby he may hinder the religio of christ which at this time was greatly augmented and spread largely in the world, solued by his ministers certayne heresies in the church, and first stirred up Saturninus, which in all poyntes taughte as Menander dydde, that Christ had not a true body, but a phantastical. He denyed the resurrection, and affirmed, that .vii. angels made the world, contrary to the conscience of god the father.

The Jewes rebelled agayne, and spoiled the countrey of Palestine: agaynst whom the emperor sent Julius Severus, who ouerthrew in Judea .50. castels & burnt and destroyed .980. byllages and townes, and slawe of the Jewes .50. thousande, so that with famine, sicknes, sword and fire, Judea was almost desolate.

Adrian erected a sumptuous library in Athens.

Marcus the first bishoppe of Hierusalem that was a gentile

gentle.

Adrian repaired the citee of Hierusalem, and named it Aelia Capitolina. He graunted inhabitaunce therein onely to Christian men, and defended the Jewes to enter into the citee.

Celotinus Commodus was adopted to the empire by Adrian, he was a veray delicate and nice person, greatlye delighting in strange pleasures, for he made hym a bedde of rose leaves, and a coverlede of the floures of lillies: hys sotenien he caused to weare whinges like to Cupido, and gave them the names of the foure wyndes, he died befoze he toke fruition of the empire.

The notable heretike Basilides was famous: who amonge other thynges taught, that Christ was not crucified, but Simon Cirenens, whiche was constrained to beare the crosse, when Christ wared salute. he affirmed also, that it was noo offence to forsake Christ in tyme of persecucion: he denied the resurrection. Against whose he relies a learned man, named Agrippa Castor, wrote certayne booke, whiche were after in great prynces amonge the Christians.

Adrian the emperour died with bledying at the nose.

Antonius Boionius, who for hys clemencie and gentle behauoure, was surnamed Pius, succeded Adrian, and reigned .22. yeres. This man was of pleasat nature, gentle in maners, honourable in continance, quicke of witte, of excellent eloquence, famous in learning, sobze, diligent, patiente, curteyse, liberall, muche geuen to housbandrye and tyllage of the earthe: and all these thynges in measure, withoute bostryng and vainglorie. he vled often this princely sentence of Africane: I had liefer saue one citizen, than destroye .1000. aduersaryes. he vled hys frendes beyng emperour, as he dyd when he was a pryncate persō.

Viginus the bish. byshoppe of Rome.

Carpocrates, the famous heretike, was in these dayes: whiche denied, that Christe was God: and saied, that he was not borne of the virginne Mary: but onely gotten of the seide of Ioseph, and that he suffered amonge the Jewes, and hys soule onely ascended into heauen. He affirmed also, that the world was made by angelles, and not by god.

4097

136

4098

137

4099

138

4100

139

4101

140

4102

141

The
peare of
p world

The
peare of
Christ.

The thyrde parte of

An
gū
tann

by god. He reſected the olde teſtament, and denied the ge-
neral reſurrection.

Valentinian and Cerdon, notable heretikes, came to
Rome, Valentinian denied that Chriſt had a natural bo-
dy, but rather a phantaſtical.

4103

142

Cerdon taughte, that Chriſt was neuer borne of a wo-
man: and that he had no fleſhe, nor ſuffered any paſſion,
but feined onely to ſuffer: He affirmed, that god, whiche
is declared in the lawes and prophets to be god, was not
the father of our ſaviour Chriſte: for ſo muche as he was
known, the other unknown, the one was iuſt, the other
was good. It was his doctrine alſo, that ſome creatures
were of them ſelues yll, and that they were not made of
that god, that was the chiefe goodneſſe, but of an other
god of al naughtynes, whom he called the chiefe or pyn-
cipall myſchiefe. He ſayed alſo, that the olde teſtaments
was naught.

Juſtine the philoſopher wrote a booke to the emperoure
and Senate, in defence of Chriſtian religion.

Callianus the ii. Biſhop of Hieruſalem of the Gentils.

4105

144

About this time was a great famine in Rome. 30. hou-
ſes alſo, were deſtroyed with fire. Epher overſhadowed the
citie. In Asia dyuers townes were overthrowen wth
earthquakes. A chylde was borne with two heades. A
woman at one byrthe was deliuered of .v. chyl dren. In
Melia. iiii. meke lions offered them ſelves to every man to
be taken: at this tyme what ſoever miſfortune happened
in any parte of the worlde, it was holly imputed to Chri-
ſtian religion.

Conarus, whiche was the chiefe cauſer of hys fathers
death was made kynge of Scottes, who dyſſimuled the
vices, wher to he was naturally inclined: but as ſoone as
he was eſtabliſhed in the kyngdome, he waſted al the rei-
nes pertaininge to p crowne in hys leude luſtes, and gave
landes and riches to moſt vile and naughtie perſones, be-
cauſe they fauoured his corrupt lving. He inuēted new
actions vpon hys people: and therefore was of hys no-
bles caſt in pryſon, and his wycked counſailours haged.
In his place Argadus guyded p realme about. 14. yeres.
Herus the .v. byſhoppe of Antioche.

Crefcens

	The yeres of the worlde	The yeres of Christ
27	Crescens a philosopher caused Justine a greate learned man and defendour of Christian religion, to be persecuted, because he rebuked the philosophers. In whiche persecution Justine with his death glorified Christ and confirmed his religion.	4113 152
34	Pollicarpe bishop of Smirna came to Rome.	4120 159
	Anicletus the .x. pope .xi. yeres.	
35	Acidius Cornelianus ruler of Siria	4121 160
	Julianus the .viii. bishop of Hierusalem.	
36	Antonius Pius the emperour, gaue place to nature.	4122 161
37	Marcus Aurelius Antonius succeeded Pius, and reigned .xix. yeres. He made Lucius Verus his kinsma of equall power with him in the empire. This Lucius was muche given to wanton and dissolute livinge, and was of nature fierce and cruel: but Marcus was of excellent vertue, wisdom and learning, and seemed to be prouided of god against the troubles and miseries which happened to the common weale in his time. For vndoubtedly the state of this empire had bene greatly appared, ne had bene the great wisdom of this emperour: which by his foresight and counsaile gouerned the same and kepte it from much danger: he made many goodly lawes which at this day remayne in the pandectes.	4123 162
38	Mologesus, king of the Parthians sente his defiance to the emperour, made warre vpon the Romans and destroyed Acidius Cornelius president of Surie, agaynst whom Lucius Verus was sent with an army: who when he came to Antioche and Daphnis in Surie, gaue hym selfe to pleasure and banquettinge, and made warres by his capitaines.	4124 163
	Statius Priscus fought prosperously in Armentie and toke their chiefe towne Artaxatae.	
	Acidius Cassius and Marcius the Roman captaines perced the countrey with their host eue vnto Babilon, & Media, subduing alwaies their aduersaries before them: for which prosperous successe Lucius Verus, though he were not present, was named Parthicus Armenticus, & Medicus.	
	In this time flourished the famous astronomer Ptolemy, by whose benefite remayne at this day in the world	
	Ce the	

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

the noble sciences called Mathematicall: the knowlage anni re
wherof the Egipcians had kept amonge them eue from gum br
the time of Ioseph, to this Ptolomet, whiche is aboute tanni
2000. yeres. For first the great Alexander, & afterwarde
the Romans for that cause had Aegypt alwayes in high
estimacio: and lest that goodly knowlages should decay
with great costes maintained the Aegyptias schole: whi
che than at last perished, when that countrey became
subject to Ptolemy and the Saracens, wherein that cur
sed people moſte of all other thinges declared their rude
Barbariknesse, suffering that noble schole: which hadde
continued aboue thousandes of yeres, & ben preserved bi
so many great princes, in the which flourished al kindes
of honest disciplines, throug their vile ignorance and
crueltee to perishe.

4126

165

Seleucia, a noble citee of Assyria was taken, and 500. 40
thousand men therein.

A grest dearth and pestilence in Rome, so that they car
ried out men that were dead in cartes and wagons.

Marcus the emperor published very straighte lawes
concerninge of dead men.

Ethodius, nephewe to Mogallus, was ordeyned king
of Scottes, and reigned. 13. yeres. This man was great
ly delyting in huntinge, and made manye lawes therof
he rewarded Argadus for his good administracion of iu
stice, he quieted the ples, and beyng accompanied with
Picces, bāquished Victorine the Romain capitayn, and
broke downe the wall of Adria.

4127

166

The emperor loked for warre of the Bytcons: agaynst 41
whom he sent Calphurnius Agricola.

Aufidius Victorinus went with an army agaynst the
Carteans, whiche had broken into Germanye and Rhe
sta and spoiled those partes.

4128

167

The two emperours, Marcus and Lucius, triumphed 42
for the victories in Parthia.

4129

168

The emperours of Rome made preparacion for a leoper 43
dous warre agaynst the people of Germani named Mar
comanni.

4130

169

A greuous persecution of the Christian people in Asia 44
and in France: where a great numbꝛ of them, whiche
trale

alred truly professed Chyriste, suffered most cruell tourmentes and peines. At Lyons in France were many chzistians martyred, among the which was Photinus their bishop whō Irenæus succeded: whose woꝝkes remaine at this daies, to the great profit of chzistian religion.

Soier the .x. pope. 8. yeres.

45 The holy man Polycarpus bishop of Smirna, was burnte,

Alianus, bishop of Sardis wrote a booke to Antonias the emperour in defence of chzistian religion. 4131

Theophilus the .6. bishop of Antioch.

Valens the .9. bishop of Hierosalem.

46 When bothe the emperours came with their puissance to the citee Aquileia, the Germans which were causers of the foresaide commocion, repented theym and desired peace: whiche being to them graunted the emperours returned into Italy. By the waye it fortuned Lucius to dy

48 After that Marcus was returned into Italye, not onely Marcemanni, but also diuers other people of Germanye rebelled: against whō the emperour sped him in all hast which warre he finished and subdued his enemies with as great wisdom, fortune, and successe as euer did any prince that man can remembre. 4134

49 When that the emperours souldiours were inclosed by his enemies, and in great distres of water: by the prayer of certaine, chzistians, whiche were as than in the holl it rained so plentifully that not onely they were relieved with abundance of water, but also a great numbꝛe of their aduersaries slaine and destroyed with the tempest of raine and lightning. 4135

Dolicianus the .x. bisheppe of Hierosalem that was a gentle.

50 Auidius Cassius who was sent to quiete the east partes traisterously named him selfe emperour: but not long after he was slaine of his owne souldiours, and his heade brought to the emperour. 4136

51 In this time diuers deuoute and greate learned men bothe in writinge and open disputations, defended the chzistian verities against the baine opinions of many heretikes, that were spꝛead in the church, as Regesippus Ce. ii. Dionis: 4137

170

171

172

174

175

176

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

Dionisius bisshappe of Corinth, Pynithus of Crete and
Theophilus of Antioche, Melito of Sardis, Irenaeus of gum
Lions Apollinarts of Hieropolis, Modestus, Philippus
Mulanus and other.

Tatian an horrible heretike, was famous, whiche be-
fore tyme was a chystian, & disciple of Justine the Mar-
tyr, this man taught, that matrimonye was noo better
than horedome or aduoutry. He forbade also diuers kin-
des of meat. s.

About this time Calpurnes Agricola was sent from
Rome into Britaine, where he repayed the walle of A-
drian, that was broke down by the Pictes and Scottes,
he subdued the welshemen and other Britons that rebel-
led, and quieted the Ile of Wight.

4138

177

Antonine & his sonne Commodus, triumphed for hys
victory in Germanye.

4139

178

Cleutherus the xii. pope. xlii. yeres.

The noble and famous phisician Galene, Salustius Ju-
lianus the lawier, Fronto the famous orator, Oppian
a poete, were in great estimacion.

Pontanus, an heretik, taught marriage to be dissolved,
and prescribed lawes of fasting.

Prisca and Maximilla, women, whom Pontanus af-
firmed to haue the spirite of prophete.

4141

180

Gratus proconsul of Asia.

Lucie the sonne of Coilus, was ordeyned kinge of
Britones, who in all his actes and deedes folowed
the steppes of his forefathers in suche wise, that he
was of al men loued and dreab. This Lucie in the eight
yere of his reigne, that was about the yere of our lord
187. sent louinge letters to Cleutherus pope, desiringe
him to sende some deuout and lerned men, by whose in-
struction bothe he and his people mighte be taught the
saythe and religion of Christe, whereof Cleutherus be-
ynge veray glad, sent into Britaine two famous clerkes
Faganus and Duntanus, by whose diligēce Lucie and
his people of Britaine were instructed and baptized in
faith of Christ. 1294. yeres after the arriuall of Brute.

The citee of Smirna was ouerthrowen with an earth-
quake, for the reftauracio wherof, the emperoz remitted
ten

ten peres tribute.

Marcus Aurelius Antonius ended his life.

The pere
of the

The pere
of the

Antonius Commodus the. 18. Emperour, reigned af-
ter his father. 13. peres. This man, although he were of

4142

181

nature mischeuous, wicked cruell, and even from his in-
fancy inbrasinge filthy pleasure, gluttony, riote, with o-
ther vices: yet by the counsaill of certayne wise men, whi-
che befoze apperteined to his father, at the beginning of
his reigne his dissolute life was much restrained, but at
length, through the importune sute of flatterers, he shut
up his eares against all good reason and counsaile, and
alwaye sought occasions to despatch out of the way the
mooste wise and grane Senatours, whiche were as bz-
dels to his naughtinesse. He vsed often times to play na-
ked at weapons with the swoorde players, not only in the
common scholes, but also openly in the theatre: wherby
he greatly defaced the imperiall maiestee.

Comodus triumphed for his victories ouer the Germans
Pantenus, a man of great deuotion and learning, was
in highe estimation at Alexandria, and taughte in open
schole diuine letters: of whiche occasion the custome re-
mained there alwayes, that certayn most excellent in al
kinde of learning, should be chosen to instructe the peo-
ple in godly knowlage.

Lucilla, the emperours sister, for so muche as she was
by her brother depriued of certayne imperialle honours
which were geuen to her by hir father: by meane of adul-
terie, entised a noble yonge man, named Quadzatus, to
conspire against the emperour: who by the counsaile of
the moze part of the senate, committed the whole matter
to one Quintianus, whiche watching his time, shoulde
slea the emperour, but he by his rashnes was detected ta-
ken and straighly examined, and vttered the hole conspi-
racie. For whiche cause Commodus kended a greuous
hatred towarde the senatours.

4414

183

Perennius, whom Commodus had made gouernour
of the empire vnder him, for so muche as by pryuy mea-
nes he aspired to the imperiall auctozitee, was putte to
death.

4184

187

In these dayes was great quietnesse in the churche, and
many

The thirde parte of

The reue
of the
world.

4149

4151

By per
of 4148

188

190

many noble men of Rome were conuerted to the faith: among which was Appolonius, who reading openly in the senate a booke that he had made in defence of Christi- an religion, was after beheaded.

The capital & a liberarie were burned with lightninge.

Maternus, a souldiour, conspired to slea Commodus but he was disclosed by one of the same contracion, and so prevented.

Cleander whom the emperor had aduanced from a seruant to high dignitie in Rome, vsed greate crueltie and exaction towards the people, for which cause they reised a great commocion. The emperor to satisfie the people, commanded Cleander to be put to death, and his head to be caried about the citee.

Victor the .13. pope .x. yeres.

A great dearth and scarcitee in Rome.

Commodus published, that he would be called Hercules, and the sonne of Jupiter.

The Scottes and Pictes not longe from this time ouerthrew Trebellius the Romaine capitaine in Britaine.

The Britons, through the couetousnes of Trebellius rebelled, and were banquished, shortly after Pertinax was sent by Commodus into Britaine, and warred against the Scottes, and with gentlenes and wyle counsaile quited the Britons.

4152

191

Commodus in shooting & casting the dart, had so steadfast a hande, that he would hit what so euer he appointed. Wherefore to shewe his cunnings in these feates, in the open sightes he killed a great multitude of wilde beastes. In this time were in the church many bishopps of excellent learning and sanctimonie, as Serapion of Antioch, Demetrius of Alexandria, Theophilus at Cesaria, Bacchilus of Corinth, and Policrates amonge the Ephesians.

4153

192

Actius king of Britaine, deceased: after whose death so, so much as of him remained no heire, the Britons betwene them selues fel in great distance and warre, which continued to the greate disturbance of the realme about .xv. yeres.

The temple of peace, with manie other gorgeous places

re. ces in Rome, were destroyed with fire.

1 Sterres appeared in the daye time: of the whiche some
being drawn in lengthe, seemed to hange in the ayer.

The yere of the
of Chyr
world

2 Commodus the emperour was strangled to death by
Lætus Electus, and his owne concubine Marcia.

4454

193

3 Pertinax was constrained by the Senate to take on
him the gouernance of the empire, who endeoueringe
to reduce the common weale to a good order, was cruelly
slaine of the souldiours, whan he had reigned onely two
monthes and .xxv. dayes.

4455

194

Whan Pertinax was slaine, the souldiours published
that they would aduance him to the imperiall auctoritee
whiche would most liberally rewarde them. Of whome
Julian a lawier, bought the empire, promysinge theym
great gistes: for which dede he was abhorred of the hole
cette, and not longe after hated also of the souldiours: be-
cause he was slacke in fulfilling his promises.

This disfauour of the people towarde Julian, was oc-
casion that Pescennius Niger was named emperour of
the souldiours in Surie. But he lingered at Antioche, &
made not towarde Rome against Julian.

Wherefore in the mean time Seuerus was pronounced
emperour of his souldiours in Illiria.

4 This man with all spede possible, went with an army
into Italy & caused Julian to be slayne. Whan he came
to Rome, and had the imperiall auctoritee stablished by
the senate, incontinent he augmented his army, & went
against Niger: but feyringe that Albinus, beinge as then
of great power in Britaine, wold in his absence conspire
against him vnder faire pretence caused him to be pro-
claymed partaker of the empire.

4456

195

5 At Cizium, a citee of Asia, Seuerus discomfited Aemil-
lius the captain of Nigers host. Againe in Bithinia the
souldiours of Niger were ouerthrowen, and lastly in Ci-
licia Niger him selfe was banquished and slaine.

4457

196

The Moores spoiled Laodicea, and brent Tyrus.

Satrahel, the brother of Ethodius (because his sonnes
were not of sufficient age to guide the realme) was or-
deyned king of Scottes, he was of false and subtil wit,
and geuen to such cruelties, that for feigned causes he sue

al.

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.
4159

The yere
of Christ

198

all the frendes of Ethiodus, to the entent to defraud his annu re
heires of the crowne, wherfoze he was murdered of his gumbr
familliers, when he had reigned. 4. yeres. tanni

Seuerus, after his retourne from Durle, fearinge that
Albinus (whom before he had made partaker of the em-
pire) would endeavour by some pryue meane to defeate
him and his posteritee of the imperial succession, caused
him to be proclaimed his enemye, and went against him
with al his power into Fraunce: where he banquished
and slue him, and in despite of the senate, sent his heade
to Rome.

A great controuersie rose in the church betweene the
bishops of Asia and Europe, concerninge the feast of
Easter. Victor beinge then pope, by his sentence would
haue excommunicated all the churches of Asia, because
they kepte their easter the. 14. daye of the firste moneth,
according to the vse of the apostles, for whiche cause he
was sharply rebuked, bothe of Irenius bishop of Lyons
and many other, as not sufficiently consideringe the vni-
tete of the church.

4160

199

Seuerus returning to Rome, outlawed and put to
death many of the Senators and noble men of Spaine
Fraunce, and Italy.

Donalde, an humile and gentile prince, was chose kinge
of Scottes, and reigned. 21. yeres. He was the first kinge
that coyned any money of gold or siluer, for the Scottes
vsed before interchanging of Mercimonies, and had no
money of their owne, but the Britons and Romaines,
and other external nations. About the yere of our lord
203. this Donald procured certaine wise and lerned men
to instructe him, and his wife, children and subiectes, in
the faith of Christ, which hapned. 33. yeres after the be-
ginning of the royaume of Scotlande.

Zepherinus the. 14. pope. 20. yeres.

4161

200

The emperor Seuerus, passinge into the easie partes
spoyle Arabia, made leage with the kinges of Armonie
put to flight Actabanus, kinge of the Partheans, and
toke the citee Ctesiphon, and banquished also the Adia-
bians.

Abagas king of Persoe.

Actag

- res
bri- Lactus proconsull of Egipte, in his time was a gre- The yere The yere
1. uous persecution of the Christiāns in Alerandria: in whi- of the of Chri
che Leonides, Origines father, was beheaded, and Ori- worlde
12 gene him selfe being than but a childe, desyred martyrs 4164 203
dome with his father.
- 14 Aquila, prouoste of Aegipte, vnder whom the persecuci- 4165 203
on continued.
- Parcellus, bishop of Hierusalem, fled into the deserte
for feare of persecutiō, in his place was ordeyned Dins.
1. **T**his time continued the foresaid discord amōge 4169 208
the Britōs, which thing meued Seuerus to make
hast into that countrey, as wel to quiet the realme
as to kepe back the Pictes & Scottes, which vexed them
with warre. He caused a wal of turues and great stakes
to be made of the lengthe of. 112. myles (or after some) re-
paired the wall of Adzion. It began at Tyne, and reched
to the Scottishe sea. This Seuerus gouerned Britaine
fine yeres.
- Germanus succeeded Dins in the bishoprike of Hierusa-
lem, and after him Bordin the. 29. bishop.
2. Parcellus came abrode againe out of the deserte, and 4170 209
was desired of the people of Hierusalem to take againe
the bishoprike.
3. Tertulian, a great learned man of Carthage, was in 4171 210
this time veray excellent in diuine scriptures. He wrote
many noble workes in defence of chrestendome: But be-
yng in his middle age made a prieste, he was vexed with
sundry wronges and displeasures by the enuy of the cler-
gie of Rome: and therfore at the last, fel into the heresye
of Montanus, whiche he enterlaced with his booke that
he wrote.
4. Origene after Clement and Pantenus, was admitted 4172 211
to the office of a doctour or open teacher of diuine scrip-
ture and christian faith in Alerandria.
5. The Pictes and Scottes with their leader Fulgenius, 4173 211
perced Britaine, and destroyed much of the countrey be-
yonde Durham: with whom Seuerus mette, nere vnto
Porke, and gane theym battaile: in the ende whereof he
was slaine, and was buried at Porke, the Latine croni-
cles testifie, that he dyed of the goute.

Fl.

Valianus

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.
4174

The yere
of Christ
213

Bassianus Caracalla succeeded his father in the Emperourship and reigned. vi. yeres. Of nature he was cruel and fierce, veray tolerant of all paynes and labours, and especially in warrefare, whereto he seemed to be framed of nature. There was alway most infest enmitie betweene him and his brother Geta, whiche they father beinge in lyfe, coulde neuer extinguishe, wherefore this man beganne his regne with domesticall murther, slaying his brother, whom his father had made partaker of the empyre.

Alexander the. 30. byshop of Hierusalem.

Esclepiades bishop of Antioch.

4175

214

The emperour put to death all them whiche were of any acqeyntance or familiarite with his brother Geta.

4177

216

Bassianus married his fathers wife Julia, beyng en-
dowed thereto with his excellent fauour and beautye. He made hot bathes in Rome.

4178

217

At the citee Alexandria he commaunded all the valiant yonge men to be slayne, for displeasure that he had conceived toward the citee, for ouer liberall bourding and gesting at him and his father Seuerus.

4179

218

Bassianus Caracalla, vnder pretence of mariage passed the riuer Euphrates, and entred into Parthia: where he was receiued of the kinge, & his nobles with gret honour as comming to marry his doughter. But Bassianus suddenly gaue comandement to his army, to compass the Partheans, and slea theym all without mercye: whych thing they did in suche wise, that the king him selfe hardly escaped the danger, And so, whom the emperour could not ouercome by manhode, he vanquished by falsehood and vnrout.

In Brittain was as yet no king, but the emperour was accounted as kinge, wherefore (as some write) Caracallus a Briton of lowe birth, but valiant and hardy in martiall deedes, purchased of the emperour the keepinge of the costes of Britaine, by meanes wherof he drew to him manye knightes of his countrey, and accrued deadly warres against the Romans, hauing the better hope for that he heard of the death of Bassianus the emperour whiche about this time was slaine by one of his seruantes.

Annals
um bri-
anni
les betwene Edissa and Carras, cities of Mesopotamia. The year The year
of the of Chri
worlde
But Polydore affirmeth, that this Caracallus tooke on
him the gouernance of Britaine in the time of Diocle-
sian: and sayeth, that this land was in good quietnes the
space of .76. yerres. With whom the latine histories seme
to agree.

2 Marcrinus, and his son Diadumenus, were named em- 4180
perours by the souldiours, and reigned one yere and .ii.
monethes, he was cruell, couetous, and muche geuen to
pleasures.

Artabanus kinge of Parthee, for the great iniurie and
reproche doone to him by Bassianus, warred vppon the
Romains. Against whom wet Marcrinus the emperour
and fought prosperously, after which battaile a peace be-
twene them was concluded.

Marcrinus for his auarice and tirannie, was betrayed
and slaine of his owne people, with his son Diadumenus.

3 Marius Heliogabalus was made emperour by the soul- 4181
diours. This beastly monster left no memory but of his
glotonie, lecherie, mischeuousnes, and ribaudrie. I wyl-
lingly let passe, howe filthelpe he deformed his propre
kinde. He was neuer .ii. dayes serued with one kinde of
meate, he neuer wore one garmēt twise, neuer copanied
twisewith one woman, sauing his wife. In his lampes
he vsed balme, and filled fishepondes with rose water, he
wore in his shoues most costly precious stones fineli en-
graued, and vsed no besture but of gold and sumptuous
silke called Holofericum, some dayes his company was
serued at meale with the brains of Astriges, & a strange
fowle named Phenecopteris: an other day with the ton-
ges of Poppingais, and other swete singing birdes, whē
he solourned in places nē to the sea, he neuer vsed fishe:
in places farre distant from the sea, al his house was ser-
ued with most delicate fishes. At one supper he was ser-
ued with .7000. fishes, and .5000. fowles. Often when
he remened in progresse, there folowed him .600. charp-
otes laden onely with baudes, common harlottes, and ri-
baudes. He sacrificed with yonge childzen, and promo-
ted to most high dignitee in the common weale cartars,
minstrelles, baudes, and most vncleane personages. In

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

fine, to all honeste and good ordre, he was a deadly enemy. When he was warned of Astronomers, that he should die a violent deathe, he provided ropes of silke to hange him selfe, swordes of golde to kill him selfe, and stronge poison of Iacinctes and emeraudes to poyson him selfe, if he were forced therto, mozeouer he made a high toure hauig the flooze of boozdes couered with golde plate bordered with precious stones, from which tower he would throwe him selfe downe, whan he was pursued of enemies, but notwithstanding al his prouysion, he was slain of the souldiours, drawn through the citee, and caste in to Tyber

4185

224

Calistus the .15. pope. v. yeres

76

Aurelius Alexander Severus the sonne of Mommea reigned .13. yeres, he was vertuous, wise, gentill, liberal sincere, and to no man hurtfull, by the diligence of his mother, he was euer from his infacie brought vp in study of good letters, and almaner of honest learning, as well marcial as ciuile he reuerenced learned mengreatly, and did nothing in the common weal, without the assistance of wise and learned counsaillours. It is wytten that he bare suche a stomacke towarde corrupte iudges, that when he chaunced to mete with any of them by the commocion of his mind he would cast vp choler, being so moued, that he could not speake and was ready with his .ii. fingers to put out theyr eyes.

Philetus bishop of Antioch

Alexander dismissed frome his court al superfluous seruantes, saying, that he was no good pupill, whiche fedde seruantes with the bowels of his common weale.

Ethodius was ordeined kinge of Scotlande, and reigned .16. yeres, he was of dull witte geuen to auarice and gatheringe of riches, & nothing mete to gouerne the royaume. Wherefore his nobles toke on them the charge, and so continued all the time of his reigne.

4187

226

Alectus a duke of Rome, was sente to subdue Carassus, whiche vnlesfully vsurped regallie in Brittain, to which Alectus fortune was so fauourable that he chased Carassus, and lastlye slue him, whan he had reigned .8. yeres.

Alex

Anni re
gum bri
tanni

Alexander the emperour forbade, that great officers should haue substitutes or vicegerentes, and commaunded euery man to do his owne office diligently.

The ye
of the
world

The ye
of A.D.

2 Artaxarces, the persian, slewe Artabanus kinge of the Parthians, and restored that kingedome to his signorie of Persee, chalenging also of the Romaines al Asia, and a part of Europe, as due to his dominion.

4188

227

4 Theodoros called also Gregorpe, and Anthenodorus disciples of Origene: and bishoppes of Ponte, were famous.

4190

229

Aphiscanus a man excellent in the knowlage of diuine scriptures, flourished.

Alectus the Romaine, whiche gouerned the Britons after he had subdued the lande againe to the Romaines, vled amonge them muche crueltie and tyrannie. Wherfore they extending vtterly to expelle the Romaines, moued a noble mā, called Ascleopidatus, to take on him the kingedome: who gathered a greatte power, and made sharpe warre vpon the Romaines: and chased them from countrey to countrey, vntil at length Alectus kepte him at London for his most suertye: whither Ascleopidatus pursued him, and nere to that citee gaue to him battaile in whiche Alectus was slaine, whan he had gouerned Britaine. 6. yeres.

1 **A**scleopidatus, after Alectus was thus slaine, girt the citee of London with a strong siege, and ther in Titus Gallus the Romaine capitaine: and ere it were long, by knightly force and byolence, entred the citee, and slew the forenamed Gallus, nere vnto a broke there at that day renninge, into whiche broke he threwe him, by reason wherof it was called Gallus or Wallus broke, and at this day: the Arate, where sometime that broke ranne, is called Wallbroke. After whiche victorie Ascleopidatus gouerned Britaine. 30. yeres.

232]

Firmilianus bishop of the citee of Ceseria in Capadocia. Alexander the emperour (as sayeth Lampadius) ouer came the Persians. But Herodian affirmeth, that partly throught his owne slacknesse, partly by the great multitude of the Persians, he was put to the worse.

The Romaine capitaine J. Cellus had prosperous successe

The thirde parte of

The yere of the worlde.	The yere of Chriſt	ſucceſſe in the warres in Mauritania, likewiſe Marus Macrinus in Aliria, and Julius Palmatus in Armenia Origene fled to Ceſacia, leuinge Heraclas in his roome at Alerandria. Pontianus the .17. pope. bt. yeres. About this time the emperour Alexander, by the coun ſaile of his mother Mammea. ſent for Origene to Rome be.ing meued with the fame of his excellēt learning and godly life. At Menſe in Germanie, Alexander with his mother Mammea was ſlayne by Maximinus, whom he of a mu lettour had aduanced t rhighē dignitees. Dometrius biſhop of Alerandria died when he had bene biſhop. 43. yeres. after whom folowed Heraclas. Maximinus was emperour after Alexander, and reyg. ned. 3. yeres. This man in his youthe was a mulettour in Thracia. After he came to Rome, and there practi ſed ſeates of armes, wherein for the wonderfull bigneſſe and ſtrength of his bodie, whiche he had ioynd with ex cellent boldnes of minde. he ſo profited, that in chſualrpe he paſſed all men of his time. Wherefore he was ſet vp of the ſouldiours agaynſt Alerander. After whoſe deathe he exerciſed great tyranny towarde his frendes. Of him it is witten, that he did eate euerye daye. 40. pounce of fleſhe and dranke. v. galones of wine. Maximinus banquiſhed the Germans: and in his re tourne, ſhewed great crueltie to the Romans. Dionisius the diſciple of Origene, ſucceded Heraclas in the ſchole at Alerandria. Maximinus persecuted the Chriſtians. Berillus, biſhop of a towne in Arabia, named Boſter. 8 na, taught that Chriſt neither was befoze his carnal na tiuitee, nor had any propre diuinitee, but onely the deite of god the father dwelling in him: whom Origene confu ted and brought againe to the vnitie of the church. The people of Afrike, not ſuſtaining the crueltie of Maximinus choſe Gordian, an auncient Senatour, to be emperour: whereof the people of Rome were veraye glad. But Capellianus prouoſte of Mauritania, for dyſ pleaſure that he bare towarde Gordian, went agaynſt hym
4194	233	
4196	235	
4197	236	
4198	237	
4200	239	

Arni 1. bym with a strong army, and in battail slue his son, and
g em br discomfited his hoste. Wherefore Gordian, fearing to
tanni come into his enemies handes, hanged him selfe.

The year
of the
world

The years
of Christ

Anterus pope one moneth, and after bym Fabian. xii
peres.

9 Maximus Balbinus, and Gordian a chylde, were na- 4201
med emperours of the senate against Maximinus, who
not longe after was slaine at Aquileia of his souldiours
Babilas beshoppe of Antioch.

240

Atherco, after the slaugther of Ethodius his father,
was chosen kinge of Scottes, and reigned. xii. peres. At
the beginninge he shewed some token of honest toward-
nes: but after he was so inuolued in all vncleane vice &
effeminatz luste, that he was not ashamed to goo in the
sighte of the people, playinge vpon a flute, and reioysed
more to be a sidlar than a prince: finally beinge pursued
fo: rauishinge the daughters of Mathalas, a noble man
of Argile, he slewe him selfe.

10 Maximus and Balbinus, for that they were not fauo- 4202
rable to the souldiours, were slayne at Rome: by whiche
occasion Gordian the childe reigned alone. This Gordi-
an accustomed to say that he was a wretched prince, fro
whom by flatterie the truth of matters is hid.

241

Sapores kinge of Persians. 31. peres.

11 Sabinianus reised a sedicion in Afrike agaynst Coz-
dian, whiche was quieted by the prouost of Mauritania

Gordian toke to wife the daughter of a wyse and wel 4203
learned man, called Pisitheus, by whose counsaile also
he gouerned the empire, with the greatte fauour of the
senate and people of Rome.

242

Porphirius the disciple of Plotine, and deadly enemye
of churistian religion, flourished in Rome. Theopompus
the philosopher at Cherona, Pricanoz the sophister at A-
thens, Africanus also a man of excellent learning, whi-
che wrote to Origene were famous.

12 Gordian went into the east against the Persians. In 4204
his iourney he banquished his enemies in Thracia. In
Surie by the counsaile of Pisitheus he ouercame Sapo-
king of Perse, and by force droue him out of Surie: he
recovered Antioche, and subdued againe Carras and
Pisibis

243

The thirde parte of

The yere of the worlde.	The yere of Christ	Actis.		anni re gumbri tanni.
4205	244	Mithreus died, in whose place the emperor made Philip perfect of the pretorie.		13
4206	245	Gordian was slaine by Philip in the borders of Perse.		14
		When the Senate had knowlage of the death of Gordian, they named Marcus to be emperor: who dyed in fewe dayes after. In his place they chose Seuerus Hostilianus, whiche shortly after in lyke maner, by the negligence of physicians, in cutting of a beine finished his life.		
4207	246	Philip, whiche slewe Gordian, was made emperor by the souldiours, and reigned .v. yeres. He was the first emperor that professed Christe, and was baptized with his wife and children, for enuy whereof he was slaine of his successor Decius.		
		Origene wrote certayne epistles to Philip, concerninge christian religion.		
4208	247	A newe heresie began, teachinge that the soule should die with the body, and bothe rise together at the general iudgement.		16
		This heresie was confuted by Origene.		
		At the same tyme were other heretikes: named Helche- saite, whiche denied certayne scriptures, and relected all Pauls epistles, whiche heretikes were in like maner confounded by Origene.		
		Dionisius bishop of Alerandria.		
4210	249	The .4. yere of the reigne of Philip was the thousandth yere of the citee of Rome, whiche was solempnised with great preparacion of sightes and playes.		18
4211	250	Cyprian, bishop of Carthage a man of possing deuocion, learning and wisdom, was famous.		19
		Philip the emperor was slaine by Decius at Verona, and his sonne at Rome.		
4212	251	Decius toke on him the imperiall auctoritee, and reigned .ii. yeres, he was valiaunt in armes: but impious toward christian religion. As sone as he was admitted forthwith he published a persecution agaynst the Christians.		20
		After the martirdome of Fabian pope, succeeded Coenellus, and liued .iii. yeres.		
		In Alerandria Dionisius their bishoppe was cruelly tourment.		

Annals. **21** **22** **23** **24** **25** **26** **27** **28** **29** **30** **31** **32** **33** **34** **35** **36** **37** **38** **39** **40** **41** **42** **43** **44** **45** **46** **47** **48** **49** **50** **51** **52** **53** **54** **55** **56** **57** **58** **59** **60** **61** **62** **63** **64** **65** **66** **67** **68** **69** **70** **71** **72** **73** **74** **75** **76** **77** **78** **79** **80** **81** **82** **83** **84** **85** **86** **87** **88** **89** **90** **91** **92** **93** **94** **95** **96** **97** **98** **99** **100** **101** **102** **103** **104** **105** **106** **107** **108** **109** **110** **111** **112** **113** **114** **115** **116** **117** **118** **119** **120** **121** **122** **123** **124** **125** **126** **127** **128** **129** **130** **131** **132** **133** **134** **135** **136** **137** **138** **139** **140** **141** **142** **143** **144** **145** **146** **147** **148** **149** **150** **151** **152** **153** **154** **155** **156** **157** **158** **159** **160** **161** **162** **163** **164** **165** **166** **167** **168** **169** **170** **171** **172** **173** **174** **175** **176** **177** **178** **179** **180** **181** **182** **183** **184** **185** **186** **187** **188** **189** **190** **191** **192** **193** **194** **195** **196** **197** **198** **199** **200** **201** **202** **203** **204** **205** **206** **207** **208** **209** **210** **211** **212** **213** **214** **215** **216** **217** **218** **219** **220** **221** **222** **223** **224** **225** **226** **227** **228** **229** **230** **231** **232** **233** **234** **235** **236** **237** **238** **239** **240** **241** **242** **243** **244** **245** **246** **247** **248** **249** **250** **251** **252** **253** **254** **255** **256** **257** **258** **259** **260** **261** **262** **263** **264** **265** **266** **267** **268** **269** **270** **271** **272** **273** **274** **275** **276** **277** **278** **279** **280** **281** **282** **283** **284** **285** **286** **287** **288** **289** **290** **291** **292** **293** **294** **295** **296** **297** **298** **299** **300** **301** **302** **303** **304** **305** **306** **307** **308** **309** **310** **311** **312** **313** **314** **315** **316** **317** **318** **319** **320** **321** **322** **323** **324** **325** **326** **327** **328** **329** **330** **331** **332** **333** **334** **335** **336** **337** **338** **339** **340** **341** **342** **343** **344** **345** **346** **347** **348** **349** **350** **351** **352** **353** **354** **355** **356** **357** **358** **359** **360** **361** **362** **363** **364** **365** **366** **367** **368** **369** **370** **371** **372** **373** **374** **375** **376** **377** **378** **379** **380** **381** **382** **383** **384** **385** **386** **387** **388** **389** **390** **391** **392** **393** **394** **395** **396** **397** **398** **399** **400** **401** **402** **403** **404** **405** **406** **407** **408** **409** **410** **411** **412** **413** **414** **415** **416** **417** **418** **419** **420** **421** **422** **423** **424** **425** **426** **427** **428** **429** **430** **431** **432** **433** **434** **435** **436** **437** **438** **439** **440** **441** **442** **443** **444** **445** **446** **447** **448** **449** **450** **451** **452** **453** **454** **455** **456** **457** **458** **459** **460** **461** **462** **463** **464** **465** **466** **467** **468** **469** **470** **471** **472** **473** **474** **475** **476** **477** **478** **479** **480** **481** **482** **483** **484** **485** **486** **487** **488** **489** **490** **491** **492** **493** **494** **495** **496** **497** **498** **499** **500** **501** **502** **503** **504** **505** **506** **507** **508** **509** **510** **511** **512** **513** **514** **515** **516** **517** **518** **519** **520** **521** **522** **523** **524** **525** **526** **527** **528** **529** **530** **531** **532** **533** **534** **535** **536** **537** **538** **539** **540** **541** **542** **543** **544** **545** **546** **547** **548** **549** **550** **551** **552** **553** **554** **555** **556** **557** **558** **559** **560** **561** **562** **563** **564** **565** **566** **567** **568** **569** **570** **571** **572** **573** **574** **575** **576** **577** **578** **579** **580** **581** **582** **583** **584** **585** **586** **587** **588** **589** **590** **591** **592** **593** **594** **595** **596** **597** **598** **599** **600** **601** **602** **603** **604** **605** **606** **607** **608** **609** **610** **611** **612** **613** **614** **615** **616** **617** **618** **619** **620** **621** **622** **623** **624** **625** **626** **627** **628** **629** **630** **631** **632** **633** **634** **635** **636** **637** **638** **639** **640** **641** **642** **643** **644** **645** **646** **647** **648** **649** **650** **651** **652** **653** **654** **655** **656** **657** **658** **659** **660** **661** **662** **663** **664** **665** **666** **667** **668** **669** **670** **671** **672** **673** **674** **675** **676** **677** **678** **679** **680** **681** **682** **683** **684** **685** **686** **687** **688** **689** **690** **691** **692** **693** **694** **695** **696** **697** **698** **699** **700** **701** **702** **703** **704** **705** **706** **707** **708** **709** **710** **711** **712** **713** **714** **715** **716** **717** **718** **719** **720** **721** **722** **723** **724** **725** **726** **727** **728** **729** **730** **731** **732** **733** **734** **735** **736** **737** **738** **739** **740** **741** **742** **743** **744** **745** **746** **747** **748** **749** **750** **751** **752** **753** **754** **755** **756** **757** **758** **759** **760** **761** **762** **763** **764** **765** **766** **767** **768** **769** **770** **771** **772** **773** **774** **775** **776** **777** **778** **779** **780** **781** **782** **783** **784** **785** **786** **787** **788** **789** **790** **791** **792** **793** **794** **795** **796** **797** **798** **799** **800** **801** **802** **803** **804** **805** **806** **807** **808** **809** **810** **811** **812** **813** **814** **815** **816** **817** **818** **819** **820** **821** **822** **823** **824** **825** **826** **827** **828** **829** **830** **831** **832** **833** **834** **835** **836** **837** **838** **839** **840** **841** **842** **843** **844** **845** **846** **847** **848** **849** **850** **851** **852** **853** **854** **855** **856** **857** **858** **859** **860** **861** **862** **863** **864** **865** **866** **867** **868** **869** **870** **871** **872** **873** **874** **875** **876** **877** **878** **879** **880** **881** **882** **883** **884** **885** **886** **887** **888** **889** **890** **891** **892** **893** **894** **895** **896** **897** **898** **899** **900** **901** **902** **903** **904** **905** **906** **907** **908** **909** **910** **911** **912** **913** **914** **915** **916** **917** **918** **919** **920** **921** **922** **923** **924** **925** **926** **927** **928** **929** **930** **931** **932** **933** **934** **935** **936** **937** **938** **939** **940** **941** **942** **943** **944** **945** **946** **947** **948** **949** **950** **951** **952** **953** **954** **955** **956** **957** **958** **959** **960** **961** **962** **963** **964** **965** **966** **967** **968** **969** **970** **971** **972** **973** **974** **975** **976** **977** **978** **979** **980** **981** **982** **983** **984** **985** **986** **987** **988** **989** **990** **991** **992** **993** **994** **995** **996** **997** **998** **999** **1000**

The
yeare of
the world
The
yeare of
Christe

4213

252

4214

253

¶ g retur

The thyrde parte of

The yeare of the world	The yeare of Christ.		Ann gū iann
4215	254	retourning to the fayth, shuld be rebaptised or no. This question was chiefly in controuersy betwene Cyprian, byshop of Carthage, and Cornelius, byshop of Rome. Cyprian affirmed that they should be rebaptised, and Cornelius the contrary. Aemilianus, in the prouince of Mesia, by treason affected the empire, agaynst whome Gallus and his sonne went forth with an army, & in battayle were both sleine. Aemilianus toke on him the empire, who beinge obscurely borne, reygned moze obscurely. For in the thyrde monthe he was slayne. Lucius, the .xii. byshop of Rome. viii. monthes, and after him Stephane. ii. yeres. Demetrianus byshop of Antioch.	23
4216	255	Valerianus, and his son Gallienus, were aduanced to the empire: This Valerianus (as Trebellius sayth) was a wise and valiant pryncce, and a right good emperour, onely in that vnfortunate, that he had a noughtye sonne partaker of the empire. But Eutropius saythe, that he was vnwise and vnmete for the gouernace of the empire. This is notable that all the noble men, whiche he made capitains ouer the souldiours in diuers prouinces, were after the sedicious commocions named emperours of the souldiours whom they gouerned.	24
4218	257	Sebellius the heretike, denied christ to be the sonne of god, and sayed, that he was not the first begotten of all creatures. He denyed also the vnderstandyng of the holy ghoſte.	26
4219	258	Valerianus persecuted the christen people. Valerianus making warre in Mesopotamia, was banquished and take prisoner of Sapoꝛes king of Perse and there led the residue of his life in most vile seruage. In so muche that Sapoꝛes bled him for a stoole to leape on his horse. When Valerian was thus taken, his sonne Gallienus reigned alone, who neuer ones profered to reuenge the ignominie of his father. This Gallienus, for his crueltie and filthy liuinge, riot, and vnhonest pleasure, was odious vnto al men, and abhorred of al the prouinces of the empire. So that in his time were moze rebelles, whiche toke	27

come on them the names of emperours, then had ben true
emperours from the time of Julius Cesar to that day.

In Fraunce the souldiers, in despite of Valerian, chose
a noble man to be emperour, called Posthumus.

38 Ingenius was named emperour in Pannonie.

39 Odenatus, a valiaunte capitayne of the Romayns, and
chiefe ruler of the countrey of Surie, called Palmyrena,
taking on hym the name of an emperoure, by force of ar-
mes recovered to the Romayns the cytee Pilibis, all
Mesopotamia, and entred with hys host into Ctesiphon:
he overthrew Sapor in battayle, and put him to flight.

The emperour Valerian banquished and slew Ingeni-
us, whiche rebelled in Pannonie, and used extreme cruel-
tee towarde the souldiers and other inhabitants.

Regillianus was chosen Emperoure in Asia nere to
Pont. This mā, after he had overcome the Sarmarians,
was slayne of the people called Korolant.

In Illiria, now called Sclauonie, Aureolus obteyned
the imperial dignitie.

30 Valerian quieted the persecucion that was moved a-
gaynst the Christians.

1 **A**t this tyme hapned a great discencion in Britayn
betwene Asclepiodatus their kynge, and one Coll
Duke of Colchester: where by, was arrered a gre-
uous warre, in whiche Asclepiodatus was slayne.

Coll toke on hym the kingdome of Britaine, and gover-
ned the royaume the space of .27. yeres, of hym is no nota-
ble thing in wytyng.

Aemilianus, affectyng the Empire in Aegypte, was ta-
ken by Theodotus, whom Valerian sente agaynst hym.

The Almaynes spoiled Fraunce.

Maximianus, being chosen emperour in Sclauonie, was
slayne of Aureolus, who before hadde obteyned the Em-
pire in those partes.

2 A certayne bishoppe of Aegypte, called Papos, taughte,
that the kyngdome of Christe shuld be a .1000. yeres here
in earth, where the electe shuld reigne in al voluptee and
pleasure.

Findok, the eldest sonne of Athirco, was made kynge of
Scottes, he kept peace with the Romayns and Britones,
Cg. 11. and

The
yeare of
the world
4220

The
yeare of
Christe
259

4221

260

4222

261

4223

262

4224

263

The thyrde parte of

The
yeare of
y^e world

The
yeare of
Christ.

4226

265

and quieted the rebellion of Donalde, a noble man of the Isles, by whose counsaile, throughte the consente of hys owne brother Carance, he was afterwarde slayne, when he had reigned .x. yeres.

Grece, Macedonie, Pante, and Asia were vered and spoyled by often inuasions of the Scithes and Gothes.

Veruailous earthquakes in Asia and Italie. A greates darkenes of the ayre contynued manye daies together: A great pestilence also reigned in diuers countreys.

Odenatus, hauing prosperous successe against the Persians, obteyned the empire of all the easte partes. This Odenatus prosyted so muche the Empire, that yf he had not ruled in the East, the power of the Romayns hadde greatlye decayed, and the Empire had bene subdued by forcyen enemies, leinge it was deuided into so many partes within it selfe.

Calienus proclaimed Odenatus to be partaker of the empire, and callinge hym Augustus, coyned money in hys name.

4227

266

Odenatus, with hys son Herode, was slayne of Meo-
neus his colēgermaine, who called him selfe emperour.

Posthumus was slaine in Fraunce by the treason of Lollianus, which reigned after him.

4228

267

Paulus Samosatenus, an horrible heretike, taughte, that Christe toke his beginninge of our ladye, and was a man only of our comon nature. Which heresy was condemned by a generall counsaile, and Paulus excommunicated.

Zebenna, wyfe of Odenatus, a woman of lustie courage, and of great policie in warre, with her .ii. yong sonnes, Herennianus and Timelaus, in despyte of Calienus (who consumed hys lyfe in lechery and banquettyng) toke on her the gouernaunce of the easte, and was called Empresse.

4229

268

Victorinus, whiche ruled in Fraunce with Posthumus, slae Lollianus, and retained the dominion of France alone. But for hys hordome and auoutrie he was slayne of the people. Then Marcus reigned there only .3. dayes, and after him Tetricus.

4230

269

Tetricus was bainquished of Aurelius emperoure of Sclauo

Ann
gū
tann

re Sclauonie, whiche ayded Calienus in dyuers batailles against them, whiche rebelled in Fraunce. Not long after, batrance happened betwene Calienus and Aureolus for the imperial aucthritie, so that deadly warre was arreared: in the ende whereof Aureolus slue Calienus and his brother Valerian, nere to Millaine.

9 Claudius obtained the empire of Rome, and was named of the souldiours, chosen and confirmed of the Senate, and reigned one yere and 9. monethes, for his valiant prowes, excellent and princely vertues, he deserved greate prayse of the Romaynes. For he restored the empire, whiche by diuers commocions was greuously shaken in the reigne of Calienus.

The emperour Claudius ouercame Aureolus, which in the countrey of Pannonie had usurped the empire a longe space. he vainquished also the terrible hostes of the Scithes and Gothes. In which. 320000. of dyuers countreis of the Barbarous people had taken armes against the Romaynes, and had also on the sea. 2000. shippes, of whiche armie a wonderfull multitude were taken and slayne by Claudius and his capitaynes, bothe on the water and on the lande.

10 Claudius subdued the Sarmatians and Germanes.

The people of Surte, named Palmirent, warred vpon the Egyptians: but Claudius recovered Aegypte to the empire, and shortly there vpon finished his lyfe.

Quintilius, a noble yonge man, and brother of Claudius, reigned onely. 17. daies, and was slaine of the souldiours at Aquileia.

11 Aurelianus, for his valiant prowes and expertnes in marciall policie, was made emperour. He of nature was seuer and rigorous, but a dyligent and sharpe correctour of dissolute maners. The people sayd, that he was a good phisicion, saying that he gaue to bitter medicins. This man, being sicke, neuer sent for phisicion, but cured himselfe with abstinence. he ouercame the Sarmatians, and the people of Germanie, called Marcomanni, which spoiled the citee of Millaine.

12 In Thracia and Illaria, the emperour vainquished the Gothes, and slue theyr Duke Cannabani. He conquered

Ug. iii.

Bithania

The The
yeare of yeare of
the world Chryst.

4231

270

4232

271

4233

272

4234

273

The third parte of

- | | | |
|-----------------------------|--------------------------|---|
| The
pere of
the world | The
pere of
Chyfte | <p>Withina, and recovered Theana. nere to Emessa he ouer Anne came Zebennia, or Zenobia, whiche named her selfe em. gu. W. presse of the easse, and beslegynge the citee Palmirena, anno. toke and brought hir prisoner in triumphe to Rome.</p> |
| 4235 | 274 | <p>Donalde king of Scottes one pere, he was taken in bat-
talle by Donalde of the Isles, and shortly after dyed.
Valerius subdued a Roma Duke called Firmus, whi. 13
che by treason affected the empire in Aegypte.</p> |
| 4236 | 275 | <p>After the deathe of kynge Donalde greate trouble was
in Scotlande. For Donalde of the Isles toke on hym the
crowne, and vsed muche tyrannie the space of. 12. yeares,
he neuer loughed but whan he harde of the dyscorde and
slaughter of his nobles, and therefore in the ende for his
crueltee was slayne of Craithlint the sonne of Findoke,
with. 200. of his naughtie counsaillours.
Eusebias, bishop of Laodicea was famous.
Tetricus, whiche was named emperoure, in Fraunce,
yelded hym and his host to Aurelianus.</p> |
| 4238 | 277 | <p>The emperour Aurelianus fortified the wals of Rome,
and so augmented the citee, that it was in compasse fiftye
miles. he published a persecucion against the Christians.
And shortly after, goyng with an armie against the Per-
sians, betwene Heraclea and Byzance, was slayne of his
secretarie Mnestaeus.</p> |
| 4239 | 278 | <p>Tacitus was emperoure. 6. monethes, and after hym
Florinus his brother. 11. monethes: whiche bothe beyng
chosen of the Senate, were slayne of the souldiours, the
one at Ponte, the other at Tarsis.
Araranes kynge of Perse.</p> |
| 4240 | 279 | <p>Probus the emperoure reigned. 6. yeres and. 4. monethes
hes he is numbred amonge the most renowned princes.
And was famous in marcyall affaires as well whan he
was private, as after he had obteyned the imperiall au-
thoritee. he quieted Fraunce, subdued the Germans, and
slue of them. 40000.
Manes, auctoure of the secte of Maniches, was in these
dayes. He was a Persian bozne, in maners rude and bar-
barous, and of a fierce and cruell nature, and withoute all
modestie, he endeouored to perswade the people. that he
represented the fourme of Chyfte. sometimes he sayed,
that</p> |

that he was Paracletus, that is the true comforter, that The The
 was promised by Chyriste. His folowers denyed Chyriste ycare of ycare of
 to haue taken veray fleshe. They relected also the olde y world Chyrist.
 testament, and part of the newe.

19 Probus the emperour in Illiria, subdued the Samaritans. In Thrace the Gothes by composition, yelded to him. 4241 280

Passing into Asia he slewe the notable robber Valsurtus, and overcame the monstrous people called Blemite which haue no heades, but their eyes and mouthes in their brestes. He restored Ioppe and Beolomais to the empire, and made peace with Parseus kinge of Parthe. He vanquished also Saturninus, which traiterously rebelled in Alexandria.

20 Cirillus bishoppe of Antioch was famous, whose woꝝ 4242 281
 kes we haue at this daye.

Proculus and Bonosus named the selues emperours at Agrippina in Fraunce, but they were quickly subdued by Probus, which in all hast led against them a strong armie.

22 Probus, by the labor of his souldiours, caused the great 4244 283
 hill in Syria, called Almus, & the mount Aureus in Asia, to be set with vines: Not longe after he was slayne

of his souldiours, because he made them to labour so sore, and not so much as in winter suffered them to be at rest.

It was his saying also, that souldiours ought not to spende corne and vitayle, excepte they laboured to profite the common weale.

23 Carus was made emperour of the souldiours: he with 4245 284
 his son Numerianus, a yonge man of great cowardnes

tooke in hande the warres that Probus had prepared for against the Persians, and when he had obteyned all the land lyeng betwene Euphrates and Tygris, without resistance of any aduersarye, purposinge to extende further the boundes of the Romain empire (as some wyte) was slayne with lightninge. Numerianus his sonne (whose eyes were sore for weapinge for his fathers death) was murdered by a per his wifes father.

25 Dioclesian succeded Carus in the empire, and reygned 4247 286
 22. yeres. He descended but of a base and unknowne familye: in so much that he was supposed to be the sonne of a notary

The third parte of

The pere of
wold Chypte

anota ry. Of witte he was sharpe, quicke, and subtil of nature geuen to cruelty. In politike affayres, studious, and diligente, towarde chystian religion, impious and cruell. At the first entre with his owne handes he slewe Aper, the murderer of Numerianus: and not long after in a leopardus battaile, vanquished and slewe Carinus the yonger sonne of Carus, which for his cruelty and filthy life was detested of all men.

Craithlinc, the son of Findoke, after the deathe of Donalde the skanne, was made king of Scottes, and reigned 24. yerres with great wisdom and iustice. In his time happened great variance betwene the Pictes and Scottes (whiche continued frendes from the time of Fergus the first king of Scottes to these dayes) for stealyng of a greyhound, wherof ensue great murder and slaughter of men on both partes.

4248

287

After that Dioclesian was aduanced to the gouernance of the empire, there hapned diuers comocios in sundry provinces, wherfore fearing that he alone shuld not be able to susteine the trauaile of so many leopordies, he made Maximian, surnamed Hercules partaker of the empire, and sent him into Gallia, to quiete the commocion whiche was moued by Amandus and Aelianus: whom he easily vanquished, and for that time brought Fraunce into a quietnesse.

Polidore and the latine historiographers referre the storye of Carausius, Alectus, and Asclepiodatus, to this time. And the Scottishe history sayth, that he was a noble man of the Scottes and uncle to kinze Craithlinc, but let the reader folowe his owne iudgement, and that shal seme to him most veritable.

4250

289

Constantius a duke of Rome, was sente into Britaine to recouer the tribute, shortly after whose arrival Coil, which than was kinge dyed, wherefore the Britains, to haue more swertye of peace, willed this Duke to take to wife Helena, the daughter of Coil, which was a wonderful fayre mayden, and therewith wel learned. This Constantius when he had recouered the tribute, returned with his wife Helena to Rome, as chiefe ruler of Britaine.

Because

Anni res gum bnd anni.	Because of diuers warres that rose in many prouinces, the .ii. emperours chose to them .ii. other noble men, Ga- lerius and Constantius (whiche was befoze sent to Biz, world taine) to helpe theym in theyr affayres, whome they called Cesars. Galerius was sent into the east partes againste the Persians. Constantius had the tuition of Fraunce. Dioclecian, after he had subdued Achilleus, that re- belled in Egypte, conquered and bitterly destroyed two no- ble and riche citees, called Busiris and Copon, he subdu- ed also the cite of Alexandria, and put manye of the no- ble men to death. Parles, king of Perse, troubled the countreyes of Ar- monie and Mesopotamia with deadly warre. Thys Par- les had a sonne so beastlye cruell, that when his father gaue vnto him a pavilion of camelles skynnes, sumptu- ously wrought betwene with golde, and demaunded whe- ther it pleased him, he answered: that it woulde please him muche better, if he mighte be kinge, that he myghte make a more gorgeous pavilion of mens skynnes. Constantius in France proued Fortune in one day to be bothe froward and favourable. For at the fyrste he was chased, and so egrelye pursued of the Almaynes, that bo- neth he hym selfe might be drawen by a corde ouer the walles of the citee Lingona: And wythin lesse than .v. houres his hoste was augmented, and he slewe of the Al- maynes well nere .40. thousande whereby theyr power was greatly decayed, and Fraunce in more quiete. Galerius whiche was sent agaynst the Persians, be- yng vanquished in battayle, fled to Dioclecian, of whom he was so vngently receyued, that when he mette him in his iourney, the space of a mile that he ranne by his cha- riote, he had not of him a woorde. But Galerius, beyng nothing therewith discomforted, repaired his armye, and in Armenia the greater ouerthwe the Persians, conquere d all Assyria, broughte in subiection fve prouinces be- yonde the riuer Tigris, and returned to the emperoure with great spoyle. Dioclecian and Maximilian triumphed for theyr greate victories, after whiche triumphe Dioclecian gaue com- mandement, that he would be worshipped as a god, say- ng <th>The yere of Chyist</th>	The yere of Chyist
	291	
	292	
	295	
	299	
	303	

303
elafus
victorif

The thirde parte of

The port
of the
of olde
w

4265

The pere
of Christ.

204

ing, that he was brother to the sonne and the moone: and Anni
adourning his shoues with golde and pfectous stoones gum
commaunded the people to kisse his feete. tanni.

By the iust iudgement of god, for certayne enormities 16
bled in the church, the greatest and moste greivous per
secution of the Chyrtianes was moued by Dioclesian:
who in the moneth of Marche, when the feast of Easter
was nigh at hand, commaunded all the churches of the
Chyrtians to be spoyled and cast to the earth, and the bo
kes of holy scripture to be burned: and that all Chyrti
an men, that were of any auctorite shuld be (as it were)
disgraded and remaine as persons infamous. And fur
thermore, that no seruant, remaining in the fayth, shuld
be made free, that all pzelates and chiefe ministers of the
church, shoulde be with al tourmentes constrained to
worship Idoles. This persecution continued .10. yeares.

4268

207

Dioclectian, and (by his counsaile) Maximian, gaue 19
by the imperial auctorite, and led the residue of theyr
life as priuate persons.

4269

208

Constantius and Galerius, which before were named 20
Cesars, succeeded in the empire: betwene whome the go
uernance therof was thus deuided, that Galerius shuld
rule in Iliria, Asia, and all the east partes: and Constau
tius in Italye, Spayne, Fraunce, Britaine and Affryke.
But he was a moderate and wise prince refused Affrike
and Italye, and reseynd onely Spayne, Fraunce, and
Britayne. This Constantius was a man of great affa
bilitee, clemency and gentylnesse, and therewith very ly
berall, in deuoting alwaye to enriche his subiectes, ly
tle regarding his owne treasure, thinking that to be his
that the commons had. Wherefore he sayde, that it was
better that priuate persons had the common treasure, to
the vse of the weake publike, than to be locked vp in prin
ces coffers. In festiuall dayes, when he had his nobles
to any banquet, he borrowed plate of his frendes to furnish
his cubboordes.

Galerius the other emperour, was of maners ryght
commendable sauing that he was cruell towards chry
stian people. For whiche cause he was stricken of God
with extreme and vile sicknesse, as after shall appeare.

Galerius

anni res
um bri
anni.

Galerius chose by adopyon. ii. noble men, of whiche The pere
Marinian he made gouernour of the east, and Sene, of the
rus of Italie and Afrise. world

While this Seuerus was absent from Rome, the soul 4270
dours chose one Parentius, the sonne of Mariminian,
to be emperour: Against who whā Seuerus came with
an armie, beyng forsaken of his owne souldiours, he was
constreigned to flee, and nere to Rauenna was takē and
slaine. This Parentius was a cruell tyranne. Of hye
incontinence and other vices be many examples in the
hystorie named Tripartita.

Constantius died in Rome, after whom Constant 4271
tine succeeded, as wel in the kingdome of Britain,
as in the gouernance of other realmes, that were
subiecte before to his father. This Constantine was a
right noble & valiant prince, & son of Helena, woman of
greate sanctimonie, and bozne in Britayne. He was so
mug hie in marciall prowes, that he was surnamed the
great Constantine. And had the faith of Christ in suche
reuerence, that alwaie most studiously he endeoured to
augment the same. In wytnesse of his belife he caused a
booke of the gospels to be caried before him: And made
the byble to be copied oute, and sent into all partes of the
empyre. Of this man the kinges of Britaine had firste
the priuilege to weare close crownes or Dyademes

Galerius, emperour of the east, whan he harde of the
death of his captaine Seuerus, made Licinius partaker
of the empyre. This Licinius in feates of armes was ex
perte and cuninge: but he hated learning so extremely,
that he saied. It was a pestilence and popson in the com
mon weale.

Fincoz make, after the death of his cosin Cairthquint,
was ordeined kinge of Scottes, and reigned seuen and
fortie yeres.

Mariminian Herculus, desiringe to be emperour a 4272
gaine, came to Rome, and by priuy meanes endeoured
to defeite his owne sonne Parentius of the empire. But
he was relected of the souldiours, & druen from Rome.
Wherefore he fled into Fraunce to Constantine his son
in law, whom also to slea he laide in waight traiterous.

The thirde parte of

The pers
of the
worlde

4274

The pers
of Christ.

312

ly, openinge his pretended malice to Fausta his daughter, the wife of Constantine. But she abhorring the impious minde of her father, disclosed the matter to her husbande: who commaunded Herculus to be taken and slayne.

In the .x. yere of the persecucion, Galerius the chiefe minister therof, fell into a wonderfull sicknesse, hauinge a soze risen in the nether parte of his bealy, whiche consumed his priue membez: from whens swarmed great plentie of wourmes, whiche were ingendred of the putrefaction. This disease coulde not be holpen with any surgerie or phisike. Wherefore he confessed, that it hapned for his crueltie towarde the Christians, and called in his proclamacions, whiche he had published against them. But notwithstandinge he dyed miserably, and as some write not susteininge the stenge of his owne soze, slewe him selfe.

Maximinus, whiche a litle before had taken on hym the name of an emperor in the east, kept secret the commaundementes of Galerius: whereto he forbade the persecucion of the Christians: and after his death most cruelly tormented them in euery place. And to the intent to corrupte the youthe, he feygned actes of Pylate and Christe, which he caused to be openly read to childzen in their scholes.

Ozmisoa, the sonne of Parses, king of Persians, kepte warre with his brother for the kingdome, and beyng put to the worse, fled to the Romans.

4276

315

Constantine came with a parte of hys armie against Maxentius, whiche vered the Romans with greuous exaction and tribute. When he was in his tourney, by a vision in the night, he sawe the sygne of the crosse in the element, shynyng like fyre, and an angell thereby sayng in this wyse: Constantine, in this signe thou shalt overcome. Wherewith he beyng greatly comforted, shortly after vanquished the armie of Maxentius: who sleepng out of the battaile, was drowned in Tyber.

Maximinus, whiche did persecute the Christians in the east parties, warred against Licinius: of whom he was ouerthrowen, and as he was preparing for an other battaile, en

anires
um Bri
anni:

layle, ended his lyfe miserablye, of a paine in the guttes, whereby the empyre was onelye vnder the dominion of Constantine and Licinius, which was befoze diuided in iii partes. The yere of the world
The yere of Christ.

Licinius, obteyninge the dominion of Asia, restored the Christians from banishment. 4277 316

Dioclectian finished his last date nere to Solonae, befoze his death, whan he was entised by Herculus to take on him againe the imperiall auctoritee, he answered in this wyse: If you dyd see the herbes, whiche I haue planed and sette here with my owne handes, you would neuer desyre to be emperour againe.

Crispus, and Constantius, the sonnes of Constantine and Licinius his nephew, were made Caesars. 4278 317

Lactantius was famous and wrote his woorkes, De diuinis institutionibus, to Constantine the emperour. 4279 318

Constantine forbade all persecution of the Christians. 4280 319

Licinius, emperour of the east, persecuted the Christians, and expelled them oute of his palaice, pretendinge this cause, that they praised more for the prosperous success of Constantine, than for him. 4281 320

Basilus byshop of Amasia in Ponte, was martyred. 4282 321

Constantine ordeined the sondaie to be kepte holy: and that men vacant from other occupacions, shuld employ them selfe onely to praise. 4283 322

Eustathius byshop of Antioch.

4284

323

Arrius, priest in the church of Alexandria, began first this heresie, that the sonne in deitee was not equall with the father, nor of the same substance, but onely a mere creature. Unto this errour he induced a greate parte of the worlde, beyng than chrystened, and many famous clerkes and great learned men.

Arrius was excommunicated by Alexandria, whyche was than byshop of Alexandria.

A noble man, called Alexander, in a commocion at Carthage was named emperour, and shortly after was subdued by a company of souldiours, that Constantine sent against him.

Ciulle warre betwene the emperours Constantine and Licinius. The first battaille was fought in Hungarie, 4286 325

Whither

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world:

The yere
of Christ

4288

327

where Licinius was overthowen: than he fled into Macedonia: and repairing his armye, was againe discou-
fited. Finally, beyng vanquished both by sea and lande,
he lastlye at Nicomedia yelded him selfe to Constantine,
and was commaunded to liue a private life in Thrasy,
where he was slaine of the souldiours.

Helen, the mother of Constantine, at Hierusalem
founde the crosse, on the which Christ suffered his passi-
on, and the .iii. nayles, wherewith his feete and handes
were perced.

At Nicena was called a generall counsaile, in the whych
the the emperour Constantine was present, with .318. by-
shops: by whome was determined against Arius, that
the sonne was equall with the father, whiche decre was
confirmed by the emperour: and Arius with .vi. other
bishops, banished. In this counsaile, whan certayne
bishops would haue ordeyned, that priestes should not
thens forth companye with their owne wives, Paphnu-
cius, a man of greate vertue and learninge, vehemently
withstode their myndes, saynge: that it would be cause
of howredome and aduoutrie.

Octavius, Duke of Jelles, or weast Saxones, whom
Constantine made lieuetenant in Britaine, rebelled: and
endeuoured to expell the Romans out of the land, wher-
of whan Constantine had knowlege, he set against him
a Duke, named Traherne, with certayne legions of soul-
diours: after whose arriuall in Britaine was foughte a
fierce battaile, nere to Winchester, in which Traherne
was put to the worse, and constrained to flee towarde
Scotlande: whom Octavius folowed, and in Westmer-
lande gaue to him the seconde battaile, in whiche Octa-
uius was chased, and Traherne was victour, who pur-
sued him so egrely, that Octavius forsoke the lande, and
sailed to Norwaye.

4290

329

Octavius, repairinge his armie, came againe into
Britaine: but in the meane tyme an Erle, whiche
fauoured his partie, by treason murdered the fore-
named Traherne, and than Octavius (called in the en-
glish cronicles Octavian) reigned in this lande, at the
least .54. yeres. In whiche tyme (as saith the Scottish
histoie

anni r
gum b
tanni.

nni res
gum Bri
anni

hiffozie he was troubled with often warres by the Ro-
maines. Volidoze sayeth, that this realme was in good
quiete al the time of Constantine and his successors, vn-
till the .v. yere of Gracian, and maketh no mencion of
this Octavius, whiche thing I speake not for anye re-
proche to Volidoze (whome I knowe right well to haue
folowed most certaine and commendable auctours) but
onely to shewe to the reader the diuersitee of hiffozies.

The yere
of the
world

The yere
of Christ

Crispus the sonne of Constantine, and the yonger Li-
cinius his nephew, with manye other noble men, by the
enulous suggestion of Fausta, the emperours wife, wer
vniustly put to death.

Constantine according to the custome of the Romas,
solemnised the twentieth yere of his reigne with great
bankettes and feastes: at the which were all the byshops
and priestes that assembled in the counsaile of Nicene.

Arnobius the Rhetorician, flourished in Affrike, and
wrote diuers bookes of christian religion.

2 Constantine repaired Trebena, a citie of Bithinia and 4291

330

3 At Antioch the Arrians were of such power, that they 4292

331

Constantine, perceyving that his wife Fausta had cau-
sed him for false pretended causes, to put to death his son
Crispus, with other of the nobilitie, commaunded hir to
be beheaded.

4 Juuencus, a priest of Spayne, wrote the gospels in he- 4293

332

5 Athanasius was ordeyned bishop of Alerandria, a man 4294

333

The emperour repaired and augmented Byzance, a ci-
tie of Thrace, and named it constantinople. He con-
ueyed from all partes of the world the most notable and
fayre

The thirde parte of

The pere
of the
worlde

The pere
of Christ

saye Imagery, tables, peyntinges, caruinges, to adorne
and garnishe the same.

anni r
gum b
tanni.

4295

334

Constantine gaue large giftes and verely reuenewes to
the maintenauce of the clergye and preachers.

Sapor, kinge of the Persians, persecuted the profes- 6
sours of Christes religion: at whiche time were. 16000,
Christians martyzed. Constantine wrote to the kinge of
Persee, willinge him no more to persecute the christian
people.

4296

335

Antonius the heremite was famous.
The temples of the gentils were destroyed by the com 7
maundement of the emperor Constantine.

4297

336

The Romans ouercame the Gothes in Sarmatia. 8
A wonderful pestilence and famine, wherewith an vn-
merable multitudo miserably perished in Surte, Cilicia, &
other places, which was iustly sent of god, for the extreme
crueltee that was (not longe afoze) exercysed agaynst the
Christians among all nacions.

4300

339

Constantine was baptized of Eusebius byshope of Ni- 11
comedia: and shortly after ended his life in the same cy-
tee, and was buried at Constantinople.

After his death the empyre was dyuided agayne into
iii. partes, betwene his. iii. sonnes.

4301

340

Constantius reigned, with his byethren, & after their 12
deceasse. 24. yeres. In maners he was indifferent, of na-
ture vnapt to generacion, verie temperate in liuing. He
made a lawe, that pheasauntes, and other lyke delycate
meates, shoulde not be vsed in feastes, it is sayde, he dyd
neuer spette.

In iudgementes he was iuste and rightuous: but he fa-
uoured the secte of Arrians, and therfore was alway cru-
ell towarde the catholike bishops.

4302

341

Athanasius, whiche before was banished: by the helpe 13
of the yonger Constantine, that ruled in fraunce, was re-
stored agayne to his bishoprike. But he tarped not longe
therin quiet. For the Arrians had infected Constantius,
emperor of the east, and caused him to expel Athanasius
agayne from Alexandria.

The chyrche at this time was in miserable state and
condemned.

condicion, for in euerye cite were men of diuers sectes, opinions, and doctrines, whyche most infestly byd persecute eche other: and specialy the Arrians so furiously ragged, that manye commocions and frapes were made by them euen in the churches and houses of prayer, and not a few men slayne. Which ruffynge and busynesse alpe- nated manye of the Gentyles from the fayth, and caused them to retourne to their idolatrie.

Sapor, kinge of Persee, wasted and spoyled Mesopotamia.

14 Manye cities in Asia, and the east partes, were ouer-
thrown with earthquakes. 4303

13 Constans fought against the Danes and Samaritans, 4304
and overcame them.

Constantine, whiche ruled in France and Spayne, being not contented with his porcion of the empire, but desyring to be lord over all, made warre against his brother Constans in Italye, and was slayne of theouldours, that his brother sent to appease his malice, nere to the cite Aquileia, whereby Constans alone obteyned the dominion of the west.

Arrius (whose mischivous heresie had caused much ruffling in the church) aboute this time finished his lyfe miserably, auoyding his guttes at his fundament, as he was doinge the nedes of nature, a litle befoze he shoulde haue disputed openlye with the deuoute and great clerke Alexandre bishop of Constantinople.

16 Macedonius, a priest of Constantinople, taught that
18 the holy ghost was a creature and no god. Betwene this
man and one Paulus was great strife, whether of them
shoulde succede Alexander in the bishopricke of Constanti-
nople: so that Hermogines mayster of the chynalrye
was slayne of the people, when he came with the emper-
ours auctorite to stablishe Macedone, whom the Arrians fauoured.

Sapor, king of Persee, bered the Christian people
with a greuous persecution.

Eusebius, beinge ordeyned byshop of Constantinople
by Constancius the emperour, fauoured the Arrians ex-
ceedingly: and caused a counsaile to be holden at Antioch;

Al. where

The The
peare of peare of
y worlde Thys

342

343

344

345

The thyrde parte of

The
yeare of
p. world

The
yeare of
Christ.

where for so muche as the moze part were Arrians, their doctrine was allowed, and vniust sentence geuen against Athanasius, for false accusacions.

An earthquake in dyuers places, and specially in Antioche, where it continued the space of a whole yere.

Athanasius fled to Constans emperoure of the West: of whome he was gently receiued, and by his healpe restored to his bishopricke of Alexandria.

4310

349

A counsaile was holden at Sardis: where 300. bishops approued the actes of Nicene counsaile. But the bishops of the east refused to be in theyr company, and assembled them at Philopolis: where they cursed the sentence of the forelate counsaile of Nicene.

4311

350

Constancius had euil fortune in his warres agaynst the Persians. For he encountred them in eght greates battayles, in the whiche he was alway put to the worse: and in this yere, whan he had almost obteyned the victorie, and hadde them at a great vantage, by the foolyshe rashenesse of his souldiours, he was put to flyght, and constrained to make a dishonourable peace, with losse of many great citees, as Singara, Bizadda, Amida, and Nicibus.

4313

352

Constans, geuyng hym to voluptie and pleasure, was slayne in a citee named Helena, of his cowne Duke Magnentius: whiche after toke on hym imperyll auctoritee at Augusta in Fraunce.

Constancius in the east hearyng of the death of his brother, prepared for warre agaynst Magnentius, and ordeyned Valius his kynsman lieutenant in the east partes, where he practised great crueltie.

4314

353

Constancius yet ones agayne, by the exortyng of the Arrians, dydde persecute Athanasius, and droue hym from Alexandria.

Britannion, an auncient capitaine, was named emperor in a commocion of the people of Illiria.

In lyke maner Procopetianus was chosen emperor at Rome in a sedicious conspiracie of the souldiours: and was slayne by the treason of Heraclides, who fauoured Magnentius, whiche usurped imperyll auctoritee in Fraunce.

Britan

26 **B**retannion, leuyng of his purple and other Imperial
insignes, submitted him selfe to Constantius the empe-
roure, and desired pardon: whiche he easely obtained, and
was receiued with great fauour and gentilnesse.

Magnentius, goyng with an army against Constantius
committed the tuition of Fraunce to his brother De-
centius: and at Marsa was banquished and put to flight
In that batayle were slayne. 54000. fyghtynge men:
wherby the puissance of the Romayne empyre was sore
appaired.

27 Magnentius was dyscomfyed and overthowen the
second tyme: and therfore in a furious rage or madnesse
wounded his brother Deciderius, slew manye of his
frendes, and lastlye killed him selfe with his owne wea-
pon. His other brother Decentius did hange hym selfe
at Senone.

Photinus denied the diuinitee of Chryste, and taught
that he was not before the carnall conceiue of our lady.
A counsaile was assembled at Sirimium, wher the said
heresie of Photine was condemned.

28 Gallus, with great tyrannie oppressed the Jewes and
slew of theim many thousandes. He burned also Diocet-
saria, Libertadis, and Diopolis, with dyuers other
townes. Wherfore Constantius the emperour depriued
hym of all auctoritee, and after he hadde banished hym,
commanded his head to be stricken of.

Condoandus and Mademarus, kynges of Almayne,
wasted the borders of Fraunce, The Romaynes made
peace with the Almayns.

29 Sapor, kyng of Persee, chalenged Armonie, and beset-
ted the citee Nicibis.

Constantius toke Iulianus by adopcion, and gaue his
syster to hym in mariage: he made him Cesar, and com-
mitted to his tuition the countrey of Fraunce.

30 Chondomarius, Theodorus, Ursus Ursicinus, Hera-
peon, and Diatozias kynges of Almaine.

Iulianus, beyng made Cesar in Fraunce, by a rebelli-
on of the souldiours was slayne, before he had reigned
thre monethes.

Actius, a sophister, endeuoured by sophisticall syllo-
gismes

The
yeare of
the world
4315

The
yeare of
Christe
354

4316

355

4317

356

4318

357

4319

358

The
peare of
h world

The
peare of
Christ

gismes to proue and confyrme the Arrians doctrine.
After the death of Fincozmake kynge of Scottes, be-
cause his heires were but childrene, fierce warre was
reared betweene two noble men called Angustiane and
Romak, for the gouernance of the realme. Whereof
ensued much trouble and ruffling in the realme of Scot-
lande: And great displeasure thereby was engendred be-
twene the Scottes and Pictes. For so much as Romak
by theys ayde, toke on him the kyngdome, and used great
cruelte. iii. yeris.

4310

359

Julian overcame the Almaynes in Fraunce, and by
knyghtly force droue them beyonde the Rhine. He reco-
uered Agrippina, and deliuered. 1100. Romans, whiche
by laue of armes serued the Almaynes. Here to Argen-
tine he bitterlye banquished the whole power of the Al-
maynes: and after that greate victorie, was of the souldi-
ours called emperor and Augustus: wherwith Constā-
cius was greivously displeased, and commaunded him by
ambassadors to refuse those names, whiche were profe-
red to hym by the souldiours.

Victorinus, the Rhetorician, and Donatus the Gram-
marian, were famous.

4321

360

Througheoute Asia and Pont was a greate and conti-
nuall earthquake. The emperor banquished the Sar-
matics, and the people called Quadi.

4312

361

A counsaile was assembled at Arminum, in the which
200. byshops of the weast established the counsaile of Ni-
cene. But the Arrians would not agree thereto. The by-
shops of the east, by the commaundement of Constā-
cius, held a counsaile at Nicomedia, and from thens were
transferred to Seleucia, and there endeuoured to con-
firme the heresie of the Arrians.

Sapor, kyng of the Persians, with a great armie besie-
ged and toke Amida, and slew many of the Romans.

Julianus the Cesar, ledde an army agaynst the Almai-
nes, whiche by force had taken and possessed certayne ci-
ties, wherin he had reserued corne and vitailles: and cha-
sed them in suche wyse, that their kynges were fayne to
desyre peace: which after entreatee was to them granted.

The emperor overcame the Sarmatians, yet ones a-
gayne

nni re gayne rebellyng.

34 Singara and Bambyca, noble and greate cities, were taken, and certayne legions of the Romayne souldiours slayne, by Sapor kyng of the Persians.

The The
yeare of yeare of
the world Chyzt.
4323 362.

When the nobles of Scotlande had slayne the tyzanne Romak, Angustane was ordeined kyng: betwene whome and the Pictes was great warre for the death of Romak, in the ende wherof bothe Angustane and Pectanus, king of Pictes, were slayne. Then was Fethelmak crowned kyng, whiche vanquished the Pictes, and was after slain in his bedde by ii. Pictes, whiche were his seruantes.

Macedon, byshoppe of Constantinople, practised extreme crueltie in the church, constreigning the Chyristian men to receiue the comunion with the Arrians, in such wyse, that if women or chyldren refused to doce the same, he did either cut of theyr pappes, or by suche other cruell tourmentes, force them thereto. He caused muche tumulte and busines in the church.

35 Julian, being constreigned of the souldiours at Paris in Fraunce, toke on hym the name of Augustus and imperiall auctorytee.

36 Constantius departed out of this lyfe, in a citie called Mopsocris, betwene Cilicia and Cappadocia. 4324

Julian succeeded Constantius in the empyre, and reygned. ii. yeares, he was but of small stature, of witte apt to learnyng, eloquence and knowlage of sciences. In many poyntes he was esteemed lyke to Titus: in successe of warre and marcial prowes he was compared to Traiane: in clemencie and gentilnesse to Antonine, in moderation and temperate sobernesse to Aurelius: and in studie of good letters even to the chiefe phylosophers. When he was younge, he so profyted in Chyristian learning, that he read openly holye scripture in Pico media. But after, by the counsaile and company of Libanius the Rhetorician, he fell agayne to the idolatrye of the Pagenes, and is therfore called Apostata, that is, one that forsaketh his professyon. He dyd not persecute the Chyristians with so open crueltie as other princes had dooen, but abstained from bloudshed, and endeuoured by craftye meanes to withdrow them from their belife: aduansynge them to
Al.iii. honour

363

364

The third parte of

The
pere of
h world

*Amariſſime
mille.*

The
pere of
Chyſte
honour and dignitee, whiche did forſake Chyiſt: and lea-
nyng them as vile and abſect ſlaves, that continued in
they religion. In his tyme were manye godly and well
learned men, whiche withſtoode bothe his crafty aſſautes
and peincted philoſophie: amonge the whiche was Apol-
linaris, that wrote a booke to Julian.

Julian gave commandement, that Chyiſtā men ſhuld
not be traded and broughte bype in the knowlage of good
letters, ſaynge, that he and his adherentes philoſophiers
were wounded with their owne feathers. He opened a-
gayne the temples of idoles.

Athanaſius, whiche was returned from baniſhement
to Alexandria, by the interceſſion of ſouthſayers and ſt-
eromancers, was by Julian expelled agayne from the
citee.

Julian, and the Jewes, endeavored to builde agayne
the temple of Hieruſalem in dyſpyte of the Chyiſtās: but
they were prohibited and letted of God with tempeſtes,
wyndes, lyghtnynges and earthquakes: by the whiche
many of them were ſlayne, and theyr worke deſtroied.

Julian, goyng agaynſte the Perſians, ſpoiled Aſſirie,
and conquered many townes and cytees. And at length
preaſyng raſhly into battaile among his enemies, was
ſlayne. At whiche tyme (as it is written) when he had
receiued his deaſhes wounde, he takinge his hande full of
blonde, and caſtyng it into the ayer, ſaid in this wyſe:
Viciſti Galilee, that is, *O thou man of Galilee*, thou haſt the
upper hande, meanyng of Chyiſt, whom he called alway
Galileus.

4327

365

Julian (a godly man, whiche had ſuffered great repro-
che for the faith of Chyiſte in the tyme of Julian) was cho-
ſen emperour of the ſouldiours in their extreme neceſſi-
tee, who reſuſed that auctoritee a good ſpace, ſayng, that
he beyng a Chyiſtian, could not be gouernour of Paga-
nes and Infidelles, at which tyme the whole hoſtes with
one voyce cried, we be Chyiſtās, and forſake utterly our
idolatre. This Julian beyng put to the worſe in a bat-
telle or twaine agaynſte the Perſians, of neceſſite was
conſtrained to make a diſhonorable peace for beſyde
the loſe of .v. provinces beyond the river Tygris, he was
bounde

unt re bounden not to ayde the kynge of Armonye their sworne The The
 u Wit friende to whiche thinge the Romaynes were neuer con yeare of yeare of
 nne. Freigned befoze that daye. h world Chyzt.

Julian called from banishment the byshops, whiche were exyled in the tyme of Constancius and Julian, and shortly after finished his lyfe of an ague, when he had reygned. viii monethes.

About this tyme one Eugenius was made king of Scotles. Here the Scottishe hystorie maketh a longe proceffe of the sperce and cruel war that he kept agaynst Marcellus the Romayne capitayne, and the Pictes and Britanues, whiche I thinke to be of no moze credyte then the residue of their hystory, that they haue feigned from the beginning. For vndoubtedly if they had put the Romains to so much trouble, as their cronicles shew, bothe in the tyme of the conquest and after: Cesar, Tacitus, Ptolemei, Plinie, and other would haue made some mencyon of the Scottes, as they did of the Erinobantes, Crinmagues, Segontiacs, Bidoices, Bzigantes, Silures, Iceni and diuers other.

Valentinian folowed in the empire, and reygned. 4328 367
 39 yeares. He was a verie good emperour, comely in visage and countenaunce, of a goodli personage, and had a sharpe and fine witte, in maners most lyke to Aurelius of nature seuer and graue, inest agaynst vice, specially couetousnes. In his communicatyon he was cleane and peked: and of custome spake but seldome. In all his actes he obserued oportunitie of tyme and place wth great discretion: and was verie cunnynge in peynctynge caruynge, and making images of ware or claye. He fauoured much Christian religion, and was a great mainteyner therof. He made his brother Valens partaker of the empire, and committed to him the east.

Procopius by treason vsurped imperiall auctoritie in Bythinia.

40 In Bythinia the souldiours of Procopius forsoke hym and went to Valens: by which meanes Procopius was 4329 368
 taken bounden, deliuered to the emperoure, and by his commaundement beheaded.

Valens was baptysed of Eudoxus, a byshop of the Arrian.

The third parte of

The
pere of
h world

The
pere of
Chypte

rians, which beinge in great fauour in the emperoures Anne
courte, wrought much trouble to the catholike bishops, gū B
Valens went with an army against the Gothes why: anni
the passing the riuer Danoby, ouerode the countrey of
Thrace.

At Constantinople fell haplesones of wonderful byg
nesse, with which many men were slayne.

In Fraunce wall descended from the ayre myxed with
rayne.

Valentinian made Gratian his sonne augustus.

The Frenchemen, about this time, first obtained their
name of Valentinian, to be called Franci, that is fierce
and valiaunt, bycause they chased the Alaines out of the
marishes and fennes of Meotides: and for that dede he
forgaue them tenne yerres tribute. They were called be
fore Sycambri, and had their beginning of the Troianes

4331

270

A very great earthquake in Bithinia, whyche ouer 42
threw the citee of Nicea.

4332

371

The doctrine of the heretikes, named messaliani, be- 43
ganne, whiche denyed the grace of Baptisme, and sayed,
the holy ghost came onely by prayer.

The folowers of this heresye gaue them to sleape and
idlenesse and called their dreames prophesies.

Basilus was famous, a man of incomparable vertue
and learninge, bozne in Cappadocia. He was taught of
his father as well grammer as other learninges called
Quadrivalles. Afterwarde he went to Athenes, where
whyles he exactlye studied in philosophye, Gregorius,
called Nazianzen, being than wholye dedicate to the stu-
die of scripture, and louinge Basile entirlye, came into
the schole, where he read in a chear, and takinge him by
the hand brought him to a monasterye, where leyinge a
parte all bookes of philosophye, they onelye entended to
readinge of scripture: at lengthe diuidinge theym selues
Basile went about Ponte, teachinge the people the true
faith, and at this time was made bishop of Cesaria.

4333

372

Valentinian the emperour maryed an other wife, and 44
therfore published a law, that who so would, might take
ii, wives.

The kingdome of Spayne tooke his beginning of one
Athana

and re- Athanaricus:
umbris
anni.

The pere
of the
world

The pere
of 2472 A

Athanaricus otherwise called Alaricus kinge of Go-
thes persecuted the chryistians, and with extreme cruel-
tee droue theym out of his realme to the Romaines.

Athanasius, somewhat befoze this time, fled from A- 4334
lexandria, and ley hid. vi. yerres continually in a dyre se-
sterne, where he neuer sawe the sonne shine. But than
was he discovered by a mayden: and fled elssoones by the
helpe of god, and wandzed abrode the worlde, nor with-
standinge that princes, the people and theyr hostes dyd
persecute him: bzinging also a common harlot, whych af-
firmed, that he had accompanied with her: but he, suscei-
ving all thinges with a wonderfull pacience, about this
time died, after he had bene byshop at Alexandria. 46. ye-
res.

Eunomius, a great heretike of the sect of Arrius, where 4337
to he added also of his owne malice, that the sonne was
in all pointes unlike godde the father: and that the holye
ghost had no medlinge with the father nor with the son.

Moreouer, he affirmed, that all they, whiche kepte the
faythe that he taught, shoulde be saued, had they commit-
ted neuer so great a sinne, and continued therein.

Mania quene of the Sarracenes, a woman of valyaunt
courage (whiche in diuers battayles hadde overchewen
the power of the Romaines in Palestine) made peace
with the emperours,

The Saxones and Burgonniens, beringe the people of
France, were chased and subdued of Valentinian the em-
perour.

Ambrose bisshoppe of Millesne, was famous He was 4
of suche holinesse suche gentillesse, suche excellent wyse-
dome that not onely in his life time, but also after bys
death, he was had throughtout the worlde in honour and
reuerence. He was a Romaine bozne, of a noble and aun-
cient house, and had bene consul there. When he was
on a time sente of Valentinian to Millesne to quiete a se-
dicion, whiche was amonge the people for the election of
a byshoppe: after he hadde exhorted theym to concorde so-
deynly they all with one voyce chose him to be theyr by-
shop, moued with the voyce of an infante, whych he cryed
kk. Ambrose

333

335

337

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

Ambrose is worthy to be byshop.

The frenchmen denied to paye any more tribute, wherfore the emperour made fierce warre against them.

Anni re
gum B
tanni

Valentinian preparing warre agaynst the Sarmatians whiche brake into Hungarie, ended his life, wyth a sodeyne bleding, at a towne called Bygon.

4339

378

Valens reigned after his brother. iii. yeres. He favoured ouermuche the Arrians, and therfore was cruell towarde the true christians. He commaunded, that monkes and solitarie persons, whiche (bothe for medytacion and for feare of persecution had fled into wildernesse, or other secreete places, shuld be sent in warfare. And theim which repined, either he put to deathe or caused to be extremely punished.

4340

379

Gratia emperour of the east, made his yonger brother Valentinian equall with him in the empire, by whiche means there were together. iii. emperours.

Appollinaris, of Laodicea, taught, that the diuinitee and humanite of Christ were both of one nature.

The people called Hunni (as it were) steered out of their caues, with outragious furie, made warre vpon the Gothes, and droue theim out of theyr countrey: whiche fled to the emperour Valens. Who receyued them, and gaue them licence to inhabite Pannonia.

Gratian overcame the almaines, and slewe of theym wel nere. 30000.

The Scottes saye, that about this time, after longe and cruell warre, they were utterly extermined and drevien out of theyr realme into Ireland & other countreys, by Marlinus the Romaine the Pictes, and Brittaines.

The Gothes desired Valens to sende theym certayne learned men to instruct them in the religion of christe, who sent to them Arrians, by whom al the Gothes were infected with that heresys, in the whiche they continued a long time.

4341

380

Theodosius, father of that Theodosius: whiche was after aduanced to the empyre, beinge sent into Afrike, with an army, vanquished Thirmus, who by treason aspyred to the imperiall crowne. In rewarde wherof Valens for enuy, and feare of his successe, commaunded him to be

anni re: to be beheaded.

umbris
anni.

The pere
of the
world

The pere
of the
world

The Gothes, whiche befoze fled to Valens, not suste-
gninge the auarice of a Romaine Duke, named Mari-
mus, rebelled and slew a great numbze of men in Thza-
cia, and ouercame Valens also in battayle: who beyng
chased, fled into a cottage, whiche, the Gothes that pur-
sued, compased and set on fyre. And there was Valens
burned of thein, whom he caused to bee corrupted wyth
the heresie of Arrius.

Gratian, and his brother Valentinian, reigned after
Valens. vi. yeres, he perceiuing the empyre to be in great
danger of the Gothes, and other barbarous people, whi-
che than were in armes, made Theodotus felowe with
him in the empyre, and committed to hys manhoode the
east partes. This Gratian was indifferently well lear-
ned, eloquent, and muche practised in the arte of Rhetor-
yke. He had a greate delyte to caste the darre. In mares
all and ciuile policie not so well instructed as becomed
an emperour.

4342

381

Theodotus banquished the Gothes, & by force droue
thepm oute of Thzacia, and after made league wyth A-
thanasius their kinge.

The Lumbardes ouercame the people called Wandali.

434

382

Theodotus ordeined by open decree, that the Chzisti-
an faiethe shoulde be purely taughte, and that all Chzisti-
an men shoulde beleue, that the diuinitee of god, the fa-
ther, the sonne, and the holy ghost, was one, contrarpe to
the opinion of Arrius and his adherentes.

Maximus, sonne of Leonine, and cosin Germaine
to Constantine the great, was made king of Bry-
tain. This man was mighty of his hâdes: but for
that he was cruell, & pursued somedeale the Chzistians,
he was called Maximus the tyran. Betwene him & one
Conon Perisodok a Britaine, was a rife and debate, in
whiche they both sped diuersly. But at length they were
made frendes.

4344

383

A synode was assembled at Constantinople of. 180. by
shops against Macedoneus: who denyed the holy ghost
to be god. This synode ordeined firste Patriarkes.

The Arrians were constrained to forsake the chur-
ches

kk ii

ches

The thirde parte of

The yere of the worlde.	The yere of Chyft	ches that they helde by force the space of .40. yeres.	Anni gum tanni
		Martine, byshop of Turon, was famous.	
		Theodotius, beinge taken with a greuous sickeneste, was baptised, and shortly after recovered.	
4345	384	Athanasius, king of Gothes, came to Constantinople to visite Theodotius, and within fewe daies dyed there, and was buried honourably.	2
		Maximus, king of Britain, made warre vpon the Galles, and sailed into America, nowe called litle Britaine: and subduinge that countrey to his lordeship, gaue it to Conon Meriodok, to hold soeuer of the kinges of great Britaine.	
4346	385	Arcadius, the son of Theodotius, was made Augustus. Theodotius laboured muche for the vnitie of the church, in the whiche had bene a schisme of longe time.	3
4347	386	Maximus, kinge of Britaine, was constrained of the sculdours to take on him the imperial crowne, and therfore, being in France, passed further into the landes of the empyre, and subdued a great parte of France, and al Germaine. Gratian the emperour, of him was putte to flight at Paris, and slaine at Lions.	4
		Valentinian, the brother of Gratian, beinge driven out of Italy, fledde into the east to Theodotius: of whom he was with all gentleness interteined.	
		Whyles Maximus was occupied in the warres in Italye, Helga, kinge of Pictes, and Onauus, leader of the Hunnes, bered the Britaines: whereof when Maximus had witting he sent a capitaine, named Gratian, to resist their malice.	
4348	387	Saint Ursula, with the .11000. virgins, whiche were sente into lictell Britaine, to bee maryed to the foresaid Conon and his knightes: were slaine of the Barbarous people being on the sea.	
		Hierome, the famous doctour, and interpretour of holy scripture, flourished at Bethlem: and for hys excellent learninge was renowned in al the worlde.	
4351	390	Theodotius, hearing of the death of Gratian, spedde him with an armie against Maximus (whych warred againste the empyre) and at a cite of Italy, called Aquileia, vanquished the saide Maximus, and him beheaded.	8
			Andza

at red
m bri
ani.

Andragatius, the chiefe capitaine of Maximus, drow-
ned him selfe.

Victour his sonne was slaine of Abzogastes in France.

Forth with the foresaid Gratian, that was sente in
to Britaine of Maximus to defende the lande frome
Barbarians, toke on him the kingdom of Britain, &
exercised all tyranny and exaction vpon the people. For
whiche cause he was abhorred of all the Britaines.

In a sedition in Thessalia, there happened certaine su-
tices and noble men to be slaine of the people: wherwith
Theodotius the emperour beyng greatly meeu'd, com-
maunded. vii. thousande of them to be slaine, punishing
the guiltlesse together with the offenders. Of whiche acte
whan Ambrose byshop of Milcine had knowlage, he ex-
communicated the emperour, and forbade him to enter
in to the church, vntill he had done open penance. To
whom Theodotius gentillye obeyed, and for that dede
hadde Ambrose euer after in most highe estimacion and
reuerence.

Algelmundus, the firste kinge of Lumbardy.

A fyre signe hanged in the ayre, lyke to a culuer by the
space of. xxx. daies.

The Britains, abhorringe the crueltie of their kynge
Gratian, by one assent set on him, and kylled him, after
he had reigned. lxxi. yeres. Than was the realme of Bri-
taine a good space without head or gouernour: in whych
tyme they were now and than vexed with the foresaid
Barbarous people, and other externall enemies.

To this tyme were ordeined in the church certain p[re]-
sides, whiche should examine and confesse theim, that af-
ter their offences dyd openly repent, before they receiued
the sacrament: vnder p[re]tence of this confession, a dea-
con in Constantinople did commit fornication with a no-
ble woman. For whiche cause Nectarius their byshoppe
didde abrogate confession, committing euery man to his
conscience in receiuing the sacrament.

A Duke, named Abzogastes, by treason slew Valenti-
nian the emperour of the weste, and aduauced Eugeni-
us to the imperiall crowne.

Placilla, the wyfe of Theodotius, dyed, a woman of
great

The yere
of the
worlde

4351

The yere
of Christ,

390

4352

391

4353

392

4354

393

4355

394

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.
4356

The yere of Christ
395 Great sanctimonie. She accustomed to visit the hospital-
les and places of poore people, ministeringe to theym all
things necessary with her owne handes.

anni
gum
tanni.

395 Arcadius, the elder sonne of Theodotius, reigned with
his father in the east, and Honorius the yonger was pro-
claimed emperour of Italy and the west partes.

In the tyme of Theodotius, a childe was bozne in Pa-
lestine, beyng deuised from the nauei byward as it were
into two bodie, euery part hauing all senses and perfect
members of a man. When the one dydde eate, the other
dydde not, sometymes the one played with the other, as
it were two chylzen: The one parte liued foure daies af-
ter the other.

4357

396

Theodotius banquished and toke Eugenius the tray-
tour, and commaunded him to be put to death.

Abrogastes kyled him selfe with his owne weapon.

Ioannes Anachorita was famous. He hadde the gyfte
of prophete.

Augustine, the most famous & lerned doctour of Chry-
stes church, was byshop of Hippone a citie in Afrike.

This man was of suche excellent wyt, that in his chyl-
hode he learned all the liberall sciences, without any in-
structour: and in all partes of philosophie was wonder-
fullie learned. At the beginninge he fauoured the opini-
ons of theim, whiche bee called Maniches: but by the
continuall prater of his good mother, Monica, and the
perswasion of holy sainct Ambrose, he was conuerted to
the true faith. They bothe beyng replenished with the
holy ghost, sang the psalme, Te deum: answeringe mu-
tually one to the other. After, in prater, writing and prea-
ching, he so muche profited the church, that his name is
woorthely had in reuerence of all men.

4358

397

Theodotius the emperour died at Mileine.

4359

398

Arcadius obtained the imperiall dignitee, and reigned
with his brother Honorius. xiii. yeres, but for that they
were yet but chylzen, Theodotius befoze his deathe or-
deined. iii. noble men, to be gouernours ouer the. iii. par-
tes of the empyre, that is to saie, Olydo in Asyke, Rufi-
nus in the east (as tutor of Arcadius) & Stilico in Ita-
lie and the west, as gouernour of Honorius, the yonger
sonne

ni res
m bri
ni.

sonne: Whiche .iii. Dukes after by treason successiue ly attempted the imperiall crowne.

The pere
of the
worlde
The pere
of Aysit.

An earthquake continued many dayes. The element shinning like fyre seemed to burne.

Diosius the hystorographer was famous.

Chrysostomus, the noble clerke, who for his excellēt eloquence is named the golden mouthed doctour, was appointed bishop of Constantinople.

4361

400

Gildo, gouernour of africke, toke on him king lye auctoritee in Mauritania, and cruell y put to death the sonnes of his brother Mascarell, who therfore fled into Italye, and obteyned ayde of Honorius the emperoure, and shortly after, with .5000. men of warre, vanquished his brothers army (in the which were .70000. fighting men) and commaunded him to be strangled to death.

The same Mascarell beinge proud with the successe of that battaile, named him selfe emperour, and within few daies was slayne of the souldiours.

About this time as witnesseth Volateran, the Hunnes brake into Pannonia, and in battaile ouercame the Romanes.

4362

401

A controuersie was in the church, whether god were copozate and had a body, and all membez therof, to the likenesse of man: whiche opinion was obstinately affirmed of certayne simple and vnlearned monkes, or solitarie persons of Aegypt.

This opinion caused so much trouble in the church that Theophilus bishop of Alexandria, and Epiphanius of Cipres, endeuored to haue disanulled and burned the bookes of Origine, for that they seemed to teache the contrary. They bered also Chrysostomus, because he would not consent thereto.

The Gothes, whiche sens the reigne of Theodozius had ben friends with the Romanes, and in wages vnder theyr capitaines, rebelled and brake into Italye, by the means of Stillico: for he traitrouly caused the emperour Honorius to put them out of wages, to the effect that they for displeasure shoulde rebelle against the empire: that he in the meane time might more commodiously by treason, transferre the imperiall crowne to his son.

4363

402

He en

The thirde parte of

The yere of the worlde.	The yere of Christ	
4564	403	He intised also the Aleynes and Wandales to take armes agaynst the Romaines.
4565	404	Chrysostomus, bishop of constantinople was, cryled in to Pont, by meanes of Theophilus of Alerandria. At Delentia the Romaines fought a dangerous battaille against the Gothes not without losse of manye men on both partes. Stillico the Romain capitayue seygued him to fflye: But yet the Gothes at that time were dzyuen backe.
4566	405	The frenchemen, passinge the ryuer Rhine, inhabyted Treueris in Gallia, and the countree lyinge there about. Chrysostome dyed in exile.
4567	406	Britain about this time was vexed with the irrupcions of Helga king of Pictes and other barbarous people. There fell a great hayle in Constantinople and the suburbs therof.
4568	407	Two terrible nations of the Gothes were in armes against the empyre: the Ostrogothes, being Paganes, whiche had a mighty and valiaunt captaine, named Rhadagastus, and the west Gothes, whiche were chrystened and had to theyr leader Alaricus. Rhadagastus king of the Ostrogothes, innaded Italy with a terrible armye of .200000. men: at whiche tyme the Romaines were in suche feare, that manye of theym blaspheming chyst, layed the faulte of so greuous danger vpon chrystian religion. But that great army shortly after, being inclosed and compassed with the hostes of the Romaines, in certayne mountaynes of Thuscane, was slayne and taken wel nere al together.
4595	408	Ruffinus, gouernour of the east, intised Alaricus kinge of the wisigothes, to make warre vpon the emperour Arcadius, to the entet that in tyme of the tumulte, he might (by his conspiratours) be aduanced to the imperiall auctoritie: whose treason being disclosed he was slayne of the souldours, and his head set vp at Constantinople wyth his right hand. Caianus also trusting to the ayde of the Gothes, rased ciuile warre, and was vanquished, put to flight, and slaine. Stillicon prolonged the warre with the Wisigothes and

anni re
gum b
taani:

and therfore was he commaunded of Honorius to make peace with them. Honorius also graunted to the Gothes of the world to inhabite in Fraunce, whiche at that time was possessed of the Frenchmen, Aleines, and other barbarous people, that were steered by by the counsaile of Stillico.

Constantius, a man of no estimacion or dignitee, nor having any vertue worthy a noble manne, for the onely hope of his name, was made emperor of the souldiours in Britaine. This man passed into Gallia to quiete the barbarous people, that waited that countrey: but he preyed nothing against them.

Constantine, sent his sonne Constans into Spayne, against two noble men, Dymbimus and Merinians, whiche kept the streightes of the mountayns called Pyrenet bothe against him and the barbarous people.

Arcadius emperor of the east, departed out of this life at Constantinople. He before his death ordeyned Iulius king of Persians to be gouernour of his yonge sonne, and defendour of the empyre,

Theodosius surnamed the yonger, being yet a child was made emperor after his father, and reigned in the east. Of maners he was indifferent, but verie negligent in thinges perteyning to the common weale. In so muche that he would subscribe, and signe bylles of request, whiche he neuer sawe, nor knewe that was conteyned in them, whiche negligence his sister Pulcheria rebuked in this maner, causing him after his faction to subscribe to a byll, in the which was desired the perpetuall bondage of his wife Eudoria, whom he loued entirely: wherwith he being abashed, and shewing a payre of redde chekes ceased to be so negligente in matters perteyninge to the weale publike.

The Vandales being chased of the Gothes went out of Fraunce into Spayne.

Attalus affectinge the empire in Rome, was immediatly brought in subiection.

Stillico, contrarie to the league, whiche was made with the Gothes, upon Easter day, when for religio they absteyned from al labour, and fearinge no enemies, had cast of theyr armour: sent agaynst theym a Jewe named Saul,

The yere
of Christ

409

410

411

412

The thirde parte of

The pers
of the
world

The pers
of Christ.

Saul with a companie of souldiours. Who cōminge for Anna
deynly upon the sayd Gothes slewe of them a great num gum.
bre, with which iniurie their king Alaricus beyng irri tann
rated after he hadde reuenged him on the souldiours of
Stillico, in his fury turned his whole power against the
citee of Rome, whiche shortly after he tooke. And when
he had spoyled it, by the space of .iii. dayes departed and
toke with him Placidia the emperours sister, whome af
ter he gaue in mariage to Ataulphus his kinsman.

Now was the treason of Stillico detected, whyche he
had of longe time dissimuled and kept close: and he there
fore was beheaded, with his sonne Eucherius.

At this time the Romaine empyre, the fourth monar
chie of the worlde, whiche had of longe time flourished,
beganne first to decline, which happened from the begin
ning of the citee. 1163. after the kinges were expelled. 919
peres.

4374

413

Honorius the emperour sent a noble man of Rome, na
med Costantius, with an army against Constantine whi
che was chosen emperour in Britaine, and was now in
Fraunce: whom he easilie banquished, and caused to be
slaine.

Constantius, the sonne of Constantine, who was sent into
Spaine, was murdered of his owne Duke Gerontius:
wherby Honorius recouered to his dominion, bothe the
lande of Britaine, and the souldiours, whiche fauoured
Constantine.

4375

414

Heros a holy man, was by the furse of the people put
from his bishoprike of Dyliance, and Patroclus orde
ned in his place. Which thinge caused great discention
among the bishops.

Ataulphus was ordeined kinge of wisigothes, who
entended the vtter destruction of the citee of Rome, and
to haue buylded an other citee in the same place, whiche
shoulde be called Gothia, and the emperours therof At
aulphi. But he was mitigated by the gentill interces
sion and prayer of his wife Placidia, the emperours
sister.

Two bretherne, called Iovius and Sebastianus, whi
che in Fraunce toke on them princelye auctorite, were
subdued

ni res. subdued and slaine.

Delagius, an horrible heretike, liued in Britaine. He taught, that men wer not saued and iustified by the mere mercye of god, for the death and merite of Iesu Christe. but that by their owne good woorkes and natural operations, men obtained befoze god perfect iustificacion, and remission of sinnes, this errour saint Augustine cōfōrtheth in many of his woorkes.

Attalus, by the healde of the Gothes, vsurped imperial authoritee, in France, & passed from thens into Spaine, and from Spaine into Afrike.

Heracilianus, a Romaine Duke, being sent into Afrike against the factours of Attalus, traisterously toke on him imperiall auctoritee.

The Burgonnions obteyned the part of Fraunce nere to the ryuer of Rhine.

Heracilianus, by the counsaile of his companion Sabirius, prepared a wonderfull naute, in the whiche were 4070. shippes: and with them made towarde Rome against the emperour. Shortly after his arriual, he was discomfited, and shamefully put to flight, in such wise, that he was constrained to flie to Carthage in a small shippe, where he was slaine shortly after.

The Jewes, whiche from the time of Alexandre the great, to this date, inhabited the citee of Alexandria, for a sedicion, whiche they caused, were nowe driuen out of the citee, and all their gooddes taken from them.

A woman, named Hippacia (so excellentlye learned, that she passed all the philosophers of that time) did reade openly in the philosophie schole at Alexandria.

Attalus, the traitour, beyng forsaken of his adherentes, was taken in Afrike, and sent to the emperour.

The Gothes slewe their kinge Ataulphus, for that he desired peace with the Romaines, and chose for him Vegericus: whom for lyke cause they also murdered, and lastly aduanced to be their king a noble mā, called Valia: who after certaine misfortune on the sea, contrary to their expectation, made league with Constantius the Romaine: whiche at that time hadde subdued the Barbarous people in Spaine.

The yere
of the
world

4376

415

4377

416

4378

417

The thirde parte of

Then ere
of the
world
4379

The yere
of Christ.
418

Zozimus, Pope, ordeined that no priest should drinke in common tauerne.

Anni
gum
tanni.

Uallia, kinge of the Gothes, restored to the emperour his sister Placidia, wife of Atraulphus: whiche was after married to the renowned Duke Constantius, who had subdued diuers rebellious traitours, and quieted the Gothes and other Barbarous people, whiche than were in armes againste the empyre, as the Vandales, Sueues, Burgunions and other.

4380

419

A counsaile of .107. byshopes was assembled at Carthage againste the heresie of Pellagian and other, where saint Augustine was present.

The emperour Honorius triumphed for the victories atchiued by the marciall knightehood of Constantius his Duke.

4381

420

Pharamunde, the sonne of Marcomirus, a man garnished with all knightly vertue, was ordeined the firste kinge of frenchemen. 1556. yeres, after Brute began his dominion in this ile of Britaine.

4382

421

Constantius confirmed the league made with the wisigothes, and gaue inhabitaunce to them in Aquitania, and certeine citiees nere about.

4383

422

Honorius made Constantius felow with him in y^e empire.

4384

423

Constantius dyed.
The Scottes (according to their histories) vnder their kinge Fergus returned out of Ireland into Albion, and continuing the reigne of .iii. kinges (that is) Fergus, Eugenius and Dongarde, pursued the Britaines with most cruell warres, but here they discente from the Englishhe cronicles, as well in the computacion of the time, as in the relacion of the whole storie. For after Beda, Gildas, and other ancient and credible writers, the Scottes came firste about this time out of Irelande into that countrey, whiche of them was after called Scotlande. But howe so euer this stories agree, truely it is, that the Scottes beyng confederate with the Pictes, not long from this time, by consente of all writers, inuaded and spoyled the lande of Britaine, so cruelly, that the Britains were constrained to sende for ayde to the Romaines: promising, that they would be perpetually subject to the empyre.

whiche

ni res
m Bri
ni:

Whiche request was harde, and a capitaine sent, with a legion of knights: who within few daies chased their enemies out of the lande: and teachinge them to make a wal of turues, and stakes from the water of Humber to the Scottishe sea: wherewith their enemies might be kepte backe out of the lande, toke leave of the Brittaines, and departed.

Barbaranes, kinge of the Persians, did persecute the Christians: for whiche cause deadly warre was arrested betwene the Persians and Romaines. Ardaburus, the Romaine capitaine, spoiled the countrey called Azazena: After whiche misfortune the Persians began to intreate for peace.

Castinus, a Duke of the Romaines, was sent against the Vandales, whiche wasted the landes of the empyre in Spaine. Against whom he somewhat preuailed by the helpe of a valyaunt knight named Bonifacius, whiche came oute of Africke to ayde hym in the busineses of the empyre. But Bonifacius shortly after, not susteigning the enuious tyranny of his capitaine Castinus, returned into Africke, after which time Castinus atchiued nothing worthy memorie.

Placidia, the wife of Constantius, after the death of her husbände for certaine displeasure, was driven from her brother Honorius, with her two sonnes, and fled to Theodotius emperour of the east, and was of him generally interteined.

Honorius emperour of the west, departed oute of this life at Rome.

A certaine Romaine, named Joannes, by the ayde and maintenance of Castinus, inuaded the imperial crowne. This Joannes made into Africke, entendinge bothe to vanquish the forenamed Boniface enemy of Castinus, and also to subdue that countrey to his dominion.

In the meane time Theodotius made Valentinian, the sonne of Placida, Cesar: and sente him with ayde into Italy, to reconer the imperiall auctoritee. Who not long after conquered the citee Rauenna, whiche shutte the gates at his comminge, vanquished Joanne the tyranne, sente in banishment Castinus, & pardoned Aetius, a noble man

The yere
of the
world

The yere
of Christ,

4385

424

4386

425

4387

426

The thirde parte of

The pere
of the
world
4388

The pere
of Christ

427

ble man, for by his meanes he quieted the Hunnes, why
che had armed them against the Romaines.

anni
gum
tanni

Valentinian, by the ordinance of Theodosius, was
proclaimed Augustus, & emperor of the weast partes.

Pere about this time the Britains were invaded again
by the Pictes and Scottes: which notwithstanding the
forelaid walle, that was made by the Romaines, spoyle
led the countrey herie soze. So that they were driven to
seke for newe helpe of the Romaines: who sent to them a
company of souldiours: which againe chased the Pictes,
and made a walle of stone of the thickenesse of. viii. foote,
and in heyght. xii. foote. Whiche thing whan they had
done, comforting the Britains, and admonishinge them
hereafter to trust to their owne manhode and strengthe,
they returned againe to Rome.

4390

429

Bonifacius, before mencioned, was famous & in great
auctoritee in Afrike, so that his power was suspected of
Valentinian the emperor. Who therfore sent against
him two Romaine capitaines. Mauricius and Calbio,
whiche bothe were of Bonifacius banquished. Than
was that warre committed to a Duke, named Sigisub
dus, whiche somewhat preuailed, and abated the power
of Boniface: who mistrusting his owne strength, entred
the Vandales out of Spaine, into Afrike: which at they
coming spoiled the countrey of Mauritania and Afrike
with great crueltie, of whiche tyranny saint Augustine
complaineth.

4391

430

Pestorius, byshoppe of Constantinople, endeoured to
bring into the churche a newe heresse: teaching, that the
onely manhode of Christ was borne of the virgine, and
his deitee geuen to him after for his merite.

Aetius, the Romaine, recovered the parte of Gallia
lying about the river Rhine.

The frenchemen subdued Dylance and Paris, with
much of the countrey annexed thereto.

4392

431

Clodius, the sonne of Pharamunde, was made kinge
of France, which was also named Crinitus, This man
to enlarge his kingedome, made warre vpon the Turin
ges and Germanes, inhabitinge the countrey beyonde
Rhine, & them subdued. Whan he had ruled the frencho
men

ni res
m Bri
ani:

men. xlv. yerres, after many victorious deedes, he dyed.

Genfericus, king of the Aleines and Mandales in A-
frike, besieged the cite Hippone, where saint Augustine
being bishoppe in the thirde moneth of that siege, ended
his life.

The Scottes and Pictes yet ones agayn entred the land
of Britaine, and spoiled the countrey, and chased the co-
mons so cruelly, that they were altogether comfortlesse
and brought to suche misery, that eche robbed and spoy-
led other, and ouer this the ground was untilled: wher-
of ensued great scarcitee and hungre; and after hungre
death. In this necessitee they sent for ayde to Aetius the
Romaine capitaine, being then occupied in warres in a
part of Fraunce. But they had no comfort at his hande. 4394.
And therfore were forced to sende ambassade to Alboce-
nus king of litle Britaine, to desyre ayde and comforte:
which they obteyned on condicion, that if they atchieued
the victorie. Constantine his brother should be ordeyned
kinge of great Britaine, for to that day, they had no go-
uernour. Which thing of the ambasadours being gran-
ted, the sayd Constantine gathered a company of souldi-
ers, and went forth with theym, whan he had manful-
ly banquished their enemies, and obteyned the victorie:
according to promise made, he was ordeyned theyr king
and guided this land .x. yerres, with suche manhode and
policie, that he keppe it in quyetenes, and from danger
of straunge enemies.

¶ Here endeth finally the dominion and tribute of the
Romaines ouer this lande of Britaine, whiche had
continued the space of .483. yerres, from that time
that Brutus began to rule this lande. 1541.

and after the citee of Rome was buyl-

ded a thousand five hundred cygh-

tie and five.

¶ The ende of the first booke.

¶ The prologue to the seconde booke.

Hitherto we haue compediouslye noted the gestes
and actes of Britons, and theyr princes, while the
lande was subiecte and tributarie to the Romans
for

The yere of the
world

The yere
of this

433.

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world

The yere
of Christ

For the moze credite annexing, alwayes the histories of
the Romains, and other externall realmes in which was
done anye thinge woorthy memorie: Menglinge also the
most notable thinges, pertaineing to christes church and
our faith. In whiche (as nere as my simple witte and
learning could compasse) I haue diligently obserued the
continuall course and orde of the histories of euery coun-
trei, whose actes be in this woork touched: that accor-
ding to my first promise, the diligent reader may behold
as in a mirrour or glasse, the state and condicion at all ti-
mes, not onely of Englande, but also of Italy, Fraunce,
Spaine, & other partes of the world. After whiche sorte,
(god willing) I purpose to go forward, in the part folow-
ing, concerning this realme of England, is chieflie to
be marked, how the Saxones, after they first entred this
land, by craftie meanes augmented theyr rule and domi-
nion, until at length they chased the Britons, and by force
of armes droue them all together out of theyr countrey
and so that they were named Angli, called this Iland af-
ter them Anglia, whiche was deuided a certaine of time
into .7. kingdomes, & after reduced to one monarchie by
Alaredus king of west Saxones, here also ye may note,
the increase of the kingdom of France, & the great ruine
& decay of that most flourishing & victoruous empyre of
Rome. Whiche in puissance so farre surmounted all o-
ther monarchies and kingdomes: as the fierce Lyon in
might and courage dooeth passe the other common bea-
stes whiche (notwithstanding) was so ouercome of the
barbarous people in those later dates, that the citee of
Rome, which .700. yeeres had continued as lady and em-
peresse of the worlde, within the space of .100. yeare, was
foure times taken and most cruelly spoyled, with all
the countree of Italy, to the manifest example,
that nothing in this world is of suche
strength and power, that it may
alway continue and en-
dure. But let vs re-
tourne to our
purpose.

The seconde booke.

The per:
of the
world

The per:
of Chr: O



WHEN IT FOLLOVETH :whan 4394

Constantine, brother of Aldobertus, had chased and overcome the Pictes & Scottes (as is before sayde) he was crowned kinge of great Britaine, & guided the lande the space of .x. yeres in quietnes. In the time of this Constantine of Britaine, reigned among

Scottes, one of the same name, whiche was a wicked prince, genewholp to filthy lust and pleasure, and without all vertue of polticie or noblenesse. Wherefore in the end he was slayne for rauishing a noble mans daughter

A synode of .200. byshops was assembled at Ephesus, in the which Nestorius and Pelagian were condemned.

Bonifacius retourninge from Afrike to Rome, overcame Aetius in battayle, and was aduanced to be master of the chivalry. Within short space after he died and Aetius was then restored to his former estate and dignitie, by the helpe of the people called Hunni.

The dominion of the frenchem was encreased so much, that the Romaine had no more of the lande of Gallia is theyr rule, then that which lyeth from the river of Rheynto Rhine, whiche is called Gallia Lugdunensis theyr kinge also overcame the Turinges, and the Cermanyes.

The Mandales were made frendes, with the Romaynes, and had inhabitaunce geuen to them in Affrike.

Aetias, the Romaine, overcame Gundecarus kinge of Burgoyne, and at his instant prayer made peace.

The Gothes brake theyr league with the Romains, & spoiled certayne townes in Fraunce, and besieged the citee Parbonense, which was deliuered from theyr assaultes by Litozius a Romaine capitaine.

Valentinian went toward Constantinople, to the end sent to take in marriage Gudocia, the daughter of Theodotus.

435

436

437

438

439

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

4401

440

Genfericus king of the Vandales and Alesnes ende, Anno
noiring to solve the heresie of Arrius in Afrike, did perse gum
cute the catholike bishops, and most cruelly put many of tanni
them to death.

Certayne pyzates with great tyzanny robbed and spoy
led the ile of Sicilie.

The Romaines by the helpe of the Hunnes, foughte
luckly against the Gothes in Fraunce.

4402

441

Altozylus the Romaine, trusting to witchcraft and an
swers of idoles, fought a battayle with the Gothes, and
was of them with great disworshyppe, put to flight, Af
ter which time peace was taken betwene the Romaines
and the Gothes.

Genfericus king of the Vandales, by decept toke and
spoyled Carthage, and subdued it to his domynion. 585.
yeres after it was conquered of the Romaines, & made
a parte of prouince of the empire. And thus began A
frike to be subiect to the Vandales.

4403

442

The same Genfericus warred cruelly on the yle of Si
cilia: For whiche cause Sebastianus a Romaine com
ming out of Spayne, invaded Afrike, and caused Cense
ricus to retourne and leaue Sicilia.

In the courte of Constantine, king of Britaine, was a
certayne Picte, in so great fauoure and auctozitee, with
the king, that he might at al times come to his presences
who watching his time by secrete meane traitterously
flewe the kinge in his chambze.

4404

443

Than Constantius his eldest sonne, whyche for his
dulle and simple witte, was made monke in Win
chester by the meanes of Moxtiger, duke of Corne
walle, was taken out of the cloyster and made kinge, un
der whose name the foresayd Moxtiger ruled all the land
and bled gre at tyzanny.

Peace was made betwene the Vandales in Afrike &
the Romaines and certayne limites and boundes pre
scribed for the marches of bothe theyr lordshippes.

The Hunnes, falling at distance with the Romaines,
spoyled and ouerrunne Thracia & Illiria, and by force
subdued all the countreys, even to the mountaines of
Grece, called Thermopile.

Atilla

ni res
mbris
noi.

Attila, kinge of the Hunnes, slewe his brother Blatas, and inforced the people to be subiect vnto hym: whereby he obteyned the kingedome alone, that before was deu- ded into two partes. This Attila was a cruell and fierce tyranne, and at this time terryble to the whole worlde. For within fewe daies he had subdued to his lordship all the Barbarous people of Scythia, and the north partes: as the Ostrogothes, Sueues, Marcomannis, Herulis, Turcilingis, Turinges, Ruges, and other.

Congallus, the sonne of kinge Dongarde, was orde- ned king of Scotland after the death of Constantine. He was geuen to peace, quietnes, and iustice, & was a good and moderate prince.

Eutices, the heretike, and Abbote of a monastarie in Constantinople, was famous.

Constans, king of Britaine, was slaine of certaine Pic- tes or Scottes, whom Mordiger had ordeined for a gard to the kinges body. Whereof whan Mordiger had know- ledge, he wept and made semblat of great sorow, and bea- uinnesse, and caused the saied Scottes or Pictes to be put to deathe, though he in deede was the chiefe causer of their treason and murder.

Aurelius and Uler, the kinges yonger betherne, fled into litle Britaine.

V Mordiger was by force ordeined kyng of Britaine, and gouerned the realme .xvi. yeres, not without trouble. For the nobles of Britaine suspected, that Constans was not murdered withoute his consent: and therfore alienated their minces from him.

In Britaine was so greate plentie of cozne and fruite, that the likz had not bene sene in many yeres before: why the plentie was cause of idlenesse, glotonie, lecherie, and other vices: so that throughe their incontinent and rous- tous lyuinge, ensued so great pestilence and mortallitee, that the liuinge scantly sufficed to burie the dead.

The Pictes and Scottes also hauing knowledge of the death of their knightes, whiche were slaine by Mordiger, for murderinge of the kinge, inuaded, and in most cruell wyse spoyled the lande of Britaine.

Whan Mordiger, beyng soze abashed, for so much as he

The yere
of the
world
4407

The yere
of Chryst
449

747.

448

449

450

The thirde parte of

Chapter
of the
world.

The pere knew the mindes of his people to be alienated from him Anno
of Egypt (after some mens opinion) sente for the Sarones named gum
Angli, whiche hadde no place to dwell in: and gave to them
inhabitaunce in Kent. By their healp and manhod.
in many battailes he vanquished and drove back the Pi-
ctes and other enemies: and therefore had theim ever af-
ter in great love and favour.

Meroneus was ordeined kinge of Fraunce, the which
was stronge and marciall in al his deedes, and there by
to right profitable to the realme. He was present in the
battaile againste Attila the Hunne, whete he wyth his
knightes fought manfully. Of this Meroneus descen-
ded all the kynges of the frenchemen, til the tyme of Py-
ppyn, father unto Charles the great. In his tyme Gallia
was firste called Fraunce.

The Synode Chalcedonense was assembled, where
were present. vii. hundred byshoppes, whiche condemned
Eutices and Dyoscorus, notable and famous heretikes.

4419

452

Theodotius the emperour departed out of this lyfe at
Constantinople, in whose place Marcianus was made
emperour of the east, and reigned. vii. yeres. This man
loved so much quietenesse, that he was wont to saye: that
a prince ought not to arme hym, if he could by any mea-
nes obteyne peace. In his tyme was the terrible biage of
Attila againste the Romains, of the whiche I wyll now
speake. Firste the Gothes, than the Vandales brake in
to Bonnomia, and lastly the Hunnes, whiche retein the
dominion therof, and of them was that countrey after a
certaine space of tyme, called Hungarie. This cruel peo-
ple caused great slaughter in all Europe. For their Ty-
rannie Attila, gathering a mightie army of. 300.000. men,
inuated Germanie: wher, in most cruell maner he spoy-
led manye citrees: And from thens spedde hym towarde
Fraunce, and toke prisoner the kinge of Burgoyne.

At that tyme Actius, maister of the Romaine chivalry,
was still in a part of Fraunce, and had made peace with
the Gothes, the frenchemen, and other: to the entente
that they, ioyninge together their puissance, mighte re-
sist the power of the tyran. Attila, who in this passyme,
had sent to Theodorich, kyng of the Gothes, wyllyng
hym

him to forsake the Romains, and saue his partye, but Theodosius would in no wise be confederate wth that of the
Theodosius would in no wise be confederate wth that of the
Pagane, and Barbarous tyrannie. The pers
of the

Wherfore in fine, in the fieldes of Fraunce named Ca
colyntes (whiche contained .i. cc. leagues in lengthe, and
70. in breadthe) bothe the bestes mette (that is to saye)
Attila with all his puissance, and the Romaines wth
their whole strength and power. 444

Histories doo teify, that there was neuer so great a
multitude gathered in the weast partes: wth the Ro-
mains were the frenchemen, Burgonions, Gothes, and
all the weaste partes: with Attila the Sueues, Herules,
Turinges, all the people of Scythia, and the no. the par-
tes. The battaile continued from the sonne rising to the
euentyde: and than was Attila of his ennemys putte to
the worse, and lost of his men. 18000. and was broughe
in to suche a freighte, that he woulde haue slayne hym
selfe.

Theodosius, kinge of the wisigothes, in this conflict
was slayne. Wherfore Eurismunde his son, to reuenge
his fathers deathe, woulde haue pursued Attila, and vt-
terly banquished his whole power. Whiche thinge vn-
doubtedly he had brought to passe, hadde not Actius the
Romaine chaunged his minde, who feared, if he had sub-
dued Attila, that he with his Gothes beynge inflate with
so greate a victorie, woulde haue broke league and turned
his power vpon the Romaine empyre.

But this counsaile of Actius was euill. For Attila, by
this meane hauing leasure returned into Hungarie, re-
payred his armie, and immediatly with great crueltie,
murder of men, and spoyling of the countreys, brake in
to Italie, and after longe siege, toke the citie Aquileia. 445

Than was Leo Pope sente to desyre of hym peace:
whiche, contrarie to the expectation of all men, he ob-
teyned, on this condicion, that Rome shoulde be to hym
tributarie.

Attila, after league made with the Romaines, required
Honoria, the emperours syster to wyfe. In hys marriage
geuing him selfe to banqueting and dizontennelle, he ouer-
charged his stomacke with wine, and sodenly ended his
life in 446

454

455

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

4417

456

life in the myddes of his festinges, where by it chanced, that whom the power of the whole empyre could not resist, a cuppe of wine utterly banquished.

From that tyme that the Romaine empyre began first to decaie, to this yere, the Romaines had losse all Germany, Dacia, Sarmatia, and other prouinces lying nere the ryuer Dunake and Rhine: also a greate parte of Spaine and most part of Fraunce, with Britaine: of the whiche none were after recouered to the Romaines.

Hengist, one of the leaders of the Saxones, found meanes, that Mordtiger, kinge of Britaine, dydde marye his daughter Rowen, a maiden of wonderfull beautie and pleasantnesse, but a miscreant and Pagane. For hir sake the kinge repudiated his lawfull wyfe, by the whiche he had receiued .iii. sonnes. For whiche deede well nere all the Britaines forsoke him. And the Saxones daelye increased bothe in fanour, multitude, and auctoritee, and from this tyme soughte alwaie occasions to extinguishe utterly the power of the Britaines, and subdue the lande to theim selfe.

Venice, the famous citee, was firste founded of theim, whiche fearinge the crueltee of Attila, fled from the countrey about Aquileia into those Ilandes where nowe Venice standeth.

Valentinian, the emperor, enuysing, or rather fearinge the prosperitee of Aetius his Duke, commaunded him to be put to death: and after demaunded of his familiars, whether it were not well done. To whom they saied, that the deede woulde shortly declare it selfe: but yet in the meane tyme, that he hadde with his left hand cut of his righte: meaninge, that Aetius had bene of longe time the state of the empire.

There happened contencion betwene the sonnes of Attila, for the succession of the kyngedome: whereby they shortly lost all that their father had lefte theim. For the Gothes, with their kinge Ardaricus, makinge sodaine warre vpon theim, discoumfited theyr host, and scatered theim with their people into dyuers countreys. After whiche example many other nacions forsoke their domination, and refused to be subiect vnto theim.

Kicia

annal re-
gum br
taam.

at red
m bri
nni.
10

Riciarius, king of Sultiers, invading Spayne, was chased and driven backe.

Valentinian the emperor, was slayne of Thasila, one of the souldiours of Aetius, whom befoze he had wrong fully put to death.

Maximus after him invaded the imperial crowne, and when he had reigned two monethes was slayne.

Gensericus, king of Vandales in Afrike, by the instigation of Eudoria the emperesse, with a mighty army invaded Rome and tooke the citee. But by the intercession of Leo, being then bishoppe, he abstained from slaughter and taking with him all the riches of Italye, returned againe into Afrike. This happened. 43. yeares after the citee was first taken by the Gothes.

After this time the maiestee of the Romain emperours was utterly decayed. For most vile and unworthy persons, of no noblenesse or vertue, invaded the imperial crowne, & usurped the same at theyr wil and pleasures.

Paulinus bishoppe of Pola, a citee in Italy, gave all his substance for the redemption of his citizens, whiche were ladde away as prisoners of the barbarous people And finally committed his owne body to prison, for the delivrance of one poore widowes sonne.

Auitus took on him imperial auctoritee in Fraunce 4419 and at Placentia, within few dayes was againe deposed

Partianus, emperor of the east, ended his life at Constantinople, being murdered of his owne people. After whom Leo, a Greke borne, was advanced to the empire and reigned. 17. yeares. This man made his sonne partner of the empyre, was also called Leo.

Majorianus took on him the gouernance of the empyre of Rome and the west, and reigned. 6. yeares.

Childericus was ordeined king of Fraunce. This man for his lechery and voluptuous living, became odible to his subiectes: and therfore soone after was faine to void his realme, and went to the king of turinges: in whose place the frenchemen chose Aegius, to theyr king.

The Saxones couenaunted with the Britains, that they should attende to theyr worldye businesse: and the Saxones (as theyr souldiours) should defende the lande from the

The pers
of the
of the

4418

457

458

459

4421

460

The thirde parte of

- The pere of the world.** **The pere of the world.** **The incurfions of all enemies.** For the whiche fervice the Britaones fhould geue to them competent meat and wages. And vnder this pretence caufed more Saxones to be lent for, intendinge at conuenient time, by force to haue the land in theyr fubiection.
- 4421 461 Saint Germaine came into Britaine to reduce them from the heresy of Pelagian to the faith of chriſt.
- 4424 463 Marozian emperour of Rome, was murdered of certaine traitours nye to the ruder Hertzia.
- 4425 464 The Britaines conſidering the daylye repaire of the Saxones into this realme, ſhewed to theyr king the leopardie that might thereof enſue, and aduertised hym to auoyde the daunger, and expel them out of the realme. But al was in vayne. For Wertiger by reaſon of his wife bore ſuch fauour towarde the Saxones, that he woulde in no wiſe heare the counſayl of his ſubiectes. Wherefore they with one wil and mynde, depriued hym of his roial dignitee, and ordeyned to theyr king his eldeſt ſon. Moztimerus: when Moztiger had reigned. xvi. yeres.
- 4426 465 Seuerus, by confederacie of certaine Romaines, was aduanced to the imperial auctoritee in place of Marozianus, and reigned. iiii. yeres.
- 4427 466 This Moztimer (as befoze is ſayd) being made kynge in all haſt he purſued the Saxones, and by his marciall knighthode vanquiſhed theym in. iiii. great battayles beſide conflictes and ſkymyſhes, vntyl at length he was payſoned by meane of Kowen his ſtepmother: after he had regned. vii. yeres.
- 4428 467 Wpogoz, king of Aleines, comminge into Italye, was vanquiſhed and ſlayne of a Romaine ſenatour called Richomir.
- 4429 468 There hapned a fyze in Conſtantinople by the whiche a great part of the citee was deſtroyed.
- 4430 469 Anthemius was ſent into Italy of Leo, emperour of the eaſt, to take on hym the imperial auctoritee at Rome, and gouernance of the weſt, betwene this Anthemius, and a noble man of his affinitee, called Richomir was great ſtrife and variance, for whiche the ſayd Anthemius was after depoſed.
- 4431 470 Seruandus, lieutenant of Gallia, naminge hym ſelfe

ani re:emperour, was banished by Anthemius.

Ch ildericus was againe restored to his regaltee in France: and soone after subdued a Saron prince named Onager, and conquered the cite of Dylance: and passing ouer the ryuer of Leyz, subdued to his signorie the countrey of Angeo and Maine.

Vortigier obteyned againe the kyngedome of great Britaine, and reigned after this time. ix. yerres: but shortly after, Hengistus (whiche was chased of Mortimer in to the ile of Chanet) perced the land wyth a numbze of Sarones: but whan he herde of the greatesemble that the Britains made againste him, he treated for peace, whiche in syne was concluded.

Romanus, a senatour of Rome, affected by pryuy meannes the empyre, and was therfoze beheaded.

Asper likewise at Constantinople laied pryuy waste to slea the emperour Leo, and named his sonne Cesar: whyche treason beyng detected, he and his sonne, were put to death.

Gensericus, kynge of the Vandales, endeouored ones againe to inuade Italy: but he was drinen backe of Basiliscus a Romaine capitaine, and constreigned, with disworship to retourne to Africke, whens he came.

Ulamir and Theodomir, kinges of the Ostrogothes breaking into Illiria, and wasting that countrey, ceased not vntill the emperour Leo had granted to theim Hungarie and Mesia to inhabite, and toke of theim Theodoricus, the younge sonne of Theodomir for offage.

Leo sent Olymbrias to depose Anthemius emperour of Rome, for discorde that had been of longe time betwene him and his kinsman Ricthomir.

Ricthomir slewe Anthemius in Rome, after whom Olymbrias gouerned the empyre. xii. monethes.

At Rauenna, the souldiours named Elicerius to be emperour of Rome.

The Sarones in Britaine, by pryute gyle and treason, got the kinge Vortigier into their handes, and kept him as prysoner: and by that meanes constreigned the king to grant vnto theim thze countreis in the lande of Britaine (that is to saie) Kent, Sussex, Suff. Poyth, Chan Vengist be

The yere of the world

The yere of Chriſt

471

472

473

474

475

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
of Christ

gilt began his lordship ouer Kent, and sendyng for moe Saxones, to be welde the other prouinces, shortly after made warre vpon the Britains, and so chased thein, that he kept his kyngdome of Kent in peace and warre. 24. yeres.

anni
gum
tanni.

Uotiger fled into Wales, and there builded a castel, of whiche buildyng and impediment of the same, and of his prophete Marlyne, the common voyce of the people speaketh many thynges.

Conrannus for so muche as the chyldren of his brother Congallus were but yonge, was ordeined king of Scotles, and guided them in good peace and quietenes a long space: but at the laste he was slayne for extortion, that Tomlet his chauncellour vsed in his name.

4437

476

Pepos, a senatour, depose Clicerius from the imperour all auctoritee, and causyng him to be ordeined bishop of Solonae, a citee of Dalmacie, by force was made emperor of Rome, to the great vniquietnesse of Italie.

Leo, emperor of Constantinople, departed out this lyfe. After whom Zenon was aduanced to the gouernance of the weast empyre. This Zenon was a man of vnknewen byrth, no lesse ill fauoured and defourmed in maners than in visage and countinaunce. He reigned. xiii. yeres, not as an emperor, but lyke a cruell tyranne.

Perofas, king of Persians, was vanquished in battaille and chased of certaine of the Hunnes, whiche were sparked into those partes.

4438

477

Whyle Zenon was absent from Constantinople, Verina his wyfes mother aduanced Basilicus, his brother to the imperiall dignitee: wherof whan Zenon had witten tyng, he fledde into his countrey Isauria, purposinge to leade there a priuate life. But shortly after beyng restored to the empyre, he extiled Basilicus, with his sonne, to Lemnys, where they bothe were fainished to death.

Pepos, emperor of Rome, sent a capitaine, named Drestes, to defende the partes of Gallia from the incursions of the wisigothes: who commynge to Rauenna, by treason aduanced his sonne Augustulus to the imperiall crowne: wherof whan Pepos had knowlage, he fled to Dalmotia.

Than

ni res Than Orestes, with his son Augustulus, made league The yere The yere
m bri and bonde of friendship with the Vandales, whiche ru of the of 478
ni. led Afrike: thynkyng, that if they were his friends, he wold
shoulde possesse the empyre in quite. But whyle he sca-
red the south, a greater storme and tempest came frome
the north.

8 For the Barbarous people, called Heruli, and the Tu 4439
rings, with theyr capitaine Odoacer, breaking into I-
taly, slew the said Orestes, and wasted the countrei more
cruelly, than any had doen before this time. And at the
citee of Rome this Odoacer took on hym the imperiall
crowne, and reigned as emperour of Italy. xv. yeres.

Than had the Barbarous people the dominion almost
of al the empyre.

The wisigothes ruled in Spaine, the Aleines in Cusan
and Gascon the Frenchmen in the residue of Fraunce:
in Afrike the Vandales, the Sarones in Britayne, the
Ostrogothes in Pise and Hungarie, in Italy, and in the
citee of Rome Herules and Turinges, only the name of
the empyre remained with Zenon in the east.

The Lombardes, with theyr king Andoyn, began first 4440 479
to inhabite the countrey nere to the ryuer Danake or Da-
nube.

Aurely, surnamed Ambrose, and Uter the bzetherne of
Constant, kyng of Britaine, whiche was slayne by the
treason of Mordiger, landed with a maner of shippes at
Torres: and by the healpe of Britaines, whiche gathe-
red to theim in all hast, made warre vpon Mordiger, and
burned hym in his castel in Wales, where he kepte hym
for his most sure defence.

1. A Urelus Ambrose was ordeined big of Britains: 4442
whiche immediatly spedde him with an armie to
warde Porke, against Octa sonne of Hégist, whi-
che with his Sarones kepte that citee, whers he discom-
fited and toke prisoner, the sayd Octa.

The hystorie of Scotlande saith, that the Pictes and
Scottes were alied with this Ambrose, and made theim
partakers and chiefe doers in all the victories, that the
Britaines atchiued against the Sarones.

2. A Saron, named Hella, with his three sons, and a com 4443 481
pany of
Ru. ii.

The thirde parte of

The yere of the world	The yere of Christ	pany of Saxones, landed in the south parte of Britaine, Anno slew the Britains, and chased many of them into desert tes and wooddes, and subdued the countreys of Southe raie, Somerset, Devonshire, Cornwall, and was called the kingdome of South Saxones.
4445	484	Zeno made league with the Vandales, withoute pres script of tyme, which continued to the reigne of Justine. Clodoveus was made king of France, after his father Childerike, and reigned. xxx. yeres. In hys tyme he made war against the Almaines and Burgonions, and over came them in battaille. He was the first Christened king of Fraunce, and was also called Clodoveus Loys. Theodoricus, kinge of the Ostrogothes, beyng entierly loued of Zenon the emperour, was made cosul of Rome.
4447	486	Honorius, kinge of the Vandales in Afrique, beyng in fectured with the heresie of Arius, did persecute the Chri stian people, and banished. 334. catholike byshops.
4450	489	Theodoricus, king of the Ostrogothes, obtained of Ze non the dominion of Italy. And therfore sped hym with all hast against Odoacer and his people, whiche by force dyd withholde that countrey from the empyre. By the waie he vanquished Strapula kinge of Gepides, and o ther enemies that made warre upon him in his tourney.
4451	490	Nere to the river Soncius the said Theodorich put to flyghte and chased Odoacer and his host: and lykewyse againe in another battaille at Verona.
4452	491	Cabades, kinge of the Persians, published a law, that women shoulde be common to all men, whiche to their pleasure woulde abuse them. For the which law he was deposed of his owne people (not suffeignynge the impietie therof) and cast in prison: in whose place Zambases was chosen to be kinge.
4453	492	Odoacer, beyng overcome in battaille of Theodorike, fled to Rome, and founde the gates shutte against hym: wherwith he beyng sore greeued, spoiled with sword and fyre as muche of the countrey lyng aboute, as myghte come to. Thens he fledde to Rauenna, where he was besieged of Theodorike the space of. iii. yeres. In the meane tyme Candabalde, kynge of Burgoyne, entred into Italy, and cruelly robbing and destroyng many

ni res
m Bri
ant

many ryche citees, retourned home with great spoyle, and ledde with him a great numbze of prizoners.

The pere
of the
world

Clodoueus, kyng of Fraunce, toke in marriage Crothilde, a mayden of excellent fauour and beautie, whiche was right inheritor to a great parte of Burgoyne, and neece to Gundabalde than kyng: whiche Gundabalde by treason had murdered his owne brother, the father of the forenamed Crothilde. For whiche cause was after arre- red deadlye warre betweene Clodouey and the kyng of Burgoyne.

The kingdome of East Saxones beganne in Britaine vnder a Duke named Uffa: the kingdome whereof con- teined Norff. and Suff. the kinges of that lordshipp were called Uffines: Grete murder and bracton of the Bri- taines was at the entringe of these Saxones.

Odoacer, whiche was besieged at Rauenna beinge con- streigned with great scarcitee and hūger yelded to Theo- dorich: by whom bothe he and his sonne was after put to death.

4454

493

Theodorich when he had banquished Odoacer, was receyued into Rome of all the Senate and people with much myrth and gladnesse, and reigned as lord of Italy 33. yeres, he was veray desirous of peace and quietenesse and so profitable to all Italye: and therewith so benigne gentill and moderate a prince, that Rome had neuer a better gouernour chosen among the auncient senatours then was this barbarous kyng, hauing his progenys of the rude people of the Gothes, he gaue much to the churche, and large stipendes to preachers and teachers of the worde of god. But yet he fauoured the heresye of Arius, as al other Gothes did.

Zenon ended both his life and reigne at Constantino- ple, after whō Anastitius obtained the imperiall crowne whiche might be numbzed among the good emperours whiche had not bene corrupted with the heresye of Eutices, wherby he became odious to the true chistians and per- secuted somewhat with catholike bishops.

Tabades, kyng of the Persians, through the diligent labour of his wife, was delyuered out of prizon: and by the helpe of the Hunnes, being restored to his regalltee,

4456

495

P.iii.

made

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world

The yere
of Christ

made warre bpō the people of Armenie and Mesopotamia, and toke the citee Amida. An air gum br tanni.

Theodorich, when he had slaine Odoacer, gaue inhabitaunce to his people, called Heruli, in a parte of Italye nere to the Alpes.

4457

496

Anastatius in the east reconered agayne the citee Amida, that was taken of the Persians, and made peace for bli. yeres.

4460

499

There hapned a great tumulte and discencion and, almost a ciuile warre in Rome, for the election of Symmachus their byshop: in the which many men were slaine. This discencion was quieted by Theodorich.

Transamundus, kyng of Vandales in Afrike, banished 210. byshops, for that thei resisted the heresie of Arius.

Olimpius, an Arrian, blasphemynge the trinitee, was suddenly stricken with lightnyng.

In the ende of the reigne of Aurely, the kyng of Brittain, Pascentius, the yōgest sonne of Vortiger, who for feare of Aurelius fled into Irelande, invaded this lande with a great armie: at whiche season Aurelius was sicke at Wynchester, and therfore sent his brother Uter to resist the malyce of Pascentius, he ouercame his enemies, and in the fyghe slew Pascentius and Guillamour kyng of Irelande. In the meane tyme Aurelius dyed (as some wryte) by force of poyson.

4461

506

Vter, surnamed Pendragō, was crowned kyng of Britaine, and reigned. xvi. yeres. He was enamoured vpon the Dukes wife of Cornwall, and to obtayne his vnkfull lust, made warre vpon his housband Carolus, and slew hym in battaille.

4463

502

Clodoueus, kyng of Fraunce, warred against the Burgonions, and annexed to his lordship all the townes and citees, lying betweene the river of Leye and Seyne.

4464

503

Theodoricus, comming from Rauenna to Rome, shewed him selfe verie gentil, pleasaunt and liberal toward the people. For he gaue great plentie of corne, and repaired many ruinous places, not onely in Rome, but in all Italie, whiche were destroyed with the irruptions of the barbarous people, and redeemed also a wonderful multitude of captiues, with his owne treasure.

Clodo.

aires
m Bri
ni:

Clodouens, the frenche king, kept warre wth the Almaines: in the whiche whan he was put to the worse, after earnest praiser made to Chyriste (wham Crothilde his wife did worship) he vowed, that if he might escape that danger, and obteyne the victorie, he wolde be baptised, and receiue the saiethe of Chyriste. After whiche victorie obtained, accordyng to his petition, he returned into France, and was baptised of the holy man Remigius, with a great part of his people.

Theodosius, to the entent he myght live in quiete, entreated meanes of Affinitee with dyuers of the Barbarous princes. He toke to wife the daughter of Clodouey kyng of France. He gauz his sytter to Honozicus king of Mandales, one of his daughters he married to the king of the wisigothes, & the other to the king of Burgoyne.

11 Anastasius the emperour builded a citee in Mesopota mia, that was called after his name Anastatia. He wal led also the citee of Armenta, named Theodosia. 4471

12 Clodouens made warre vpon Alaricus kyng of the wisigothes in Spaine, pretendyng this onely cause, that he was an heretike of the sect of Arrius, and had of him the victorie. And was therfore presented from the emperour Anastasius with great giftes of price and honour. And also admitted for a consul of Rome, whiche was at that time a dignitee of most honour. For enuy whereof, and because he had warred on the wisigothes, both enemyes and cruell warre was reared betwene Theodosich king of Italy and Clodouey of France. 4472

13 Theodosich the sonne of Clodouey subdued the Alpy enses, Ruthener, and Auernes: he conquered also Gascony and Tolous, and subdued theym to the frenchemen. 4473

Atellianus, a capitaine of the Romaines arrered a great and dangerous comocion in the north partes: & to be at quiet receyued great and riche giftes of Anastasius the emperour.

15 Clodouey, king of France, departed out of this life, leaung after him. iiii. sonnes, betwene whome the lande was thus deuised: the eldest sonne Clodompye was appointed to the lordship of Dillance: Theodosich to Au stracie: to Childebert was geuen the countrei about Paris: to 4475

The yere of Chyrist, of the world

4465

504

510

511

512

514

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
of Christ

ris to Lothayr Soysons. Betwene these. lxxx. byetherne
and theyr childre hapned great debate and deadly warre
for theyr possessions and lordshippes, whych was particu-
ly appeased by the meanes of their mother Clotilde.

anni
gum b
tanni.

Hormisdas, the .50. pope. ix. yerres. 18. dayes.

4478

517

Arthur the son of Uter Pendragon, a frepling of
xv. yerres of age, began his reigne ouer Britaine,
and gouerned the lande. xxi. yerres, hauing conti-
nuall warre, and mortal battayle with the Saxones. Of
this Arthur be wyrtten many thinges in the english cro-
nicle, of small credence, and farre discozdannt from other
wyrters. But yet all agree, that he was a noble and vic-
torious prince in all his deedes: and they testifye that he
fought. xii. notable battayles against the Saxones, and
was alway victour. But notwithstanding he might not
clerely boyde them out of his lande, but that they helde
theyr countreyes, whiche they were possessed of.

4479

518

The clergie and people of Rome were brought to con-
corde and vnitee, whiche before fel at distance for the elec-
tion of the Pope.

4481

520

Anastacius emperour of Constantinople, being corrup-
ted with the heresy of Eutices, published, that men shuld
worship god, not vnder. iii. persons as a trinitee, but as
a quaternitee, containing in it foure persons: and could
not by any counsaile be brought from that deuylishe er-
rour: but repelled from him diuers bishops with great
reproche, whiche came to persuaade him the contrarie.

ana
cris

Wherefore he was not long after stricken with lightning
and so lastly perished, when he had reigned. xxi. yerres.

4482

521

Justinus by gyle and crafty meane obteyned the impe-
riall auctoritee. For with the money that was geuen to
him to purchase the good will of the souldiours, that
Theocritianus might be emperour: he bought the fauour
of the souldiours for him selfe, and of theym was made
emperour without resistance. This man in hys youth
was a swine herde, and after, geuinge him selfe to war-
fare, for his towardnes therein, within few yerres wared
so expert & cuning in seates of armes, that he was aduā-
ced to high dignitees, & lastly obtained y empire, whiche
he gouerned with great policie and wisedome. ix. yerres.

Justinus

ani red
am bri
nni.
6

Justin banished all the bishops of the Arrians, and other heretikes, and endeouored to restore a gayne the pure and sincere christian fayth.

The year of the world 4483

The year of Christ 522

The .iii. kingdome of the west Saxones, beganne in Britaine, vnder a Saxon called Ierdicus: they landed first at an haue in Northff, called Portsmouth. With this Saxon Ierdicus and his people, Arthur had much trouble and warre. This lordeshippe contained the west part of Englande, as Wilshire, Somersetshire, Berk. Dorset. and other.

7 Theodorich, king of the Ostrogothes, whiche had the gouernance of Italy, fauouring the sect of the Arrians, and hauing knowledge, howe that Iustinus did banishe them from their churches: sent ambalades to the sayde Iustine, willing him to cal home againe the Arrians or els he would spoyle Italye and Rome with swoorde and fire. Iustine fearinge the power of Theodorich, permitted the Arrians to retourne to theyr churches.

4484

523

John. 1. Pope. ii. yeres. ix. monethes. xvi. dayes.

Alderichus was made king of the Wendales in Afrike. He fauoured the true fayth of Chryste, and called from banishment the byshops whiche by his pcedecessours had bene of long time exyled.

4486

525

Theodorich banished pope John, whiche was lamished to death.

Theodorich put to death Symmachus and Boetius. 2. noble men of Rome, for that he falsely suspected them of treason.

Procopius writeth, that Theodorich (as he was at supper serued with a fishes head) ymagined that he sawe in that fishes head, the bysage of Symmachus, bytinge hym nether hyppie, and beholdinge hym with a fyerce and terrible countinaunce. With whiche ymaginacion, he conceyued such terrour and feare: by the remozse of his conscience, that he neuer after prospered, but pining awaye ended his life.

10 Gurgenes kinge of Iberia, fledde to the Romains because that Cabades king of Persia, would by force haue constrained him to forsake the fayth of Christ.

4487

526

Da. Felix.

nam
Konrad

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde
4488

The yere
of Christ
527

Felix. 52. Pope. 4. yeres. ii. monethes.

After the death of Theodozich, Amalasuntha his daughter, with her yong son Athalaricus, obteyned the gouernance of Italy and Rome.

This woman was of so great vertue and towardnesse and in al her behauior had such a princely maiestie, that neuer man did behold her without great reuerence. She was a woman of wonderful silence, although she were both in Greke and latine excellentlye learned, and had skill in the languages of all nacions, whiche had to doe with the Romaine empire. She hadde (I thinke) that sentence of Sophocles, printed in her minde, The ornament of a woman is sylence. In all thinges perceiving to common weale, she behaued hir selfe, with suche wysedome and iustice, that no man was with her offended.

4491

530

Austinian was made emperour of Constantinople. He came but of a poore kindred, for his mothers brother Justinus, emperour before him, was but a swyne herde. He succeeded his bucle, and gouerned the empire noblye the space of. 39. yeres, and augmented it honourablye, and caused the lawes ciuile, which were disperced in infinite volumes, to be reduced into fiftie booke called the digestes, and caused to be made. iiii. booke of Institutes, and likewise the Code, concerning the decrees of emperours: although he him selfe knewe no letters. He was an excellent prince, if he had not ben corrupted with the heresie of Eutices.

I thinke this man in nothing more happie, than in that he had in his time. ii. noble and valiaunt capitaines (that is Bellizarius and Narses) by whose vertue and marcial knighthode he utterly extinguished the power of the Gothes and other barbarous people, whiche of longe tyme possessed the landes of the empire. Of the noble actes of these ii. capitaines and howe vnthankfullye they were rewarded, some what hereafter shall appeare.

Bellizarius was made soueraigne capitaine of the emperours army: and had committed to him the tuicion of the east partes. In Mesopotamia he discomfited and slewe the Persians, and again nere to a place called Satala, he banquished them and slewe their capitaine Me moze

anni res moise. Boniface. 53. Pope. ii. peres: 26. dayes.

Dozothus president of Armonie.

Hellisteus king of Aethiopes.

Esinipheus kinge of Homecites.

16 Mercurius called also John, the. 54. Pope. ii. peres. 4493 monethes.

Theudis kinge of the wisigothes in Spaine.

18 Cosroes was ordeyned kinge of the Persians, and reig ned. 48. peres, he made peace with the Romaines for an 110. peres.

There hapned a sedicion in Byzance, where Hyppatius by treason was named Emperour, in the whiche sedy cion were slaine. 3000. men. Hyppatius the chiefe capi taine with other auctours of that commocion were take and beheaded.

Agapitus. 55. Pope. ii. monethes. 18. dayes.

The silke wormes about this time were first brought out of India into Europe.

Eugenius, the sonne of Congallus, was made king of Scotland after Contrannus, and reigned. 34. peres, the Seottishe historie affirmeth, that he wrth hys Scottis. was presēt in the battailes, that Morozed fought against Arthur.

19 Amalasuntha quene of the Ostrogothes, and gouer- 4496 nour of Italy, after the deathe of hir sonne Athalaricus chose hir kinsman Theodotus to be with her partaker of the kingdome. This Theodotus was a man of lytle co- wardnesse, hauynge a frowarde and vngacious minde. berie vnnete eyther for marcialloz cluyle affayres. And yet was he bothe in Greeke and latine excedinglye well learned, and folowed Platos discipline. He wrote an hys- torie of the notable actes of his time.

Theodotus, king of the Ostrogothes, by the counsaile of Amalasuntha, fought prosperously against the Bur- gomons and almaines which were sent to Theodobere kinge of Austracie, to spayle Lyguria, Aemilia, and the countrey of Venecie.

The Mandales ordeined Gilimer theyr kinge, and call Alderich, Ameres, and Enagenes in prison.

Do. ii.

Theudis

The pere
of the
world

The pere
of Egipt

532

534

535

The thirde parte of

The yere of the wilde 4497 <i>King of the</i>	The yere of Christ 535 <i>King of the</i>	Theodis kinge of the wisigothes in Spaine. 17. yeres. anni gum tanni 20 Theodorus without cause banished Amalasiontha in to Tuscia, and there commaunded her to be beheaded, no thing mindful of the benefite whiche he hadde of hir re ceived.
--	--	---

Shortly after he sent Agapitus Pope of Rome, in am
basade to Justinian, to excuse his wicked dede. For he
emperour threated, that he would reuenge the death of
that noble woman.

Siluerius for money was made Pope, by Theodo
rus.

Justinian dimitted from warrefare all Paganes and
heretikes.

Bellizarius vanquished the Vandales in Afrike, and
toke their kinge Gilanir in plaine filde whom he set to
the emperour. He recouered agayne Carthage with all
Afrike to the Romaine empyre. 69. yeres after it was
tyrannicall and withholden by the Vandales.

4498

537

The same Bellizarius, being sent of the emperour to
deliuer Italye from the Gothes, sped him first into Sy
cille where he remayned a certaine time, pretendinge no
cause of enmittee with the Gothes: but secretly set vpon
the citee Chirina, whiche he toke with other moe, and by
the last daye of his consulship, subdued all Sicilia, that
was wholly before vnder the power of the Gothes. 21

4499

538

Vigilius the. 57. Pope. 18. yeres 22

Bellizarius passed from Sicilia to Afrike, to wyth
stand the tyrannye of Stotza, who hadde beset Carthage
with a strong siege. And when he had subdued his ene
mies and quieted that prouince, he betourned into Italy

In this pastime the Gothes inuaded Delmatia a
gainst whom went Maurilius a yong man of lusty cou
rage, the sonne of a noble manne called Mundus who in
the fight was of theim taken and slayne: whereof whan
his father Mundus had wittinge as a man in rage of
furie, made towarde the Gothes, and at the first encoun
ter vanquished theim, and pursued so egrely, that vntwa
res he fell into the handes of his ennemies, and of them
was slayne.

Gripa a capitaine of the Gothes, toke the citee Solo
ne and

ne and expelled the Romaines out of Delmattia.

Belizarius cominge to Italy, toke Naples and diuers other citees.

Theodotus, for his cowardise, was deposed of the Gothes: and a valiant warriour, named Vitigis, chosen king in his place: whiche reigned .v. yeres.

By the commaundement of this Vitigis Theodotus was slaine of Optaris.

Belizarius was receyued into Rome, and the Gothes expelled.

Constantianus, one of the capitaines vnder Belizarius recovered from the Gothes Delmattia and Liburnia.

Childebert Clodomir and Lothayr, kinges of France made sharpe warre vpon Sigismunde, kinge of Burgoyne in the whiche Clodomir was slayne. But the other brethren maintained the warre in such wise, that they toke Sigismunde, with his wife and chylde, and obtained the portion of Burgoyne, which by enheritance was due to theyr mother Clotilde.

Vitigis kinge of the Gothes, compassed the citee of Rome with a herde and dangerous siege: by mean wherof was great famine and scarcete in Rome.

Arthur, the Britaine, when after many and diuers batailles, he had set his land in some quietnesse, he betooke the rule therof to his nephew Mordod, and with a chosē armie (as sayeth Galfride and other) sailed into France: where he did meruailous thinges, and vanquished Lucius Hybertus, the Romaine capitaine, which thinge semeth not to agree with other histories.

Childebert, kinge of middle France, hearing that Almaricus king of the Wisigothes in Spaine misse intreated his sister, made warre vpon him, toke the citee Tallet and lastly him subdued, and sette his sister in hir former estate.

Vitigis sent ambassade to Cosroes, king of Persians, willing him to make warre vpon the Romaine empire.

The kinges of France warred against the Wisigothes in Spaine, and constrained them by force to forsweare the heresie of Arius, & embrace the true faith of Christ.

The feast of the purification of our lady was first

Do. iii. defined

The yere of the world

4500

The yere of Christ

539

radab radz
nindwala

4501

5401

4502

541

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world

The yere
of Christ.

depyed for a great pestilence that reigned at Constantinople.

Annals
gumbr
tanni.

Syluerius, Pope was banished of Theodoza the emperesse.

After that Belizarius hadde receyued newe ayde into Rome, from the emperor, Vitigis the Gothe, leste the siege, and made league for .iiii. monethes.

Alboynas, king of Lombardie, kepte deadly warre against the Gepides whome he discomfited and put to flight, and slew in battayl their king Commundus and of his sculle made a masarre, whiche he vled ever after in his bankettes. After whiche time the Gepides hadde no king ouer them, but were partly cōfounded with the Lombardes, partly subiecte to the Bauares.

4503

542

The Hunnes inuaded Europe, and spoyled the countrey euen to Byzance: they destroyed the citee Bourdea and retourning to theyr countree toke with them .12000. prisoners.

26

Germanus the Romaine depute, subdued Stoza, whiche rebelled againe in Afrike.

Millaine, with diuers noble citees, forsakinge the Gothes yelded to Belizarius.

The Gothes besieged Arminum, and were dyslucifrom thens by the policie of Belizarius.

Millaine was againe yelded to the Gothes.

4504

543

Citroes kinge of Persians, breaking his league, warred vpon the prouinces of the empire, and toke the citee Antioch.

27

Belizarius by knightly force subdued Rauenna, and toke Vitigis king of the Gothes, and brought him to Constantinople to the emperor, the .v. yere after he began to make warre in Italie. After whiche tyme fortune changed her cople, and the Gothes by the negligence of the Romaine capitaines, with wondrous successe, had alway the vpper hand.

Mordred whiche had the gouernaunce of Britaine, in the absence of Arthur, by treason was crowned kynge, throughe the helpe of Cerdicus kinge of West Saxones. Of whiche treason when relation came to Arthur being then in Fraunce, with all haste he made into Britaine. where.

ired
m Bri
ni:

where he was mette of Mordred, whiche gaue to him. 7. The pere The pere
stronge battayles, in the whiche many noble and valiant of the of 1412
knightes perished: and lastly, in a battayle foughten be- world
side Glaffenburie, Mordred was slayne, & Arthur woun-
ded vnto death.

The Scottes saye that this Mordred was king of Wi-
ctes, and that Arthur was slain in battaile, the Britains
discomfited, and Guanoza the queene taken prysoner by
the Scottes with great spole.

Constantine, kinsman to Arthur, by assente of the 4504
Britaines was ordeined king of Britaine and rei-
gned. iii. yerres. This man was by the two sonnes
of Mordred greuously bered, for they claymed the lād by
the righte of theyr father, so that betwene theym was
foughten sundrie battailes: in the whiche lastly the two
bretherne were vanquished and slayne.

Gildas the englishman flourished in the tyme of this
Constantine.

Aldouadus was chosen kinge of the Gothes in Italy, 4505
and reigned. ii. yerres, he subdued againe to his lordship,
all the countrey of Venecy, and the lande lying betwene
the riuer Po, or Padus and the Alpes. He ouercame in
battayle Vitallis the Romaine capitaine, and slew of his
souldiours a great multitude.

Bellizarius was made capitaine against the Persians,
whiche breaking theyr league, warred vpon the prouin-
ces of the empyre: the citee Sisauranum was yelded,
with others.

Aldouadus putte to death a noble man of the Gothes 4506
named Arapas. For enuy wherof he was slayne of his
owne men: and one Ardaricus chosen kinge in his place
who reigned onely. v. monethes.

Aurelius Conanus, a Britaine, arrered moztall warre
against Constantine the kinge, and after soze fight slew
him in the field, when he had reigned. iii. yerres.

Aurelius Conan^o, was crowned king of Britaine 4507
he was noble, hardie, and therwith berpe liberall
But he was a man, that cherished such as loved
Prise and discencion within his realme, and gave light
credence to theim, whiche accused other, were it right or
wronge.

543

544

545

546

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world

The yere of Christ. He toke by strength his vnkle which was right Anni
he yere to the crowne : and died when he had reigned. iii. gum b
peres. tanni.

4850

547

Totilas, a puissant and balliant warrour, was chosen king of the Gothes in Italy, and reigned. ii. yeres. He was not onely mightie in armes, but also benigne, getil and shewed great fauour to theim, that were on him overcome: whereby he subdued more than by dint of sword. By knightly force and policie he vanquished the Romaynes, and toke in battaile all the imperiall insygnies.

The kingedome of northumberlande beganne first in Britaine vnder a Saxon named Ida. This lordshippe was first deuided into. ii. kingdomes, the one was called Deira, whiche conteyned the lande frome Humber to Tyne, the other brenitia, whiche included the countrey from Tyne to the Scottishe sea. After this daye the Britains discreased dayly in lordshippe and rule, and drew theim towarde Wales, so that the countrey about Chester was the chiefe of their lordshippe.

Totilas the Gothe subdued Brutia, Calabria, Apulia and Lucania, he vanquished and tooke Demetrius the Romaine capitaine, and recovered agayne the citee of Naples.

4869

548

Vortiporius, the sonne of Conanus, was ordeined king of Britaine: of whom is little memozy left, sauing that Gwydo testifieth him to be a victoriorous prince, and that he in diuers battailes discomfited the Saxones.

Iustinian the emperour made peace with Cosroes king of Persians for. vii. yeres.

The Herules, about the riuer Dunaude ouercame the Sclauines.

Artabanus a Romain deliuered Africke and Carthage from the crueltie of a tyranne named Gontharis.

Iustinian was constrained of necessitee, to sende Belisarius agayne into Italy, to withstand the furie of the Gothes.

4880

549

John prouost of Africke: subdued the people of Mauritania, rebelling against the empire, and chased theim to the

ni res
n briz
ni.

the bittermost partes of Afrike.

A generall synode holden at Constantinople against the
error of Theodorus, where it was concluded, that our
ladie was the mother of god, and not of man onely.

Totilas, by force of armes, dearth, and famine, subdued
well nere all Italie: and after longe siege, toke the citee
of Rome, and spoyled it with sworde and fyre, ouerthro
wyng the walles and toures euen to the grounde. He
expelled all the citisyngs out, and left the citee almost de
sert, that it shuld not after ayde or succour his enemies.

A great earthquake was almoste in all partes of the
worlde. In Sicilia a quauze of the earthe swallowed the
mydle part of the citee, with many of the inhabitaunce,
where the voice of them, that were swallowed, was herd,
cryng for healpe and succour.

The Sclauines invaded Illiria, by whom that coun
trei was after called Sclauonie.

Belizarius recovered the citee of Rome, being almost
desolate. And within the space of .27. dayes, repayred
the citee, and builded the walles in suche wyse, that he
withstode many great & dangerous assautes of Totilas.

Theudis, kyng of Spayne, was murdered of the go
thes, for that he in his arrape resembled rather a disorde
or stage plaiser, than a prince and gouernour.

Malgo, a Duke of britaine, begane his reigne ouer
the Britaines, and gouerned theim .35. yeres: as
wryters accord, this Malgo was the comeliest and
most personable man of all the Britaines than liuyng,
and therwith endewd with knyghtly manhode: but he
delited in the foule synne of Sodomic: and therfore was
greatly persecuted of his enemies the Saxones.

The Barbarous people obteyned the dominion of all
the weast partes of the empyre.

Uendelilius, kyng of the wisigothes in Spaine, whan
he had reigned not ful one yere, was deposed and put to
death by his people, because he rauished certaine noble
matrones at Hyspall. After hym was ordeyned Agila,
whiche reigned .6. yeres.

The Romaynes, and the people called Lazs, being with
the confederate, banquished the Persians nere to Petra.

By.

The

The yere
of the
worlde
4510

The yere
of Chy
550

4512

551

Wright

in m
mod r f l i a

4513

552

4514

553

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

The Sclauines chased the Romaines in the countrey
of Illiria.

anni
gum B
tanni

4515

554

Belisarius returned from Italy to Constantinople,
partly by the intercession of his wife Antonine, partly
for that he dispaired that Italy might be recovered from
the dominion of the Gothes, whose power was at this
time wonderfully encreased.

The Gothes spoiled and wasted the island of Sicilie.

Germanus a noble man of Constantinople, was sent
into Italy by the emperor against the Gothes: who in
his iourney died in Illiria.

Totilas kinge of the Gothes, by the treason of certayne
souldiours of Aauria, obtained again the citee of Rome
at whiche time he did not spoyle it, as he hadde done be-
fore, but so costly repayed many places, and bled suche
clemencie and gentillesse toward the citsens: that he
was now counted as a father, whyche before had bene a
cruell tyranne and spoyler.

Lothaire kinge of Sopsous in Fraunce committed the
rule of the prouince of Gascon to his eldest sonne Gram-
ris: who, contrarie to the minde of his father, oppressed
the people with exactions: and was therfore commaunded
by his father to retourne from thens.

Gramris being here with greatly moued fled to his
uncle Childebert, whom he sterred to make warre vpon
his owne father.

Chameris was taken of his father in battayl, and bur-
ned with his wife and childzen.

4516

555

Harles a noble and valiant knight, was ordeyned ca-
pitaine of the warres in Italy. This man was no lesse
renowned for his pietee and godlinesse, than for his war-
ly policie and marciall knighthode, and therewith (of na-
ture) was gentil and liberall. Under him fortune im-
pled againe vpon the empyre, and the power of the Go-
thes decayed.

The Gothes spoiled & robbed the countreyes of Grece
called Corcira, Chirus, Acarnania, Aetolys, and also
greatly troubled the seas.

Nere to the citee Ancon the Romaine capitaines (in a
battaile on the sea) vanquished and slewe the Gothes,
and

ni re
mbris
ni.

and destroyed many of their shippes: and after that, set
ting on land, chased them with great slaughter of men.

The pecc
of the
world

The pecc
of the
world

Belagius. 58. pope. 11. yeres.

The great benificence, gentilnesse, and liberalitee of
Justinian moved many straunge princes, to strength &
ayde him in the warres against the Gothes in Italy.

5 Marles, with a puissant and mighty army, entred Ita- 4517
lie. At Tagina, by the healde of the Lumbardes, the Go-
thes were put to flight, and theyr kinge Toulas slayne
with. hi. thousande, of his souldiours. Marles sped him
in all haste towarde Rome.

556

Gobazer was kinge of the Lazes, sometime called
Cholci.

Hermozor, capitaine of the Persians in the east, reco-
uered Petra & overcame the Romaines for which cause
Bella the Romaine capitaine, was disgraced, and dys-
charged of his army.

6 Teias a valiaunt knight was ordeined king of the Go- 4518
thes: who forthwith made league with Amingo and
Lothayze the kynges of Burgoyne and Fraunce, and
of them receyued great ayde against Marles.

557

Marles reconered the citee of Rome, at Tarentum the
Gothes were discomfited.

Sysualdus kinge of the Bzentes or Herules, whiche
hitherto toke part with the emperour, forsooke Marles,
and alied him with the frechmen and Lumbardes, and
together with theym, ouer ranne the countrey of Italye,
bothe against the Gothes and also the Romaines.

Italy on all partes was assayled with mosse cruell war-
res. For Marles diuidinge his pussiencie, in dyuers par-
tes, sette vpon the Gothes, and the citces with them con-
federate. And in like maner Teias seperatinge his Go-
thes in sundrye costes, warred vpon the friendes of the
empyre.

The Persians, about Onagaris, with great reproch
chased and slewe the Romayns.

Agila kinge of Spaine, was murdered of his owne
people.

7 Marles banquished, and utterly subdued the Gothes 4519
in a battaile nere to Piceria: in the whiche Teias was

558

pp. ii.

slaine

The thirde parte of

The yere of the worlde.	The yere of Christ	slaine, with a hundred thousande souldours. After whi ^{ch} Annire the victory, bothe the kingdome and name of the Ostro- gum Bu gothes decayed in Italy. This happened. 64. yeres after canni the gothes first possessed Italy vnder they ^r kinge Theo doich.
4520	559	Athanagildus was after Agila king of the Gothes in Spaine, he reigned. 14. yeres.
4521	560	Parles remained as gouernour of Italy. xvi. yeres. 8 Martinus and Iustinus, the emperours capitaines in 9 in the easte partes, ouercame the Persians, and slewe of them. xii. thousande.
4522	561	Zates was ordeined kinge of the Lazer by the em perour. Parles, after the death of Tetas, granted peace to the 10 Ostrogothes, and receiued by dedicion all the citees of Tuscia. The Gothes conspired with the frenchemen and Bur gonions (whiche feared the prosperous successe of Par les) and invaded the partes of Italy nere to Fraunce. But thea in two battayles were vanquished by Dagiste us the Romaine, Auidis, capitaine of the Gothes, was taken, and sent to Constantinople. Amingo Duke of the burgonions, was slaine. Lothayze, kinge of Fraunce escaped by flight.
4523	562	Iustinus was made prouost of Armenia and Chalcis. 11 Cosroes kinge of Persians, made peace with the empe rour. A great earthquake, wherwith the citee Berincho was ouerthrowen, and the isles called Col, greuously shaken. Lothayze kinge of Fraunce dyed, and leste after him xiii. sonnes, whiche were all of peruerse and frowarde disposicion, and speciallve Arithbertus, the elder, who in filthie pleasure was moze corrupte than any woman and ended his life in the embrasing of harlottes. Chilberich reigned in France, with his bzetherne, and after they ^r discease. 24. yeres. He was wrapped in mor tall warre and trouble of the worlde, sometime by right sometime by wronge. For betwene these bzetherne hap ned often debate and strife. He toke to wife Gollanda the king of Spaines daughter, whom he dyd after repu diat

ant res
am bri
nni

diat, casting vnlawful loue to one of hir maydens, called The pere The pers
of the of Abist.
Fredegunda. For whose sake, he put from him also his
seconde wife Andouera, a woman of great byrthe, and worlde
made the sayd Fredegunda queene.

- 15 In the latter dayes of Iustinian the Hunnes wasted the 4527
countrey of Thracia and Grece, and were banquished
and slaine by the noble capitaine Bellizarius: whose end
I thinke worthy of memozye, that we may thereby con-
sider the ingratitude of men towarde those persones, at
whose hand the common weale hath receiued most high
benefites. This noble man, by whose policie and knight
hode the Persians were banquished, the Vandales sub-
dued, Afrike recouered againe to the empire, & many tri-
umphant victories atchiened on the Gothes: in his later
daies was constrained to begge his bzead from doze to
doze, and lastly, as a miserable begger ended his life. For
Iustinian the emperoz, for a light cause and smal trifle
berest him of his sight, and sent him in exyle.

Germanus a Romaine capitaine, in a battayle on the
sea banquished a great multitude of the Hunnes and a-
gaine on the land vtterly subdued the remnant.

John the. 59. Pope. 12. yeres. 11. monethes.

- 17 Iustinus the seconde, after the death of Iustinian ob. 4529
teined the imperiall crowne. A man surprised with pride
contempning pouertee, and most cruelly murdered the
nobilittee. In auarice his desire was so vnsaciate, that
he caused yron chestes to be prepared, in the whiche he
might locke vp that treasure, that by vniust exactions he
had extorted of the people. He fell also into the heresye of
Pelagian, and not long after was berest of his wittes
and so ended his life when he hadde reigned. xi.
yeres.

Sigibert, duke of Austracie hauinge ayde of his bro-
ther Chilberich, warred vpon the Sutzers, and theym
banquished.

Conwall was ordeyned kinge of Scottes and reigned
x. yeres. He was a man of great deuotion and gaue mu-
che to churches. He made many lawes concerninge the
libertee of priestes. In his time S. Colme of Irelande,
Pp. iii. and

565

568

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.
4532

The yere
of Christ
571

and Mungo the holy bishop of Blasquew were in Scot
lande.

anni re
gum br
tanni
20

Charles by whose knighthode and wisdom the Go-
thes were expelled out of Italy, by the envious complaint
of certayne noble men, and the malicious suggestion of
Sophia the emperesse, was sent for by letters from Italy
and because he was an Eunike, with wordes of repro-
che commanded to retourn to Constantinople, to distri-
bute flace and parne to the emperesse had maidens, with
whiche wordes he being greatly meued, wrote again in
this wise. That for theyr unkindenesse he would begyn
to spinne suche a threde, that the emperesse with all hir
power, should neuer be able to make an end therof. And
forthwith departed from Rome to Naples, where he re-
mainyng, incited the Lombardes to warre upon Italy.

Chilperich sonne of Sopsions in Fraunce repudiate
his second wife Coland, & toke Fredegunda a woman
of excellent beaultie, whom befoze time he had bled as his
wife.

4533

572

Longinus was sent of the emperour to succede Charles
in the gouernance of Italy: who ordeyned and brought
to new maiestates in Rome called exarchi, and chaun-
ged much the ancient forme of gouernance of Italye.
Athanagildus kinge of Spaine, dyed at Tolet. After
him succeded Limba: who after .iii. yeres gaue the prin-
cipate to his brother Leonogildus.

4534

573

Charles by the counsaile of John the Pope, was cal-
led againe to Rome, and made consul, unwitting to the
emperour.

4535

574

Charles ended hir life in Rome, after whiche time the
Lombardes invaded Italy, leuing the countrey of Pa-
nonie to the Hunnes, of whom it was after called Hun-
garie.

The Lombardes partly by force, partly by dedicion,
receyued Vincencia, Verona, Millain and diuers other
cities of Italy.

4536

575

It was not longe from this time that warre was ar-
rered betwene Chilperich of France and his mother Se-
gibert for certayne lande that he claymed of his brother
Chilperich at first had somewhat the fozdele, but i fine
yeare

24

and rest peace was concluded.

Leonogildus was ordeined kinge of the Wisigothes in Spaine, and reigned. xliii. yeres. He chased the Supters out of Spaine, and slewe theyr king Andeca 170. yeres after they hadde first settled their kingedome in that countrey.

25 Chilperich brake the league made with his brother Sigibert: and sent his sonne Clodouey to warre vpon the towne called Burdeaux, in the prouince of Neustria. 4537

26 Alboynus kinge of Lumbardes, conquered Daule: and possessed all Gallia Cisalpina (nowe called Lumbardye) and a great part of Italye lyinge next to the Alpes. 4538

Entreatie of peace was made betwene Chilperich and Sigibert: who being accorded fell at agreement, to make warre vpon theyr thirde brother Gunthranus.

27 Alboynus kinge of Lumbardes, at a banquet (drinkinge in a masarre being made of the scul of Commund^r his wifes father) wyth wordes of reproch, minded his wife of her fathers death. Wherewith she beyng grieved, and entending to reuenge hir fathers quarel, fyrst committed aduoutrie with a noble yonge man, called Helmelchidis and after entised him to flea hir husbnde: whiche thinge done, they fought fearinge the crueltie of the Lumbardes, fled to Longinus lieutenant of Italy, taking with them great treasure and riches: 4539

Ethelbert, king of the Sarones in Kent, gaue battayle to Ceawlinus kinge of the west Sarones: in whiche fight were slayne. ii. Dukes of Ethelbert, and him selfe with his people chased. This was the fyrste warre betwene the Sarones, after they had lande and dwelling within the countrey of Britaine.

Kinnatil brother of Conwallus reigned in Scotlande xlii. monethes, and after him Aidane. 27. yeres. In his time variance hapned betwene the Pictes and Scottes because that Lerudeus king of Pictes wold not restore to Aidane certaine traitours whiche fled out of his land.

28 Iustine the emperour, dyed: after whom Tyberius chiefe gouernour vnder him, and by adopcion his sonne obteyned the empire. This man was wise, valiant, iust, merciful, liberall toward the poore, and in religion a true chryst 4540

The yere
of the
world

The yere
of Christ

576

577

578

579

The thirde parte of

The pere
of the
moorde.

The pere
of Christ

Christian. He on a tyme seing in the floore of his palasce
the signe of the crosse vpon a great marble stone, mewed
with religion, commaunded the stone to be taken vp: vn-
der the whiche he founde an other like vnto the same, &
vnder that the. iiii. and the fourth: whyche all beyng re-
mewed, he founde in the same place vnestimable riches
of money. And mozeouer, the treasure also that Paris
had hydde in the ground, was to hym disclosed, whiche
war almost innumerable. And the great riches that Ro-
simunde brought into Italie, to Longine the lieutenat,
he also receiued. Thus god prouideth for liberal princes
that be good to the poore.

Rosimunde, by the counsaile of Longinus, lieutenant
of Italie, gaue popson to hir new husbände Holmelchil-
dis: who immediatly perceiving the strength of the pop-
son by him receiued, inforced hir to drinke the remnant.
And so they bothe endinge their liues with one popson,
were woorthily rewarded for the aduoutrie and murder
by them befoze committed.

Cutwalphus, the sonne of Cerdicus, king of the weast
Saxones, fought valiantly against the Brittaines, and
berafte them of. iiii. great colones.

Clephis, a fierce and outrageous tyranne, was chosen
kyng of Lumbardes, which subdued to his lordship dy-
uers citees of Italie: and not longe after, for his cruel-
tee, was slayne of his owne people.

Sigibere, making sharpe warre vpon his brother Chl-
derich: besieged him in the citee of Turney, & was there
slain by the deceite of Fredegude, the wife of Chilperich.

After the death of Cutwalphus, befoze named, his bro-
ther Ceawlmus, desirous of honoꝝ, made sharpe warre
vpon the Brittaines, and toke fro them the famous citees
of Gloucester, Worcester, and Bath.

The Lumbardes, after the death of Clephis, chose vn-
to them. 30. Dukes or capitaines, by whose giding, with
in the space of one yere, they subdued, Urbina, Umbria,
Picena, Delignia, Marsie, Samnites, Campania, and
dyuers other countreies of Italie: towarde the whiche
they vled most extreme crueltee.

Belagius, the. 61. x. yeres. xi. monethes.

Ceawm

anni re-
gum br-
tanni:

4541

530

4542

581

nnire
m bri
ni. Ceasulnus, kyng of weast Sarones, made new warre against Malgo and the Bytains, and after longe warre obtained of them the victorie.

33 Tyberius the emperour chased the persians, and drove
34 them out of the boundes of the Emppre. He recovered a-
gaine Mesopotamia, and returned with great prae, and
prches.

The Lumbardes, perceyvinge the Romaynes to bee
greatly ayded of the frenchemen, puissantely invaded the
countrey of Fraunce, called Parbone, where they cha-
sed the Burgonions, and slewe Amatus the Emperours
deputye, with a great number of souldyours.

1 **C** Areticus beganne to rule the Bytains. This man
(as witnesseth all wyters) loved civile warre, and
was so odible both to god and also to his subiectes,
that they excited the Sarones to warre upon him: which
toke from him a great part of his lande.

Mauritius, after the death of Tyberius the. ii. was orde-
neyed emperour at Constantinople, and reigned. 21. ye-
res. This man sent a greatesumme of money to Chilpe-
rich, one of the kynges of fraunce, to the entent he should
make warre upon the Lumbardes.

2 The Romaine capytayne Hummolus, by the healde of
the frenchemen, put to flyght the Lumbardes in the boz-
ders of Fraunce.

The Sarones, whiche accompanied the Lumbardes,
whan they fyrste invaded Italy, forsoke them, and made
alliance with Sigibert kyng of Austracie: and shortly af-
ter returned toward their owne countrey.

3 The Sarones in theyr retourne were discomfited and
slayne of the people called Suent: whiche lens that tyme
helde the countrey, that is now called Suedia or Suane.

Landrie, one of the Dukes of Sopsions in fraunce, fear-
ying that his aduoutrie, committed with the quene Fred-
degunde shoulde be disclosed, by hir counsaile slew Chil-
perich the kyng.

Chilperich, lefte after hym one younge sonne, named
Clothaire, whom his mother Fredegunde committed to
the tuition of Gunthranus his vnckle, and than kyng of
Orlaunce.

The yere
of the
worlde.

4545

584

4546

585

4547

586

4548

587

4549

588

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

The Sarones, hearyng of the discencion betwene Caesar and his Britains, accompanyng them with Cur mundus, kynge of Irelande, made warre vpon hyr: in suche wyse, that it was sayne to take the towne of Synter: where they assauted hym so sore, that he with his men fled from thens into Wales: by whiche meanes he lost a great part of his dominion: and shortly after ended his lyfe.

4550

589

The Britayns, whiche were chased of their enemies into Wales (as I before sayd) helde thein in that partes, and assauted the Sarones somwhyle in one coste, and some whyle in an other, vnder sundry Dukes, and so continued the space of .24. yeres.

Gregory was sent to the emperour, to excuse Pelagius for that he was chosen and admytted byshoppe of Rome without his consent.

4551

590

A noble man of Constantinople, named Smaragdus, was ordeyned lieutenant of Italy, and sent of the emperour with an armie, to deliuer Italy from the Lumbardes. Who at his comminge toke the towne called Classe, discomfited the Lumbardes, and slewe thei captain Feroaldus, with many of his souldours.

4552

591

The Lumbardes, whiche had been the space of .x. yeres without a kynge, vnder the gouernaunce of Dukes, ordeyned to thei kynge a ballant younge man, called Antharis, the sonne of Clephis.

Leonigildus, kynge of Spayne, slewe his owne sonne Hermengilde, because he wouide not consent to the heresie of Arius.

4553

592

In Britaine Ethelfridus gouerned the north Sarones, who made suche continuall warre vpon the Britains, and chased them so sore, that it is thought he slew mo of them than all the other Saron kynges. By his crueltie the faith of Christ was almost utterly extinguisshed among the Britaynes, which had continued sens the time of Lucie, about .400. yeres: and manye of the Britaynes were chased of the lande.

4554

593

Antharis, kynge of Lumbardes, invaded Hyffria, and spoyled the countrey with sworde and fyre. He dyscomfited Fransilpo the president of Gallia Cisalpina, and

took

Anni re took the citee Cumus.

gum bri
tanni.

The pere
of the
world.

The pere
of the
world.

By ouermuche raine hapned a great floude in al the countrey of Italie: so that the riuers ouerflowed manye citees and towne, to the great damage of the inhaby-
tauntes, by whych vnseasonable weather rose also great dearth, pestilence, and famine: by occasion wherof Gre-
gorie ordayned first the latine to be songe in 7. partes.

Richaredus was ordeined king of Spayne. This man calling a counsaile at Tolet, condēned the heresy of Ar-
rius, and caused the catholike sayth to be receiued of his people.

6 Childebert, one of the kinges of Fraunce, gaue his si-
ster in mariage to Richaredus of Spayne, relecting the
affinitie of Antharis the Lumbarde: who also desyred
his sister to wife.

4555

594

Antharis married Teudelina, the daughter of the king
of Bauarie.

Childebert, king of Fraunce, making warre vpon the
Bauarians, chased theyr kinge Cariabalde out of this
countrey and possessed his lordship of Bauarie.

Teudelina, with her brother Gendoald, fled into Ita-
lie to Antharis.

Childebert besieged the citee of Trent in Italie, and
spoyled the countrey there about, wyth muche crueltee
wherby he put the Lumbardes in great dread, & caused
them to feare muche his power.

Luiba, the sonne of Richaredus, was king of Spayne
11. yeres & monethes. He was slayne by the treason of
Vitecus.

7 Agilaphus succeeded Antharis in the kyngdome of
Lumbardie: who soorthwith made peace with the fren-
chemen.

4556

595

Gauthranus king of Daciaunce, made Childebert his
heyr.

Aldafne, king of Scottes, being confederate with the
Britaines, about this time, warred fiercely agaynst E-
thelfride king of Northumberlande and the Pictes, and
slew them in .ii. great battalles.

Gregory the first (surnamed the great) was ordeyned
bishop of Rome. This man, because that Italy had bene

D. II.

of longe

The thyrd parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

of long time disturbed with continuall warres: and ther Anno
foze all thinges out of honest order, entendinge to reduce gum b
the church to some good and commendable fourme of re- tannic
ligion, ordayned diuers new ceremonies, whychs in pro
celle of tyme, by his folowers, broughte into the churche
diuers abuses wel nere vntollerable.

4557

596

Romanus, beinge ordayned lieutenant in Italy, reco- 8
uered many townes, citees, and castels, to the dominion
of the emperour

The Britaines, being chased out of their countrey into
Wales, the Saxones obteyned the whole dominion of
this ilande, sauing a part of Scotland, which was subiect
to the Pictes and Scottes.

4558

597

Uictoricus king of Spaine. He was slaine of his peo- 9
ple, whan he had reigned. vii. yeres.

4568

599

Gregory sent Augustine, Melitus, and John, wyth o- 11
ther goodly and well learned men, to preach the Chryst-
an sayth to the angels: which were firste receiued of E-
thelbert king of Kent, whom they converted to the sayth.
with diuers of his people. This Ethelbert (as some men
wyte) firste beganne to buylde sayncte Pauls churche in
London.

4564

603

The first contencion for the primacy of Rome beganne 15
betwene Gregory and John, patriarke of Constantino-
ple. For Mauritius the emperour, commaunded, that
John of Constantinople should be proclaimed the vniuer-
sal bishop, or chiefe prelate. But Gregorve bishoppe of
Rome would in no wise suffer that, saying, that no man
ought to claime among Christian men, to be the vniuer-
sal bishop. For he that so did diminished the honoure of
other bishops. For this cause was great enmity betwene
Gregory and the emperour Mauritius, In so much that
he willed the Lombardes to inuade the citee of Rome,

4565

604

Gallinicus, the. iiii. lieutenant of Italye, made peace 16
with Agilulphus the king of Lombardes.

Childebert king of Orleance in France, ordeined the
Cassilo to be kinge of Bauarie. This Cassilo, by the
wil of Childebert, endeuored by force of armes to bring
the Sclauines to the sayth of Christ. But Cacanus their
kinge

re kyng so manfully with stode, that he slewe and destroyed
wel nere the whole host of Cassila.

The Hunnes, making warre in Pannonie, were dis-
comfited and slaine by Theodostus and Germanus the
emperours capitains, & the countrey of Pannonie was
recovered to the empire: wherewith the Lumbards found
them selves greued: because they gaue inhabitaunce to the
Hunnes in that countrey at theyr departing.

Goudamiris, kyng of Spayne, reigned. ii. yerres.

17 Childebert of France was slaine with poyson. He lefte
after hym. ii. sonnes. Theodobert, to whom he gaue Au-
stracie: and Theodorich, whiche hadde the prouince of
Burgoyne.

The Saracens spoyled and destroyed a great parte of
Sicilie.

Simiragdas was againe made lieutenant in Italye,
after the death of Gallinicus.

Rome was besieged a whole yerres space by Agilulphus
kyng of Lumbardie, but it was so wel defended, that he
departed thens in bayne.

The Hunnes warred bypon certayne places of mydle
France, and did therein great harme. But by meane of
ryche goltes by them receiued of Brunichyld, they lefte
that countrey, and drew towarde Soylons: where they
were discomfited and dreuen backe by Clothayre, beyng
than kyng of that prouince.

Mauritius the emperour, for his couetousnesse beyng
odible to the people, and specially for that he receiued the
souldiours wages, was slaine by Phocas, with hys wyfe
and children, at Chalcedo.

18 Phocas was ordeined emperour of Constantinople, and
reyned. viii. yeres. This man, for happe and prosper-
ous successe in warre, was to the common weale ryght
profytable: but in auarice, and ouer much burdeynynge
hys people with exactions, he was no lesse to be blamed
then his predecessour.

There appeared a blaspyne sterre wonderfull greate-
nesse.

Kenneth kene the sonne of Conwallus was ordeyned
kyng of Scotland, and reigned onely. iiii. monethes. And

Ag. iii.

after

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

4566

605

4567

606

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

after him Eugenius the fourth of that name. xv. yeres. An
He was a iust & vertuous prince instructed in his youth
by the holpe man Colate. He commaunded all iuglars
minstrelles, scoffarres, and such ydle persons either to a-
wode his lande, or to fynde some honest craft to liue by
Aylolphus, the Lumbarde, spoyled Cremona, & took
Mantua.

Sisebuto, king of Spayne reigned ix. yeres. vii. mo-
nethes. He receyued the true fayth of Christ, and greatly
fauoured and augmented the same. He arriuinge in A-
fricke, with a nauie of shippes, subdued to his lordshippe
many prouinces of that countrey.

4569

608

Sabinianus was made bishop of Rome. He so muche
enauied the name of his predecessour Gregory, that bneith
he would suffer his bookes to be published. In his time
was a great dearth and famine.

About this time were seene many strange & vneouth
syghes, among others the monsters of the sea shewed
thems to the people the space of halfe a daye.

Lemigius a Thracian was made the. bi. lieutenant in
Italie.

Boniface the. iiii. was bishop of Rome. vi. yeres. viii.
monethes.

After the Barbarous people had disturbed the whole
worlde with deadly & cruell warres, and infected all the
weast partes (speciallye Italye) wpth mosse habomina-
ble vices and all kinde of naughty liuing, true learning
religion and godlinesse greatly decayed among Christia-
an men, and couetousnesse, arrogancie, a desire of worlde-
ly pompe reigned not onely in the hertes of princes and
the common people, but also especiallie of bishoppes and
prelates of the churche: so that a little befoze this tyme
John the patricke of Constantinople, of an intollerable
pride, made suite to Mauritijs the emperour to be called
the chiefe bishop, whom Gregorye than bishop of Rome
vehemently withstode, and wrote agaynst him very ex-
tremely in diuers epistles: saying, that he firste broughte
in the example of Antichrist into the churche, for that he
claimed to him the name of an vniuersall bishop, to the
derogacion of al other, with diuers like wordes of great
reproch

reprove. Upon that occasion geuen by John byshop of
 Constantinople, Boniface beyng now at this time made
 byshop of Rome, obteyned of Phocas the emperour, to be
 called the vniuersall and chiefe byshop, nothing regarding
 eyther the commaundement & instruction of Christ, say-
 yng to his disciples, that they whiche woulde be highest
 among them, should be lowest: eyther is the example of
 godly men before time, and decrees of ancient counsailes
 whiche did alwaye abhorre that suche titles and names
 of extreme pride, shoulde be vsed in the church. For saint
 Cyprian writing often to Cornelius byshop of Rome, ne-
 uer calleth him other wise than brother, or felowe byshop.
 the like is founde in the woorkes of Tertullian, Hierome
 Chrysostome, Augustine, and other auncient writers. yea
 and the counsaile of Carthage hold in the yere of our lord
 419. (where, 217. byshops were presente) because the au-
 thoritee of the byshop of Rome was somewhat than in con-
 trouersie decreed, that none shoulde be called the chiefe bi-
 shop but only in this wyse the byshop of the chiefe see, whi-
 che honour they gaue than to Rome, because it was and
 had been the seate royall of the empyre: not to establishe
 any auctoritee ouer other churches: these thinges I saye
 nothing regarded. Boniface beganne fyrst to vsurpe that
 primacie, that the Romain byshops haue euer sence, fals-
 ly alleged to be giuen them by the scripture aboue other
 byshops. Wherefore, seeing that Gregory esteemed John
 of Constantinople to bypunge into the church the example
 of Antichrist, because he sued for the name of vniuersall
 byshoppe: euery man maye easelye iudge, what is to bee
 thoughte of all the successeurs of Gregorye in the see of
 Rome, which haue not only take vpon them that name
 to the derogacion of all other byshops, as Gregory com-
 plaineth, but also to bee called the heade of the vniuersall
 church, christes vicar in earth, with other names and titles
 of blasphemie, to the great dishonour of god: challengyng
 also & vsurping, (vnder this pretence, a full iurisdiction &
 auctoritee not onely ouer the whole clergy, but also ouer
 emperours, kinges, and princes of the worlde, alteringe
 and disposing their realms and kingdomes at their own
 pleasure, by reeing of moste deadlye warres to the utter
 M. g. ill. distur

The yere
 of the
 world.

The yere
 of Christ

The thynde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

4573

612

disturbance of all Christendome. Pera and that is mosse Annire
bntollerable, anauntinge theym selfe in their decrees to gum br
haue auctozitee aboue the woozde of god, and that the in tannic.
terpretacion therof was onely in theyr handes: because
(as they saye, they could not erre, & yet by their errors
and diuellishe ordinances haue bzought into the churche
all naughty doctrine, supersticion, and depzaning of god
des woozde, where by they haue wel nere utterly banished
true religion and shewed them selfe to be the chiefe head
and membre of Antechrist.

Prasini and Meneti, people of Asia,, with mutual war 24
res pursued eche other very cruelly.

The Hunnes, called Auares or Banares, inuaded the
prouince of Forumiuli, ouercame the Lombardes, & in
battaille slewe theyr capitaine Gysolphus, whose wyfe
Romilda being enamoured vpon the beauty and comely
personage of Cacanhus, kinge of Hunnes, betrayed to
him the citee of Forumiuli, on this condicion, that he
should take her to his wife. Who vsed her as wife onely
one night, and than commaunded her with mooste gre
uous tourmentes to be put to death, taking of her wooze
thye punishment for her treason and vncleanesse.

Forumiuli was wasted and spoyled.

The Slauiues perced Histria and Dalmatia, & sub
dued to theim all that countrey.

4574

613

Cadwane duke of Northewales, was made soue:
raigne of the Britaynes, who comming out of wa:
les, gaue stronge battayle to Ethelfride kinge of
Northumberlande theyr most deadly enemye, and in di
uers encountres so discomfited the sayd Ethelfride, that
he was forced to entreate for peace. After whych con
cord made betwene these two princes, they continued all
theyr life tyme as two speciall and louing friendes.

Colozas, king of Persians, inuaded the landes of the
empyre, and tooke from the Romaynes many citees and
countreys: at whiche time the empyre beganne fyrst to
decaie in the east partes.

There was at the same tyme a commocion in Africke,
by the treason of the lieutenant Heracianus, father to
Heracius, which after was emperour.

Phocas

nni re um bri nnie.	Wheras the emperour was slaine by Heraclianus. Heraclius, by meanes of his father, was aduanced to the empyre, and crowned with the imperiall diademe by 2 Sergius patriarke of Constantinople. He reigned. 31. yeres. In hys tyme fell muche aduersitee the Romaine empyre in the east.	The yere of the world.	The yere of Christ
3	Thendobert and Theodorich, kinges of Austracie and Burgoyne, by the counsaile of Brunichild theyr graund mother, made warre vpon Lothayre their cosin and king of Sopsous. In whiche warre was so greate slaughter, that the course of the riuer Arunne was stopped with the multitude of dead corpes, whiche were cast therein. But the moze parte fell of the souldiours of Lothayre.	4575	614
	Richardus, kyng of Spayne reigned one yere.		
	Eleutherius was ordeined the .7. lieutenant of Italy.		
4	The Persians toke the citee of Hierusalem: wherein they slew of the Christian men .9. thousande, and toke the holy crosse with them into Persia.	4577	616
5	Eleutherius toke the cytee of Naples, and overcame Campsinus, capitaine of the Lombardes, and made peace with them for .x. yerres.	4578	617
	An other battayle was foughten betweene Lothayre and his kinsman Theodobert kyng of Austracie, in whi- che Lothayre was discomfyted, and with greate losse of his men fled to Paris.		
	Densdedit, the .66. byshop of Rome. lxx. yerres.		
	Sultrilla, the sonne of Richardus, kyng of Spayne reigned .x. yerres. He made hys sonne Rachimir felowe with him in the kyngdome.		
6	Kingulfus and Quincellinus, after the death of Col- wolphus, ruled iointly the principalltee of weast Saxon- es in Britaine: whiche in the beginning fought against the Britains at Ampton beside Drenforde, and wanne of them the towne, with other holdes.	4579	618
7	The Persians toke Alexandria in Aegypt, and after the death of Heraclianus the emperours father, subdued to them Carthage, and, and all Africke.	4580	619
	The emperour desyred peace of the Persians, whiche he could in no wyse obteyne.		
8	Heraclius proclaymed Constantine hys sonne partaker of the	4581	620

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

of the Emppre.

Anni
gumbr
tannie

Heracius the emperour went forth in his byage
gainst the Persians: whom in dyuers great battayles he
banquished, and slew of thein many thousandes. This
warre continued. vi. yeres.

Boniface, after Deusdedit was made byshop of Rome.
He first ordeined, that they whiche fledde into churches,
shoulde not be taken thens by violence.

Cleutherius, the Emperours lieutenante, traiterously
named him selfe kyng of Italye. For whiche treason he
was slaine of the other capitaines, and his head sente to
Constantinople. After whom Isaac was lieutenante of
Italye.

Adoaldus succeeded his father Agilulphus, and gouer-
ned the kyngdome of the Lumbardes.

458:

621

Deadly malice was kindled betwene Theodorich,
kyng of Burgoyne, and his brother Theodobert.

Fergus the eldest sonne of Eugentius was kyng of
Scottes. xii. yeres. In the tyme of this mans reigne by
his neglygence was greete diuision and debate amonge
the nobles of the realme.

4583

622

Warre betwene Theodorich and Theodoberte, in the
whiche Theodobert and his host was discomfited at Co-
ull, and fled thens to Coletine: where by treason he was
slaine, and his head conueyghed to his brother.

Theodorich, being enamoured vpon his brothers dange-
ter, woulde haue taken hir to wyfe, had not his graund-
mother Brunichilde withstode his purpose: because she
was so nere of his bloude: wherwith Theodorich was
soze dyspleased, and threatened to slea his graundmo-
ther: because she before tyme hadde entised hym to make
warre vpon his brother Theodobert, vnder this pretence,
that he was not his owne brother, but the sonne of a gar-
diner. Brunichilde, fearing his manasinges, found mea-
nes, that he was secretly after poysoned: and than vpon
Clothaire rule France alone, which a good season was
diuided into thre lordshippes.

4585

624

Eowine, the sonne of Ella, whiche was persecuted of
Ethelrede kyng of Northumberlande, made sore warre
vpon the said Ethelrede, and slew him in plaine bataille:
and than

ant res
umbris
anni.

and then ceased into his possession the kingdome of North
thumberlande. This Edwine was the firste christian
king of that countrey.

The year
of the
world

The year
of Chri

The thre sonnes of Ethelbert fled into litle Britaine
Siroe, the eldest sonne of Cosroas of Persia, for enuy
that his father preferred his yonger brother in the king
dome, by a conspiracie imprisoned his owne father, his
yonger brother, with their wives and childzen, and com
manded them to be put to death. And then made league
with the emperour on condiction that all the landes that
the Persians had wonne by force of armes, should be a
gaine restored to the empire, and the holy crosse withall.
Heraclius recovered Afrike and Aegypte, to the empire
of Rome.

4586

625

Mahomet of Arabia, whyle there was great confu
sion of thinges both in the east and west, beganne
his errour. He came but of a base stocke, and be
ing fatherlesse, one abdemonaples, a man of the house of
Almaell bought him for his slaue, and loued him great
ly for his fauoure and witte. For whiche cause he made
him a ruler ouer his marchaundise and other businesse.
Then one Sergius amonke, which for heresie fled into
Arabia, instructed him in the heresy of Nestorius. In
the meane season his maister died without childzen, le
uinge behinde him muche riches, and his wife a widow
of .50. yeres of age, whom Mahomet married: and when
he died was made heire, and greatlye encreased in ry
ches. And for his magicall artes was had also in great
honour of the foolish people. Wherefore by the counsaill
of Sergius, he called him selfe the great prophet of god
and shortly after, when his name was publyshed, and of
great auctorite, he deuised a lawe or kinde of religion
called Alcaron in the whiche he toke some part wel nere
of all the heresies that had bene befoze his time. With
the Sabellians, he deuised the trinitee: with the Mani
ches, he affirmed to be but two persones in the deytie: he
denied the equalitee of the father and the son with Eu
nontus: and sayde with Macedone, the holy ghost was a
creature: and approued the multitude of wives with the
Picolaytes: he bozowed of the Actes circumcision, and

Re.

of the

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
wold.

The yere of the gentils muche supersticion, and somewhat he toke annu-
of Christ of the christian veritee, beside many diuelishe phantasi- gum
es inuented of his owne braine. Those that obeyed his canni
law he called Saracens. When he had liued .40. yeres,
he died of the fallinge sicknesse, whiche he had of longe
time dissembled: saying, when he was taken therewith,
that the angel gabriell appered to him, whose brightnes
he coude not beholde.

4587

629

Honorius the .68. pope xii. yeres. xi. monethes.
About this season beganne the kingdome of Mertia, or 14
middle Englande, vnder the stronge painim & Sarone
called Penda, whiche lordship contained Huntingdon-
shire, Herefordshire, Gloucestershire, and other. And
was greatest of all the other kingdomes. At that time
reigned in diuers partes of this land .7. kinges. Siber-
tus amonge the east Saxones, Redwoldus king of East
angel, now North. Suff. Ethelbert king of Kent, Ethe-
wolphus of Southsex: Kingilus and Quincellinus of
west Saxones: Penda of Mertia: Edwine of Northum-
berland.

4588

627

Siroe gouerned the Persians one yere. And after him, 15
his sonne Adheler an other yere: and then was Hormis-
dathair kinge.

Hisecundus expelled his owne brother, obtained the
kingdome of Spaine, and reigned. vii. yeres.

Quincellinus, kinge of west Saxones, for a certayne
grudge and displeasure, sent a sword man by pryuy mea-
nes to slea and murdye Edwine of Northumberland for
whiche cruell intencion, beyng shortly after espyed. Ed-
wine made fierce warre vpon Quincellinus, and hym
banquished in battaille, and slew a great noumbre of his
souldiours.

Brunichild, a woman of peruerse and euill disposition
maligned alway against Clothayze king of France hir
nephewe: and therfore excited one Sigisberde to claime
the lande of Austracie. But in the ende this Sigisberd
was taken and slaine, and Brunichild for hir manifold
mischience put to most vile and shamefull deathe, which
in her time had bene occasion of the deathe of .x. princes,
beside

beside other.
Edwine king of Northumberlande, was baptised of
the holy bishop Paulinus, and after him manye of his
people.

The yere
of the
of a hys

Clothare released to the Lumbardes the tribute of. 12.
thousande poundes, that was sette bypon them by Cun-
tharus his uncle.

Edwine kinge of Northumberlande, for the refreshinge
of waifaring men, ordeyned certayne cuppes and dishes
of yron to be fastened by suche clere welles and fountai-
nes, as did renne by the waye side.

Pyrewaldus, king of Eastangles, tourned to the faithe
of chryst.

Kinge Ferquarde of Scotlande for his crueltie and ne-
gligence in the affaires of the comon weale, was of his
lordes disgraced and cast in prison, for sorow wherof he
slew him selfe.

19 Dagobert was ordeyned king of fraunce after Clo- 4592
thare: In the firste beginninge of his reigne one Hei-
bert his halfe brother, claymed a parte of the kingedome
and for the same made some stering. But the matter by
wise counsaile was quieted, and Heibert contented with
a porcion of land assigned to him in Gasan.

631

Donewalde the thirde sonne of Eugentus, was ordeyn-
ed kinge of Scottes, and governed the realme vertui-
ously and wisely. xv. yeres

A noble man of the Lumbardes, named Arsoaldus, de-
posing Adiold, obtained that kingdome, and made peace
with the Romanes.

21 Penda, kinge of Mercia, and Cadwane of Britaine en- 4594
uoyng the prosperitee and quietenesse of Edwine of Nor-
thumberland made on him deadly warre, in the whiche
Edwine was slaine: after whom Caulfricus the eldeste
sonne of Ethelricke, and his uncles son Ofricus, gover-
ned together the kingdome of Northumberland. Which
bothe being miscreantes: tourned the people againe fro
the faith of Chryst.

633

22 The forenamed kinges of Northumberlande were both 4595
slaine in battaile of Cadwane & Penda, kynges of Bri-
taine and of Mercia

634

Kr. II.

Thar.

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

Then did Oswalbe the seconde sonne of Ethelfrine, annid re
take vpon him the kingdome against whom Cadwane, gum Bi
king of Britaines, made fierce warre, and was of him tanni
vanquished and slaine.

Quintilla, the seconde of that name, king of Spaine. fift
peres.

The emperour Heraclius being greatly delited with
the ostensions and enchauntmentes of witches and south
saiers, was monished y a greuous stozme shoulde come
to the empire by the circumfised people. Wherefore inter
preting it to be spoken of the Jewes, he inforced all that
were vnder his dominion, bntwyllynglye to professe the
fayth of chrisste, but this thinge was mente of the Sarac
sens, whiche after that inuaded the empire with greatte
cruelte.

4596

635

Cadwalline, the son of Cadwane, began his reigne
ouer the Britaines. He was valiant and mightye
and warred ströglye vpon the Saxones, and made
Penda king of Mertia to him tributarie.

4597

636

Kingilphus, kinge of weast Saxones, was touned to
the right belife, by a holy man called Berinus.

Sigeberte kinge of Eastangles, or Northfolke ordey
ned good letters to be learned, and erected scholes in dy
uers partes of his dominion, as he somtime had sene in
Fraunce. By him was the first cōmon schole founded
at Cambridge.

4598

637

Dagobert king of Fraunce, whiche befoze had lyued
as a moderate and good pñce, wared now a cruell ty
ranne, and with exactions pilled his people: and beside
his crueltie, he was geuen to al sensual lust of the body
He most cruelly destroyed the countrey of Poeters: and
eared the stretes of their citee, and sowd therein sault, in
token of vtter destruction. He subdued the also the Scla
uines & Gascoines, & shewed toward the great crueltie.
Heraclius, the emperour, fell into the heresie of the Mo
notholites, whiche beleued that there was but one will
in chrisst.

4599

638

Seuerinus the 69. pope one yere. ii. monethes.
Tulga king of the Gothes in Spaine reigned. 2. yeres.

4

nt res
m bri
ni

The Arabians, thep^r name being chaunged and cal^d The yere of the
led Hrrasens by the leading of Mahomet invaded Per. of the
sia, and ouercame their king Dymisoa: by which meane worlde
5 Persia was subdued to Mahamet and his law. 4600

John the.iii. of that name, pope one yere. ix. monethes.

7 In Kent there reigned a Sarone named Ercombert 4602
whiche helde that p^rincipate. xx. yeres noblye. He reuy
ued againe the Chistian faith, whiche was greatlye mi
nished in diuers places of his kingedome. He destroyed
the temples of the Gods, and ordeined Lent to be fasted.
Cindasuindus reigned amonge the Gothes, in Spaine
x. yeres.

Theodoras whiche was sonne of a bishop in Grece,
was made pope, and liued. vi. peeres. v. monethes.

8 The Sarasens forsoke the obedience of the emperour 4603
for so muche as thei were dismissed out of wages, where
before they were as hyred souldiours vnder the empe
rours capitaines. They coquered Damascus, toke Phe
nicia, spoiled Antioch, beseged Hierusalem, and subdued
to their signorie all Aegipt. It is vneth credible, howe
much the power of this kingedome encreased within
thorte space.

Kotharis kinge of Lumbardes, beinge infected with
the heresie of Arrius, ordeined that in euery citee should
be. ii. bishops, a catholike and an Arrian.

Heraclius the emperour, after the deth of his wife
solgued to him in marriage his owne naturall daughter
by his first wife: and not longe after, died of a straunge
disease.

9 Kenwalchus king of west Sarones in Britaine, was 4604
driven out of his kingedome by Penda, and kept from
thens by force the space of. yeres.

Constantine, the sonne of Heraclius succeded his father
in the empire. When he had reigned. iiii. monethes, he
was slaine by the treason of his stepmother Martina.

In his time Theodoras was made lieutenant of Italy.

Heracilianus was made emperour by his mother Mar
tina, and reigned not full. ii. yeres.

Penda

The yere
of A. M.

639

641

642

643

The thirde parte of

The yere of the world. 4605	The yere of Christ 644	Penda kinge of Mercia, warred upon Oswald the good and holy king of Northumberland, and slew him in bat- tyle with many of his knightes. Merlina, the emperours mother, for the murder that she had before committed, by the iudgement of the senat had her tongue cut out, and was also banished with her sonne the emperour, whiche had his nose cut of, in token of reproche. For that he was consenting to that cruell deede. Constans was made emperour. This man fauoured the heresie of the Monotholites, and was therewithall verie couetous. For whiche causes he became odious to his subiectes, and was slayne when he had reigned. 27. yeres.
4606	645	Clodouei the yonger sonne of Dagobert, beganne his reigne ouer the middle part of France, and his elder bro- ther Sigibert was made kinge of Austratie or Lozains. This Clodouei was also called Lowes.
4607	646	Oswie, the brother of Oswalde, obtained the kingdome of Northumberland in Britaine. Who slewe Oswine his brothers sonne and made Mollwaldus partaker of hys kingdome. Fferquharde the son of the late kinge Fferquharde was made king of Scottes and reigned. xliii. yeres. This man in his priuate life was liberal aboue his power but when he was auctorised kinge, he became a cruell, coue- tous and gloutenous tyrannus: wherfore he was stricken of god with a vile and painfull sicknesse wherof he died.
4608	647	Kenwalcas, kinge of weast Saxones, was restored to his kingdome by the helpe of Anna king of Eastangles. Martine was ordeined the .72. pope.
4610	649	In France was such a dearth and scarcete, that a quar- ter of wheate was solde for .v. nobles. Wherfore kinge Clodouei, to succour the poore people caused the church of S. Denies, that his father had couered wth syluer, plates, to be rased vp, and couered againe with lead and that syluer to be distributed amonge the needy folkes.
4611	650	Martine pope assembled a counsaile of .105. bishops In the whiche Cyrus byshoppe of Alexandria, and Ser- gius, Pirrhys and Paulus, whiche successively hadde bene

ant res bene bishoppes of Constantinople, were condemned for heresie. The pere of the worlde The pere of the worlde

Recisulindus was ordeined kinge of the wisigothes in Spaine, and reigned. 18. yeres. 11. monethes.

17 By the exhortacion of Martine pope, Theodorius the lieutenant of Italy, gaue battaile to Kotharis the Lumbarde nere to the river Scultenna, wher he was banquished and beaten, with the losse of .vii. thousande soulidours. Kotharis beinge very proude, annexed to his kingdome all the countrey of Ligurie.

20 Kenwalcus builded the bishops sea of Winchester in Britaine. 4615

22 Penda king of middle Englande, made warre vpon Anna kinge of Eastangles, and slew him in open field. With whiche victorie Penda beinge elated in pride, sent his defiance to Oswie of Northumberland, who hearing of the comminge of that tyran, proffered to him greates gistes and sayre condicions of peace. But Penda obstinately refused all entreatie of concord: And therefore shortly after he was slayne in battaile, with .ccc. of his most noble capitaines, although he had thise the number of people that Oswie had. And thus this heaten and bloudye Pagan ended his crueltie, whiche with diuers warres a longe season had tourmented the land of Britaine.

Martine pope was banished by Constantine the emperor. After whiche time the sea of Rome was voide. xii. monethes.

A great famine and dearth, through which manye died for lacke of sustinance.

Bennet the monke, and maister of the reuerent Beda was famous in Britaine. This Bennet broughte firste the crafte of glasinge into this lande.

23 The Saracens whiche with great crueltie and conynuall warres hadde spoyled Asia and Africke, perced Europe. They subdued the Rhodes, wasted and pilld Sicilie, and with unspeakable tyranny, afflicted the places called Cyclades.

Eugenius the. 73. pope. iii. yeres.

24 Olympius, lieutenant of Italy, with much labour 4619 and

651

654

656

657

658

The thirde parte of

The pere
of the
worlde.

The pere
of Christ

and great losse of men, expelled the Saracens out of Sicily and by our great trauaile fell into a mortall disease, of the whiche he dyed. After him was Theodosius lieutenant of Italy.

Vitalianus pope. xliii. peres.

Rodoaldus, king of Lombardes, beyng taken in adultery with a noble woman, was slaine of his husband.

462.

662.

Arithbert obtained that kingdome, who shortly after was murdered by a conspiracie of traitours, and left after him. ii. sonnes. Bertheres and Gundebert, whiche were driven out of the kingdome, by Grimoald duke of Bonenent, who usurped kinglye auctoritee, amonge the Lombardes.

Cloduet of Fraunce comminge into Italye to ayde the two brethren, was driven backe by Grimoalde.

Vitalianus pope ordeined organes first to be used in the church.

463.

664.

Constance the emperour made his son felowe with him in the empire, and then led a puissant armie into Italye pretending to deliuer that countre from the seruage of the Lombardes, but he, as a cruell prince, used all extremitie towarde the cities whiche he subdued, and was banquished of the Lombardes. When he came to Rome all the aunciente ornaments of the citee, which his predecessors had geue to the furniture therof, he toke with him and departed from Italy towarde Constantinople more like a robber than a healer.

Theodosius Calliopa, the. xi. lieutenant of Italy.

Pere about this time the element seemed to bourn like fire, the space of tenne dayes. A blasing starre appered ii. monethes. Wonderfull stormes of raine fell continually from above, and so great plente of thundre & lightning that the like therof had not bene sene.

464.

665.

Great mortalitee and sickenesse in Britaine, which continued and encreased more and more during the time of this Cadwalline, and his successor.

Cissa builded the abbey of Abbingdon in Britaine.

In these dayes monkes were in great estimation, & the sectes of religion began to swarme throughout the worlde.

Malwine the son of Dowalde was aucthorised kinge of

- | | | The yere
of the
worlde | The yere
of Christ |
|----|---|------------------------------|-----------------------|
| ni | of Scotie, and reigned. xx. yeres. He made peace with the Pictes and Saxones, and at the last was murdered of his wife for suspicion of aduoutrie. | | |
| 22 | Clothaire king of Fraunce, after his brother Clodouet | 4627 | 666 |
| 25 | Disorde amonge the Lombardes, where one Lupus Duke of Forimulii, affecting the kingedome, made warre vpon Grimoalde, in the end wherof, after diuers battailes sore foughten, to the great losse of bothe parties. Grimoalde obtained the victorie: by the aide and manhode of the Bauariās: and Lupus was slain in the fielde, and the citee of Forimulii greuouslye spoiled by the sayd Bauarians. | 4630 | 669 |
| | The Sclauines endeouored to restore Arnefride, the son of Lupus, to his fathers Duchie: but they were dyuen back with great damage and losse, by one Vectaris gouernour of the citee Vincentia. | | |
| | Bamba was ordeined kinge of Spaine, and reigned. 9. yeres. | | |
| 26 | Constance the emperor was slaine of his people, after whom Miffellus toke on him the imperiall crowne, whiche shortly after was murdered of the souldiours, and Constantine the son of Constance aduanced to the empyre. This man had prosperous successe in his warres against the Sarasens. | 4631 | 670 |
| | Adeodatus the. 75. pope. lxxx. yeres. ii. monethes. | | |
| 27 | Theodozich king of Fraunce, gaue him to pleasure and idlenesse and neuer would shewe him selfe to his people but ones in the yere, that is, in the kalendes of Maye Under him Ebozine maister of his palace, gouerned the realme, and vsed muche crueltee. For the whiche bothe he and Ebozine became odious to the people. Wherfore the nobles inclosed them bothe in a monastarie, & made Childerich their kinge. Wherof they shortly repented so muche as Childerich was a mā of light maners and in his liuing dissolute and dishonest. | 4632 | 671 |
| 28 | Bamba king of Spaine, discomfited and ouerthrew the Mores which perced his land with a nauye of. 270. shippes. | 4633 | 672 |
| 31 | The Sarasens spoiled and wasted the fland of Sicily | 4638 | 677 |
| | Ss. toke | | |

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere of the
citizens, and returned to Alexandria with greates praye
and riches.

4639

678

Baldala king of Saracens.

Bamba, kinge of Spaine forsoke his regalltee and be
came a monke, after whom succeeded Eringius, and reyg
ned. vii. yeres.

Childerich of France caused a noble man of his realme,
named Bolyde, without gylte or trespasse, to be bounden
to a stake, and there beaten euen to the death. For which
crueltee his lordes and commons being greuously offen
ded, conspired together, and slew him, with his wife, as
they were in hunting.

Theodorich was againe made king of France, by con
sent of the nobles.

Edryde, king of Northumberlande, claimed the lande
of Ethelred, king of Mercia: for the whiche was greates
warre betwene those two princes.

4640

679

Constantine the emperour banquished the Saracens
and made them tributarie to him. At whiche time fell
of the Saracens. xxx. thousande: by meane wherof their
pwyer was greatly appaired, and a certayne space after
in more quiete.

Agatho, the. 77. Pope. ii. yeres. vi. monethes.

Theodoros bisshope of Rauenna, submitted him self
and his church to the sea of Rome, whose auctorite was
before time equall with the Romaine bisshop.

4641

680

The Bulgares invaded the countrey of Thracia, and
after made league with the emperour, and had geuen to
them to inhabite, the fertyll and plentiful countrey, nere
to the riuer Dunaw or Danubie.

4642

681

The. vi. synode was holden at Constantinople, of. 289.
bishops: where was condemned the heresie of the Mono
tholites. In this synode it was permitted to the priestes
of Grece, to haue wyues, but not to the Latines.

Kenewenus, king of weast Saxones banquished and
chased the Britains.

Leo the seconde was Pope. x. monethes.

Edryde, kinge of Northumberland, warred vpon the
Scottes

at rest Scottes and Pictes, and of them was discomfited and
n bri slaine.

33 Eborne, breaking out of the abbey, wher he was en-
claded, by force constrained Theodorich, the kinge of
fraunce, to obey to his pleasure in al poyntes, & make
him maister of the palatice, depoynte and puttinge to
death Lynbelsple, whiche was in possession of that office.

Bennet the .ii. was Pope .x. monethes. In hys time
Constantine the emperour published a law, that al men
should beleue, that man to be the true vicar of Christe,
whiche the clergie, the people of Rome, & the souldiours,
shoulde chose to be Pope, without any tarynge for any
auctoritee of the emperour of Constantynople, or the de-
putie of Italy, as the custome and facio was euer before
that daye. Here the Pope wreasted his necke from the
emperours subiection.

A blasing sterre appeared in Italy both day and night,
from Christmas day to Tweluetide.

Lunipert succeeded his father Grimoalde in the king-
dome of Lombardie.

1 Adwallader was ordeined king of Britaines, and
ruled onely .iii. yeares. He banquished and slewe
Lothayre kinge of Kent, and Athelwold kinge of
South Saxones.

Within the space of .vii. yerres, had been in Rome .vi.
Popes, that is Agatho, Leo, Bennet, John, Cono, and
lastly Sergius: at whose election was greate stryfe and
variance betwene the people, for so much as a priest na-
med Pascalis, the Popes treasourer, hadde with riche
giftes corrupted John the depute of Italy, that by force
he might be aduanced to the bishopricke by which meane
the people were so deuided, that the matter was lyke to
haue bene decided by dent of sword in the middes of the
citee.

Aegipia reigned amonge the Gothes in Spaine .viii.
yerres. He slew a Duke named Fauilla, to the entent he
might haue his wyfe.

Eugenius the .v. of that name was kinge of Scottes,
and reigned .iiii. yerres. In his tyme as sayeth the histo-
rie of Scotlande he warred vpon Edrede kinge of No-
thumberia

The yere
of the
worlde
4643

The yere
of Christ
682.

4644

683

4646

685

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

thumberland and slewe him in battalle.

Cadwallader kinge of Britaine, forsoke his kingelpe
auctoritee, and became a religious mā. He was the last
kinge of Britaine. And this lande after his time, was
called Anglia, and the inhabitantes therof Angles or En
glisshemen: and the Britaines were called welshemen,
which name they toke of a duke called Mallus. This
happened. 1792. yeres or as saythe Fabian. 1822. after
that Brutus first arrived in this ilād: after the conquest
of Cesar. 735. yeres: from the entring of the Saxones un
der their leaders Hengist and Horsa in the time of Mo
tger. 236. or nere there about.

anni
gum
Saxo

4647

686

The first yere of the Saxones reigne. after the Bri
tains were bitterly expelled, and theyr kingedome
finished, whose power was deuided into. vii. king
domes as is befoze mencioned.

Martine and Pipine, brotherne & noble men of France
made warre against Ebozine, maister of the kinges pa
laice, and were of him put to the worlse, and costreigned
to flie, the one to the citee of Laon, the other to Austracie

Constantine the emperour ended his last day: at which
time the Sarasens inuade and wonne by force of armes
the countrey of Afrike and Lybia.

4748

687

In Britaine, amonge the west Saxones, reigned a no
ble man called Iewe, of great power and wisdomie and
therwith valiant and hardy, and in feates of armes very
expert. He maintained suche warre against the Kentishe
Saxones, that he costreigned them to seke and intreat
menes of peace, geuing to him for the same great giftes
This man builded first the colledge of Welles, and the
abbey of Glasterbury. He payed the Peter pence first to
the pope.

Justinian sonne of Constantine succeeded in the impe
rial auctoritee. He vanquished the Sarasens, and infor
ced them to be with him at leagu, by condicions wherof
he receiued againe Afrike and Lybia, and had of theym
for the space of. x. yeres, in waye of tribute, euery daye a
thousand nobles of golde, one great horse, and a ser
uant.

Cunibert, king of Lumbardes, died, and left after him
Leuth

- | | | | |
|-----------------|---|-----------------------------|---------------------|
| | | The yere
of the
world | The yere
of A.D. |
| ni re
m
o | Leuthbrande, his son and heyre in the tuicion of a noble
man called Aspzande. | 4649 | 688 |
| 3 | Raginbertus, a duke of the Lumbardes, findinge him
selfe greued, that Aspzande was made protectour and
preferred before him: assēbled his power, & gave sharpe
battaile to Aspzande, nere to Honozia: in whiche fighte
he obtained the victorie, and shortlye thereupon ended
his life. | | |
| | Eugedius the:vi. of that name reigned. x. yere. Scot-
lande. He made peace with the Northumbers, and ha-
ted extremely the Pictes. | | |
| | Justinian the emperour, contrarpe to the league which
was made by his father, warred bpō the Bulgares, and
cruelly spoyled theyr countrey with swoorde and fire, at
whiche time the Bulgares caused the streightes and na-
row places, by the whiche he must nedes retourns, to be
well fenced with strength of men, and so at length inclo-
sed the emperour, that he was faine to intreate meanes
of peace, and returned to Constantinople, with smalle
wooꝝship. | | |
| 5 | Pipine made warre vpon Theodoꝝich, king of France
& by force obtained to be maister of the palaice, after he
had slaine Barthaire, whiche was chosen to that office
after the death of Ebozine. | 4951 | 690 |
| | Arithbertus toke on him the kingdome of Lumbardye
vanquished Aspzande, and toke the younge king Leuth-
pꝛande. | | |
| 6 | A duke of the Lumbardes, named Rotharis, made him
selfe kinge, against whom Arithbert went with all speede
and at the citee Burgomum toke Rotharis, and him co-
maunded to be put to death. | 4652 | 691 |
| | Clodouet the sonne of Theodoꝝich, beganne his domy-
nion ouer the realme of France. Of him wꝛiters leste
no maner of memorie, sounding to good or euil, but that
Pipine continued as maister of the palace, and gouerned
the realme vnder him. | | |
| | Alreza, the sonne of Aegipsa, reigned amonge the Co-
thes in Spaine. ix. yeres. He was a man of euill and
naughtie disposicion. For he cruellye put out the eyes of
Theodobert the son of Recensuindus, which was right
heire | | |

The thirde parte of

- The pere of the world.** **The pere of Christ** heire to the crowne, and sent him in exile: but he, by the annu-
providence of god, married a wyfe, on the whiche he be- gum
gotte Koderike, whiche afterwarde, by the healte of Pe- laxo
lagius, banished this Vitiza, and succeeded in the kynges
dome.
- 4657** **695** Vitiza, kyng of Spaine, a man outragiously geuen to ¹¹
filthie pleasures, published, that it should be lawfull to
all priestes to kepe as many concubines as they listed.
Justinian the emperour, for certayne displeasure, sent
Zacharias, maister of his chivalry, to bring to him Ser-
gius the Romaine byshop. But the souldiours, being as
than at Rauenna, withstode the emperours commaun-
dement, and defended the bishop.
- 4658** **697** Leo, a senator of Constantinople, by the endeuour of ¹²
Gallinicus the patriarke, deposed Justinian, & cuttinge
of his nose, sente him in exile to Chersona. This Leon
reigned. iii. yerres.
- 4659** **698** Abdimelech, kyng of Saracenes, yet ones againe inua-
ded Afrike, and was druen backe by John maister of the ¹³
emperours chivalry.
- Amberkeleth: a cruel tyranne, reigned in Scotland. ii.
yerres, and was slaine by one of his seruantes, as he was
going with an army against the Pictes.
- 4661** **7000** The souldiours, beyng in Afrike, through the great
flouth and negligēce of Leo, aduanced one Absimar ¹⁵
to the empyre: who spedde him in all hast to Constanti-
nople against Leo, whom he toke, & cutting of his nose,
calle him in prison: and reigned after him in Constans-
tinople.
- Eugenius the. vii. was kyng of Scottes. 18. yerres. He
was myghthe of bodye, and honeste maners: he made
peace with the Pictes, and caused the actes of his aunce-
stours to be put in writing, & commaunded historiogra-
phers to be founde of the common cost.
- Theophilact was ordeined the. xiii. lieutenant of Ita-
ly. At whose coming the people more enclined to the go-
uernance of the bishop of Rome, than of the emperour.
In so much that the souldiours would haue slaine their
deputee, had not meanes of quietnesse bene intreated.
For what cause this hapned I can not say, except it were
for the

for the cowardise and great negligence of the emperour of Constantinople, whiche seemed in maner to neglecte the gouernaunce of Italy. The yeres of the world

John the. vi. of that name and a Greke bozne, pope. iiii. yeres. The yeres of Christ

16 The Lumbardes, perceiuing to be discorde betwene the Italians and theyr lieutenant, inuaded Campaine and toke certaine citees. But by the intercession and rich giftes of John the. vi. pope, he was quieted, and restored againe the captiues: at whiche tyme the pope began first to wrest to them the gouernaunce of Italy.

Costa the brother of Roderike, was kinge of Spaine. v. yeres. vii. monethes.

17 Iustinian fledde from Chersona (where he was in banishment) to the kinge of Bauarie: of whom he was gently receiued at his comming: but after beinge corrupted with money, he woulde haue betrayed him to Absimar the emperour. Whereof when Iustinian hadde knowlage, he fled to the kinge of Bulgares, called Trebellio.

18 The Aegyptians about this time forsoke the empyre of the Grecians, and chose to theym a kinge of their owne whiche was called Caliph.

Arithbert, kinge of Lumbardes, gaue a great parte of the Alpes to John the pope, in the name of saint Peter wherof beganne first the great possession of the pope.

Silimus pope onely. 20. daies: and after him Constantinus. vii. yeres.

21 Pipine, maister of the palasce, vnder Childebert kyng of Fraunce, atchieued many noble victories: against the Germaines dwellinge beyonde the riuer Rhine.

Iustinian by the heape of the Bulgares was restored againe to his empire: after whiche tyme he shewed wonderfull extreme crueltie, towarde his aduersaries and their allies, for so often as he metted his hand to wipe of the filthe from his nose, whiche was cut of, he commanded one of his enemies to be put to death.

Roderike reigned. iiii. yeres in Spaine, whose naughtye

4662

701

4663

702

4665

704

4667

716

The thirde parte of

- | | | |
|---------------------------------------|-------------------------------|---|
| <p>The yere
of the
world.</p> | <p>The yere
of Christ</p> | <p>the and vncleane life was cause that the Sarasens brake anhi
into Spaine and expelled out the Gothes. For Justin- gum
an, because Rodarike had rauished his daughter, prauily taxo
entised the Sarasens to come out of Afrike into Spayne
of whom Roderike was slaine in battaile.</p> |
| <p>4670</p> | <p>709</p> | <p>Colpodus, kinge of middle Englande, warred againste 24
Jew king of west Sarones, in whiche warre thei spedde
so unhappely, that it was harde to know, whether of both
had moze damage or hurt.
Pipine of Fraunce departed out of this life, and lesse
for his heyre Charles, surnamed Martellus, begotten of
his concubine Alpayde.</p> |
| <p>4671</p> | <p>710</p> | <p>Asprande the Lumbarde, whiche was ouercomen in 25
battayle of Arithbert, trusting to the ayde of the Bana-
res entred Itzlye, and mette with Arithbert and his ar-
mie nie to Ticinum, where he hadde of him the vpper
hande. Arithbert in the flighte was drowned in a ryuer
After whom Asprand by the whole consent of the Lum-
bardes, was made king, and the thirde moneth after died
leuing for his heyre his sonne Leuthprande, which after
his father gouerned the Lumbardes.
The Sarasens dwelling in Libya obtained the possessi-
on of all Afrike, and from thens (by the intisement of Ju-
stinian) sayled Sintopain, from whens thei expelled the
Gothes slew their kinge, and subdued to them well nere
all that countrey, at whiche time Spaine first obeyed to
the Sarasens, whiche they deuided into diuers kingdo-
mes, the first at Corduba: an other at Hispalis: and the
thirde at newe Carthage. After whiche forme thei helde
that countrey vntill the time of Ferdinande, the .iii. why
che droue theim out of a great parte of theyr dominion.
The christians that remained, gathering together in
Asturia and Biscay chose one called Pelagius to theyr
king, whiche reigned amonge them .xx. yeres, making
often warre vpon the Sarasens. He was no moze called
kinge of Gothes, but kinge of Castile and Legio.</p> |
| <p>4672</p> | <p>711</p> | <p>John of Beuerley died in britaine. 26</p> |
| <p>4673</p> | <p>712</p> | <p>Justinian the emperour, goinge about to subuerte and 27
destrope the cite of Pont, called Chersona, was vanqui-
shed in battail, and slaine by one Philippicus, whom not
loue</p> |

res longe befoze he had banished to the same citee.

Joannes surnamed Lizocapos, the .14. lieuetenant in Italy.

28 Philippicus toke on him the imperiall crowne, and reigned .11. yerres. This man at the beginninge was by the pope pronounced a Scismatick, and his name defended to be mencioned in anye diuine seruice or common prayers: because he commanded images to be taken out of churches, for auoyding of Idolatrie.

Stephene the seconde, or after some Gregory the .11. was pope .17. yerres.

30 Anthemius deposed Philippicus and after he had bereste him of his sight, cast hym into prison. This Anthemius helde the imperiall auctoritee .111. yerres.

Dagobert, the yonge kinge of Fraunce was left vnder the tucion and gouernance of Pectrude, the wife of Pipine, and Theodowald maister of the palatce, this Theodowalde exercised such tyrannies, and set vpon the people suche exaccions & tallages, that great discencion and variance hapned therfoze betwene him & the other nobles of France. In so much that lastlye he was of the slain, and one Ragastrede ordeined maister of the palatce in his place.

Plectrude, stepmother of Charles Martellus, helde him in prison at Coleine, so longe untill that the king of Fraunce, and Ragastrede had token, robbed, and spoiled a great part of his heritage of the countrey of Austracie. But not longe after, Charles by fauoure of his keepers brake prison and was at his libertee.

31 About this time the Germaines receyued the fayth of christe.

Mordake was kinge of Scotlande, and reigned .xvi. yerres. In his time the foure diuers people of Albion had peace betwene them selfe, that is, the Britaines, the Angles, the Scottes, and the Pictes.

33 Anthemius the emperour sent forth an armye againste the Saracens, which went not forwarde on their journey, but amonge the selfe chose one Theodosius to their emperour, he immediatlye tourned his whole power against Anthemius, and by strength depriued him of the
 I. i. empire

The yere
of the
worlde

4674

The yere
of Christ

713

4676

715

4677

716

4679

718

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

empire and made him a monke. The Moores within the space of .20. yeres, had amonge them no lesse than .xv. kinges. For when that one gouernour could not please all the people, eyther by some treason he was of them murdered, or els for feare he left his regaltee, and became priuate. Whiche strabourne forwarde of the people when Acabath, a noble man perceiued he toke on him the gouernance of the realme, and forthwith put to death the noumbre of .300. of the chyefe capitaines, of that sedicious people, and after reigned a good season in quietnesse.

After the death of Dagobert one Dancell, a priest for his wisdom and experience in ciuile policie, was by consent of the nobles made kinge of Fraunce.

4680

719

Charles, desirous to reuenge the injury done to him by his stepmother Plectrude, and her allies, gathered a great company of souldiours, and nere to Benle fought a stronge battaile with Kangafrede maister of the palace: in the whiche he was put to the worse. But shortly he recouered his hoste, whiche was disperkeled and fought esilones at a place called Albane, where he obtained the victorie. Then thirdely those two hostes encountered in a fielde called winefielde, where was present Dancell the king, and Eudon duke of Gascoyne: at whych time was foughten a sore battaile, where Charles was victour, and chased the kinge and his other enemies to Gascoyne. For whiche victorie he triumphed, and aduanced one Clothaire to the kingdome, who shortly after died.

In this pastime Leo deposed Theodosius the emperor when he had not reigned fully one yere.

4681

720

Zulemon capitaine of the Sarasens in Asia, invaded Thracia with a great power, of the whiche parte bespied Constantinople, part spoiled the countrey of Bulgarie, with whom the Bulgarians met, and slew of them xii. thousande.

4683

722

Charles was made friende with Daniell, and restored him to the kingdome of France, and pardoned also Eudon duke of Gascoyne.

The Sarasens the seconde yere that they besieged Constantinople.

- Constantinople, being constrained both with famine and pestilence, gave up the siege and departed thence to Asia.
- Charles of Fraunce banquished the Saxones.
- 38 When Jewe had governed the weast Saxones in Britaine the space of 34. yeeres, by the assuante laboure of his wife, gave up his regall power, and became a poore man, and went to Rome in pilgrimage.
- 39 After him Ethelard was kinge of west Saxones: in whose time the reuerent Beda was famous, and wrote his booke called *Anglica historia*, to Offric the king of Northumberland.
- About this time was a eclipse of the moone, whiche from the first rising to midnigh appeared redde as blood. In like maner appeared two blazing sterres, of the whyche one prevented the sonne rising the other folowed his going downe.
- Leuthbrende, the Lumbarde, toke Clusium: and besieged Rauenna, whiche he toke and was after restored by ayde of the Venetians.
- 40 Charles of Fraunce subdued the Bawarians.
- Leo the emperour commaunded Paulus his depuie to leue a new tare in Italy: but he was prohibited by Gregorie pope, who hauing ayde of the Lumbardes, by force of armes withstode the emperours depuie.
- Leo gave commaundement, that al that were vnder the empire, shoulde take awaye the ymages and pictures of saintes, out of churches, for auoyding of Idolatry. But the pope did resist the emperour, and wrote into al partes of the world, that neither for feare nor intreatie they shoulde obey the emperours commaundement in this behalfe, and with so vehement perswasions withdrew the people of Italye from the obedience of theyr emperour Leo, that they would haue chosen them a new emperour.
- The citiees of Italye refusing the office of the lieutenant Hippe, chose to them eche citie his propre gouernour, whom they called dukes.
- Belagius, kinge of Castile, by the helpe of god reduced his borderers to the faith of Christ.

The yere
of the
worldeThe yere
of Christ

4684

723

4685

724

4686

725

4687

726

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

728

The yere
of Christ

727

At Rauenna the people, takinge partes, some with the ann
emperor, some with the pope, reised a great sedition: in gum
the whiche Paule the emperoures deputie, and his son saxo
ne was slaine. 43

Theodorich beganne his reigne ouer the Frenchemen.
He was from his yong and tendre age nourished, in the
house of nonnes in womans clothing, and lastly espied
to be the sonne of Dagobert: and by consent of Charles
admitted to be king.

Charles hearinge of the rebellion of the Suenes, assem
bled an host, and them subdued: whycher thynge beyng
done, he retourned his power against an other people of
the Almaines: whom in like maner he brought into sub
jection.

4689

728

Leo the emperor, commaunded al ymages to be taken 44
out of the churches of Constantinople, and to be burned
and put to death them that would not obey.

Eudon, Duke of Gascoine rebelled against the kinge
of Fraunce. Wherefore Charles, maister of the palatce,
sped him into Gascoyn, wher he gaue to Eudo so sharpe
battaile, that he was faine to hide him in vnknowe and
secrete places of his countrey.

4690

729

Cuthbert was kinge of weast Sarones in Englande. 45
This man made often warre vpon Ethelwalde of Wer
tia, and spedde therein diuersly. In his time appeared. ii.
blasinge sterres, castinge as it were brenninge brandes
towards the North.

4691

730

When Eudo duke of Gascoyne, perceyued that he a 46
lone could not withstande the power of Charles, he exci
ted the Sarasens, that were in Spaine to inuade the
countrei of Charles: which perced Fraunce with an ex
ceeding host of people, and toke the citees Burdeaur, and
Poitiers, with other: where thei shewed extreme cruelty
Charles in this passe time was reconciled vnto Duke
Eudo, & at Towres mette with the Sarasens, where he
bare him so knightlye, that he slewe of the Paganes (by
the accoord of al wyters). 385000. and od, and of the frech
men were slaine a thousand and. v. hundred onelye.

Leo made his sonne Constantine felow, with him in the
empire

ni res empyre.

m
o

Phasilla, kinge of Spayne, reigned. ii. yerres, and was slaine and deuoured of a beare, as he was in hunting.

47 The Burgoinnes rebelled, and made sharpe war vpon the Frenchemen: whose furie was appeased by the manhode of Charles: and they brought vnder subiection.

48 After the death of Eudo, Charles passed the ryuer of Leyz, and conquered Burdeaur, & subdued to him Gascoyne, and set that prouince in good order.

Eodine, the sonne of Eugenius, the .7. reigned in Scotlande. xxx. yeaeres. This man was giuen to iustice and peace, and kept the league that was made with the Bytains, Englishemen and picles.

Charles leued a subsidie of the spiritaltee, to mainteyne him against the enemies of Fraunce. For whiche cause the priestes were sore greened, & feigned after hys death, that for that deede a certaine bishop saw his soule in great tormentes.

Alphons, surnamed Catholicus, reigned in Spaine. 19 yeaeres.

50 Gregorie of Rome assembled a synode of the bishops of Italie: in whiche was decreed, that images shoulde with great reuerence be styll kept in the churches.

The holy man Beda, which for his learning and godly life, was renoumed in al the world, ended his last day.

Athimus and Amorteus, kinges of Sarasens.

51 The Sarasens, accompanied with the wisigothes, invaded Gallia Narbonensis, and by treason toke the cytees Auignon and Narbone. Against whom Charles acquainted him so knightly, that he recovered the citees, chaied his enemies, & slew their chiefe capitaine Amorteus.

Civile warres among the Lumbardes.

52 Alphons, king of Spaine, which toke in marriage Dorothea, the syster of Phasilla his predecessour, utterly rooted oute of his realme the heresie of Arris, whiche was renewed after the death of Rychardeus. For whiche cause he was called Catholicus. He recovered also divers towne, and expelled the Carrisons of the Moores and Sarasins.

53 Charles, by the ayde of Lyuthbrand, king of Lumber, Dye, cha

The yeres
of the
world

4692

4693

4695

4696

4697

4698

The yeres
of Chy

731

732

734

735

736

737

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.
4698

The yere
of Christ
737

dse, chased the Saracens, whiche had taken the citee of anni
Dilaunce and drove theym cleane out of the landes of gum
Fraunce by the terrour of his name. laxo

Transsemunde a duke of Lumbardie, rebelled against 53
the kinge. Whom Leuthbrand with great puissance va
quithed in battaile, and broughte in subjection all that
was vnder the gouernaunce of the said Transsemunde
whiche after the discomfiture fled to Rome. Wherfore
the king Leuthbrande sent to the pope and the people, re
quiring that eyther he would send to him the traitour,
or els put him to death, whiche bothe thinges beinge de
nied, he with his armie certayne dayes besieged the citee
of Rome. But when he perceiued, that he therby profited
nothing, he left the siege and assailed and toke diuers ci
tees belonging to the Romaines. For which citees such 54

4699.

738.

warre and debate was after betwene the Romaines and
the Lumbardes, that Leuthbrande againe besieged the
citee so fiercely, that the pope desired ayde of Charles of
Fraunce, who by his friendly persuasions withdrew
Leuthbrande and his godfather from the siege, and let
the Romaines at libertee. At whiche time the descence of
the Romaines and Italy was firste translated from the
emperour of Constantinople, to the frenchmen.

Charles Martellus of Fraunce ended his life, leving
after him iii. sonnes, that is Charlemaine to whome he
bequeathed Austracie, Suenia, Almaine, and Thuring:
Pipine to whom he left Francia, to Grifone the youn
gest he gaue litle or nothing.

4705.

742.

Zacharias, beinge ordeined pope, made league with 58
Leuthbrande the Lumbarde: by composition whereof
were restored the.iiii. citees that were taken frome the
Romaines. And moreover, the king of Lumbardes gaue
diuers cities and places of Italy to the pope, in the name
of S. Peter.

Chilbebert, after his brother Theodorich, reigned in
Fraunce. This man was of a moze quiete nature than
was meete for the gouernaunce of so troublous a realme
wherfore he vied the helpe of Charlemaine and Pipine,
to appeace and quiet the furie of his enemies.

4704

743

Constantine the sonne of Leo, succeeded his father in the 59
empire.

ni re: empyre of Constantinople and reigned. xxxv. yeres.

m Lyuthb2and of Lumbardie finished his last daye, and
co leste as kinge, his sonne Hildeb2ande: whom the Lum-
bardes immediatly deposed, and in his place chose a no-
ble man called Rachiſius.

Miramomelſius about this time was kinge of the
Mooges, Gozmo of Denmarke, Seyta of the Hunnes in
Hungarie.

Charlemaine subdued the Sarones, and toke of them
one Theodozich in waye of hostage.

60 The emperor Constantine with a great nauye sailed
forth against the Sarafens in Egipte, in whiche meane
time one Arthauſtus, bi traiterous meanes inuaded the
imperiall crowne, and was confirmed of the people.

Wherof when Conſtantine had knowlage he returned
with his armie, and beſieged the citee of Constantinople
and toke the ſayd Arthauſtus, whom he bereſte of hys
ſight, and condemned to baniſhement with other of hys
conſpiratours.

Griffon the yongest ſon of Charles, a man of a fierce
and wilde nature, being miſcontent with ſuche bequeſt
as his father to him had geuen, arrered warre vpon his
other bzetherne: who behaued them ſo wiſely, that with-
out notable battail they toke they2 bzother, and kept him
in warde.

61 Sigibert was auctoriſed king of weaſt Sarones in
Brittain. He was cruel, and tyrannous towarde his ſub-
iectes, and touned the annieſet lawes and cuſtomes, af-
ter his owne will and pleaſure. And becauſe a certayne
noble mā, ſome deale ſharply aduertised him to change
his maners, he maliciously cauſed the ſame perſon to be
put cruelly to death. And forſomuche as he continued in
his malice, and would not amende, he was depriued of
all kinglye auctozite, and laſtelye as a perſone deſſolate
and forlorne, wandring alone in a wodde, was ſlayne of
a ſwine hearde, whoſe lorde and maiſter he (being king)
had wrongfully put to death.

Charlemaine, being of great power in France became
a man of religion, and yode to Rome.

64 Kenulphus, of the linage and bloud of Cerdicus, firſt
kinge

The yere
of the
world

The yere
of 2412

4705

744

4706

745

4709

748

The thirde parte of

The pere
of the
world.

The pere king of weast Saxones, reigned in that kingdome. 31. ye anni re
of Christ res. The vertue of this man farre passed his fame. At gum
the beginning he appressed certain murmours and grud laxo
ges, that were among the people, for the depoling of his
predicessour Sygebert.

Griffon the youngest sonne of Charles whych in thys
passe time had ones or twice vered his brother Pipine,
disturbed also Cassilo, Duke of Bauary, & diseased him
of his lordship: for which cause Pipine went against his
brother, and restozed the sayd Cassilo to his possessions.
After whiche time Griffon fledde to the duke of Cuyan
named Gayser.

4710

746

Racharis, king of Lumbardie, brake the league, why 65
che he had made with the Romaines for the space of. xx.
peres, and wasted the countrey about Rauenna, and be
sieged Perusia. To whom went Zacharie the pope, and
in such wise enchaunted him with his exhortaciōs, that
he did not onely leaue the siege, but also renounsing his
regall power, became a religious monke.

4711

750

Pipine gouernour of Fraunce vnder Childerich, enten 66
ding to defeat his lorde, and soueraigne of that kyng-
dome, and to obtaine the same: by his ambassadours de-
maunded of Zacharie, pope, his bounden friende, thys
questiō: whether he were moze worthy to be king which
was kinge onely by name, and natural succession: or els
he, whiche bare the bourden of the kingdome, alone, and
yet lacked the dignitie of a kinge., meanyng hym selfe.
To whom the pope aunswered, that it was moze ryght-
full, that he which toke the charge of all thinges. should
be called king. On whose iugement Pipine presuming
deposed Childerich, and made him selfe king. In whom
beginneth a newe progenie of the kinges of Fraunce.
For this Childerich, was the laste kinge of the stocke of
Meroneus, the firste christian kinge of fraunce.

Aistulphus was made king of Lumbardie.

4712

751

Zacharie pope assoyled Pipine, and the other frenchemē 67
of their othe of allegiaunce and fealtie, that they hadde
made to Childerich, and confirmed Pipine in the kinge
dome of Fraunce.

Phylla

68 Phzolla reigned in Spaine .13. yeres. He banquished the Saracens, whiche troubled the Celaces, and slew of them .50000. The yere of the worlde 752

Griffon endeavouring to flerre the people of Cuian agaynst his brother pipine, was of theym flaine for auoyding of further daunger.

Aistulphus, kinge of Lumbardes, sette a tribute vpon the Romains, whiche because they would not paie Stephene at that time Pope went into Fraunce, to desyre ayde of Pipine agaynst the tyrannie of the Lumbardes. Who mete with the pope in the waye (as sayth Platine) and kissing his feete, went on fote by his horse the space of iiii. miles.

69 Pipine entring Italye with a great power, beclipped the citee of Paule with a stronge siege, and inforced Aistulphus to intreat meanes of peace, which was to him graunted on condicion he would restore to the pope all that belonged to the churche of Rome.

71 The Turkes brake firste out of the mountaynes called Hyperbozei, and inuaded Asia. The cause whereof was that the Persians beyng ouerset with warre of the Saracens, desired ayde of the Turkes: whiche beinge redye at theyr request entered Asia: and firste ouer ran the Hanes after the people of Cholcis, Armonie, and the les Asia, and lastly banquished the Saracens: betwene whom peace was made on this condicio, that the Turkes shuld reigne in Persia, and be called Saracens.

Aistulphus of Lumbardie brake the league with the Romaines, and besieged theyr citee. iiii. monethes: whereof whan Pipine had knowledge, at the desire of pope Stephene he perced Italye, besieged Aistulphus in Paule, and constrained him to yeld to his mercy. Pipine gaue the gouernance of Italy to the pope, nothing regarding the auctoritee or desire of the emperour of Constantino-ple which willed him to the contrarie: at which time the lieutenantes ended their power in Italy. Here maye a man perceiue how vaine it is, that the fauours of the pope saue that Italy was geuen to him by great Constantine.

72 Offa, a noble man, reigned in Mertia or middle Eng-
Uu. lande.

756

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere lande. He made warre with the Northumbers, and them anni
of 4718 for the time subdued. He warred also against Etheldred, gum
king of East Angles, and vanquished and took prisoner saxo
Egbert king of Kent.

Constantine the emperor did persecute thesm which
worshipped ymages.

4718

757

Tassilo king of Bavarie, submitted him to Pipine.

Aistulphus, kinge of Lumbardie, dyed as he was in 73
huntinge: after whom Desiderius by force obteyned the
kingdome, and was confirmed of Paule being the pope
to whom he fled for succour, when he was ouerset in bat
talle of Rachiisus, the brother of Aistulphus.

4719

758

The Sarons, called Soissons, disturbed the French
men, and were forced of Pipine to aske peace, upon con,
dicion that yerely after thei should yelde to the French
kinge. 300. good hozes in waye of tribute.

4721

760

Offa, kinge of Mercia in Britaine, buylded the chur,
che of Wichecom, and the abbey of S. Albones. He cha
sed also the Britaines or Welshmen into wales, and
made a famous Dike betweene wales & the utter bound
des of Mercia, whiche is now called Offedike.

4722

761

Pipine made warre against Gayfer duke of Guyan 77
because he requirred a tribute of the priestes or spirituall
landes within his Duchie. This warre was troublous
to Pipine, and continued longe.

4724

763

Thelesius kinge of Bulgary, inuading Thracia was
put to flight of the emperor, and chaset into his coun,
tre: where for that misfortune, he was slaine of his own
people.

Sabinus was king of Bulgarie, who agreed to the em
perour in abrogacion of the images. For which cause he
was shortly after depriued of all kinglye dignitee of his
subiectes, and fledde to Constantinople. And after him
was Paganus made king of Bulgarie.

4725

764

Aurelius, by treason murdered, his brother Phroill,
and obtained the kingdome of Spaine, and reigned syre
yeres

80

ani red peres. To the entent he might shewe the indignacion of the people, he toke for his heire, by adopcion, the sonne of his brother named Meremunde. The pere of the worlde

Fergus, the.iii. was made kinge of Scotlande and reigned.iii. yerres. He was a foule drunken glutton, and so outragiouslye geuen to harlottes, that he neglected his owne wife, and brought her to such penurie, that she was faine to serue other noble women for hir liuinge. Wherefore she murdered him in his bedde, and after slewe her selfe also.

83 Great discencion and tumultie was in Rome, for the election of the pope. For a noble man of the Lumbardes had by force aduanced his brother Constantine to the bishoprike, being but a laie persone: and not within orders, whom the Romans after deposed, and disanulled whatsoeuer was by him decreed. 4728

Quian, after longe warre, was subdued to the signory of Fraunce by Pipine: which shortly after ended his life

84 Carolomanus and Charles, surnamed the great began theyr dominion jointly ouer the Frenchemen. Charles maine had to his porcion middle Fraunce: and Charles possessed Austracie, with the other deale of Fraunce. 4729

Solmuthius reigned in Scotlande. xx. yerres, and then died of the goutte. In his time rebelled Banus of the yle of Tyre and Gallowham of Gallowaie, whiche were brought to due obesaunce.

85 Desyderius, king of Lumbardi, cominge to Rome vnder pretence of religion, priuily rebuked one Paulus the emperours chamberlaine, which abode as then in Rome for that he did not punish the rebellious people, nor endeavour to bring againe the gouernance of Italie fro the pope to the empire. By whose wordes Paulus beinge stered, put to death, and cast in prison diuers, whiche fauoured the partes of the Frenchemen and the pope, and beganne to take vpon him in the emperours behalfe. To quiete this trouble, Stephene the thirde sente for ayde to Charles of Fraunce. For the popes of Rome, when any thinge was done contrary to their minde, which they coulde not amend with theyr manasinges, bled to complain to the French kinges, & desire succour of them: by

Ma. ii.

whose

767

768

769

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere whose power & maintenance, thei in proceſſe wer made anni
of A. 721 lordes of the world, and subdued to theyr becke al other gum
princes. saxo

Hunildis, whom Pipine had made ruler of Guyan, re-
belled againſt kinge Charles, whom Charles subdued,
and vpon faithfull promiſe of his good abbering reſtored
him to the gouernance of Guyan.

Sillo dying awaye Meremunde, poſſeſſed the king-
dome of Spaine. vi. yeres. He toke to wiſe Egimanda
the widow of Aurelius.

4732

771

Charlemaine the brother Charles, dyed: whose wyfe 87
Bercha with her ſonnes, fledde to Deſiderius the Lum-
barde.

4733

772

Charles beganne his warres againſt the Saxones, whi 88
che continued the ſpace of. xxx. yeres.

Conſtantine the emperour, ſetting forth the an nauye of
ii. thouſande ſhippes againſt the Bulgares, by a wonder-
full tempeſt loſt a great part of them.

Deſiderius, king of Lumbardes beſieged Rauenna
and with ſword and fire waſted the countrey about. And
when he had taken diuers citees and townes, belonginge
to the pope, he toke his iourney towarde Rome.

4734

773

When Adrian pope perceiued, that his threating of 89
excommunication coulde not ſtoppe the rage of Deſide-
rius: he deſpyed helpe of Charles: whose comming into
Italy feared ſo muche the Lumbardes, that Spoletum
and diuers other citees, by meane of ambaffade yelded,
and ſwoze to be true to pope Adrian. Charles after he
had diſcomfited the Lumbardes in diuers battailes, en-
tered Rome: where he was receiued with great pompe,
and made perpetuall league with the pope, confirminge
the giſtes that his father Pipine had graunted, and re-
ſtored what ſo euer was taken awaye by the Lumbardes.

4735

774

Charles, when he had conquered Waſſe and Millaine
did ſette frenchemen to be rulers therein, and baniſhed 90
Deſiderius with his wiſe Lyones.

Here endeth the kingdome of the Lumbardes: and Ita-
ly in the popes dominion.

The

		The yere of the world	The yere of Christ
	The Saxones invaded the Frenchmen. Charles vanquished, chased and slew the Saxons in divers conflictcs, and stronge battailes.	4736	775
91	Charles ones againe overcame the Saxones, and toke 92 them to mercie:	4737	776
	To subdue certaine rebelles Charles retourned into Italy, toke the citee Foxinilium, obtained Tarvisium, & beheaded Rotgandus.		
	Constantine the emperour, going against the Bulgars forced them to aske peace: whiche when they shortly after brake and rebelled, he manfullye vanquished and subdued them: and retourninge to Constantinople, triumphed.		
	Mauregatus the sonne of Alphons Catholicus, by his concubine after the death of Sillo by the ayde of the Moors, obtained the kingdome of Spaine, and reigned. iiii. 93 yeres.		
	The Sarasens inhabiting the boundes of Aquitaine despyed ayde of Charles against theyr owne kinge. At that time reigned in Spaine .iii. kinges of the Sarasens.	4738	777
	Charles gathering a great power went toward Spaine where he toke and destroyed the citee Pempilone, and after fierce and strong battailes, and great murdres on both partes vanquished the miscreantes, and made them tributarie, he subdued to his signory and to christian faith all the countrey of Spaine adjoininge to Fraunce, and Gascoyne. In his retourne, by treason of a certain duke named Gavelon, he lost many of the noble men of Fraunce amonge whom were Rouland and Oliver.		
	Kenulphus king of weast Saxones in Britaine as he haunted to a woman, whiche he kept at Merton, was slaine by treason of one Clito, the kinsman of Edgibert late king.		
94	Withicus, of the bloud of Cerdicus, was made kinge of weast Saxones, and knightly ruled his land the space of .xxii. yeres. He married one of the daughters of Offa, king of Mercia, by whose power he expelled Egbert, that was an under king in the lordship of weast Saxones. Constantine the emperour dyed, whose body Hiren his sonnes	4739	778

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

sonnes wise, by the counsaile of pope Adrian, toke by as-
ter it was buried, and caused it to be burned, and the as-
thes cast into the sea, because he disanulled images. anni
gum
laxo

Certaine of the Saxones after they hadde receyued the
faith of christe came to Rome, where the pope gaue them
inhabytance in the mount called, *Collis Vaticanus*.

Leo after his father obtained the imperial auctoritee
and reigned .v. yeres

The Saxones rebelled against Charles, and wasted
his countrey as farre as Colletne: whom he vanquished
and chased againe into their countrey.

Uaramunde reigned in Spaine. ii. yeres.

4741

780

Leo the emperour made warre wth the Saracens dwel-
linge in Surie. 96

4742

781

The Saxones alwaies rebelling, were alway by Char-
les put to the worse. 97

Alphons, surnamed the chast, was kinge of Spaine. 41.
yeres.

4743

782

Leo the emperour, ended his life, of the sickenelle called
the carbuncle. 98

4744

783

Constantine the .vi. reigned wth his mother Hyrene
ix. yeres, being but a childe. 99

4748

787

The Danes first entred this lande of Britaine. But by
the strength and puiſſaunce of Brithicus, and other kin-
ges of the Saxones, they were driuen backe and compel-
led to holde the lande. 103

4749

788

The Grecians whiche were yet in Italye, by the com-
maundement of Constantine the emperour, warred on the
Italians. With whom encountered certaine dukes of I-
taly, and put them to great damage and losse. After whi-
che time the Grecians were moze quiet in Italye a longe
season. 104

The frenchemen ouerca me the Bauartans and Sla-
uines, and subdued them to their lordship.

Achais was ordeined kinge of Scottes and reigned
32. yeres. In his time was made the solemne league be-
twene Scotland and Fraunce, againſte the Saxones or
Englishemen: Whiche toke suche effecte that euer syns
that daye the Scottes haue moze enclined to the frenche
men, than Englishemen.

Hyrene

- | | | The yere
of the
world | The yere
of a birth |
|--------|--|-----------------------------|------------------------|
| nt res | Hyrene emperesse, and her sonne Constantine perswaded | | |
| in | with the counsaile of Therasius bishop of Constantino- | | |
| o | ple, held a counsaile at Nicea, where it was decreed, that | 4750 | 789 |
| 105 | ymages shulde againe be restored to the churches. | 4752 | 791 |
| 107 | Charles of Fraunce, leading an army against the A- | | |
| | nares, after he hadde them subdued, entred Pannonye, | | |
| | wher he wasted and spoyled the countrie lying about the | | |
| | river called Kaba. | | |
| 108 | Constantine the emperor, being come to ful age, would | 4753 | 792 |
| | not suffer his mother Hyrene, to be any longer partaker | | |
| | or equall with him in the empyre, but deposed her of that | | |
| | astate and reigned alone. vii. yeres. | | |
| | Godfrey king of Danes. | | |
| 110 | Cleophilus and Stephene, certaine bishops being sent | 4755 | 794 |
| | of Adrian to Charles, helde a counsaile in Fraunce: by | | |
| | auctoritee wherof the. vii. sinode of Constantinople, and | | |
| | the Grecians, concerning abrogacion of ymages, was | | |
| | dissanulled and fordone, and the heresye, called Feliciana | | |
| | condemned. | | |
| | Charles of Fraunce gave names to the. xii. monethes | | |
| | and windes in his mother tongue. | | |
| | Brithicus king of weast Saxones, was poysoned by | | |
| | his wife Ethelburga. For whiche deede, the nobles or- | | |
| | deyned that from thens forth the kinges wives shoulde | | |
| | not be called queenes, nor suffered to sitte with them in | | |
| | places of astate. | | |
| 1 | Egbert the Sarone, which by Brithicus was chased | | |
| | out of the realme of Britaine, hauing knowlage at | 4756 | 795 |
| | this time of the death of Brithicus, returned out of | | |
| | France, & in so knightly wyse him demeaned, that he ob- | | |
| | teined the gouernance of weast Saxones. He tamed the | | |
| | welshemen, banquished Berthulphus, kinge of middle | | |
| | Englande, and subdued to his signory and obysaunce, the | | |
| | Kentishe Saxones, East Saxones, and Northumbers, | | |
| | and reigned as king ouer the moze part of England, the | | |
| | space of. 37. yeres. He firste commaunded this lande to | | |
| | be called Anglia, and the inhabitauntes therof Englyshe | | |
| | men or Angles. | | |
| 2 | The Bauarrians, rebelling against the frenchemen | 4757 | 796 |
| | were subdued by Cerry duke of Forzumulii, who sente | | |
| | best | | |

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

4795

798

inestimable riches of spoile to king Charles. Thodes annu
prince of Aquares, submitted him selfe and his people to gum
Charles: laxo

The Sarones forsaking the faith of Christ were ban
quished and subdued by Charles, and losse of theyr soul
diours. 30000. and theyr countrey wasted and spoyled.

Adelphonsus, king of Gallice and Austria, encountred 4
with the Sarasens in Spain, and conquered their chief
and regall citee Lugsebourne, and gaue it to his souldi
ours to spoile: and sent great and riche giftes Charles,
of the prate that he had taken in that warre.

Hyrenes being soze grieved, with the ill demeanour of
hir son Constantine the emperour, by priuy meanes gat
him into hir handes, and puttinge out his eyes, cast him
in prison: where for sorowe he died, and his mother rep
gned after him. 1111. yeres.

4763

799

The soune lost his light the space of. xviii. dayes.

Pascalla and Campulus, priestes of Rome, conspired 5
against pope Leo, and accompanied with men of armes
set vpon him in time of procession. But by the helpe of
Abbinus his chamberlaine: he escaped being soze beate
and wounded, and so fledde into France to Charles:
who restozed him to his bishoprike.

4761

800

Charles came to Rome, and harde the accusations of 6
Leo, concerninge the foresaide conspiracie: at whyche
time Leo was purged of al crime, because he sware that
he was not guiltye of suche thinges, as were laid against
him. For it was not meete (saied the people and the prie
stes) that any man should iudge the Apostolike pope but
that he should be his owne iudge. Wherefore by his
owne othe he was quitted & his aduersaries condemned

4762

802

Leo for this benefite, caused Charles to be proclaymed 7
emperour of Rome, and crowned him with the imperial
Diademe in y citee, after the ancient custome of the Ro
mains. This hapned. 468. yeres after that Constantine
the great, transfarred the imperiall sea from Rome to
Constantinople, and. 330. yeres after Rome hadde bene
without the name of an emperour.

46832

801

This Charles (by consent of all wyters) was fayre 8
and semely of personage, and of lusty and valiaunt cou
rage:

rage. Of his strengthe wonders are tolde. Hys gylse was, to eat at one meale a whole hare, or two hennies, or a whole gose, or like quantitie of other meat, and drinke therto a litle wine mengled with water. For his noble prowes and victories he was named Charles the great. And notwithstandinge his great might and honour, yet was he meke and lowly in hert, and milde and gracious to the pooze. He sette his sonnes to learne as well good letters as marciall feates: and his daughters to spynning of wolle woozke. He was experte in all speeches, and neded no interpres. At meale he bled to haue some notable thinge redde, and specially of S. Augustine. *De ciui dei*: finallye, in him was nothing to be discommended but that he keppe his daughters to longe vnmarried.

Aaron, king of Persie, sent great gistes to Charles, desiringe him of amitie, and aliaunce. In like maner dyd Irenes the emperesse of Constantinople.

Charles transferred all the Barones, dwelling beyond the riuer Albia in Boheme, into the countrey of France of whiche people came the Brabanters & Flemminges. Michephorus, a senatour of Constantinople, deposed Irene, sente hir into banishment, and reigned. viii. yeres after her. He made league with Charles, and was at agreement for the boundes of bothe their empires.

Charles beganne his warre against the Hunnes, which continued. viii. yeres, and then he utterly banquished theyr whole power, and brought them in subiection. At whiche time all the gloze of the Hunnes decayed, all their nobilitie perished, and the great riches, that they of longe time had gathered, was taken from theym and spoyle.

Charles the younger banquished the Bohemes.

The Danes with a great hoste entred this lande of Britaine the seconde time, and spoyle the yle of Shepel in Kent. Against whom Egbert the kinge spedde him with his power, whome the Danes compelled to forsake the feld. After whiche time some of the Danes continuallye abode, in one place or other of this lande.

Ar. l. The

The pere of the worlde
The pere of the worlde

803

805

806

808

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
Nozbe.

The yere
of the
Nozbe.

The Saracens wasted the ylandes of Sardinia and Corsica. anni
gum
faxo

Lewys the sonne of Charles, went with an armye against the Saracens, whiche invaded Spaine.

Ricephorus, emperour of Constantinople, toke Populonium, a citee of Hetruria, and cast it to the earth.

4770

809

Pipine kinge of Italye, warred vpon the Venetians because they fauoured moze the part of Ricephorus, the of Charles his father and the Frenchemen. After whiche warre they were made friends, and the Venetians suffered to vse their ancient libertees. 15

Pipine died at Millaine.

The Danes ouercame the landes of Charles in Germanie.

4771

810

Charles made peace with Ricephorus, emperour of Constantinople, and with Abulazar king of Spaine. 16

4772

811

This yere was a double eclipse, bothe of the sonne and of the moone. 17

4773

812

Ricephorus, emperour of Constantinople, whiche in diuers encounters had banquished the Bulgares, was lastlye slaine of Chzuminus theyr kinge. After whom Stauratius his son obtained the empyre: and befoze he had reigned fully one yere, was murdered by his kynsmen Michael, who vsurped the imperiall crowne. 18

Hemingus kinge of Danes after Godfrey made league with Charles, and recompensed him for the iniuries dooen by his predecessour Godfrey.

Abumalach king of Saracens, in Spaine, made league with Charles. 19

4774

813

Lewys was made felowe in the empire with his father Charles: and Bernharde, son of Pipine king of Italy.

After the death of Hemingus, kinge of Danes, ciuile warre was arced betweene Sigefrede and Anilo, for the succession: at whiche time was slaine. 10940. of Danes and then was Herolde and Reginfride ordeyned kinges.

4775

814

Michael, emperour of Constantinople, after dyuers victories obteyned on the Bulgares, was at the length by them chased: and fledde to Constantinople, where he gaue

an're
am
xo.

gaue by the Imperiall auctoritee and ledde a p'suate life
In his place was chosen a noble man, called Leo: who
foorthwith banquished and drove backe the Bulgares,
whiche with their army hadde besieged the citee of Con
stantinople.

The pere
of the
worlde
The per
of the
worlde

Charles the great ended his life, and was entred at
Aquisgrane.

21 Lewys, the sonne of Charles, succeeded his father, as 4776
wel in the gouernance of the empire, as in the kingdom
of Fraunce, whiche he ruled. xxb. yeres well and nobly.
For his gentillesse he was surnamed Lewys the milde
He made his sonne Lothayre partaker of the empyre.

815

22 Lewys banquished the Danes, and restored Harold to 4777
his kingdome, whom, they before had expelled.

816

23 Pascall, being made pope without the consent of Le 4778
wys somewhat to the discontentinge of his minde, in all
hast excused him selfe by letters, searing greatly the em
perours displeasure.

817

The Gascoynes, whiche rebelled agaynst the French
men, were banquished and brought in subiection.

24 Great discorde was amonge the Saracens, in so much 4779
that theyr kingdome was deuided into .iii. partes. ii. ru
led in Spaine, one in Egypt and Afrike, an other in Su
rie and Arabie.

818

25 Monke was brought to Lewys the emperor, that 4780
Bernards his kinsman and ruler of Italse, by the coun
saile of certaine bishops gathered to him a great power,
and endeuored to withhold from his dominio the coun
treys of Italse, whom he subdued, and put to deathe, and
of his allies, parte he banished, parte he inclosed in mo
nasteries, as the bishop of Milaine, the bishoppe of Cre
mona, the bishop of Dypance, with others.

819

The countrey of litle Britaine rebelling, was brought
again in subiection.

Conwallus succeeded Achasus in the kingdome of Scot
land and reigned. b. yeres.

Lewys the emperor made Lothayre his eldest sonne
27 partaker of the empire, his secod son Pipine he ordeined 4782
king of Guyan, and his yongest, called Lewys, of Bay
on or Bawarie.

821

Ar. II.

Michael

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

Michael surnamed Balbas, after he had traisterously annul
murdered Leo, by force obtained the empire of the east gum
and reigned. lx. yeres. saxo

Kalmiris the sonne of Maramunde, reygned in Spaine
vi. yeres.

4784

823

Lothaire, the eldest sonne of Lewes, being sent of his²⁹
father in Italie, was there anointed kinge, by the pope
and named Augustus. But because certaine of the Ro-
maines refused to dooe him due obeysaunce, he retour-
ned to his father to Paule, desiring of himayde to sub-
due his rebelles.

At this time (saith Fabian) the Danes entred the se-
conde time into this lande of Britaine.

4785

824

Lewes with the sword spoyle the countrey of lytle³⁰
Britaine, whiche refused to obey him.

Dongallus reigned in Scotland. vi. yeres, and as he
was going with an army against the Pictes (in the qua-
rell of Alpine, a Scotte whiche claymed the crowne of
Pictes) was drowned in a river.

Aydo, whom Lewis had made pryncesse of Guyan, re-
belled, trusting to the ayde of the Saracens in Spayne,
and by crafty meanes toke and spoyle the citee Ansonia

Many citees in the hither Spaine yelded and became
subject to the Saracens.

The Saracens invaded Crete, and subdued the same
well nere wholly to theyr dominion. They vāquished the
Greekes in two great battailes.

4788

827

A great sedicion in the citee of Venice, by meane of obe-³¹
lericus, whiche was (not longe after) slaine by Particia-
cus then chiefe gouernour of Venice.

The Saracens in diuers quarters wasted most cruelly
the landes of christendome. The Saracens of Spayne
ouerranne the countreyes lyinge betwene Spaine and
France. They which were in Afrike spoyle and brenne
Sicillie, and the Saracens of Asia invaded Crete.

Lewis the emperour ordeyned, that the ministers of
the churche and worde of god, shoulde not be subiecte to
anye humane seruage: and appointed to them certaine
liuinges, wherby they shoulde not be constrained by po-
uertye to forsake theyr due tie and office of preachinge

Quoich

and re, Judith the wife of Lewis, whom he loved entetly, and had receyved by her a sonne called Charles, was against his wil from him deposed by auctoritee of the pope, and suite of his owne children.

4789
of the
4789

828

Boniface erle of Corsica, with a strong navye perced Africke, and robbed and spoiled the countrey betwene Africa and Carthage, in suche wise that he caused the Saracens to leaue Sicilie, and returne to the defence of their owne countrey.

Ordinus reigned in Spaine. r. yeres.
33 Lewis the emperour by strength recovered his wiffe Judith to his company, mangre all his enemies. For whiche deede he othaire his sonne, with other Barones of France, assembled theyr power, and entended to haue depriued Lewis of all imperiall and kinglye dignitie.

4790

829

Alpine the sonne of Achaus was made kinge of Theotrs, he pursued the warre againste the Pictes, and slewe theyr king Feredech, but not long after he was banquished and slaine by Budus king of Pictes, whan he had reigned. iiii. yeres.

35 Theophilus was ordeyned emperour of Constantinople.

4762

831

1 Ethelwolphus, the sonne of Egbert began his reygne ouer the moze parte of Englande. This man in his youth was willing to haue bene a prestle, and entered the orde of subdeacone: howe be it after he married a wife, of whome he receyved. iiii. sonnes, whiche reigned after him successiuelly.

4793

832

2 The. iiii. sonnes of Lewys deposed their father, and kept him in prison, diuiding betwene them his empyre, and other possessions.

4794

833

3 Lewis by the diligent meanes, and labour of Guillian steward of his landes, and certayne other nobles, was againe restored to his imperiall auctoritee and gentlye pardoned the obstinacie of his children.

4795

834

4 Theophilus emperour of Constantinople, twise encountered the Saracens, whiche spoiled Asia: and was twise banquished and put to flight. The citee Amozium was taken and beaten to the ground by the Saracens.

4796

835

Kenneth reigned in Scotlande. rr. yeres. He maynteyned

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

ned the warre against the Pictes so fiercely, that he batt^{anni}
quished them in diuers great battalles, slew their king, gum
and lastly chased the vtterly out of the boundes of Scot. angli.
lande, a thousande. 151. yeres (as sayeth the Scottishe hi-
storie) after they began to haue dominion in that coun-
trei, fro the coming of Scottes into Albion after their o-
pinion. 1421. yeres.

Lewis, taking againe to him his wife Judith, was a-
gaine deryd with warre by his sonne Lothayze, whiche
shortly after, mistrusting his strength, submitted him to
his fathers mercie: which gently forgaue him.

About this time Gregorie the. iiii. ordeyned firste the
feast of all sanctes.

4798

837

The Saracens, with a greater power than euer they had⁶
done befoze, inuaded Italy, besieged the citee of Rome,
and in most cruel wise destroyed the suburbes and coun-
trei there about.

The Normains infested the Frenchmen.

Pipine, sonne of Lewis the emperour dyed, whiche
often times had bene vnfaithful to his father.

Alphons the thirde, surnamed the great, reigned in
Spaine. 40. yeres.

4800

839

Lewis made his younger sonne Charles king of Neuch⁷
Astria, or Normandy.

4801

840

Lewis when he hadde disposed his empyre and kinge⁸
dome to his children, ended his life, with mooste gentyll
hert, forgiuinge the vnkinde trespass of his son Lewis
whiche thys hadde deryd him with deavlye warres. At
whiche time remembryng the vnnaturall mindes of his
owne children, for sorowe he fel in suche lamentable we-
ping, th it he could not speake a good space after. He was
buried in Beaulx, by his mother Hildegarde.

Not longe after the death of Lewis, great distaunce
and warre chaunced betwene the. iii. brotherne, for the
division of theyr fathers landes. For Lewis and Lo-
thayze maligned against Charles theyr yonger brother
because the chiefe of their fathers landes, that is, myd-
dle Fraunce, was assigned for his porci⁹. Wherefore ere
it were longe, for this cause most cruell warre was arre-
red. In whiche, Charles with his souldiours behaned
them.

- the helm so manlye, that his bzytherne were banquished in the battaile, and forced to forsake the fiede. At whiche conflict were moe Frenchmen slaine, than ever was afore that daye. When this battaile was thus bloudily ended, entreatie of peace was made: by agreement whereof Fraunce was diuided into .iii. parties. to Lothayre was given Austracie, with the landes of the empyre: to Lewys Germany and Guyan: to Charles, middle France and the prouinces of Normandy and Burgoyne.
- 841
Sergius was ordeyned pope, whs befoze was called Disporci (that is) hogges snoute, whiche name, because it semed vile and vnclane, he was permitted to chose the name of one of his predecessours popes, whiche custome remaineth amonge them to this daye.
- 843
An other company of the Danes invaded Englande and vered the inhabitantes, with al crueltee, and especially the countrey of Kent. But in the ende they were constrained to forsake the lande, and fflye to theyr shippes, bearing with them great riches and treasure.
- 844
Alphons king of Spayne, mistroking that his three bzytherne hadde conspired by priuy meanes to dispatche him out of lyfe, commanded their eien to be put out, and them to be cast in prison.
- 845
The disorde of the Frenchmen caused many foraine enemies to invade the landes of the empyre.
- 846
The people of Germanie, called Aboditi, forsakinge the dominion of Lewys were brought againe in subiection.
- 847
The Normanes or Danes, invaded the countrey of Aquitaine.
- 848
The Britains rebelled, against whom Charles warred .x. yeres.
- Michael the sonne of Theophilus, gouerned the east empyre togither with his mother Theodora .xi. yeres.
- A great earthquake in Rome.
- 849
Ethelwolphus, kinge of England, yode to Rome: where he repaired the Englishe schole, whiche was first founded by Offa, kinge of Mertia. This schole was after touned to an hospitall for Englyshemen, which came to Rome.

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

The Saracens of Mauritania, vanquished the Grece
ans and people of Cleenece in a great battaile on the sea, gum
and after invaded Delmatia, and the with their power
entred Italse, where they toke and most cruelly spoyled
and cast to ground the citee Ancona. 1300

4810

849

At the citee Ostia, in Italse, the Romans foughte
sperously, and vanquished the Saracens. 17

The Normans or Danes, perced the realme of France
by the riuer Ley, and ouerode the countrey of Guyan
and toke and spoiled many famous citees, as Burdeaur
Sanctone, Engolisne, Turone, Poicters, Paris, and o-
ther: at whiche time Charles warred in Britaine.

4811

850

Lothayre made Lewis his sonne felowe in the empyre 18

Ethelwolphus, kinge of Englande, first founded the
vniuersitee of Drenforde: whiche summe wyters attri-
bute to Osa king of Bertia, that was in y time of Char-
les the great. 60. yeres before this time. 19

4812

851

A great famine and death in Germanie. 22

4815

854

John the. vii. pope. This was an Englishe woman,
whiche in her youthe, being arayed in a mans apparell,
companied a learned man (whiche kept her) to the citee of
Athenes, where by her witte, diligence, and dayly hea-
ringe of learned men, she became excellent in the know-
lage of good letters. Wherfore she dissimulinge still her
propre kinde, came after to Rome: and, for the opinion of
hir great learninge was chosen pope. But by her light-
nesse she declared her selfe to be a woman. For not long
after she trauallyed with childe in the middes of the streete
in procession time.

4816

755

Ethelwaldus after the death of his father, beganne
his reigne in Englande. He married a woman, whi-
che his father had kept before as his concubine: and
died, whan he had reigned not fully one yere.

Donalde the. v. of that name a vicious and wicked
prince (reigned in Scotlande. vi. yeres. In his time Os-
bert and Ella capitaines of the Englishe men and Wyz-
taines, made warre vpon the Scottes, toke their kinge,
and subdued al the countrey from Struelinge to the Fe-
rishe.

the
n
gli

the seas, and from the water of Forth and Clyde to Cumber.

The pere
of the
worlde

Lothayze forsoke the dignitee of the empyre, and became a monke. He diuided his landes betwene his.iii. sonnes, to Lothayze, the part of France called Lozayne: to Charles, the countrey of Parbone: to Lewys the gouernance of the empyre, whiche he guyded. xxi. yerres.

Ethelbert, the brother of Ethelwalde, was ordeyned king ouer the more part of Englande. In the beginning of his reigne, the Danes entered the weaste parte of the realme, and spoyled the countrey afore them till they came to Winchester: and by strengthe toke the citee. But by the king and his Dukes, they were forced to leaue Winchester, and in fleyng towarde their ships losse a great nombie of theyr men.

4817

856

Charles, when he hadde banquished Homenotus and Crispotus, capitains of the Britains, and brought them in dew subiection, was proclaimed king of that countrey and retourned into France.

2 Theodoza, which gouerned the east empyre, because she contemned images, was of hir owne sonne Michaell inclosed in a monasterie, and kept as prisoner. After whiche time Michaell reigned alone. xiii. yerres.

4818

857

3 Lewys, kinge of Germanie in dyuers battayles banquished the Sclauines, which refused his dominion and toke their prince Rastiz, whom: because he hadde broken his league he bereft of his sight.

4821

860

Tyber ouerflowed Rome in suche wise, that they used boates.

At Brixum a cite of Italye. iii. dayes together it rained bloude.

Constantine the seconde, a good and vertuous prince reigned in Scotland. xiii. yerres.

Ethelred the.iii. sonne of Ethelwalphus, tooke on him the gouernance of weast Sarones, and other prouinces, of Englande. He was a man, framed of nature as wel to peace as warre. Amonge his subiectes he was milde, gentell, louing and pleasaunt: against his aduersaries, seuerer, fierce, ballant and hardy. He lyued in continuall warre with the Danes: which all the time

4824

863

pp. of.

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

4826

865

4828

867

4829

868

4830

869

4831

870

of his reigne, vexed the land with most deadly warres and
A company of Danes landed in Northumberland: and
after many skirmishes and battailes to them geuen, by
strength they possessed and held that countrey the space
of .60. yeres, and toke also the citee of York.

An other company entred in the prouince of Mercia and
tooke the towne of Nottingham: from whens they were
shortly expelled by Etheldrede and his knightes.

Nicolas the first pope, decreed, that no secular prince
or emperor shoulde be at the counsaile of the clergie

The Saracens, breakinge into Italy, destroyed the ci-
tee called Beneuente. Against whom the emperor Le-
wys fought prosperously, wyth the ayde of his brother
Lothaire.

The Normans invaded diuers prouinces of Fraunce
whom Charles was fayne for that time to please wyth
riche giftes and treasure.

The Bulgares which to this daye dissented from the
churche of Rome, agreed with them in all thynges. At
whiche tyme they kinge, forsaking his regally, became
a monke.

Sueropilus, kinge of Dalmacie, with his people the
Sclauines, receyued firste the religion of Christ. The
kingedome of Dalmacie was diuided into .iii. partes:
the names wherof remaine at this daye.

A counsaile was holde at Constantinople: where after
many wordes had for the vnitie and concord of the La-
tines and Grekians: it chaunced that the olde variaunce
toke place, and was againe renewed.

A company of Danes entred the countrey of Northff.
where they slew the holy kinge Edmund, which gover-
ned the prouince of Northfolke: because he would not for-
sake the faith of Christ.

Basilus by treason murdered Michael, and possessed
the empyre of the east. .xvii. yeres.

Lothaire king of Lozaine ended his life at Placence
of whose landes Charles king of Fraunce, by strengthe
toke possession. For whiche cause was great debate be-
twene him and his elder brother Lewys of Germanye
The

entre
m
gli

The countrey of Lozayn was deuided betwene Charles and Lelwys: wherewith Lelwys the emperour was soze greued, and sent a sharpe message to them, that neither the one, nor the tother, shoulde intermitte with the landes of Lothayre, to the which he had most rightful titel.

The pere of the worlde of Chist

4832

871

The Danes, which afore hadde perced the countrei of Northff. landed againe in Southerie, and continued till they came to Reading, and toke the towne and castel: at whiche time, while Ethelrède was busied against them he had woerde of the landinge of Dfrike, kinge of Denmarke (as saue the englysh cronclers) with an other company: to whom the kinge gaue many stronge battayles but in the ende he was put to the losse, and receyued a wounde, wherof he died.

Alured the. iii. sonne of Ethelwolphus, beganne his reigne ouer the more part of Englande. This

4833

872

man was of faire stature & comely personage, no lesse renoumed in marciall pollicie, than in ciuile gouernance of his comen weale. He was wise discrete and learned, and fauoured good letters excellently well. In youth somwhat he was disposed to the byce of the fleshe and therfore besought god to chastice him by some continual sickenesse, whereby he myght serue god the better and yet not be made vnapt to worldly bulynesse. Wherfore by the ordinaunce of godde, he was taken with the euyl, called *Ficus*, and was therof sick a longe space.

Alured, in the first yere of his reigne, in sundrye places fought. vi. times with the Danes: bi meanes wherof his people were so weakened, that he was gladde to make peace with his enemies.

A wonderful multitude of the flies called Locustes, bered wel nere all the countreys of France.

4835

874

This flye burneth the cozne with touching, and deuoureth the residue. Wherof ensued a great scarcite & dearth in France. About this time (as saue the Scottishe hystorie) Hungar and Hubba the brytherne of Cadaus kinge of Denmarke, with a great company of Danes, invaded Scotland, with whom they kinge Constantine met & at the first encountre put them to the losse, but after by the negligence of his souldiours, he was vanquished, taken

By. ii. and

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

and slaine, with. 10666. Scottes when he had reygned ann
gum
angl

Solomon, king of Iozmains, died, after whom a cy-
uile warre was reysed betwene Pasquitanus, and Tur-
fandus for succession in the kingdome: wherby many of
the Iozmains were slaine.

Belles were first bled in Grece.

4737

876

The Danes brake y league made with Alured. Wher-
fore in as secrete maner as he might, he assembled a cho-
sen company, and set vpon them sodeynlye. And after
the firste discomfiture, helde them so thorte, that he con-
streigned them to geue hostages for suerty of peace.

4838

877

Ethus reigned in Scotland. ii. yeres. He was so swifte
y in rening he could ouertake a great hert or greihoud.
Charles, surnamed the Walde, king of France obtained 6
by great gistes of John pope, to be admitted to the impe-
riall auctoritee. Wherwith Lewys king of Germanye,
his elder brother, was much displeased. But this Lewis
before he could reuenge his quarell, ended his life.

Then Charles of Fraunce ceased vpon the lande, and
prouince, of Lozayne. For whiche insurp, and also to re-
couer the empyre to the Germaines, Lewys the sonne
of the forenamed Lewis of Germany, with his brethren
Charles and Charlemaine (gathering to them great po-
wer) sette vpon his vncle Charles of Fraunce, and him
banquished, put to flight and chased: and after that diui-
ded the landes of his father betweene him and hys bre-
therne.

Gregour reygned in Scotland. xlii. yeres. This was
a sage, wise, and puissant prince, and a man of great pro-
wes. He recovered Fisse and Louthian, & the countreys
that were taken fro the Scottes by the Danes, or other
enemies. He droue the Danes out of Northumberlande
(as affirmeth the Scottishe histozie) and made that pro-
uince tributary to him, he toke from the Britains Cum-
ber and Westmerland, and vanquished and subdued the
Irishemen.

4839

878

Charles the emperour sickned at Mantua, and there 7
was paysoned by one Sdrachias a Iewe, whom he bled
for his phylicion.

Carlus

nni res
am
ogli.

Carlus the sonne of Alphons' kinge of Spayne. iiii. yerres.

The yere
of the
world
The yere
of Chriſt

8 Charles, surnamed the. iiii. spedde him towarde Ita-
ly to clayme the imperial crowne: but John the pope not
willinge to make him emperour, but woulde the impe-
riall auctoritee shoulde remaine with the Frenchmen,
fled into Fraunce and auctozised king Lewys, the Kam-
marer, and sonne of Charles the balde.

4840

879

10 But after. ii. yerres he retourned to Rome, and annoyn-
ted Charles the thirde, and crowned him with the impe-
rial Diademe: by which meanes the empire came again
to the Germanes.

4842

881

This Charles defended Italy from the invasion of the
Saracens.

Lewys and Charlemaine, the sons of Lewys the Kam-
marer, were proclaymed kinges of Fraunce. Yet wene
whom, and Lewis of Germanie, fel strife and debate, by
the meane of two French gentlemen called Goffeline
and Conrade, whiche excyted Lewys the Germanie to
warre vpon the. ii. yonge kinges.

Ordinus succeeded his brother Carlus in the kinge-
dome of Spayne, and reigned. viii. yerres.

The Normans or Danes, invaded, robbed, and pyllled
the countreys of Fraunce, about the riuer Maye.

11 Ordinus, kinge of Spayne, by the vntrowth deceyved
and put to death the. iiii. Erles of Galysce. For why the
deede the prouince of Gallice forsoke his dominion and
ordeyned to them certaine iudges, to whom they comit-
ted the gouernance of theyr realme.

4843

882

The Normans continually robbed Fraunce, and pos-
sessed many partes therof, as Campaine, and the coun-
treys about the riuer Lyger.

Martine the. ii. was pope one yere.

Lewys, kinge of Germanie, died: wherefore Charles
the emperour departed from Italpe, to take possession of
his brothers landes.

The Danes conquered, brent, and cast to the grounde,
Treuerz and banquished the Frenchmen.

13 Lewys, kinge of Fraunce, ended his life, after whom
Charles or Charlemaine his brother, fel at communica-
tion

4845

884

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

cion of peace with the Danes, And finallye concluded annu
that Godfrey their kinge (to confesse the faythe of christ, gum
and to be christened) shoulde enioye the whole prouince angli,
of Frise.

After this time, the space of .60. yeres, the empyre of
Rome was bered with ciuile warres, and al kinde of mi
sery: in so muche that by the iniurie of these times, hone
the greatly decayed, and the name of learning and good
letters was almoste forgotten.

Alured of Englande was sore ouerset with newe com
panies of the Danes. But at lengthe takinge to hym a
balyant courage, he enterprised to espy the maner of his
enemies, in this wise. He did on him the habite of a myn
strel, and with his instrument of musike entered the ten
tes of the Danes, and in shewing them pastime and song
he espied all theyr slouth and idlenesse, and harde muche
of theyr counsaile. Than pryly retourninge to his ar
my with a chosen compaigne fell vpon the Danes, in the
night, and slew of them a great number: and lastly con
cluded a peace, on condicion, that as many of theym as
woulde be christened, shoulde inhabite the prouinces of
Eastangles, and Northumberland: the other to depart
into France.

Adrian, pope one yere. He obteyned, that the emperours
auctoritee shoulde not be looked for in the creacion of the
pope.

4347

886

Charles the emperour, after the death of his kinsman 15
was made kinge of France.

By the counsaile of Notus Alured, king of England
ordained the first grammar schole in Oxenford, & frau
chised that towne with manye great libertees.

4347

887

The Normans belleged the citee of Paris, and after 16
yode to Soylons, destroying the countrey before them.

Leo the sonne of Basile emperour of Grece.

The Hunnes, a people of Scithia, breaking out of there
owne countrey, inuadde Pannonie, expelling the Gepi
des and Auares, and togged them with theyr kynsmen
the Hungares.

4350

889

Phroilla expelling his brothers children, toke on him 18
the kingdome of Spaine: and when he had reigned one
yere.

pere, died, beyng taken with leprosie.

Certaine of the Danes retourned agayne out of France into Englande, and belieged the towne of Rochester: and were driven backe by king Alured.

20 Charles the emperour, for his negligence, was deposed, and Arnolphe his nephew chosen emperour in his place, who reigned. xii. yeres.

Eudo, sonne of Roberte Duke of Angewie, was made king of France and, protectour of the yonge prince Charles the simple.

The Lumbardes, partly despyng to renew theyr kyngdome, partly contemning the feblenesse of the Romaynes: ordeyned Beringarius to be emperour: an other company, dissentynge from theim, made Guido kinge of Italye: whiche was before Duke of Spoletum, betwene whiche two noble men was after arrered deadly warre.

Alphons the. iiii. reigned. v. yeres in Spaine.

Leo the emperoure, by ayde of the Turkes, at the fyrste encounter banquished the Bulgares. But afterwarde, trustynge to their false pretended peace, he was putte by theim to great damage.

21 The Danes wth moost egre crueltie entred. liii. partes of this lande together, and whan they were expelled from one parte, soo th wth they passed to an other. But that notwithstandinge, the good and valiaunt kyng Alured, behaued him so wysely, that by the readye assistance of hys people, he had of theim alwaye the vpper hande.

Guido, kinge of Italye, chaced Beringarius out of hys countrey to Arnolphe the emperour, whych as than was occupied in the warres agaynst the Normaines, whom he subdued.

At electyon of Formosus, byshop of Rome was great stryfe and variance, but in the ende, he by Mars and moze ney, obteyned the byshopricke.

Arnolphe entred Italye agaynst Guido, and toke Bergamum, and hange theyr Erie Ambrose vpon a gibbette.

Zuentebalus, Duke of Moravia, rebelled agaynst Arnolphe, whiche had comytted to hym the Dukedome of Breeme, whom for so muche as he coulde not brynge in subiection by his owne power, he despyed healpe of the

Zu

Hunga

4852

891

4853

892

4855

894

ehT thirde parte of

of the
of the
worlde,

The yere
of Christ.

Hungares, by whose assyſtence he broughte the Duke to
due obeysaunce.

Annal
gum.
Angl

Donalde the. vi. reygned in Scotlande. xi. yeares. He
made a law, that all men that byd forswear them selfe, or
speake of the deuyll, shulde be burned in the lippes wyth a
hote yron.

4856

895

The Normains besieged Paris the seconde tyme.

24

Englande was bered with. iiii. maner scourges, warre
of the Danes: great mortalyte of men, and mozeine of
beastes.

4857

896

Arnolph went into Italye the seconde tyme, and by force
entred the cite of Rome, and was crowned wyth the im-
periall Diademe, by Formosus the byshop.

25

Rasmiris, kynge of Spayne. xii. yeres. He caste his bro-
ther Alphons in prison, and berefte hym of his syghte, be-
cause he denied the saythe of Christ.

4858

897

Stephene, the. vi. was ordeyned byshop of Rome, wher-
che so enat the name of hys predeceſſour Formosus, that
he abrogated and dissolued his decrees, and takynge vpp
his body, after it was buried, cut of his head and syngers
of his ryght hand: and commaunded theim to be cast into
Tyber, and than buried hys bodye in a priuate sepulchre.
whiche cruell deede some attributed to Sergius, that la-
boured for the byshoppe together with Formosus.

26

In Rome were. v. bishoppes within the space of. iiii. yea-
res, that is, Boniface the. vi. Stephene the. vi. Romanus,
Theodosius the. ii. Johan the. ix. who reigned. ii.
yeres, and than succeeded Bennet the. iiii.

4861

900

Charles, beyng of iustt age, toke on him the kyngdome
of France, who for hys modestye, synceritye, and inno-
cencye of lyfe, was surnamed simple, and was nothyng
framed of nature for worldlye busynesse and troubles of
warre: and therfore he ceased alwaye from warrefare,
and gaue him to quietnesse.

27

Edward, the elder sonne of Alured, beganne hys
reygne ouer the more part of England, and governed
hys lande well and noblye. xlii. yeres. In know-
lage of good letters he was not to be compared to hys fa-
ther. But in honour, worshyp, and marcyall prowes: no-
thyng inferiour. And was also veraye profitablc to the
com

4892

901

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ

common weale, in building and repairing many castles, townes, and cyties, whiche were rased and broken by the Danes. He in his time aduigned to his lordeshipp all this island, sauyng onely Northumberlande, whiche was possessed of the Danes.

Auido, the Lumbarde, ended his lyfe: after whom Berengaricus obteyned the kingdome of Italy. But the Lumbardes, not beyng content wyth one, ordeyned for theyr kyng a valiaunt and merciall yonge man, named Lanthbert, the sonnne of Auido.

Arnolph emperour of Germanye died of the lousie cnyll. Edward of England made warre against Constantine kinge of Scottes, and forced him to desyre peace. Shortly after he quieted the Welshmen.

Lewys, the sonne of Arnolph, was chosen emperour of Germanye. He was neuer crowned wyth the impervall Diademe at Rome. For Berengaricus the Lumbarde, held from him by force, the dominion of Italy.

Constantine the thyrde of that name was ordeined king of Scottes, and reigned. xl. yeres.

Alexander, a man wholy addicte to all filthye luynges was made emperoure of Constantinople.

Lanthberte, the sonne of Auido, was slayne by treason, as he was in huntinge. After whom the Italyans chose Lewys the sonne of Boson to theyr kyng.

Adeluooldus, the brother of kyng Edward of Englande, beyng excited of the Danes of Northumberlande, made warre vpon his brother, whom Edward banquysshed, and so egrely pursued, that he constrayned hym, wyth manye of the Danes, to forsake the lande, and flye to Fraunce.

Sergius a man rude, vnlearned, verye proude and cruell, was ordeyned byshop of Rome. He commaunded the bodie of Formosus to be taken out of the sepulchre, and cast into Tyber.

In this tyme, wthyn the space of. ix. yeres, hadde been in Rome. ix. byshops: of the whiche Bennet the. iiii. reigned. iii. yeres. And none of any estimation or learninge, but all cruell, malicious, and proude. At whiche tyme the byshops of Rome, settinge a syde all honestye beganne to

Zz ii.

be openly

4863

902

4864

903

4866

905

4867

906

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
of Christ

be openlye naughte, as Platyne (that wyrteth theyr lyues) dooeth greatly complayne.

In
gum
Ang

Constantine, a man of good dysposicion, was auctorysed emperour of Constantinople, who by treason was immediatly deposed, Romaines, soueraygne captayne of hys armye, vsurped, the imperiall auctoryte. 39. yeres.

Adeuoldus, the brother of kynge Edward, wyth a company of Danes, landed agayne in Englande, where after soze fyghte (in the whyche Adelwalde was slayne) peace was concluded betwene Edward and the Danes.

Hollo the Dane made sure the prouynce of Normandy, that was geuen to him by the frenche kynge, and renued the league, whiche euer after he kepte fyrmely.

4868

907

The Hunnes or Hungares, molested all partes of Europe wyth most cruell warres.

The Bauares, encountrynge wyth the Hunnes, were chased and slayne, wyth their capitayne Luitbalde.

4869

908

The Hunnes subdued the Bulgares, and made theym tributarye.

4870

909

The Hungares brake into Almayne, wher they spoyled the lande, and put to flyght Lewys the emperoure. Not longe after they perced Italy, and ouerrennyng the countrey, fylled euerye place wyth murder, bothe of man woman and chyld, wyth whom Berengaryus mette in the fielde, and was put to flight.

4871

910

Edward of Englande banquished Ericus chyefe lord of the Danes, whych he possessed North. and South. and subdued that prouynce to his signorye.

4872

911

In thys tyme a noble woman, named Elfleda, syster to kynge Edward, gouerned the prouynce of myddle Englande. The woman whan she had ones assayed the paynes, that women suffer in travaillng wyth chyld, euer after hated the embrauynges of hir husbände saynge, that it was not seemely for any noble woman to vse suche fleshe lylykng, wherof shoulde ensue so great sorow and payne.

A great noumbre of Danes, whych in tyme of Alarede were dzyuen out of thys lande, retourned into the weaste countrey of Englande, whiche haunng worde of the kynnges comyng against theim, after certayne robberyes, fled into Irelande.

Chunrad

		The yere of the worlde	The yere of Christ
11	Chunrade, nephew to Lewys the .iii. and Duke of east Fraunce, was by the counsaile of Otto, Duke of Saxe, made emperor, and was the last emperor, of the stocke of the great Charles. After whom, the empyre was trans- ferred to the Saxones.	4873	912
12	Arnolde, Duke of Bauarpe, Burchard Duke of Swaue Cuerharde Duke of East Fraunce, and Gislebert of Lo- raine rebelled against Chunrade the emperoure: whom, by his wysedome and policie, he brought to deue obeys- saunce.	4874	913
13	Beringarius of Italye toke prysoner Lewys, whiche was set up as kynge agaynst hym by the Italians, and de- prived him as well of his regallie as of his syght.	4875	914
14	Charles, kinge of Fraunce, by the manhod of his knygh- tes recovered to the lordshipp the prouince of Lozayne.	4876	915
15	The hungares waited the countrey of Almaine. Ordonius reigned in Spayne. v. yeres.		
16	Elfreda, pryncesse of Merya, whiche hadde tamed the Welshemen, and in dyuers battayles chased the Danes, ended hir lyfe. After whose deathe Edward helde that prouince in his owne hande.	4878	917
17	The Hungares, leuyng Almaine, came into Lozayne, and the countrey annexed therunto, whiche they spoiled without merce.	4879	918
18	At Nottingham two kynges, that is to saye, of Scot- lande and of Wales, yelded theym to kynge Edward of Englande, and chose hym for theyr chiefe lord and soue- raygne.	4880	919
19	Chunrade the emperoure gave place to nature, and by his brother Cuetharde sent the imperiall insygnies to Hen- ry Duke of Saxe, and hym appointed to be emperor.		
20	Henry the fyrste was proclaimed emperor. This man was of greute vertue, wysedome and sobzenesse: and for hys worthynesse in armes marueylously praysed: at his election reigned Arnolde Duke of Bauarpe: whom with wise counsaile and gentyll exhortacion he appeased. This Henry was the fyrste emperor of the Saxones, and was neuer crowned of the Romaine byshoppe, neither had the dominion of Italye.	4881	920
21	In Spayne Sanctius, surnamed the grosse, was kynge Z.iii. r. yeres	4882	921

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
woylde.

The yere
of Christ

xl. yeres. He was so wonderfull fatte of bodye, that he was neuer in healthe. Wherfore to healpe, he yode to Abdemarus, kynge of Sarasens, whiche in the science of phisike was verpe expert. In the meane season, Odo- nius by treason vsurped the crowne. But Sanctus, by healp of the Sarasens, recovered hys kyngdome, and pu- nished the rebelles.

4883

922

Roberte, Duke of Guyan, and brother of Endo laste 22
king of France, contrarpe his trouth and allegiance, cea-
sed certayne cittes and holdes of the inherytance of kynge
Charles, and was by him banquished and slayne.

4884

923

Henry emperour of Germaine ouercame the Hungares
The Sarasens of Afryke invaded and robbed the coun- 23
treys of Calabze and Poyle, possessed dyuers cyties of the
Romainys, and the prouince of Boneuente, and consulted
betwene theim selfe of the bitter destruction and deuasta-
cion of Rome: whom John the .x. beyng then byshoppe,
by the healde of Romanus the emperoure of Grece, and
Landolphe Duke of Boneuent, as witneseth Lypthbert,
put to flyghte, and slewe of theim a great nombze. But
Blondus referreth the occasyon of thys inuasyon of the
Sarasens to Romanus, and the Duke of Boneuent, and
affirmeth thys victoize to be atchpyed by Albericus Erle
of Hetruria.

4885

924

After the death of Kollo, Duke of Normandye, succe-
ded hys sonne William, whiche was of great auctoizyte
amonge the Frenchemen.

Charles, kyng of France, retournynge from the victo- 24
rye, which he had obtained, against Robert Duke of Guy-
an, by treason was taken, cast in prison, and lately slaine,
by Heberte Erle of Hermendoy, and brother in lawe to
the layed Duke of Guyan.

Henry emperour of Germanye made league wth the
Hungares, and shortly after recovered from the French-
men the prouince of Lorraine.

Rodolphe, Duke of Burgoyne, prouoked of the Italy-
ans, entred Italy, and ouercame Beringarius: whom he
deprived of all kingly auctoizyte, and reygned as kyng of
Italie. iii. yeres.

Adelstane,

int re:
m.
1511.

A Delstane, after the death of Edward his father, beganne his reigne in Englande. He was a prince of woorthie memozye, valiant and wyle in all his actes, and broughte this lande to one Monarchie. For he expelled utterly the Danes, subdued the Scottes, and quieted the Welshemen.

Flaunders by treason murdered Beringarius of Italy. For whyche cause the. iii. daye after, he was slayne of a souldiour of Beringarius, named Milo.

2 Symeon, kynge of Burgares, with dyuers inuasaons, vexed sore the Grecians: whose furze to appeare Romanus the emperoure gaue the daughter of his son Christo: fer in maryage to Peter, the son of Symeon, and by the alliance was with him at peace.

Salarde, Duke of the Hungares, brake into Italy, and destroyed with fyre the cytie Paule.

Burcharde, Duke of Swaue, whiche came to ayde Kaulffe kyng of Italye, was slaine at Millaine. For whyche cause Kaulffe left Italye, and returned into France. After whom Hugo, Duke of Dozeance, was proclaymed kyng of Italye.

Constantine, kyng of Scottes, rebelled and disquieted with often inuasions, the costes of England: and beyng overcomen, and made subiecte to Adelstane, swore to be his leye man. Whych the thynge dyuers kynges of Scotlande after hym, in lyke maner performed. But of this homage dooyng, the Scottyshe cronicle maketh no mention.

Algina, wyfe of Charles the simple, hearyng of the murder of hir housbande, and mistrustynge the Frenchemen, fled secretly with hir sonne Lewys into England, to hir brother Adelstane.

3 Kaulffe, Duke of Burgoyne, after the departynge of Algina and hir son, by agreement of the lordes of France, was ordeyned kyng, and reigned after some wyters. xii. yerres: but moze derely. ii. yerres.

4 Guido, Marquis of Tuschia, imprysoned John byshop of Rome, and commanded him to be beheaded.

Henry emperor of Germany subdued the Sclauines and toke the cytie Bzenneburgh. He made tributarie to hym

The yere
of the
worlde.

4886

925

4886

926

4888

927

4889

928

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ
henies.

hym, the people of Dalmacye, and vanquished the Bo-

An-
gum
Ang

Ethylstane, or Athelstane, kyng of Englande, after the death of Sytherpus, kyng of the Danes in Northamber-lande, ceased that prouince into hys owne handes, and put out of possession his sonne, whiche fledde to Constantyne kyng of Scottes.

4890

929

Lewys, the sonne of Charles the simple, after the deathe of Kaulfe, was despyed of the nobles, to retourne out of Englande with his mother Elgina, and toke possession of the kingedome of Fraunce, wherin he reigned. 27. yeres

Ethylstane of Englande gaue hys daughter Eoeth to Otho, sonne of Henrye, whiche Otho was afterwarde emperour.

Leo, the. vi. byshoppe of Rome. vii. monethes. And after hym Stephen the seconde. ii. yeres.

4892

931

The people, called Redarii, rebelled, and refused the dominion of Henrye the emperour, whom Bernarde, and Thiatmarus his capitaines, subdued, and slewe, and toke prisoners to the numbze of. 220. thousande.

In Fraunce fell so great a dearth and scarcitie, that a quarter of wheate was woorth. xx. poundes of that money, which is in value after sterlyng money. 50. shillinges.

4893

932

Arnolde, Duke of Bauayer, ledde an armye into Italye against Hugh the kyng, where he was receyued of the cytye Verona, and ioyngynge in battaile with Hughe, was chased, and with great losse of his men retourned into his countrey.

At the cite of Gear flowed a well of bloudde.

John the. xi. was byshop of Rome. v. yeres.

William, the. ii. Duke of Normandye, sonne of Rollo, was slaine by treason of Arnolde Erle of Flaunders. He lefte after hym a sonne, that was to young to rule that Duchie: whiche thynge caused great troubled betwene the Normains and Lewys kyng of France, who endeuored to bringe that countrey againe to his dominion, and toke on him the tuition of the young Duke, named Rycharde.

Ramirus the. iii. beyng but a childe obteyned the kyngdome of Spaine, and reigned. 21. yeres.

4895

934

The Hungares exacted tribute of the Saxones, and with a

with a puissant army invaded the Turinges, whom Henry the emperor overthrew.

The Saracens landed on the sea coasts of Calyce, and were driven back by the Erle of Gundesaluc, at Sanctum.

- 11 The Saracens of Africke, with a mighty company entered Italye, and spoilinge the sea coasts of Hetrucia, tooke Creane: and most cruelly increased man, woman, & chylde, sparing no kinde, condycion, or age.

An other company perced the countrey of Germany, even to Aquisgrane: where encounteringe with the inhabitants, Sagitus theyr captayne was slayne.

Henry, emperor of Almayne, overcame the Danes, that warred on the fresones, and made them tributary. He caused also Ruba their king to receive baptisme.

- 12 Anger, king of the North mains, whiche be called Rus- si, came to Constantinople with a nauye of. 1000. shippes: where Romanus the emperor mette with them, with a smallle numbze of gallies, and casting fyre into theyr shippes destroyed theyr nauye, and took of theym many prisoners.

Leo the. vii. was bishop of Rome. iii. yeres.

The sonne of Sithericus the Dane, that fledde into Scotland, beinge ayded. with Constantine the kinge, and by him ayded, returned into Englande, and warred upon Ethilstane: of whom they were vanquished & slayne, with many of their souldours. Ethylstane subdued also the Britaynes, that dwelled at Herforde, and made them tributary.

- 14 The Hungares wasted wyth fire, the countreys of Germany, France, and Italy.

Diho the sonne of Henry was ordeyned emperoure after his fathers discease, and reigned nobly. 36. yeres.

This man was excellent, as well in the gyftes of nature as of wytte and fortune: whose fierce and balliant courage was so tempered with gentylnesse, that he is worthe to be named among the most noble princes. For he did not onely prosper his realme, in subduinge forayne enemies, but also in appeasinge the malicious furie of certayne rebellious traitours: amonge the whiche were Guerharde,

A a a

Erle

The
yeare of
the world

The
yeare of
Christe

4896

935

4897

936

4899

938

The thyrde parte of

- | | | |
|-----------------------------|----------------------------|--|
| The
yeare of
p. world | The
yeare of
Christ. | <p>Erle Palatine, and Gislebert duke of Lozayne, whiche let him
by against him Henry his elder brother: with whom he gun
fought diuers battayles, and lastlye finished his warre, an
that had continued. vi. yeres.</p> <p>The Sarones put the Hungares to great damage and
losse of men, by means wherof they were in moze quyet a
good space after.</p> <p>4910 940 Edmund the brother of Ethilstane, toke on hym the
gouernance of this realme of England: whose shorte
reigne, toke frome him the renowne of moche hyghe
prayles, that shoulde haue redounded to his posteritee for
he was a man disposed of nature to noblenes and iustice
The Danes remayninge in Northumberlande, with o
ther that came out of Irelande, and the ayde of straunge
nacions, invaded this realme of Englande: and by Ed
mund were driuen backe and slayne.</p> <p>Beringarius the. iii. whych before hadde entered Italye
agaynst kinge Hugh, perceiuinge the great preparacion
that Hughe made to withstande hym, fled to Harmanne
Duke of Swaue.</p> <p>4902 941 Hugh king of Italy, besieged Fraxinetum: and by the
h. lpe of Romanus the emperoure, burned and destroyed
the nauy of the Saracens.</p> <p>Otho emperour of almaine, began his warre agaynst
Boizlaus of Boheme, which trayterously murdered bys
naturall brother Vincellauo, a man of great religion and
iustice: which warre continued to the. xv. yere of Otho.</p> <p>Lewys, king of Fraunce, invaded Lozayne. and by E
berharde, and Gislebert his capitaynes, toke the cite Bz
lacum.</p> <p>4903 942 Stephen the. viii. bishop of Rome. iii. yeres.</p> <p>At Andermake, by the souldiours of Otho, Eberharde
the treitour was slayne, and Gislebert in the flight was
drowned in the riuer of Rhine. Wherof whan Lewys
had witting, he fled into Fraunce and Otho recovered
Bzilacum.</p> <p>4904 944 Lewys kinge of Fraunce warred vpon the nobles of
Normandy, for the recouery of Richard the yong Duke,
whiche was priuilye conveyed from his court, to the erle
Barnarde.</p> |
|-----------------------------|----------------------------|--|

entre
m
gl.

The Normans beyng overlet, submitted them to the
kyng, and ridged the childe.

Marline the seconde was bishop of Rome. lll. yerres.
5 Alberthe kyng of Rome.

Abdaram, kyng of the Saracens in Spaine, was kane
quillyed in battaile, of Kadamye the moit C. z. l. l. kyng
of Calyce.

Malcolme the sonne of Constantine reigned in Se. lll. d.
rb. yerres, and at the laste was slayne by conspiracie of cer-
taine traitours.

Stephen and constantine the sonnes of Romanus em-
perour of Constantinople, depriued theyr father of a im-
perial auctorite, and set it hym in cille. And whyles they
6 attempted to worke the same treason toward Constantine, 4906
the sonne of Leo, they were bothe taken and caste into a
monasterpe, as into a perpetuall bondage: after whiche
tyme Constantine reigned in the east. xvi. yerres.

A blasing sterre appeared in Italie

1 Edmund, kyng of Englande, ended bys lyfe, after
whome succeeded bys brother Edoz. For Edoz. 4907
and Egoz. bys sonnes, were thoughte to younge to
take on them so grete a charge. This Edoz. had the
earnest fauoure of his commons, because he was a grete
maintenour of all honeste, and moie infestencye to
naughtye and vniulpe persons. For his experyence in fea-
tes of armes, he was muche commended wherby he quite-
ted and kepte in orde the ober saunce the Northumbers and
Scottes and erplyd the Danes.

Agapitus the second bishop of Rome. ix. yerres.

Henry the brother of Otto the emperoure, beyng be-
siegged at Mersbuge, submitted him selfe to his bro. ber.
of whome he was pardoned: and after the deathe of B. 12.
thold on. e of B. von. was aduaced to the sayde Duchie.

2 Henry duke of Bapon or Bawerpe, took the cite of A. 4908
quilleia & at Justynoples chased and slawe the Hungare.

Beringarius, which aforetyme th. d. into Swane, re-
toured with an armpe into Italye: at which tyme the Ita-
lyans forsoke their kyng Hugh, and by communication
concluded that Lothayre the sonne of Hugh shoulde be
named kyng with Beringarius. But the chiefe auctoritee

as a it.

remap.

The
yeare of
y world
4205

The
yeare of
Christe
944

945

946

947.

The thyrde parte of

The yeare of the world	The yeare of Christ.	
4909	948	remained with Beringarius: whiche ruled with greete avarice and tyrannye.
		Charles, kynge of the Hungares, entred Italie, pretending great crueltie: but by the prayers and riche gyftes of Beringarius, he returned into his countrey, without doing any further harme.
4910	1949	Harolde, kynge of Denmarke beyng expelled his kyngdome by his sonne Swenon, was excited of his kinsmen the Normains, to set vpon the countrey of Fraunce: and so toke Lewys the kynge prisoner, whom, afterwarde, he restored to the Frenchemen, and set Rycharde in possession of his fathers Duchie of Normandie, which was now of age to take charge thereof, and married the daughter of Hugh Legrainie, Erle of Paris: whiche mariage was cause of more trouble betweene the Normains and kynge Lewys: whome Otto also the Emperoure ayded in his warres. But yet notwithstandinge the Normains had alway the upper hande.
4911	950	Otto ledde an armie against Boizlas king of Boheme, and hym besieged in Awe citee: where Boizlas, not able to susteyne the power of Otto, yelded: and beyng reconciled to the emperoure, continued his true subiecte.
4912	951	Otto, after the death of his fyrste wyfe, at Pavia in Italie toke in mariage a noble woman, called Adelhayde, late wyfe of Lothayze the sonne of Hugh, and kynge of Italie: whiche woman was suppressed with shamefull injuries by Beringarius, who with all tyranny greued the Lombardes and other Italians.
4913	952	Beringarius, fearing the mighte and puissance of Otto, submitted hym, with all his power, & became his subiecte. Lyndolphus, the sonne of Otto, findinge hym selfe greued with the foresaid mariages, gathered to him a great power agaynst his father, so that eche of them greued either with cruell warre, untill at length Lyndolphus was reconcyled to his father, notwithstandinge he had at divers meetynges, shewed hym selfe veraye disobedient and stubborn.
4915	954	The Hungares wasted the countrey of France and Croatia, with swoorde and fyre.

unt re
am
ngli.

Edwine succeeded his uncle Eldrede in the kyngdome of Englande: of whome is lefte no honest memoꝛye, foꝛ one heinous acte by hym committed in the begyn-
 The The
 peare of peare of
 world Chyft.

1 nyng of his reigne. In the selfe daye of his cozonacion he
 4916 955
 sodenly withdrew hym selfe from hys lordes, and in the
 sight of certayne persons, rauyned his owne kinswoman,
 the wyfe of a noble man of hys realme, and afterwarde
 slew hir husbände, that he myght haue the vnstuffed blyss
 of hir beautye, foꝛ whiche acte, and banishynge of Dun-
 stone, he became odyle to hys subiectes, and of the poꝛ-
 chambers and people of middle Englaḁ, that rose agaynst
 hym, was depꝛyued of his regallie, whai. he had reigned,
 iiii. yeres.

Otho Emperoure of Almanye, nere to the ryuer called
 Lech, with greate power and manhode, put to flyght the
 Hungares. And shortly after banquished the Sclauines.

2 Lothayze, the sonne of Leuys, begotten on Coberga
 the emperours syster, succeeded his father in the kyngdome
 of France, & reigned. 30. yeres. This Lothayze had muche
 trouble with the Normayns a longe season, because he en-
 deuoured by false & vnfaithfull meanes, to betraye Duke
 Richarde. But he, by the healde of the Danes, in such wise
 compassed his matters, and so muche endamaged the lād
 of France, that Lothayze was glad to be reconciled, and
 make recompence foꝛ all iniuries by hym doen to the said
 Rycharde.

3 John the. xii. was bishop of Rome. ix. yeres.
 Weremunde was proclaimed kinge of Spaine, and re-
 gnied. vii. yeaꝛes. he by the healde of Ferdinande, Erle of
 Castile, warred agaynst Almanzoꝛ kyng of Sarasens, and
 at the fyrst encounter obteyned of hym the victoꝛye. But
 after, the Sarasen repayꝛnge hys armye, chased Wre-
 monde, scatered hys hoste, and destroyed the churche of
 Compostella. In the thirde battayle Weremunde banquy-
 shed the Sarasens, and putte them to greate damage and
 losse of men.

4 At this tyme appeared the figure of crocces in the gar-
 mentes of dyuers men,

The third parte of

The The
yere of yere of
h mozd Chypte
959 4920

Edgare, brother of Edwine, begā hys reigne in Eng. Anno
larbe. He was a prince of worthe memorie for his gūm
manifeste vertues greatly renowned, so excellent in angl
iustice and sharpe correction of vices, as well in hys ma-
gistrats as other subiectes, that neuer before hys dayes
was used lesse felonie by robbers, or extortion or byverpe
by false officers. He chastised also the greate negligence,
couctousnesse, & vicious living of the clergie, and brought
them to a better order. Of stature he was littell, but of
mynde valiant and hardye, and verve etpette in marcyall
polycie. He prepared a greate nauye of shippes, whiche he
disposed in iii. partes of his realme, and had souldyours
alwaye prest and redye against the incursions of forayne
and straunge enemyes.

Lazwallus, prince of Wales, paid to him perlye, tu
wape of tribut. 300. woulfes. By meane whereof, with
in.iii. yere in Englarde and Wales myght scantely be
founde one woulfe. This Edgar. in hys floweringe
youth, was some deale geuen to the lust of the fleshe, whi-
che he afterwarde greuouly repented.

Indulph reigned in Scotlande. ix. yeres. He kept peace
with the Englyshemen and banquished the Danes that
inuaied his realme.

961 4922

Alephorus emperor of Constantinople.
Orho, the younger, was ordeined and encrected kyng
of Wormacia.

A noble man, called Enecus, Erle of Exgerr, deliuer
red the prouince of Spayne, called Nauarre, from the do-
minion of the Saracens, and was therfore named the first
kyng of Nauarre. After whome reigned his sonne Gar-
rias, which fought also prosperously against the Saracens,
and augmented his kyngdome.

962 4923

Orho, emperor of Almaine, spedde hym towarde Ita-
ly, to quiete the furye of Beringarius, and John, whiche
in a sedition was made bishoppe of Rome, and when he
came into the citee, was of all the peple saluted by the
name of Augustus, and by the whole consente of the Ita-
lians proclaimed emperor.

963 4924

The emperor depriued Beringarius, and Thorbert his
sonne, of the kyngedome of Laxardye, and condemnid
them

intre them to banishment, the one to Austriche, the other to Constantinople.

6. Ditho advertised John the byshop of Rome to reforme his naughty lyfe, and forsake the concubines, whiche he nourished openly, but all was in vayne. Wherfore he called a counsaile: by authority whereof John was condemned, and fearing his punishment fled into desert, and one Leo was chosen bishop.

7. The Romans beinge the kinsmen of John, deposed Leo, and set John agayne in the bishopricke. Which with in short space was taken in aduantage, and slayne. After that the people, contrary to the minde of Ditho, chose Bennet. But he forced them to admyt Leo, and depose the foresayd Bennet. At whiche tyme the electyon of the byshoppe was transferred from the people and clergys of Rome to the emperours.

Bennet the .v. was byshop of Rome. vi. monethes and after him Leo the eight one yere.

8. Alphons the .v. kynge of Spayne reigned 37. yeres. he profered his syster in mariage to a pryncce of the Barasens, to the entent he shoulde ayde him agaynst the kynge of Corcuba. But the mayden would in no wyse be coupled with the Heathen Pagane.

9. John the .xii. byshoppe of Rome. vii. yeres. He was taken and caste in prison by Jofredo Erle of Campayne through the counsaile of Peter pryncesse of the cite.

King Duffus reigned among the Accottes. iiii. yeres and was slayne by the treason of a noble man called Doneswalde. After his death appeared no sonne nor none nor therre in the firmament the space of .vi. monethes.

10. Ditho the younger, was sente for to Rome by his father and there crowned & proclaimed partaker of the empyre.

11. Ditho expelled the Sarasens out of Italye, which of longe tyme hadde holden by force the mounte Cargaris from whens (as out of a castell) they oftentimes invaded Italye.

He subdued also the Greckans, whiche inhabited Calabrie, and made them tributary.

The people of Constantinople, hearing the overthrowe and discomfiture of their Grekes in Italye, leyde all the

The The
yeare of yeare of
world Chyft.

4915

954

4917

956

4919

958

4920

959

wythe

The third parte of

The pere of
the world
4933

The pere of
Chypte
971

wighte of that donage to Picephorus thevz emperour, And because he denyed to giue his daughter in maryage to the younger Dtho. Wherfore by the consente and ayde of hys wife and sonne, he was murdered in the night season, and 14 John his sonne chosen in his place to be emperour, which reigned. vi. yeres.

A signe appeared in the element lyke fyre.

John emperour of Constantinople, gaue his sytter in mariages to the younger brother Dtho.

Culine a vicious and wicked tyran reigned among the Scottes. He deflowred his owne sytters and ravisshed other mens wives and daughters, wherfore he was slayne the. v. yere of his reygne.

4934

973

Benet, the. vi. bishop of Rome, was caste in prison by Cynthius. a citisin, that was at that time of great power in Rome. 15

Edgare king of England, fained the Welshemen, whiche rebelled and spoyled the countrey of Glamorgan.

Dtho the emperour gaue place to nature, after whom succeeded his son named also Dtho, who reigned. x. yeres.

4936

975

Edwarde, the sonne of Edgare by his firste wife, beganne his reigne ouer this realme of England, contrary the minde and pleasure of Elfride his stepmother and other of her alliance. In all kindes of honestie this man mighte be well compared to his father, and began his soueraintie, with such modestie & mylonesse, that he was worthily fauoured of all men, excepte onely Elfride, which euer maligned agaynst hym, for so much as he desired to haue the gouernance of the realme for her owne son Egelrede.

All the time of this Edward was great discorde betwene the priestes and monkes of Englande. Because Edgare in his time, had expelled certayne seculer priestes out of their colleges, and geuen the possession thereof to monkes. In which controuersie (throughe certayne counterfeit miracles) the monkes had the upper hand.

4937

976

Dtho the emperour subdued Henry duke of Bulgarpe. 2
John emperour of Constantinople, after he had expelled the Korolanes out of Bulgarpe, and annered that prouince to his owne signorie, and for his victorie triumphed

phed was by treason of certain of his subiectes poplond.
Basilis and Constantine the. ii. sonnes of Romanus
were made emperours of the easte, whiche invaded and
spoyled the countrey of Sicile, and expellinge the Sara-
sens recovered the yle of Crete.

Kenneth reigned in Scotlande. xlv. yeares. In his tyme
he Danes arrived in Angus with a great company, and
wasted the countrey veraye soze, with whom the Scottes
mette, and after soze fighte and great slaughter (by the
manhode of one Hay, an bylandishe man, and his. ii. son-
nes) obteyned the victorie. Whys Kenneth was slayne by
meane of a lady called Fenella, because she had poplond
Malcolme, pynce of Cumber.

The emperour of Germany banquished the Bohemes
and wasted their countrey.

Edwarde kinge of Englande, while he was hunting in
new forest (by chaunce) losse his company, and rode alone
to refreshe him at the castell of his stepmother Alfhrede:
where he was by her counsaile trayterously murdered,
as he satte on his horse. After his death god shewed for hi
divers myracles. Wherefore he is numbered amonge the
sainctes and martyres. Before the death of this Edward
appeared in this lande a blasinge sterre of a marueylous
greatnesse.

Elrede or Ethelrede the sonne of kynge Edgare
and Alfrede, was ordeyned kinge of Englande. He 4939
was goodly of hape and visage, but wholy geuen to
idolennesse and abhorred all princelye exercises: a lover of
cote, lecherie, and drunkennesse, and used extreme cruel-
tee towarde his subiectes, havinge his eares open to all
vnjust complaints. In feates of armes, of all men moste
ignozaunt. His crueltie made him odious to his subiec-
tes, and his cowardise encouraged straunge enemyes,
to invade his kingdom. By meanes whereof, this lande
was soze afflicted with warre, famine and pestilence. In
his tyme decayed the noble kingdome of Englande, and
became tributary to the Danes.

Lothaire kinge of France invaded Lozayne, and spoy-
led the countrey nere to Aquisgrane. At whych tyme Do-
cho the emperour was so sodayly by him distressed, that
Bbb. hardlye

The thyrd parte of

The
yeare of
the world

The
yeare of
Christ.

hardly he escaped the danger: who shortly after assembled a stronge armie, and recovered the prouynce of Lotharyne. Wherfoze Lotharyne returned to Paris, whom he pursued, entred the lande of Fraunce, and burnt and destroyed the countrey about Parys. But in his returne (as he passed the ryuer Arona) he was greatly endamaged, bothe by the violence of the water, and also by the Frenchemen whiche set vpon his reariwarde, and slawe many of his souldiours.

4940

979

The emperours of Greece, coming with an army into Italye, destroyed Patheia, conquered the cite Barum, and slew the citizenys thereof. After whiche time the countrey of Pucl and Calabze, by agreement was restored againe to them.

4941

908

Whoe the emperour goinge towarde Italy, in his journey invaded Sclavonteland Dalmacie, and with greates praye and riches came to Rome.

The Danes arriued in sundry places of Englands, as in the Ile of Thener, in Cornwall and Suffer: and after many damages by them done, and such giftes receyued of the kinge, they returned into their owne countrey.

4942

981

Whoe the emperour, intendinge to subdue the countrey of Pucl and Calabze to the Romayne empire, ledde an army agaynst the emperours of Greece. At whiche tyme his hoste was discomfited, and he hym selfe taken (as he fled in a litel fischer boote) of certayne Pyrates, and carryed into Sicillie. From whens, when he was after deliuered: he turned all his wrath vpon the people of Bonuente, which in the foresayde battayle trayterously forsooke him, and were chiefe cause of that discomfite: whose elce he toke, spoiled and destroyed.

4943

984

Whoe, the .iii. of that name, after the death of his father by the consent of the nobles of Germanye, was admitted emperour, beinge but a childe, and reigned .xiii. yeres, notwithstandinge the malice of Henry Duke of Bawarie, and other, which a certayne space repined.

John, the .xv. and his successor John the .xvi. byshop of Rome, for theyr crueltie and wickednesse, were slayne of the Romanes.

4949

985

Crescentius, vnder the name of consull toke on hym selfe

the gouernaunce of the citee of Rome.

Lewys, the. vi. and last kyng of the progenie of Pipine, was made kyng of France, and reigned (as some wyte) iii. yeres: but more verely one yere.

Hugh, the sonne of Robert, who descended of Hugh the graut Erie of Paris, vsurped the crowne of France.

Charles, Duke of Lozaine, the sonne of Lothayre, and

buncle to Lewys the laste kyng, as mooste rightfull heire, made clayme to the crowne of France. But at the citee Laone, by the treason of the bishop Auseline: he, with his wyfe, was geuen into the handes of theyr enemies, whiche sent him to Dyliaunce, there safely to be kept.

The Danes perced this lande in so manye places, that the kyng Ethelrede was to seke, to whiche cost he should for to goe to withstande his enemies. In conclusyon, for auyding of farther danger, he was compelled to appease them with great summes of money. But whan the money was spent, they fell to newe robbynge: and than the kyng gaue to them more money, but they ceased not to spyle the lande, and lastly besieged London.

Elfricus, admiral of Englanoe, traistroulye fledde to the Danes: and after beyng reconspired, fled to them the seconde tyme.

Whyle this persecucion continued in England, by meane of a bishop, named Elphegus, a peace was concluded: at whiche time (as Polidore witnesseth) the kyng made his lande tributarie to the Danes, the payment wherof, from the summe of .x. thousande poundes, in fewe yeres was repayed to. 50. thousande. The bloodye flire, the burning feuer, with dyuers other maledies beread the people throughtout al England.

Otho, the emperour, comyng to Rome, was receyued of Crescentius, and the other Romaynes, with greate obeysaunce.

Otho ordeyned Gregorpe the. v. bishop of Rome, which was a Sarone borne.

Whan Otho was yet scarcely departed out of Italye, Crescentius, and the Romains, finding them selfe greeued with the election of Gregorpe, expelled him out of the citee, and chose in his place John the. xii. a Grecian, and a

The The
yeare of yeare of
the world the
Christe

4948

987

4949

988

4950

989

4951

990

4954

993

4956

995

The thyrde parte of

The
yeare of
the world
4957

The
yeare of
Christ.
996

and a man exceeding riche.

Crescentius, foreseeing trouble and warre to be at hand, repaired and fortified the walles and gates of the ctyee.

The emperor returned againe into Italie, and besieged the ctyee of Rome. Crescentius, and the newe byshop, fled for theyr sauegarde into the mounte Adrian. From whens they were by strenght taken, and Crescentius put to death, and John the byshop bereft of his sight.

Gregorpe was agayne anethozyled byshop: who by the consente and counsaile of Diuo, ordeined the pynces of Germaine, electours of the emperor: whiche order and maner is kept to this day.

Richarde, the second of that name, was ordeined Duke of Normandie: who for his manlyttic & policie in warre, was greatly prayled.

4959

998

Etheldrede, kynge of Englande, toke to wyfe Emma, the syster of Rycharde Duke of Normandye: whiche for hir beaultie was called the flower of Normandie.

4960

999

Roberte, the sonne of Hugh Capet, begane hys reigne ouer the land of France. This was a vertuous man and cunning in many sciences, muche geuen to study, and fauoured well good letters. He made dyuers byrnes sequences and responses, and builded many churches and castels. In the begynnyng of hys reigne, by the apde of Rycharde Duke of Normandye, he reuozed Ctle Bolecharde to his castel of Melton.

4961

1000

Stephene was made the syfthe kynge of Hungary, and reigned .39. yeris.

Alphons, kynge of Spaine, besieging the citee Alferm, was wounded with an arrowe, and thereof dyed: after whom was chosen Meremunde, that reigned .x. yeris.

Egelrede, kynge of Englande, being greatly enhaunced in his owne minde, for the mariage of the Dukes syster of Normandye, sente for the into all parties of his realme secrete and streicte commissions, charging the rulers, that upon a certaine daye and houre assigned, the Danes (whiche proudye bled great crueltie in the land) should be fordeinly slaine. And so was it dooen. Whiche thinge was after, cause of great misery.

Constantine reigned amonge the Scottes .xii. yeris, by means

the meane of hym and Malcolme the loonne of Kenneth, the
realme of Scotlande was miserably tourmented with ci-
uile warre.

The The
yeare of yeate of
the world Chyff
4963

Henry, Duke of Burgoyne, ended his lyfe: who for so
much as he died without issue, by his will ordeined Ro-
bert, kyng of France, to be his heyre. But the Burgoy-
nes refusing to be vnder his dominion, rebelled, and were
by hym vanquished and brought in due obeysaunce.

Sueno, or Swanne, kyng of Denmarke, hearing of the
murder of the Danes in England, and being soze meued
therewith, landed with a strong armie in dyuers partes of
this realme, & so cruelly, withoute mercy and pitee, spoyle
led the countrey and slewe the people, that the Englysh
men were brought to most extreme and unspeakable mi-
serie: but yet after a certayne space, a peace was entreated:
for which the Englyshmen payed 30000. pounds: howe-
beit, diuers princes of the Danes still continued, wasying
the land in dyuers places.

Crane reigned in Scotlande. In yeres, agaynst hym
Malcolme made fierce warre for the crowne, which he was
appealed by the counsaile of a byshop called Forthadus.

26 Henry, Duke of Bauary, by the consent of the princes
electours of Germanye, was ordeyned emperour: who
was famous, as well for his godly wisdom, as for his
marcyall prowes and many notable victories, that he
knyghtlye atchived of his enemyes. At his fyrste entre he
subdued certayne rebelles, as the Bohemes, the Wanda-
les, and quieted Lozaine and Flaunders.

28 Godfrey succeeded Orto in the Dukedome of Lozayne. 4966

29 A great famine and pestilence afflicted almost the whole
worlde. 4967

30 The Saracens, denyngc theyr hostes in two sundry
partes, landed in Italye, toke Capua, and besyged Ba-
rum. Agaynst whome Arceolus, Duke of Venice, and
Gregory, a capitaine of Constantinople, ioyntlye toge-
ther theyr puissance, went in all haste, and obteyned of
them a noble victory.

32 The Turkes toke the citee of Hierusalem. 4970

The citisins of Aozia bered the borders of Venice with
robbing and pillng the countrey: whom Arceolus, with
so great

1003

1004

1006

1007

1009

The third parte of

The
yere of
1202

The
yere of
1202

so great murder banquished, that neuer after they attempte
pted to invade thyr neyghbours.

The Scottes not suffring the stranny of theyr kyng
Crime, rose up against him, wherof ensued much trouble
in Scotlande. Malcolme banquished and slew Crime,
toke on hym the kyngdome, and reygned. rrr. yeres, to
hym the lordes of Scotlande graunted for the wardes
and mariage of theyr heyres.

4972

1011

Henric the emperour of the byshoppe of
Babenberge in Germaine.

Ferdinande, the son of Sanctus, Erle of Castile, was
made kyng of Spayne. He maryed the daughter of Al-
phons kyng of Legio, and sister of Alereimonde: wherby
he was kyng of Legio in the ryght of his wife.

4978

1012

Sueno, or Swayne, kyng of Denmarke, repented hym
of the former covenantes made with the Englyshmen:
and thynkyng to attaine the whole dominion of this land,
with a strong armie entred by Northumberland, than
myddle Englande or Mercia, and so wente forthe till he
came to the citee of London: whiche he besigged, and de-
stroyed the countrey of Kent. At this tyme Egeltrede the
kyng, despayryng of all recovery (not ones proferryng to
resiste his enemies) with his wife and children, fledde to
Richarde Duke of Normandy. And than possessed Sueno
the whole kyngdome of this realme.

About this tyme Olauus and Onetua. ii. capytayns of
the Danes, invaded Scotlande, banquished kyng Mal-
colme, and subdued Murraye: but not longe after Mal-
colme repaired his armie, discomfited the Danes, & slew
Onetua.

4974

1013

Henry, the emperour of Germany, yode toward Rome:
where he was annoynted emperour by the bishoppe, and
then takyng with hym the imperiall Diademe, marched
with his armie toward Capua. He banquished the Sa-
rasens, and forced them to forsake Italie. he persued
also with great wrath Bubagannus, a capytain of the em-
perours of Constantinople, whiche favoured the Sara-
sens. He wanne the citee Trove, whiche the Grecians
had builded, where sometime Annibal pitched his campe.

Camus another capitaine of the Danes invaded Scot-
land

in Irelande, and here to farre was disconfited and slayne, the place at this day is called Camustand.

Canutus by commaundement of Sueno, brake againe into Scotland, with whom the Scottes fought a terrible battayle, to the great damage of both parties, after which battayle a peace was agreed.

Suane, the Dane, after much scathe done to the realme of Englande, ended his lyfe. And then succeeded Canutus his sonne: but the Englishmen sent agayne for Ethelred out of Normandy: who by the helpe of the Normaynes, and present assistance of his commons expelled Canutus. Canutus returned agayne into Englande, where he spared nothinge, that mighte be destroyed wth sword and fire.

In this tyme kynge Ethelred ended his life, when he had reigned .8. yeres. After whose death barlaunce fell betwene the Englishmen, for the election of their king, for the citizens of London, wth certayne other, named Edmund the sonne of Ethelred, a yonge man of lusty and valiant courage, in martiall adventures bothe hardie and wise, and could very wel endure all pynes. Wherefore he was surnamed Ironside. But the more parte favoured Canutus the Dane. By meanes wherof betwene this two martiall princes were foughten many great battayles, in the which epyther parte speede dyet syle, to the great slaughter of them that toke theyr parties. But lastly it was agreed, that the two captaynes shuld trye theyr quarrel betwene them selves onely. In which tryall al though Edmund seemed to have the upper hande, yet he condescended to deuide the realme, and make Canutus fellow wth him in the kingdome, whiche agreement was at last concluded.

In this time was an englyshe earle, called Godricus, which by his falshode had wroughte muche hurt to his natural countrey, and lastly was auctor of the death of the noble king Edmund. And therof him selfe brought spyke knowledge vnto Canutus the Dane, saying in this wyse. Thus haue I trowe Canutus for the loue I beare towarde you. To whom he answered: seeinge for my loue thou hast murdered thyne owne soueraygne lord whom

The The
peare of peare of
world Chyrt.

4975 K14

4977 1016

4978 1017

The third parte of

The yere of the world	The yere of Chypte	whom I loved most enyrylpe: I shall in rewarde thereof eralte thy head above all the lordes of Englande. And gum forthwith commaunded him to be beheaded, and bys head ang to be set vpon a spere on the highest gate of London.
4979	1018	V han Canutus was stablished in the kyngdome, he had knowledge howe Olauus kinge of Norway in his absence inuaded the countrey of Denmarke. Wherefore in all haste he speede hym thitherwarde, and by the manhode of the Englyshe souldiours obteyned of thaim a noble victorie, and recovered Norway to his syg- norpe. Wherefore when he returned into Englande, he demained him toward all men as a sage, gentyll and mo- derate prynce, and so continued. 20. yeres.
4989	1025	Chunrade was chosen emperor of Rome, and reigned 8 yrb. yeres, he caused his sonne Henry to be made Cesar at Aquisgrane.
4987	1026	Canutus called a parliament at Drenforde, where it was decreed that Englyshemen and Danes should holde the lawes of Edgare late kynge.
4988	1027	Constantine after the death of his brother, gouerned the empyre of Constantinople. 11. yeres.
		Robert was ordeyned Duke of Normandy, which was the father of William conqueror.
		Chunrade, after he had quieted the Swenes, yode to Rome & there was crowned with the impervall dyademe.
4990	1029	Henry the son of Robert, was named king of Fraunce to whom his mother Constance was so bndynde, that she would haue preferred her yonger sonne. Wherefore Hen- ry was forced for succour, to resorte to Robert Duke of Normandie: of whom he was gently receyued, and by his healpe restored to his kyngedome, and reconsoled to his mother.
4991	1030	Romanus emperor of Constantinople reigned. 6. ye- res and. vi. monethes.
		Chunrade emperor of Rome, went with an army a- gaynst the Hungares, and thaim sladdred.
		A noble man of Spayne called Roderike expelling the Saracens toke the famous citee Valencia.
4993	1032	Canutus yode in Pilgrimage to Rome.
4994	1033	The Burgonions submitted them to the obedience of chunrade

The | The
yeare of | yeare of
the world | Christs

Canutus entred Scotlande, wyth a stronge power, and
 theim subdued wbych at thys time refused his empyze,

4995 IC34

1035

1036

1037

1035

1035

The Danes of Denmarke chose to their king Canutus
the younger, otherwise called Hardiknutus, the sonne
Ecc. of the

The thyrde parte of

The
yeare of
the world
The
yeare of
Christ.

5000

1309

5002

1040

5003

1041

5003

1042

of the elder Canutus by Emma.

The Norwages ozyrned king a noble man called Ha-
gnus. And thus sodaynly was the noble principate of the
Danes seuered in .iii. partes.

Peter, the seconde king of Hungary. ii. yerres.

Henry, the thirde of that name, a man of noble courage,
was chosen empereur of Rome, and reigned. xlii. yea-
res. At his first entring he warred bypon Alberthe, king
of Bohemie. But behaulinge ayde of the Hungares, putte
him to the worse.

Dulcane was king of Scottes. Makethwalde and cer-
taine other unruly persons rebelled. In this tyme (as
sayeth the Scotte the hystorye) Sueno king of Norway in-
uaded Scotlande. Whiche thinge by conference of hysto-
rics shoulde seme to be somewhat befoze this tyme.
Dulcane when he had reigned. vii. yerres, was slayne by
his brother germane Makbeth.

Hardikinitas, king of Denmarke after the deathe of
Harolde, was ozyrned kinge of Englande. He for
the iniurie done to his mother Emma, caused the
corps of Harolde to be taken out of the sepulchre, and smy-
ting of his head, cast it into the riuer of Thames. He bur-
dened his subiectes with exactions and tribute, and in
meate and drinke was so prodigall, that his tables were
spred. liii. tyme in the daye, and the people serued with
great excesse. When he had reigned. iii. yerres, he dyed
sodainly, nat without suspicion of popsoning.

In this yeare was an erle in Englande, called God-
wine a man of great power, and ruled muche this land:
whiche vnjustly slewe Alfrede, the sonne of Ethelred,
and brother of Edward, and bled extreme crueltie to-
ward the Normaines, whiche accompanied the saide Al-
frede, when he came out of Normandy, to visite his mo-
ther Emma.

The empereur Henry overcame the Bohemes, & made
them tributary.

Peter kinge of Hungarie, for his lecherie and cruelties
was depzynd of his repall aucthorite of Aba, and fledde
for ayde to Henry empereur of Germany.

Dumfret the Norman, and brother of Dragon, succeeded
in the

Ann
gum
angl

2

3

1

2

hnt re
am
igle

in the Erlidome of Wnel.

Hardikinitus ended his lyfe after whose death, the Danes were beaten, slaine and driven oute of this lande into theirowne countrey. 28. yerres, after Durno began lyfke to reigne.

Edwarde, the sonne of Egeldrede or Etheldrede, by the aduise of Godwine and Leofricus Erle of Che: ster, after the death of Hardikinitus, was sente for out of Normandie, to take on hym the gouernance of this realme of England: whiche he guided with muche wysedome and iustice. 24. yerres. from whom issued (as oute of a fountayne) verie godlynesse, mercy, pites, and lyberaltee toward the poore, gentylnesse and iustice toward all men. And in all honest life gaue most goodly example to his people. He discharged the Englishmen of the greates tribute called the Dane gelte, whiche was often before tyme leited to the impouerishyng of the people. He subdued also the Welshmen, whiche rebelled & made warre upon their borderers.

Peter, kynge of Hungarie, was agayne restored to his kyngdome, and Aba or Albonye, by the healte of the emperour Hentie, expelled.

Magnus, kynge of Norway, hearing of the death of Hardikinitus, with a great puissance invaded Denmarke: and expelling Durno the lieutenante, subdued the countrey to his signorie. By which meane Denmarke became subiect to the Northgarnes.

Michaell Calaphates, whiche was adopted by Zoe, with great unkyndnesse sent hir in banishment. Wherefore he was bereft of his sight, and put from the empyre. After whome Constantine Monomachus was made emperour of Constantinople, and married Zoe the empyresse. He reigned xii. yerres.

The Romaines depriued Bennet the .iij. of hys byshopricke, and ordeined in hys place Siluester the .iiij. Bennet. within short space after being restored to his see, fearyng to be agayne depriued, sold hys roome to one John an archdeacon, who was called Gregoꝝ the .vi.

Malbeth reigned among the Scottes. xvi. yerres. whiche

CCC. ii.

The The
year of year of
world Childs

1043

5009

1044

The thyrde parte of

The
yeare of
the world

The
yeare of
Christ.

che at the beginning dyd many thinges to the pzoofte of Anne
the realme: but after he became a cruell tyzanne, and was gum
banquiffhed and flayne by Walcome, by the ayde of the angl
Engliffemen.

5008

1047

By the counsaile of Erle Godwine, and Robert byshop of
of Canterburve, Emma, the mother of kynge Edward
of Englande, for vntill accusacions was put to great in-
juries, and was deliuered by miracle, passing ouer. fr.
plongh thares, burnyng hote as fyre, without hurt or da-
mage.

Certaine pyzates of the Danes entered Englande at the
hauen of Sandwiche, whiche were chased and dzyuen to
their ships.

Hentye the emperour, hauyng knowlage of the discorde
betwene the bishops in Rome, went thitherwarde with a
stronge armpe. Where he assemblyng a synode, condem-
ned the. iii. troublous monstres, Bennet, Syluester, and
Gregorie, and made Switgerus byshop, whiche was na-
med the. ii. Clemente: of whome he receiued the Imperpall
Diademe, and prohibited the Romaynes thensforth to
chose any byshop. Whiche thing was after cause of molte
deadly waires.

5009

1048

Clement was byshop. fr. monethes, and after hym Dar-
masus 23. daies, and than Leo the. fr. fyre yeres.

5011

1050

Here about this tyme in Englande fell passyng greate
snowe: after whiche ensued a greate mortallitee of men,
mooztine of cattyle, and by lyghtrynge, the corne was
wonderfully brynt and wasted.

5012

1051

Sanctus, the. ii. kyng of Castile, not beyng contented
with his owne kyngedome, invaded Legio, and expelled
his brother Alphons: who fled to the Saracens. He sub-
dued also Portugal and Galyce, and chased Carlias.

5013

1052

Emace, Erle of Bolongne, came into Englab: through
whom variance happened betwene kynge Edward and
Erle Godwine: who perceluyng, that he coulde not with-
stande the kynges malycie, fled into Flaunders, and was
ouclawed: Edward repudiated hys wyfe the daughter of
Erle Godwine.

Gysulphus, Erle of Wuel, invaded the citee Bonenent:
And by force toke and withhelde the tribute, whiche the
churche

the church of Babenberge payeth yearly to the Romayne
bishop.

Leo, bishoppe of Rome, having ayde of the emperoure,
went with an armie against Gysulphus: and at the fyrste
encounter was of hym vanquished, and taken prisoner.

The The
yeare of yeare of
the world Chyzt.

5014

1053

But shortly after he was sent agayne safely to Rome.

William, bastarde Duke of Normandye, aboute this
tyme came with a goodly company into Englande: and
was honourably receyved: to whom the kyng made great
chere, and at his retourne enriched him with great gifts
and pleasures: and (as some write) made promyse to hym,
that if he dyed withoute issue, the same William shoulde
succeede him in the kingdome of England.

Erle Godwine was reconciled to kyng Edward, and
called from banishment: and for his trueth and good a
bearynge, gave for pledges his. ii. sonnes Byrnon and
Toston, whiche were sent to the Duke of Normandye, to
be kept.

5015

1054

The Scottes rebelled against kyng Edward. Where-
fore Edward, Erle of Northumberlande, assembled an
hoste, entred the lande, subdued the Scottes, chased the
kyng out of his realme, and gave the kyngdome to Mal-
colme or Malcolme, sonne of the kyng of Cumbres, whi-
che the Scottishe hystorie setteth after this tyme in the
yere of our lord. 1061.

5016

1055

As Erle Godwine sat at the table with kyng Edward,
it hapned one of the cuppe bearers to stumble, & recover
agayne, so that he dyd shewe none of the drynke: whereat
Godwine lowgh and sayed. Nowe that one brother hath
susteyned that other. With whiche wordes the king cal-
ling to minde his brothers death, that was slaine by God-
wyne, behelde the Erle, saynge: so shoulde my brother Al-
phrede have holpen me, he had Godwine ben. Godwyne
then fearing the kynges displeasure to be newly kendred,
after many wordes in excusing him selfe, sayed: so mought
I safely swallow this morsell of bread, as I am guiltlesse
of the deede. But as soone as he had receyved the breade,
forthwith he was choked.

Victor, bishop of Rome. ii. yeres.

Algarus, Erle of Drenford, through out counsaile was
Ccc. iii. with

5017

1056

The third parte of

The The without gylte banished, and fled into Wales: and shortly after
 yere of ly after was reconciled to the kyng.
 5018 1057 Theodoza gouerned the empyre of Constantinople. 11. yeres.

Henric, emperour of Germanie, departing out of this life, committed his yonge son to the tuition of Baldwine, Erle of Flanders.

5018

1057

Edward, Erle of Northumberlande, dyed: of whom it is redde, that whan he sawe well he shoulde dye, he caused his armour to be put on hym, and so armed at all places sittynge in a cheire, sayed: that so it became a noble man to dye, and not lyng as another meane person.

Henry, the. iiii. beyng yet a chyld, was ordeyned emperour of Germanie, and reigned. 50. yeres. In his tyme, by meane of trouble, sedicion, and warre, the Romayne empyre so greatly was appayzed, that neuer after it could be restozed to the pryncipale maiestye, nor recover againe the former might and puissance. The causes, whereof were the byshoppes of Rome, whiche vered well nere the whole worlde with mosse cruell and deadly warres, and specially Hildebrande, called Gregoꝝ the. vii.

5019

1058

The Saxones, vnder the leading of Duke Otho, rebelled, and by Ecbert, the emperours capitayne, were banquished and brought in subiection.

Michael, surnamed the elder, emperoure of Constantinople one yere.

Great busynesse and rufflinge in Rome for the election and depolition of certayne byshoppes, as Stephene the. ix. Bennet the. x. Nicolas the. iiii.

Andrew, king of Hungary, was banquished of one Bela, and depriued of his kingdome. The emperours armie, whiche came to rescue, was ouerthrowen, kyng Andrew slayne, and the Marques of Thuringe constrained with hunger and famine, to yelde hym selfe to his enemies.

Bela by force toke on hym the crowne, and reigned. 11. yeres.

5020

1059

Isacius ordered Michael emperoure of Constantinople, and reigned in his place. 11. yeres.

Algarus, Erle of Mercia, whiche was before Erle of Drenfoꝝde, beyng maliciously accused, was exiled oute of this

re this lande by king Edward, the seconde time: and fledde
 againe to Griffine Duke of Wales. Wherwith Edward
 was greivously displeased, and sente Harold the eldest
 sonne of Godwine, which was than of great power, to
 warre upon the saide Griffine: who spoyle the countrey
 of Wales, expelled Griffine out of his lordship, and by
 his pollicie reconciled erle Algarus to kynge Edwardes
 grace and favour.

The The
 reare of reare of
 world Chyrt.

18 Philip, the first of that name, was ordeined kynge of
 Fraunce. He married Bertha the wife of Baldwine erle
 of Holande, and had by her certayne chylzen: whom af-
 ter he had repudiate, and coupled to him Bertradam, the
 wife of Fulco whome he affectioned, that all thinges
 were done at her becke and commaundement and would
 not forsake her until he was constrained by Urbane the
 bishop of Rome, to take to him his firste wife.

1021 1060

Baldwine erle of Flaunders, assembled an army and
 made towarde Spayne against the Saracens, and subdu-
 ed Gasconne to him and to the yonge emperour.

Godfrey, erle of Puell in Italie, in his deathe bedde,
 neglecting his owne byetherne, made Bagelarde his heir
 and successour, which was immediately driven out of his
 lordshippe by Robert Guiscard, Godfreys brother: who
 after made him selfe erle of Calabze and Puell.

19 Otto duke of Bawarie.

In this yere of our lord after the computacion of the
 Scottes Malcolme or Malcolme recovered the crowne of
 Scotlande and reigned .35. yeres.

1022

1061

20 Alexander the .ii. was ordeined bishoppe of Rome, at
 which time the bishoppes of Lumbardie would have ad-
 vanced to that sea one Cabolus: by meanes wherof civile
 warre was areted, and great armies gathered on bothe
 partes. In fine, after sore fighte and great murder, the
 fauours of Cabolus were chased, and he him selfe hard-
 ly escaped. This ruffling continued a long space.

1023

1062

Otto bishop of Coleine, by pryuy meanes conveyed
 Henry the emperour from the ordzing & guydinge of his
 mother, and set him in full power to rule after his owne
 mynde. The empire at this time was chiefely governed
 by bishopps.

Otto

The third parte of

The
yere of
h world

The
yere of
Chryste

His Marques of Thuryngge, gaue firste title of hys An
gu

Henry, the emperour of Germanie, reuared Salomon ang
to his fathers kyngdome of Hungarye, and gaue to him
in maryage his owne syster. After which tyme Salomon
reigned. xlii. yeres.

924

1063

Harolde, the sonne of Erle Godwyne, went into Nor²¹
mandie, where he made faythfull promyse to Duke Wil-
liam, that after the death of Edward he woulde kepe the
kingdome to his behalfe: on whych condicion he brought
with him at his retourne his brother Tost.

Alacius, emperour of Constantinople, chooze hym selfe
a monke, after whom reigned Constantine. vii. yeres.

925

1064

Sanctus kinge of Spayne, was murdered by one of²²
his housholde seruantes. Wherefore Alphons the. vi.
whom he had before expelled, was agayne restored to his
kyngdome.

926

1065

Tost enuysing his brothers prosperite, bled muche bi-²³
lany toward him and kinge Edward: for the whiche he
was forced to leaue the lande, and flye into Flaunders.

The noble king Edward finished his last daye, when
he had reigned 23. yeres. vii. monethes and odde dayes.
He purged the olde and corrupte lawes, and picked out of
them a certayne, which were most profytable for the com-
mons: and therfore were they called the common lawes.
For restitution wherof hapned diuers commocions and
insurrections in this lande.

927

1066

Harolde the eldest sonne of Godwine, being of great
power, in Englande, and therwith valiant and har-
die, toke on him the gouernance of this lande, no-
thing regarding the promise that he made to William of
Normandie. Wherefore when William sent to hym am-
bassades, admonishing him of the conenantes that were
agreed betwene them. Harolde would in no wyse surren-
dre to him the kingdome, whyche Wyllyam claymed not
onely for the promise that was made to hym, but also be-
cause he was next of king Edwardes bloud.

In this meane tyme Tost, which fledde out of the land
stered agaynst his brother, the king of Norway, who en-
tringe the Northe partes of Englande wth a great pay-
saunce

saunce, discomfited. ii. erles, that gaue to him battayle. **The** **The**
 But Harolde, makinge haste to rescue his people, slewe **peare of** **peare of**
 the kynge, and his owne brother Tosko, and chased the **world** **Chyke**
 Norwages with disworship to their shippes.

When Wyllyam Duke of Normandye percepued, that
 he could not by any meane bringe Harolde to falsifye his
 promyse, nor by treaty to yeld to hym the kyngdome: by
 force he entred the lande. To whom Harold gaue strong
 and sharpe battayle, in the ende wherof William by pol-
 licie obteyned the victorie, chased the Englyshmen, slewe
 Harolde, and toke on him the gouernaunce of this lande.

This happened. 617. yeres after the fyrst arryual of the
 Sarones or Angls: in which space they reigned diuers:
 ly. First beganne the kyngdome of Kente the yere of our
 lord. 475. vnder Engistus: and after that. vi. other
 kyngdomes at sundrie tymes toke their beginning,

which al at y last were brought into one monar-
 chie, and subiect to the weast Sarones. by king

Adelstane, the yere of our lord. ix. hundred

thirtie and eight, whiche monarchie con-
 tinued. 129. yeres, debatinge of the flus

and twenty yeres, which space the

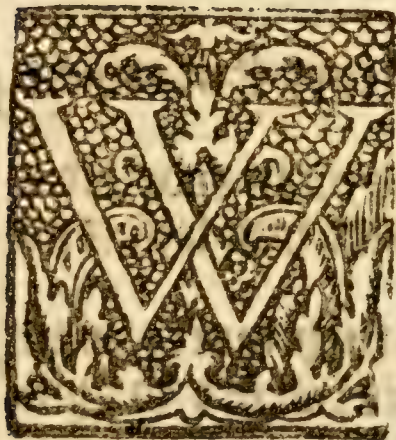
Danes reigned in this land

vnder Canutus and

Harolde.

The ende of the seconde booke.

The thyrde booke.



WYLLIAM DUKE OF 5028

1067

Normandie, surnamed conqueroure,
 bastard son of Roberte the. vi. duke of
 that duchy, & nephew vnto kinge Ed-
 ward the confessor, beganne his do-
 minion ouer this realme of England
 the. xv. daye of October, and reigned
 xxi. yeres, one moneth, wyth great se-
 verities and cruelnesse, towarde the Englyshmen, bour-
 D d d. beining

The thyrde parte of

The
yeare of
the world
The
yeare of
Christ.

deininge them alwayes with greuous exactions. By
meane whereof he caused diuers to fflye out of the lande
some to Scotlande, some to Denmarke, and other coun-
treys. And for so muche as he obteyned his kingdom by
force and denie of sworde, he changed the whole state of
gouernance of this common weale, and ordeined new
lawes at his owne pleasure, profitable to him selfe, but
greuous and hurtfull to the people. This William was
wise and gilefull, riche and couetous, and loued well to
be magnified, a fayre speker, and great dissimuler, a ma-
of comely stature, but some deale fatte in the bealy, stern
of countenance and stronge in armes, and great pleas-
sure in hunting, and making sumptuous feastes.

5029

1068

The towne of Exeter, and the Northumbers rebelled,
which both were subdued and greuously punished.

King William buylded. iiii. stronge castles, twaine
at Worke, one at Nottingham, an other at Lincolne, whi-
che garisons he furnished with Normans.

5030

1069

Canutus king of Denmarke, being steered by by cer-
taine Englyshe outlawes, inuaded the Northpartes of
Englande, and entred euen to Worke. From whens he
was chased by William, & forced to fflye to his countrey.

5031

1070

Henry the emperour inuaded the countrey of Bawarie.
Otto duke of Bawarie vanquished the Thuringes, &
bered soze Saronie with diuers inuasions.

Godfrey succeeded his father in the kingdome of Lo-
bayne.

The Scottes with theyr kynge Malcolme, inuaded
Northumberlande, and robbed the countrey.

Eudochia, and her sonnes ruled Constantinople. vii.
monethes.

5032

1071

Romanus, surnamed Diogenes, maried Eudochia &
possessed the empire.

Otto Duke of Bawarie, whiche had often rebelled a-
gainste the emperoure Henry, submitted him selfe, and
obteyned pardon.

5033

1072

William, king of Englande, made such warre upon
the Scottes, that he forced Malcolme to sweare to hym
both homage and fealty.

William by the counsaile of the Erle of Hereforde,
caused

caused the money and riches of the abbeies, to be brought into his treasourye. He made also the newe forest in the countrey of Southampton, which to bring about he cast downe dyuers townes and churches, the space of .xxx. myles, and replenished it with wylde beastes, and made sharpelawes for the mayntenance and encrease of the same.

Great contencion was betwene Lanfranke byshop of Canturburie, and Thomas of Boke, for the primacie, whiche at length was iudged to the Archebischoppye of Canturbury.

The Saxones, for certayne injuries to them done, took 5034
7 armes against the emperour.

Demetrius, kynge of Ruscia, expelled his brother oute of the kingdome, & desired ayde of the emperour Henric.

The Saxones were queted and reconciled to the emperour. 5035

Gregorye the. vii. being made byshop of Rome, ordeyned (contrarye to the lawe that was made by Henrye the. iii.) that no emperour shoulde haue to doo with the election or confirmacion of the Romaine byshoppe: and excommunicated all them that receiued any spirituall promotions at the emperours hand, and made other in their places, where as befoze tyme the emperour had full power to ordeine such byshops as were within his dominion. With these ordinaunces Henric the. iii. being that emperour, was greatly displeased. This Gregorye decreed also, that priestes shoulde haue no more wyfes, and that they whiche all ready had, shoulde be diuorced: and that no man shuld thenforth be admitted to presthode, but they bowed perpetuall chastitee. Against this decree repugned the byshoppes and priestes of Germanie, and withstode it a good season.

Aboute this tyme the people of Galloway and Northye after the Burrais and other rebelled in Scotlande and robbed the countreis, which were brought to obedience. 5036

Michael, the sonne of Constantine Dukas, was ordeyned emperoure of Constantinople and reigned vi. yeres.

Salomon, kyng of Hungarie, vanquished and ouercame the Hunnes, whiche with an huge great armye entered

The The
yeare of yeare of
the world Chyiste

1073

1074

1075

The thyrde parte of

The
peare of
y worlde

The
peare of
Christ.

tered the boundes of Pannonie. And after that, insynnyng Ann
battayle wyth the Greekes and Bulgares, obteyned the gum
victorye. But at the laste full greate debate betwene hym angl
and a noble man of hys countrey, called Geisa, of whom
after soze fyght he was banquyshed, and depzyued of his
kyngdome: and than reigned Geisa. bi. yerres.

Henrie the emperour sped hym with an armye agaynst
the Saxones, the secounde tyme, which (by the free ryng
of certayne Prynces) refused his empyre: whome he con-
streigned by force to submit theim selfe, and sharply pu-
nished the chiefe capitaines of that conspiracie.

5037

1076

Gregory byshop of Rome excommunicated the emper: 12
rour, because he woulde not obey his ordynances, and de-
pyued hym of the imperyal title, and assypled the people
of theyr othe of allegiaunce: wyllynge also the princes of
Germanie to chosse a new emperour. By whiche meanes
dyuers prynces rebelled, and the countrey was wonder-
fully spoyled and vexed with cyple warres. Dyuers by-
shoppes of Germanie, calling a counsaile, did excommu-
nicate Gregory as a cruell tyranne and misse liuer. The
cruell tyrannie, outrageous pryde, diuellishe sorcery, and
detestable lyfe of this Gregory is sette foorthe at large by
Benio the cardynal: where ye maye see the very picture of
his crueltie.

Roger Erle of Hertforde, and another named Kaulfe,
conspired agaynst kyng Wyllyam of Englad, being then
in Normandy: whiche both were by him outlawed, and
chased oute of the realme, and Erle Malreth, that bittered
the conspiracie, beheaded.

5038

1077

The emperour, at the instance of his lordes, came hum- 11
bly to the byshoppe of Rome, and desired of hym pardone
and absolucion.

5039

1078

Whyle the emperour was in Italie, the princes and bi- 12
shoppes of Saronie by treason chosse Rodulph Duke of
Suave to be emperour. To whiche traytour Rodulph,
Gregory sent the imperyal Diademe. Whereof whan
Henrie had knowlage, in al hast he sped hym with an ar-
mie agaynst the saied Rodulph and the Saxones, where
was foughten betwene them a strong fyelde, to the great
losse of bothe parties.

Ladislau

12 Ladislaus, kyng of Hungarye. xliii. yerres. A prince of greate modestie who was constreigned of the nobles to take on him the gouernaunce of the realme.

The The
yeare of yeare of
the world Chyzt.

Robert Guyscarde toke sainte Seuerines and Consencia, citees of Calabze. He receiued Salerne by diction, and conquered the towne called Uicis.

13 Henrie the emperour encountred Rodulph, the second and thyrde time, and spedde diuersly. 5040

1079

Oswalde, byshop of Salisbury, was famous in Englande.

14 The fourth battaille was foughten betwene the emperour & Rodulph, in the ende wherof Rodulph was slaine, with many of the Barones. 5041

1080

15 Robert Duke of Buell expelled the Grekes oute of Italye, and toke from theim diuers castels and townes.

Michael, emperoure of Constantinople, with his. lxx. sonnes, was depriued of all impervall auctoritee, by one Nicephorus, who vsurped the crowne. lxx. yerres. Michael fled to the bishop of Rome.

Robert, the eldest sonne of William conquerour, by the counsaile and ayde of Philip kyng of Fraunce, invaded his fathers Duchie of Normandy. Wherwith William being greatly displeased, gaue to his sonne stronge battayle: in whiche it fortuneth Roberte to mete vnwares in the fielde with his father, and bare hym to the erth. But perceiuyng by the voyce, who it was, forthwith he lepte from his horse, and saued his father. For whiche dede he was reconciled, and peace betwene theim was agreed. Robert Duke of Buell went with an armie againste Nicephorus of Constantinople, to the entente to restore Michael to his empyre. 042

1081

16 While king William of Englande was in Normandy, the Northumbers rebelled. 5043

1082

The Venecians, takyng parte with Nicephorus, encountred Robert Duke of Buell with his Normans, and obtained of theim a bloudy victorie nere to Dirachium.

Gregory, byshop of Rome, gathering a synode, condemned the opinyon of Berengar, concernyng the sacrament, and excommunicated Henry the emperour the second tyme.

The third parte of

The The emperour entred Italie with a stronge armie, en Anne
 vere of vere of tenoyng to appeale the furte of the bishoppe, and toke the gun
 & worlo Chyffe cytee of Rome. Gregorpe, after he had been a good space ang
 5044 1083 besieged, fled secretly to the Pozzains of Puell. 17

The emperour, assembling a counsaile at Bizia, made
 Robert bishoppe of Rome, whiche was before bishop of
 Rauenna, and named him Clemente.

Ladislans, kynge of Hungarye, added Delmacia and
 Croatia to the signory of the Hungares. He vanquished
 the Hunnes, and constreigned the Rutenes, which inua-
 ded Dannonie to returne to theyr owne countrey. He sub-
 5045 1084 dued also the people of Polonie, and toke Croacia.

Henry the emperour was crowned with the imperial
 Diademe of Clement, whom he hadde made bishoppe of
 Rome. 18

The order of the Cartusians toke his beginning of Bru-
 no a Chanone.

Alexius deposed Nicephorus of the Emprye of Con-
 stantinople, and made hym a monke. At whiche time the
 citee was miserablye spoyled by the Saracens, whiche
 were in the armie of Alexius. This Alexius reigned 33.
 yeres.

Between Henry the emperour and the rebellious Sar- 19
 ones about this time were foughten many sore and cruel
 battayles, in whiche eyther parte suffered great damage
 and losse.

Kynge William caused a new matter of tribute to be
 leuyed throughout this realme, for euery hyde of lande
 (that is). xx. acres. vi. shyllinges. And not longe after
 commaunded a valuacyon to be taken of all landes, fees,
 and possessions: and diligent serche also to be made, what
 number of men and cattaille were within this lande, and
 accordyng to the quantitee and noumber thereof, gathe-
 red another payment.

Victor was ordeined bishoppe of Rome, who not long 20
 after was popsoned.

Roberte Duke of the Pozzains in Puell, affecting in
 his mind the empyre of Constantinople, sailed with a na-
 uie of shyps towarde Dalmacie: where Alexius and the
 Veneciās encountring him, were put to flight and chas-
 sed. And

ant re sed and againe the seconde time, nere to Salinum: wher-
 m ly after which victoꝝ this Robert Cuscard ended his
 ngll. lyfe.

The The
 year of year of
 y world 1087.

Wratisslaus was ordeyned the first king of Boheme by
 the emperour; and Polonie, Lusacia, Silesia, Moravia,
 were adioyned to that seignorie.

21 Englande was vexed with manye plages. For a great
 murraine fel among cattayle, brenting fevers and hun- 5048
 ger among the people, great barenesse of the earth; and
 mozeouer muche hurte was done in many places with
 misfortune of fyre, and specially in the citee of London.

22 Roger succeeded Robert his father in the dukedome of
 Bnell, who graunted parte therof to his yonger brother
 Bohemunde. Betwene these two brithzen was after
 Garpe warre for possession of certayne citees.

5049

1088

Urbane the .ii. bishop of Rome. xii. yeres.

Auful king of Galtee in Spayne, which had contin-
 al war with the Saracens, recovered the citee of Tolete
 to the possession of the Christians.

William conquerour (after that he, for certayn displea-
 sure conceived towarde the frenche kinge, had spoyled
 & wasted the countrey of Fraunce) ended his life, in the
 moneth of Iulpe, and was buryed in the citee Caan, in
 Normandie. He had .v. children Robert to whome he
 gaue Normandie; Richarde, which died in the floure of
 his age. William Rufus, and Henrie, which were kin-
 ges after him, and one daughter named Adela.

1 William Rufus, the second sonne of William con- 5050
 querour, began his reigne ouer the realme of eng-
 land & reigned. xiii. yeres. He was diuers and vne-
 stable of his demeanour, very couetous, and therewithal
 cruel. Wherefore he burdened his people with vncrea-
 sable cares, he pilld the rieche, and bare downe the poze,
 and caused many to lese their landes for small causes.
 Yet had he some vertues, which might haue bene to him
 a goodly ornament, he had the vncleane vice of auarice
 defiled altogether. For in marttall pollicie, he was ve-
 ry expert, and diligent in al matters that he went about,
 stedfast and stable of his promise, and marvellous payn-
 ful and laboꝝeous. But the forenamed vices overwhele-
 med

1089

The third parte of

- The
pere of
the world
- The
pere of
the world
- 1090
- 1091
- 1092
- 1094
- med the vertues, and made him odible to his subiectes. Annt
Robert the elder brother, came with an army into Eng. gum
lande agaynst William: wherof when he had knowlage angl
he entreated meanes of peace.
- 1090
- 1091
- 1092
- 1094
- 1095
- 1096
- 1097
- 1098
- 1099
- 1100
- 1101
- 1102
- 1103
- 1104
- 1105
- 1106
- 1107
- 1108
- 1109
- 1110
- 1111
- 1112
- 1113
- 1114
- 1115
- 1116
- 1117
- 1118
- 1119
- 1120
- 1121
- 1122
- 1123
- 1124
- 1125
- 1126
- 1127
- 1128
- 1129
- 1130
- 1131
- 1132
- 1133
- 1134
- 1135
- 1136
- 1137
- 1138
- 1139
- 1140
- 1141
- 1142
- 1143
- 1144
- 1145
- 1146
- 1147
- 1148
- 1149
- 1150
- 1151
- 1152
- 1153
- 1154
- 1155
- 1156
- 1157
- 1158
- 1159
- 1160
- 1161
- 1162
- 1163
- 1164
- 1165
- 1166
- 1167
- 1168
- 1169
- 1170
- 1171
- 1172
- 1173
- 1174
- 1175
- 1176
- 1177
- 1178
- 1179
- 1180
- 1181
- 1182
- 1183
- 1184
- 1185
- 1186
- 1187
- 1188
- 1189
- 1190
- 1191
- 1192
- 1193
- 1194
- 1195
- 1196
- 1197
- 1198
- 1199
- 1200
- 1201
- 1202
- 1203
- 1204
- 1205
- 1206
- 1207
- 1208
- 1209
- 1210
- 1211
- 1212
- 1213
- 1214
- 1215
- 1216
- 1217
- 1218
- 1219
- 1220
- 1221
- 1222
- 1223
- 1224
- 1225
- 1226
- 1227
- 1228
- 1229
- 1230
- 1231
- 1232
- 1233
- 1234
- 1235
- 1236
- 1237
- 1238
- 1239
- 1240
- 1241
- 1242
- 1243
- 1244
- 1245
- 1246
- 1247
- 1248
- 1249
- 1250
- 1251
- 1252
- 1253
- 1254
- 1255
- 1256
- 1257
- 1258
- 1259
- 1260
- 1261
- 1262
- 1263
- 1264
- 1265
- 1266
- 1267
- 1268
- 1269
- 1270
- 1271
- 1272
- 1273
- 1274
- 1275
- 1276
- 1277
- 1278
- 1279
- 1280
- 1281
- 1282
- 1283
- 1284
- 1285
- 1286
- 1287
- 1288
- 1289
- 1290
- 1291
- 1292
- 1293
- 1294
- 1295
- 1296
- 1297
- 1298
- 1299
- 1300
- 1301
- 1302
- 1303
- 1304
- 1305
- 1306
- 1307
- 1308
- 1309
- 1310
- 1311
- 1312
- 1313
- 1314
- 1315
- 1316
- 1317
- 1318
- 1319
- 1320
- 1321
- 1322
- 1323
- 1324
- 1325
- 1326
- 1327
- 1328
- 1329
- 1330
- 1331
- 1332
- 1333
- 1334
- 1335
- 1336
- 1337
- 1338
- 1339
- 1340
- 1341
- 1342
- 1343
- 1344
- 1345
- 1346
- 1347
- 1348
- 1349
- 1350
- 1351
- 1352
- 1353
- 1354
- 1355
- 1356
- 1357
- 1358
- 1359
- 1360
- 1361
- 1362
- 1363
- 1364
- 1365
- 1366
- 1367
- 1368
- 1369
- 1370
- 1371
- 1372
- 1373
- 1374
- 1375
- 1376
- 1377
- 1378
- 1379
- 1380
- 1381
- 1382
- 1383
- 1384
- 1385
- 1386
- 1387
- 1388
- 1389
- 1390
- 1391
- 1392
- 1393
- 1394
- 1395
- 1396
- 1397
- 1398
- 1399
- 1400
- 1401
- 1402
- 1403
- 1404
- 1405
- 1406
- 1407
- 1408
- 1409
- 1410
- 1411
- 1412
- 1413
- 1414
- 1415
- 1416
- 1417
- 1418
- 1419
- 1420
- 1421
- 1422
- 1423
- 1424
- 1425
- 1426
- 1427
- 1428
- 1429
- 1430
- 1431
- 1432
- 1433
- 1434
- 1435
- 1436
- 1437
- 1438
- 1439
- 1440
- 1441
- 1442
- 1443
- 1444
- 1445
- 1446
- 1447
- 1448
- 1449
- 1450
- 1451
- 1452
- 1453
- 1454
- 1455
- 1456
- 1457
- 1458
- 1459
- 1460
- 1461
- 1462
- 1463
- 1464
- 1465
- 1466
- 1467
- 1468
- 1469
- 1470
- 1471
- 1472
- 1473
- 1474
- 1475
- 1476
- 1477
- 1478
- 1479
- 1480
- 1481
- 1482
- 1483
- 1484
- 1485
- 1486
- 1487
- 1488
- 1489
- 1490
- 1491
- 1492
- 1493
- 1494
- 1495
- 1496
- 1497
- 1498
- 1499
- 1500
- 1501
- 1502
- 1503
- 1504
- 1505
- 1506
- 1507
- 1508
- 1509
- 1510
- 1511
- 1512
- 1513
- 1514
- 1515
- 1516
- 1517
- 1518
- 1519
- 1520
- 1521
- 1522
- 1523
- 1524
- 1525
- 1526
- 1527
- 1528
- 1529
- 1530
- 1531
- 1532
- 1533
- 1534
- 1535
- 1536
- 1537
- 1538
- 1539
- 1540
- 1541
- 1542
- 1543
- 1544
- 1545
- 1546
- 1547
- 1548
- 1549
- 1550
- 1551
- 1552
- 1553
- 1554
- 1555
- 1556
- 1557
- 1558
- 1559
- 1560
- 1561
- 1562
- 1563
- 1564
- 1565
- 1566
- 1567
- 1568
- 1569
- 1570
- 1571
- 1572
- 1573
- 1574
- 1575
- 1576
- 1577
- 1578
- 1579
- 1580
- 1581
- 1582
- 1583
- 1584
- 1585
- 1586
- 1587
- 1588
- 1589
- 1590
- 1591
- 1592
- 1593
- 1594
- 1595
- 1596
- 1597
- 1598
- 1599
- 1600
- 1601
- 1602
- 1603
- 1604
- 1605
- 1606
- 1607
- 1608
- 1609
- 1610
- 1611
- 1612
- 1613
- 1614
- 1615
- 1616
- 1617
- 1618
- 1619
- 1620
- 1621
- 1622
- 1623
- 1624
- 1625
- 1626
- 1627
- 1628
- 1629
- 1630
- 1631
- 1632
- 1633
- 1634
- 1635
- 1636
- 1637
- 1638
- 1639
- 1640
- 1641
- 1642
- 1643
- 1644
- 1645
- 1646
- 1647
- 1648
- 1649
- 1650
- 1651
- 1652
- 1653
- 1654
- 1655
- 1656
- 1657
- 1658
- 1659
- 1660
- 1661
- 1662
- 1663
- 1664
- 1665
- 1666
- 1667
- 1668
- 1669
- 1670
- 1671
- 1672
- 1673
- 1674
- 1675
- 1676
- 1677
- 1678
- 1679
- 1680
- 1681
- 1682
- 1683
- 1684
- 1685
- 1686
- 1687
- 1688
- 1689
- 1690
- 1691
- 1692
- 1693
- 1694
- 1695
- 1696
- 1697
- 1698
- 1699
- 1700
- 1701
- 1702
- 1703
- 1704
- 1705
- 1706
- 1707
- 1708
- 1709
- 1710
- 1711
- 1712
- 1713
- 1714
- 1715
- 1716
- 1717
- 1718
- 1719
- 1720
- 1721
- 1722
- 1723
- 1724
- 1725
- 1726
- 1727
- 1728
- 1729
- 1730
- 1731
- 1732
- 1733
- 1734
- 1735
- 1736
- 1737
- 1738
- 1739
- 1740
- 1741
- 1742
- 1743
- 1744
- 1745
- 1746
- 1747
- 1748
- 1749
- 1750
- 1751
- 1752
- 1753
- 1754
- 1755
- 1756
- 1757
- 1758
- 1759
- 1760
- 1761
- 1762
- 1763
- 1764
- 1765
- 1766
- 1767
- 1768
- 1769
- 1770
- 1771
- 1772
- 1773
- 1774
- 1775
- 1776
- 1777
- 1778
- 1779
- 1780
- 1781
- 1782
- 1783
- 1784
- 1785
- 1786
- 1787
- 1788
- 1789
- 1790
- 1791
- 1792
- 1793
- 1794
- 1795
- 1796
- 1797
- 1798
- 1799
- 1800
- 1801
- 1802
- 1803
- 1804
- 1805
- 1806
- 1807
- 1808
- 1809
- 1810
- 1811
- 1812
- 1813
- 1814
- 1815
- 1816
- 1817
- 1818
- 1819
- 1820
- 1821
- 1822
- 1823
- 1824
- 1825
- 1826
- 1827
- 1828
- 1829
- 1830
- 1831
- 1832
- 1833
- 1834
- 1835
- 1836
- 1837
- 1838
- 1839
- 1840
- 1841
- 1842
- 1843
- 1844
- 1845
- 1846
- 1847
- 1848
- 1849
- 1850
- 1851
- 1852
- 1853
- 1854
- 1855
- 1856
- 1857
- 1858
- 1859
- 1860
- 1861
- 1862
- 1863
- 1864
- 1865
- 1866
- 1867
- 1868
- 1869
- 1870
- 1871
- 1872
- 1873
- 1874
- 1875
- 1876
- 1877
- 1878
- 1879
- 1880
- 1881
- 1882
- 1883
- 1884
- 1885
- 1886
- 1887
- 1888
- 1889
- 1890
- 1891
- 1892
- 1893
- 1894
- 1895
- 1896
- 1897
- 1898
- 1899
- 1900
- 1901
- 1902
- 1903
- 1904
- 1905
- 1906
- 1907
- 1908
- 1909
- 1910
- 1911
- 1912
- 1913
- 1914
- 1915
- 1916
- 1917
- 1918
- 1919
- 1920
- 1921
- 1922
- 1923
- 1924
- 1925
- 1926
- 1927
- 1928
- 1929
- 1930
- 1931
- 1932
- 1933
- 1934
- 1935
- 1936
- 1937
- 1938
- 1939
- 1940
- 1941
- 1942
- 1943
- 1944
- 1945
- 1946
- 1947
- 1948
- 1949
- 1950
- 1951
- 1952
- 1953
- 1954
- 1955
- 1956
- 1957
- 1958
- 1959
- 1960
- 1961
- 1962
- 1963
- 1964
- 1965
- 1966
- 1967
- 1968
- 1969
- 1970
- 1971
- 1972
- 1973
- 1974
- 1975
- 1976
- 1977
- 1978
- 1979
- 1980
- 1981
- 1982
- 1983
- 1984
- 1985
- 1986
- 1987
- 1988
- 1989
- 1990
- 1991
- 1992
- 1993
- 1994
- 1995
- 1996
- 1997
- 1998
- 1999
- 2000
- 2001
- 2002
- 2003
- 2004
- 2005
- 2006
- 2007
- 2008
- 2009
- 2010
- 2011
- 2012
- 2013
- 2014
- 2015
- 2016
- 2017
- 2018
- 2019
- 2020
- 2021
- 2022
- 2023
- 2024
- 2025
- 2026
- 2027
- 2028
- 2029
- 2030
- 2031
- 2032
- 2033
- 2034
- 2035
- 2036
- 2037
- 2038
- 2039
- 2040
- 2041
- 2042
- 2043
- 2044
- 2045
- 2046
- 2047
- 2048
- 2049
- 2050
- 2051
- 2052
- 2053
- 2054
- 2055
- 2056
- 2057
- 2058
- 2059
- 2060
- 2061
- 2062
- 2063
- 2064
- 2065
- 2066
- 2067
- 2068
- 2069
- 2070
- 2071
- 2072
- 2073
- 2074
- 2075
- 2076
- 2077
- 2078
- 2079
- 2080
- 2081
- 2082
- 2083
- 2084
- 2085
- 2086
- 2087
- 2088
- 2089
- 2090
- 2091
- 2092
- 2093
- 2094
- 2095
- 2096
- 2097
- 2098
- 2099
- 2100
- 2101
- 2102
- 2103
- 2104
- 2105
- 2106
- 2107
- 2108
- 2109
- 2110
- 2111
- 2112
- 2113
- 2114
- 2115
- 2116
- 2117
- 2118
- 2119
- 2120
- 2121
- 2122
- 2123
- 2124
- 2125
- 2126
- 2127
- 2128
- 2129
- 2130
- 2131
- 2132
- 2133
- 2134
- 2135
- 2136
- 2137
- 2138
- 2139
- 2140
- 2141
- 2142
- 2143
- 2144
- 2145
- 2146
- 2147
- 2148
- 2149
- 2150
- 2151
- 2152
- 2153
- 2154
- 2155
- 2156
- 2157
- 2158
- 2159
- 2160
- 2161
- 2162
- 2163
- 2164
- 2165
- 2166
- 2167
- 2168
- 2169
- 2170
- 2171
- 2172
- 2173
- 2174
- 2175
- 2176
- 2177
- 2178
- 2179
- 2180
- 2181
- 2182
- 2183
- 2184
- 2185
- 2186
- 2187
- 2188
- 2189
- 2190
- 2191
- 2192
- 2193
- 2194
- 2195
- 2196
- 2197
- 2198
- 2199
- 2200
- 2201
- 2202
- 2203
- 2204
- 2205
- 2206
- 2207
- 2208
- 2209
- 2210
- 2211
- 2212
- 2213
- 2214
- 2215
- 2216
- 2217
- 2218
- 2219
- 2220
- 2221
- 2222
- 2223
- 2224
- 2225
- 2226
- 2227
- 2228
- 2229
- 2230
- 2231
- 2232
- 2233
- 2234
- 2235
- 2236
- 2237
- 2238
- 2239
- 2240
- 2241
- 2242
- 2243
- 2244
- 2245
- 2246
- 2247
- 2248
- 2249
- 2250
- 2251
- 2252
- 2253
- 2254
- 2255
- 2256
- 2257
- 2258
- 2259
- 2260
- 2261
- 2262
- 2263
- 2264
- 2265
- 2266
- 2267
- 2268
- 2269
- 2270
- 2271
- 2272
- 2273
- 2274
- 2275
- 2276
- 2277
- 2278
- 2279
- 2280
- 2281
- 2282
- 2283
- 2284
- 2285
- 2286
- 2287
- 2288
- 2289
- 2290
- 2291
- 2292
- 2293
- 2294
- 2295
- 2296
- 2297
- 2298
- 2299
- 2300
- 2301
- 2302
- 2303
- 2304
- 2305
- 2306
- 2307
- 2308

concerning the recovery of the holpe lande from the power of the Saracens. After which oracion. 30000. men takinge on theim the signe of the crosse, for theyr cognysance, made preparaciō for that viage, whose soueraign capitaines were Gothfrey Duke of Lozayne, with his brotherne, Gustain and Baldwine: the bishop of Rodie: Bohemund Duke of Buell, and his nephew Tacerius Raymunde Earle of S. Aegius, Robert Erle of Flaunders, Hugh Legraunt, Philip the french kinges brother with diuers other noble men, and one Peter an hermite which was chiefe causer of that viage.

at this time many noble men, layed their landes and lordships to morgage, to prouide for y^e fornamed viage. Amonge which was Robert Curthopse Duke of Normandie, he layed his Dukedome to wedde to his brother Willjam, king of Englande for 10000. poundes.

7 The Christians, which passed for the ouer Bospherus hauinge to their capytayne Peter the heremite (a man perchance more deuout then expert to guide an army) being trapped of their enemies, were slain and murdered in great numbze, nere to the towne called Cinitus.

Malcolme king of Scottes, for displeasure taken with the unkindnesse of Willjam Rufus, inuaded the marches of Englande: and in Northumberlande was slaine with the eldest sonne Edward, by Robert, which was then Erle of that prouince.

8 Gothfrey Duke of Lozayne sold the Dukedome of Boioine to the bishoppe of Ebruone, for a great summe of money.

In these daies were sene many straunge sightes, in the earth, the sonne, the moone, and the sterres.

Englande and Normandie were greued with exactions and moeyne of men, so sharpcly, that tyllage of the earth was put of for that yere: wherby ensued great hunger and scarcitie the yere folowinge, and many grieufully and vncouth sightes were sene, as hostes of men flying in the skie, fire leames, and such other.

Calomanus, the nephew of Ladislaus, succeeded his uncle in the kingdome of Hungarie. He was first a bishop, & after the death of Ladislaus licensed by the bishop of

Cee. Rame

The The
yeare of yeare of
y^e world Chriſte

5056

1095

5057

1096

The thyrdre parte of

The yeare of y ^e world	The yeare of Christ.	Rome to marie his duncles widow. He kept warre wth An the Hutenes, and enlarged greatly his kingdome. But with much crueltee he berefte his brother Almas of hys sight.
5058	1097	The Christians, going to Jerusalem, tooke the cite of Nica, Cracles, Tarsis, and subdued the countrei of Cil licia, appointing the possession therof to certaine of their capitaines. Donald was king of Scottes after Malcolme, betwene whom and Duncane was fierce warre and great trou ble for the crowne of Scotlande.
5059	2598	Antioch was besieged: in the .ix. moneth of the siege it was yelded to the Christians, by one Pyrrhus: in which pastime were fought manye stronge battayles, to the great slaughter and desolacion of the Saracens, and not without losse of many Christian men. The gouernance of this citee was committed to Bohemunde of Buell, whose marriall knight hood was often proued in time of the siege therof. Urbane bishop of Rome, for feare of his enemies, hid him selfe .ii. yerres in the house of Peter Leo, and there died.
5060	1099	Corbana, master of the Persians chivalrie, was ban quished and slayne, with an hundred thousand infidels: in whiche discomfiture were taken .15000. camelles. Callianus, king of Antioch was slayne of the Arme nians. About this time William Rufus buylded Westmin ster halle. Jerusalem, the .39. daye of the siege, was conquered by the Christians. Godfrey, soweraigne capitaine of the Christian armie, was proclaymed the first king of Jeru salem. At the takinge of this citee was such murder of men, that blood was congeled in the strete the thicke nesse of a foote. Duncane by force of armes toke on him the crowne of Scotland, which he held a yeare and an halfe, and then was slayne in his bedde, after whom Donald was resto red to the kingdome. In Englande, a towne called Finchaufter, in Barke shire,

entre hyre, a well cast out blond, as befoze it had dooen water: The The
 and after, by the space of .xv. dayes, greate flames of fyre peare of peare of
 were seen in the element. In this passe tyme the Tene. & world Chyite
 ciens vored the Sarasens dwellynge on the sea costes of
 Licia, Pamphilia, Cilicia, and Surie.

12 Salymann, the greate Souldane of Babylon, was 5061
 slaine, and the citee Ascalon yelded to Godfrey: in the
 which he found wonderful riches.

406

Pascale the second was ordeined bishop of Rome: who
 moze lyke a strong warriour, than a good bishoppe, with
 force of armes subdued manye of hys ennemyes, whiche
 withhelde from hym certayne of S. Peters patrimonye.

13 Many byshops of Rome in this tyme were chosen in dy. 5062
 uers partes, and shortly after againe deposed.

1101

Edgare the fourth sonne of Halcome being sent for of
 the Scottes, made claims to the crowne whiche he obtai-
 ned after he hadde discomfited Donalde in a strong bata-
 lle, and reigned in good quiete .ix. yeres.

Baldwine, after the death of Godfrey hys brother was
 named the King of Iherusalem.

William Rufus, kyng of Englande, beinge at his dis-
 porte of huntynge, by glaunsynge of an arrowe, that Ty-
 rel, a french knight did shoote, was wounded to death.

Henrie, the brother of William Rufus, and first of
 that name (for hys learynge called Beuclerke) be-
 ganne his dominion ouer this realme of Englade,
 and reigned .35. yeres. This Henrie was a noble and
 balliant prince, stronge and myghtie of body, of hygh sta-
 ture, blacke beared, and had great staryng eyes, a comely
 visage, and a pleasant and swete countenance. He great-
 ly abhorred excelle of meates and drinckes. In thye thin-
 ges he was excellent, in witte, eloquence, and good happe
 in battayle: and thereto had .iii. contrary vices, couetous-
 nesse, crueltee, and lust of the body: but yet he was not so
 geuen to these vices, but that he farre excelled in vertue.
 At the beginnyng he reformed the state and condicio of
 the clergie, releised the greuous paymentes, reduced a-
 gayne S. Edwardes lawes, with the amendeunte of
 theim, and restored Anselme bishop of Canturbury from
 banishment. He toke to wife Maude, the syster of Ed:

Ecc. ii.

gare.

The thyrde parte of

The
yeare of
p world
5063

The
yeare of
Christ.
1102

gare kyng of Scottes. This man fauoureth nothing the
vsurped power of the byshop of Rome.

Many Christian men were slaine in Asia of the Turkes,
and Bohemunde of Poell taken prysoner, whiche was
shortly after redeemed by his nephew Tancredus.

Ranulph, byshoppe of Durham, excited Robert Cur-
thoyle, Duke of Normandie (whiche was now returned
from Hierusalem) to warre vpon his brother Henrie for
the crowne of Englande, who assembled a strong armie,
and landed at Portsmouth: but, by mediacion, peace was
made on this condycion, that Henrie should paye. 3000.
markes yerely to Duke Robert.

5065

1104

The citee of Accaron was taken of the kyng of Hieru-
salem, by the ayde of the Venecians and Genowais, and
a great multitude of the Turkes banquished and slaine.

Robert Duke of Normandie, coming into Englad, by
fayre entreatie of kyng Henrie and his wyfe, releised to
hym the tribute of. 3000. markes. But it was not long
ere that by meane of tale bearers, & misse reporters great
malyce was kindled betwene the. ii. bytherne, and shortly
therupon deadly warre arered: in the end wherof Ro-
bert was taken, and kept in perpetual prysen at Cardiffe,
by his brother: who immediatly seised vpon the Duchie
of Normandie, and held it in his possession.

5066

1105

After the death of Vladislavus, kyng of Boheme, that
countrey was gouerned a certayne space by Dukes.

5067

1106

Pascale, bishop of Rome, fought diuers battailes with
Ptolomeus and Stephene Curus, citisins of Rome.

Robert, Erle of Shrewsburye, and William of Corn-
walle, rebelling against kyng Henrie, were taken and
kept in prysen al their life time.

King Henry ordeined streite lawes against theues and
other that vsed vnlawfull meanes: in the whiche was
conteyned the losynge of lyfe, of eyes, of stoness, and other
membres of man, as the gylte required.

By meane of Anselme, byshoppe of Cantarburye, the
pysentes of Englande were constrained to forgo their
wyfes.

A great Controuersie betwene kyng Henry and bishop
Anselme, concerninge the institut of bishops, and ge-
uynge

unt reuyng of benefices.

The bishop of Rome, and his adherentes bythoppes of peare of peare of
am Saronie, after many other princes, lastly excited Henry & world Chryst.
ngli. the ponger, to warre by his owne father the emperour,
continuyng the time of whiche warre, Henry the father,
partly for sorowe, partly with sickenesse, ended his lyfe,
after he had in .60. greate battayles encountered with his
rebellious subiectes, and other enemyes, that were stered
against him by the bishops of Rome.

Bohemund, Duke of Puell, returned out of Asia, and
toke to wyfe Constance the daughter of Philip kynge of 5068
7 Fraunce.

Henry, the .v. of that name, after the death of his fa-
ther, toke on him the gouernaunce of the empyre. Which
he vsurped rebelling against his father in his life tyme,
and reigned .xx. yeres.

Leuys, surnamed the grosse, began his reigne ouer
Fraunce, and continued .xxx. yeres, shortly after his co-
ronacion, a noble man, called Guylerous, rebelled, and
was brought to due obeysaunce.

In Englande appeared a blasynge sterre betweene the
southe and the weast: and againste that in the east, appea-
red a great beame of brightnesse, stretchynge towarde the
sterre, and shortly after were seen .ii. moones, the one in
the east, the tother in the weast.

Alphons, the .viii. king of Spaine, reigned one and fifty
8 yeres.

Alexius, emperour of Constantinople, bered the Chrystians, 5069
ans, which were occupped in warre against the Turkes
in Asia. Wherefore Bohemunde of Puell ledde againste
hym a stronge armie, and besieged Dyrrachium. But A-
lexius, fearynge the puissaunce of Bohemunde, entreated
meanes of peace: which was concluded, and Bohemund
passed againe to Antioche.

A certaine bishop of Flouentine, about this tyme taught,
that Antichrist was come, beyng meeued with the won-
derful straunge sightes which were seen in these daies.

9 Baldwyne, kinge of Ierusalem, toke Beruthaim, and 5070
by force of armes subdued Sydon.

Henry the emperour desyred to wyfe Maude the eldest
Gre. iii. daughter

The The
The
The

1107

1108

1109

The third parte of

The daughter of kynge Hurpe of Englande, being then but Anne
 pere of v. yeres of age, nor hable to be married.
 h world Chyste Kyng Henric ordeined the bishops see of Ely, and ad: ang

ded therto Cambridge thye.

Alexander the .v. sonne of Malcolme reigned in Scot-
 lande . xvii. yeres, he quyeted the Marrals and Rossis
 whiche troubled his realme.

5071

1110

Debate fel betwene the king of Englande and Lewys
 of Fraunce, for the castell of Gisors, and homage, whi-
 che Lewys required to be dooen for the Duchie of Nor-
 mandie.

5073

1112

Mozthy thakes were rendred to Henry the emperor,
 by the bishop of Rome, for that he, folowynge his coun-
 sayle, armed hym against his natural father. For at this
 tyme, when he came to Rome, he could not by any mea-
 nes obtaine to be crowned of the bishop with the impery-
 all Diademe, onlesse he would biterly grant, that as wel
 the bishops of Rome, as all other, shoulde be chosen, and
 admitted without the emperours consent. But he by force
 toke the bishoppe and his cardynalles, and constrained
 thein, both to annoync hym emperor, and also to geue
 to hym the former prvilleges, of the election of the by-
 thops of Rome, and the inuestiture of other bythops. At
 whiche tyme was suche rufflinge in the citee, that yf the
 emperor had not manfully defended his owne person,
 he had at that present ben slaine.

5074

1113

Bishop Pascale, assemblyng a counsayle, not onely re-
 uoked the prvilleges, whiche he had graunted to the em-
 perour, sayng, that he was forced therto: but also excom-
 municated hym.

At Shrewsbury, in England, was a great earthquake.
 And the river of Trent was so dried, that thespace of one
 daye men went ouer dryeshode. A blasynge sterre appered
 soone after: and there vpon folowed a hard winter, death
 of men, scarcitee of bitalles, mozaime of beastes.

5075

1114

A great sedition in Rome against bishoppe Pascale, for
 the death of Peter, prefect of the citee.

The emperor came againe into Italie. And there sub-
 dued and spoiled many of the bishops townes and citees.
 And expulsynge Pascale out of Rome, was againe crow-
 ned em

and re ned emperour of a bishop called Maurissus.

About this time in Aemilia and Flaminia it rained bloude.

15 The Turkes, Saracens, & Arabes, nere to the mount called Regalis, vanquished, chased, and putte to flyghte Baldwin, kinge of Ierusalem, and slewe many of the Christian people.

Henrie, kinge of Englande, subdued the Welshmen, whiche oftentimes rebelled: and made theym sweare to him fealtie and obesaunce, and to deliuer pledges to the more certayn confirmacion, and fuerce therof. He gave also his doughter in marriage to h emperor, with great dower, and ordeyned William his sonne duke of Normandie: wherof beganne the custome and blage that the kinges of Englande made theyr eldest sonnes Dukes of Normandie.

Stephene, the .ii. kynge of Hungarye, reygned. xlii. yeres. He had continuall peace with the Comanes. He toke to wife the doughter of Robert Guiscard, and died without issue.

About this time king Alexander of Scotland was in great danger to have bene murdered in his chambre.

16 Mathildis or Maude, a noble woman of Italie, dyed, who all her life time fauoured greatlie, and mainteyned the bishops of Rome: and at her death, bequeethed to the church of Rome the parte of Petrucia, now called, S. Peters patromonie.

17 Calo Johannes succeeded his father Alexius, in the empyre of Constantinople, and reygned. xlv. yeres.

The citizens of Pise in Italy, expulled the Saracens and conquered the isles called Balcares, by Spayne.

18 The warre was renewed betwene king Henry of Englande and Lewis of France. Lewis invaded Normandie with much crueltie, and toke the citee Lingues in Cause: wherfore Henrie gatheringe a strong army, met with Lewis in platue field, and fought with him a deadly and cruel battaile: in the ende wherof Lewis was overcome, and constrained to forsake the field, Baldwin erle of Flaunders slain, and Henry recovered the towne of Lingues.

Gelasius.

The The
yeare of yeare of
the world. Chyzt.

5076 1115

5077 1116

5078 1117

5079 1118

The third parte of

- The pere of time in Fraunce a sowe farowed a pygge, which had a gun
 y world Chyppe face like to a man, a cocke was hatched, that hadde. iiii. ang
 feete, the winter was marvellous harde and unseasona-
 ble, wherof ensued a great dearth & morayne of cattaille.
 Innumerable byrdes were sene fightinge in the ayre, of
 which many fell dead to the grounde. An horrible earth-
 quake. 40. dayes together in Italy.
- 9080 1119 Calistus, the. ii. being ordeined bishop of Rome, made 19
 peace and attonement with the emperour.
- 9081 1120 Baldwine of Burgoyne, was made the. iiii. kynge of
 Jerusalem.
- 9081 1120 Willyam duke of Normandie, and Richarde the son 20
 nes of kinge Henrype of Englande, and Mary his dough-
 ter Richarde erle of Chester, with his wife the kynges
 niece, and other to the number of. 160. persons, passinge
 from Normandie into England, by oversight of the ship
 maister were drowned, saving one butcher, which esca-
 ped the danger.
- 9082 1121 Roger Duke of Sicillie (in the absence of Duke Willy-
 am) invaded the countrey of Calabze and Puel, and na-
 med him selfe king of Italye.
- 9082 1121 Baldwine king of Jerusalem, toke Gazim, kinge of 21
 the Turkes, whiche inhabited the lesse Asia: and wyth
 like successe banquished, and toke prisoner, the kinge of
 Damascus.
- 9083 1122 John, a cardinall, was sent of Calist into Englande
 for refozmacion of diuers matters pertaininge to the cler-
 gie. Who in open counsaile, with mooste bitter wordes,
 enuied and thundred agaynst such prestes as nourished
 concubines: but in the next evening, he was taken hym-
 selfe wyth a strumped, to his open rebuke, and shortly af-
 ter retourned to Rome with shame enough.
- 9083 1122 Bernard the monke, Rudberte, Hugo of Parvise, and
 Haliabas a phisicion flourished.
- 9083 1122 Dominicus Michael, duke of Venice, with a well fur-
 nished nauie, sailed into Asia: and at the citee Joppen
 banquished the Sarasens, toke of them a great numbze
 and conquered the citee Tyrys. In his retournie for dys-
 pleasure kended toward the emperour of Constantino-
 ple.

nope, which caused him to be sente for home, he spoiled Rhodes and Chius: and subdued Samus, Lesbos, and other places, whiche belonged to the empire of Constantinople.

Roberte, erle of Wyllaine, invaded and spoiled the countrey of Normandye, and was vanquished & taken by the souldiours of king Henrie of Englande.

23 Bishop Calixt by force of armes subdued Burdians, which by certaine noble men was proclaymed bithop of Rome agaynst him; And brought the sayd Burdine in a triumph to Rome vpon an asse backe, in great despite setting his face to the ruple of the beast.

24 Charles erle of Flaunders, by meane of the prouolt of Bruggis, was slayne in the churche, as he was hearing diuine seruice. After whose deathe, Hewys kynge of Fraunce aduanced William the sonne of Robert Curthoyle to the sayd Erldome of Flaunders, on whom immediately Theodorich, Erle of Alsacia, made mortall warre, and was of him vanquished and forced to flee to Alustum, where continuinge the siege, Willyam was wounded to death with a darte, that was caste from the walles. And after this decesse, Theodorich, his enemye, possessed the Erldome of Flaunders.

25 Balach king of the Parthes toke Baldwine king of Ierusalem, and slew many of the Chyistian capitaines, and souldiours of Asia.

Honorius the .ii. bishop of Rome. d. peres.

Dauid succeeded Alexander in the kingdome of Scotland. He buylded so many abbeyes and gave muche landes to the churche that his successors were scanty able to maintein their estate. He diminished the revenues of the crowne. 60. thousande pounde. He had no warres all the time of Henry Beuclerke.

27 Lothayze Duke of Baronie, after the death of Henry by consent of the electours, was chosen emperour. This man is not onely commended for his martial knighthood and noble prowes, but also for the worthi fauour he bare towarde religion and honest lawes. By his procuremēt the ciuile lawes, which of longe time were hid in duste, in all liberaries, and cleane out of vse among men, were

It

againe

The The
yeare of reare of
the world Chyriste

5084

1123

5085

1124

5086

1125

5088

1127

The
yeare of
y. world

The
yeare of
Christ.

againe restored to the world, and commaunded to be
sed in all countreys.

The grate freres came first into Englande.

Maudie, the daughter of king Henrie, after the death
of her husband the emperour, came into England to her
father.

5089

1123

The order of S. Johns hospitalls, templares, and
other lyke beganne first at this time.

Geffrey Plantagenet, erle of Angeow, married Maud
the emperesse, daughter of king Henrie, of which two des-
cended Henrie the. ii. which reigned after Stephene.

5091

1130

Innocentius, the. ii. beinge ordeyned bishop of Rome
went immediatly with a stronge armie against Roger
Cile of Sicilie, at whiche time he took by violence the
towne of S. Germane, and besieged Roger in the castell
Celucium. But William, Duke of Calabze, deliuered
his father, and took the bishop prisoner: with certaine of
his cardinales: whom he shortly after sette at libertie.

In the meane time the people of Rome named one Pe-
ter to be bishop, which was the son of a citefin called Pe-
ter Leo, wherefore Innocent durst not returne, so Rome
but fled straight into Fraunce. This man first ordeined
that he which stroke a priest should be excommunicate.

Walde quinus, king of Damascus, was vanquished of
Balowine king of Jerusalem.

5902

1131

Fulco erle of Angeow, was ordeined the fourth king
of Jerusalem.

About this time Philip, the eldest sonne of Lewys
king of France, by misfortune was slaine with an horse
in Paris.

Lewis the younger, by consent of his father, was an
ordained king of France.

5903

1132

Henrie, king of Englande, because he had none other
male, ordeined that his daughter Maudie whiche
had bene emperesse should succede him in the kingdome.

Fulco king of Jerusalem, slew a great nombre of the
Turkes, and builded the castell or fort called Abellinim

5094

1133

Lothayre the emperour restored Innocentius to the bi-
shoprike of Rome and recovered of him the imperiall
Diademe.

Bela

untire
am
aght. Bela, the sonne of Alaius (whom Calomannus had be-
rest of his sight) was ordeyned kynge of Hungarye, and
reigned .x. yeres. He punished them extremelye, whiche
he caused that cruellee to be shewed toward his father,
and banquished in battayle one Boziche, the bastarde
sonne of Calomannus, whiche by ayde of the Polonians
and Rutenes, affected the kyngdome: and toke to wyfe
Helena, the daughter of the king of Serbia.

Lewys, the yong king of France, married Alenour, whiche
he was right heyre to the province of Aquitaine. 5676

Kyng Henry of Englande, being in Normandy, with
a fall of his horse, toke his death.

Stephene Erle of Blois, the sonne of the Erle of
Blois, and Adela, William conquerours daughter,
and nephew to Henry the firste, toke on hym the go-
uernance of this realme of Englande. This was a noble
man, and hardye, of passyng comely fauoure and person-
nage. In all princely vertue he excelled: as, in martiall
pollicie, affabilitie, gentillesse, and bountefull lyberal-
tee toward all men, and especially in the begynnyng: for
although he had continuall warre, yet dyd he neuer bur-
den his commons with exactions, sauing only certayne
bishops, whiche shewyng in riches, builded dyuers castels
that tourned the kyng after to greate trouble. Wherfore in
this he seemed blame worthy, that contrarye to his othe,
made to Maude the daughter of Henry, he was thought
vnjustly to take on hym the crowne. For which cause he
was vexed with warres all the tyme of his reigne. 5697

Great trouble and discencion in England, for so much
as dyuers of the nobles favoured Maude the empyesse, as
gaine Stephene, which was in possession of the crowne.

Warre betwene kinge Stephene and David of Scot-
lande, because he refused to doe to hym his homage for
Northumberland and Huntingdon, whiche he helde by
his wyfe. In this warre (the Scottishe historye sayeth)
the Duke of Gloucester was taken.

Stephene made peace, and agreed with David kyng
of Scottes, and receiued of hym homage after he hadde
wonne from hym certayne townes and castels, and gaue
to Henry, the son of David, the Erldome of Huntingdon.

ff. ii.

Lewys

The
yeare of
the world
The
yeare of
Christe

1135

1135

The thyrde parte of

The
yeare of
the worlde

The
yeare of
Christ.

3098

1137

Lewys the eight, surnamed the yonger, after the death of his father, was ordeyned kyng of Fraunce. In the beginning of his reigne, died (*Ioannes de temporibus*) whiche (as witnesseth the France cronicle) was a squyer in the tyme of Charles the great, and liued ouer. 100. yeres.

Lothaire the emperour went to Rome the second tyme, against Roger, whiche named hym selfe kyng of Italy: But Roger, hearyng of the emperours comyng towarde hym, fled into Sicilie. Than the byshop of Rome gaue the Duchie of Apell to Raynon, a knyghte of the emperours, whom also he ordeined gouernour of Italie.

A vaine rumour was spredde in England of the death of kyng Stephene, whiche was cause of muche trouble and businesse in the realme. For dyuers of the lordes got theiur to theiur holdes: whiche after myght scantlye with great labour be quieted and appeased. After whiche tyme Stephene passed into Normandye against Cestrey Erle of Angew, the husbende of Maude the emperesse, whiche was right heyre to the crowne, and whan he had quieted that prouince, he named Custace his sone Duke of Normandye and enered frendshippe and league with Lewys king of Fraunce.

Richardus de. S. Microze, Rabi Salomon a Jew, and Almeon well skilled in the Quadrifalles lyued at this tyme.

Custace, the sonne of kyng Stephene, married the sister of Lewys kinge of Fraunce, whiche mariage continued the amitie betwene England and Fraunce.

3099

1138

Chunrade, Duke of Suane, a man of noble and valiant courage, by consente of the electours was chosen emperour, and reigned. 11. yeres. Whom no wyter testifieth to be crowned of the bishop of Rome: but that he used imperial auctoritee withoute his admissyon. At the begynnyng agaynst hym rebelled a Duke of the Sarones, named Henry: but he was shortly broughte in subiection, and his Dukedome geuen to the Erle of Austrich.

3100

1139

Dauid, kyng of Scotlande (repentynge hym of the former agrement made with king Stephene, and purposing to recover the crowne of Englad for Maude his nephew and daughter of kyng Henry) in most cruel wise invaded

Ann
gum
ang

1139

Northumberland: where by Thurstone, bishop of Worke, the Scottes were driven backe, and slaine in great number, and David constrained to give his sonne Henrie in hostage for suretee of peace.

In the meane season kyng Stephen was occupied in civile warre against Robert Erle of Gloucester and others, whiche favoured the parte of Maude: whome the kyng subdued, and part of them forced to forsake the realme.

- 6 Maude the empyesse came into this land out of Normandy, and by the ayde of Robert Erle of Gloucester, and Ranulph of Chester, made strong warre upon king Stephen: in the end whereof the kynges parties was chased, and hym selfe taken prisoner, and sente to Wyke, there to be kept in sure holde. But than the Kentishemen and Londoners, favouring the kyng, warred upon the rebelles, & in open field toke Robert Erle of Gloucester. But shortly after both the kyng and Robert were delivred out of prison by exchange: and Stephen without delaye gathering to him a stronge armie, in such wise pursued his enemyes, that he forced Maude, with other of his frendes, to forsake the realme. The warre continued a long season, to the great damage of the realme.

The Romayns, despying their former and auncient libertie, ordeyned two senators, whiche shoulde governe the lordships and provinces belonging as yet to the citee of Rome. But Innocent the bishop withstode, theyr purpose, and calling a counsaile, ordeined, that no laye man should lay violent handes upon a priest.

- 7 Emmanuell was created emperor of Constantinople, and reigned. xxiii. yeres. He used much vilanye towards the Christyans that passed into Asia against the Turkes, as after shal appere.

Avicenna the phisicion, Averrois the interpreter of Aristotle, & a wicked philosopher, Abraham Abenestraf a Jew and an astronomer, and Ballardus a peripatetike flourished.

- 8 Geisa, sonne of Bela, was made king of Hungary, and reigned. xx. yeres. He kept spere warre with the Germans, whiche brake into Pannonie, and was of them at the first encounter vanquished: but at the second time

ff.iii.

he ob:

The The
yeare of yeare of
1141 1142 1143

The third parte of

The The he obtained the victorie. This man receiued and noble Ann
pers of pore of interteined the emperour and the frenche king, as they gum
h world Chypre yone towarde Hierusalem. angl

Roger, Erle of Sicilie, reconered all the lordshipe, whi-
che he was before possessed of in Italie: and than passed
with a ströge naule into Afrike where in many battailes
he warded the Saracens, and made them, with they king
Tanete, to hym tributary: whiche tribute they payed
duely the space of xxx. yeres.

Alaph, kynge of the Turkes, reconquered the citee of
Mesopotamia, called Edissa, and practised most extreme
vilanie and crueltie towarde the Christians.

Telesfine byshop of Rome. vi. monethes. After hym
Lucius .ix. monethes, and than Eugenius .viii. yeres,
whiche was troubled with the sedicyon of the people, de-
syring theyr consules.

1144 Baldwin the .iii. was ordeyned the .v. kynge of Hieru-
salem, after his father Fulco.

S. Barnard exhorted the Christia prynces to take armes
against the Turkes. Chynrade, the emperoure of Ger-
manie, gatherynge for that purpose a strong armie, went
to Constantinople, & by the counsaile of Emanuell (whi-
che promised faiethfully to puruey all thinges necessarye
for hys armie) passed ouer Bosphorus, withoute prepa-
raunce of vitayle and for age, and besieged Iconium. E-
manuell sent to hym meale mengled with lyme: with the
whiche the soldours of Chynrade were popsoned, and
destroyed, in suche wyse, that he was fayne to leaue the
siege, and retourne againe into Thracia.

Baldwine, kynge of Hierusalem, repayred Gaza, and
conquering the citee Ascalo, gaue it to the templares. He
ouer came the Turkes at Hierico, and slew of them. 5000
and in lyke maner banquished, chased, and slewe Roza-
binus mayster of the chivalrye of Damascus, with hys
company.

A synode was assembled in Fraunce, in the which Ba-
nardus, a philosopher of excellent learninge, but not
consenting in al pinctes with the Romaine church, was
conuicted, and afterwarde made him selfe a monke.

1145 Helys kynge of Fraunce, setting forthe towarde Asia
against

ant re against the Turkes, came to Constantinople: and by the
treason of Emanuel the emperor, was led by desertes,
and wildernesses of Surie, with great leoparde of his
men: and at the last through scarcitee of vitayles and all
necessaries, was constrained to bringe his hoste, being
soze weried and febled, to the citee of Antioch.

Gracian collector of the decrees, Peter commentor
auctor of the historie called Scholastica, Petrus Non-
gobardus master of the sentences, and Otto Frigenius
a wel learned bishop were famous.

Roger erle of Sicilie, being greued with the vntrowth
and villaine of Emanuel the emperor of Constantino-
ple, went against him with a great puissance, and sub-
dued Corcyra, toke the citees Corinth, Thebes, Cabela,
and other, and then fearinge the ayde of the Venecians,
bent his power toward Asia, where he caused the Sara-
sens at the port of Simeon, which hadde entrapped and
compassed the frenche kynge. In his retourne he beset
the citee of Constantinople with a hard siege.

About this tyme in England the Jewes crucified a child
upon Easter daye at Norwiche, in derision of chryste and
his religion.

11 Chunrade the Emperour, & Lewis the king of France
comminge to Jerusalem, toygned their puissance wpth
king Baldwine, and besieged Damascus. But they be-
ing deceiued by an Assirian, whom they trusted, forsoke
the siege, and shortly after returned into Europe.

Geoffrey Plantagenet, the hulbande of Maude the em-
presse (who, continuing the warres against king Ste-
phene of Englande: had wonne from him the Duchy of
Normandie) ended his life: and his sonne Henrie succe-
ded in that Dukedome.

12 Roger erle of Sicilie, returning from Constantino-
ple was spoiled and robbed of the Venecians whiche
mette him in his iourney.

Stephene kinge of Englande, after longe warre and
muche trouble, was againe crowned kinge at Litcholne
Robert Erle of Gloucester made newe warre vpon the
king, and had the better hand of him at Wilton, so that
the king was like to haue fallen into Robertes danger
But

The The
yeare of yeare of
the world Chypt.

5107

1146

5108

1147

The third parte of

The	The	But he escaped with much payne.	Ann
vere of	vere of	Rozadinus a Saracen, after the departure of the em	gum
& world	Chyffe	perour & other princes out of Asia, besieged the citee	of angl
5109	1148	Antioch, and toke and slew manye of the capitaines and 13	
		souldiours of the Christian people.	
5110	1149	Dominicus Mauracenus, Duke of Venyce, subdued 14	
		to his signorie Pola, Rubinum, Parenticum, Hemont-	
		an, and Humagum.	
5111	1150	Castace bishop of Rome, which was by the citifins ex 15	
		pelled, came into Italy againe: and partly by force, part	
		ly by agreement, recovered Taracine, Pozba, & certayne	
		other places, which were withholden from him.	
		About this tme Lewys king of Fraunce repudiated	
		Alinour his wife, whom Henry Duke of Normandie, af-	
		terwarde coupled to him in open maryage: by meane	
		wherof he became of great power. For by his father, he	
		was Erle of Angeou, by his mother Duke of Norman-	
		die, and by his wife Erle of Boytow and Guyan.	
		Lewys king of France maryed Constance the dough-	
		ter of Alphons king of Castile.	
		In England the riuer of Thamys was so strongly fro-	
		zen, that horse and carte passed ouer vpon the yse.	
5113	1152	Anastasiu the .iiii. bishoppe of Rome one yere and an 17	
		halfe.	
		Henry Duke of Normandie, in the quarell of his mo-	
		ther Maude, with a great puissance entred into Englad	
		and at the firste wanne the castel of Hulmesburte, then	
		the tower of London, and afterwarde the towne of Not-	
		tingham, with other holdes and castelles. Betwene him	
		and king Stephen were foughten many battails, wher	
		by this realme was soze troubled.	
5114	1153	Friderich, surnamed Barbarossa, was emperour of Al 18	
		maine, 36. yeres. He was stronge in armes, of lully cou-	
		rage, expert in martiall feates, mighty of body, in coun-	
		saile prouident, manly in his affaires, easie to be spoken	
		to, genail to gentill persons, & haught minded toward the	
		proud, of witte sharpe and quicke, and of good memory:	
		finally, in noblenesse & iustice a renowned prince, wht	
		che though he were of nature gentle & meke, yet coulde	
		he not suffer the shamefull iniuries done to hym by the	
		Romayns	

the Romaine bishops, as it shal after somewhat appeare.

Joachim Magnus of Calabze, an abbotte that had the gift of prophete, Petrus Blesensis, and Johannes Mesuephiliens. Alpetragius Marrocrillanus an astronomer, Bosianus a lawler flourished.

Peace was agreed betwene Maude the emperesse, her sonne Henrie, and king Stephene on this condicion, that Stephene (duringe his life tyme) shoulde holde the kyngdome of Englande, and Henrie in the meane tyme, to be proclaimed heire apparant in the chiefe cityes throught out the realme.

Adrian an Englishman bishop of Rome viss. yeres.

The Romaines ceased not to make earnest suite, bothe with prayers & manasinges, that they might obteyne the free gouernance of consules, which thinge bishop Adrian gainseyed, and at length with cursing and banninge forced them to be at rest.

William king of Sicillie ouerran and wasted the countrey about Boneuent: and therfore was stricken with the thunderbolte of excommunication, by the bishoppe of Rome.

Friderich the emperour passing into Italy in his fourty nyne subdued Verdone, and then yode towarde Rome: where he was mette by the bishoppe, and after crowned with the imperiall Diademe. At whiche tyme was reysed a great comocion by the people of Rome against the Germanes.

Malcolme the maiden, being. xiii. yeres of age, succeeded his uncle David in the kingdome of Scotlande, and reigned. xii. yeres. Shortly after, one Somerled affected the crowne who was suppressed by Gilchrist Erle of Angus.

Henrie the second of that name, the son of Gessrey Plantagenet & Maude the emperesse daughter of king Henrie the first, began his reigne ouer this realme of Englande, and continued. 25. yeres. He was somewhat redde of face, short of bodie, and therwith fatte of speache reasonable, and wel lettered, and also noble in knightthod and fortunate in battaile: of couragious heart wise in counsaile, and loved wel peace, liberall to straun

G g

gers

The

The
yeare of
the world

The

The
yeare of
Christs

1115

1154

1116

1155

The thyrde parte of

The
yeare of
the world

The
yeare of
Christ.

gers, but hard to his familiars, slow of answer, unstedfast of promise, given some deale to pleasure, & an open spousbreaker: in religion negligent, but not so much as he is made of some writers, whiche seme to be moze merited with affection toward Thomas Becket, then with the true consideration of his actes and deedes. In his time, by his great manhode and pollicie, the signorie of Englande was much augmented, with the addicion of Scotlande and Ireland, the Iles Orcades, Britaine, Poytow, Guyan, and other prouinces of Fraunce.

Helys king of Fraunce married Ales his thirde wife the daughter of Theobalde erle of Blefence.

William kinge of Sicilie, whan by faire entreatie he coulde not obteyne peace of the bishoppe of Rome, with a great payssaunce spoyled the countrey of Puell, & chased the Grecians: and then for feare was receyued into the bishops fauour.

1157

1156

Alualis Michaell, duke of Venice, toke in battayle Alrich the patriarch of Aquileia, with 7000 of the nobles of Hungarie and Forumiuli, and made the people of Forumiuli tributary to Venice.

Henry of England cast downe diuers castelles whiche were erected in the tyme of Stephen. He wente into the Northpartes, and receyued of the Scottes, Cumberland and Northumberlande, which they sayde were geuen to them by Maude his mother, and sette an ordre in that countrey.

The variance began first betwene the emperour and the citee of Millaine, whiche refused his dominion, and endeuoured to bringe other citees of Italie vnder her subjection.

1158

1157

In Englande were sene in the firmament. ii. sonnes and in the moone appeared a red crosse. Aboute the same tyme in Italie in the moneth of Nouembze appeared. iii. sonnes, and the yere folowing. iii. moones. Of the which the middelmoothe had a redde crosse.

King Henry went with a stronge armie into Wales and quieted that countrey, and after buylded the stronge castell of Rutland.

1159

1158

About this tyme came into England certayne Germanes.

nt re
ni
gli. nes to the number of .xxx. whiche taught the abrogacyon
of the sacramentes of the altar, baptisme, and wedlock.

The The
yeare of yeare of
1151 1151
Christ

William kyng of Sicillie, the whole college of cardy-
nalles, and dyuers citees of Italle, conspired against the
emperor Friderich, which was occupied in the warres
against Syllaine, & gave to the bishop of Rome a greate
summe of money to excommunicate the emperor.

About this tyme one Angus of Galloway rebelled in
Scotland, which was subdued, by Gilchrist Erle of Ans-
gus. Not long after the Murraie rose agat all their king,
and were suppressed with greas slaughter.

Roman bishop of Rome dyed beyng choked with a flye
in his drinke: who, a little before his death affirmed that
there was no kynde of lyfe moze miserable than the Pa-
pale.

5 Alphons kyng of Castile died as he was coming from Si-
Hierusalem, and left after him his sonne Sanctius: who
being slain in Arrabia, his brother Ferdinande succeeded
in the kyngdome, and reigned .ii. yerres.

1159

Great discorde and variaunce in Rome for the election
of the bishop, for some of the cardinales chose one Octa-
vian; but other some, and the moze part, named Alex-
ander. At whiche tyme the emperor (to whose iudge-
ment the matter was referred) whan that Alexander dyd
deyne to abyde his arbitrement, confyrmied Octavian.
Than did Alexander flee into Fraunce and there excom-
municated out of the nombre of the faithfull, bothe Fri-
derich the emperor, and Octavian the Antipape: and in
a counsaile at Claremounte disannulled the actes of the
counsaile of Paule.

This schisme continued wel nere .xx. yerres.

1161

6 Lewys kyng of Fraunce gave his daughter Marga-
rete in mariage to Henrie the sonne of the kyng of Eng-
land, by reas wherof was appeased the warre & grudge
betwene France & England for the lades of Poytow. &c

1162

7 Friderich the emperor came the fourth tyme into Ita-
lye, and wasted the citee of Terbona, robbed Cremona,
spoyled Syllaine (whiche had bene cause of muche mys-
chiese) and cast it to the earth. For whiche cause the Ve-
ronenses, Patavines, and Vincentines by the sterking of
Egg. ii.

1163

The thyrd parte of

The
yeare of
p world

The
yeare of
Christ.

the Heretians confuted, and made confederacie against the emperour. At the subuercion of Millaine, the women (whiche hadde lybertie to departe with as muche as they coulde carie) leuyng their riches and treasure, toke with them their infantes and yonge childzen: with whiche example of motherly charite the emperour beyng greatly delyted, granted to them al their whole substance and the sauegarde of their chyldzen.

This yeare (as saith Fabian) kynge Henry of Englands went into Scotland, and made so fierce warre vpon their kynge William, that lastely he toke him, & caused him to make recompensacion in yelding to him the castel of Carlell, the castel of Bamburgh with diuers other, and receiued of hym feaulte and homage.

1162

1162

Vladislaus, for his valiant knighthode whiche he declared in the spege and expugnacion of Millaine, was by the emperour ordeined the .ii. kynge of Boheme, and had geuen to him for his armes the red raunping Lion, with the forked taylor.

The emperour Friderich sought diuers meanes of peace and agreement with Alexander bishop of Rome: But he would not in any wyse agree.

1163

1163

Almericus succeeded his brother Baldwin in the kynge dome of Hierusalem, he banquished the Aegyptians and toke the cite Alexandria, whiche he restozed to the Soudane vpon promyse of a great summe of money for the same: but whan promyse was not kept for the paiement thereof, Almericus besieged him in the towne called Caprum, or Cares.

Stephen the .iii. was ordeyned king of Hungarie, and reigned .ix. yeares.

1164

1164

Galdo bishop of Crema after the death of Octavian, was made bishop of Rome by the emperoure, at whiche tyme Alexander was still in Fraunce.

Thomas becket bishop of Caunterbury (whiche seduced himselfe vnder pretence of defendyng the lyberties of the church (as he sayd) spake and dyd many thynges against the kinges prerogatiue royall, and contrarpe to all good ordz of ciuile gouernance) was expelled out of the realme, or moze verely fled him selfe to Rome to complayne vpon

and re upon the kynge to the byshop.

The welshemen rebelled and were brought againe in subiection.

11 Byshop Alexandre returned out of Fraunce to Rome, and was receiued of the people, contrarie to the Emperour's mynde.

12 The Romaines, for so muche as the Tusculanes refused to paye a sowage, that was of theym exacted, made fierce warre upon theim, and by the ayde of the Germanes, were theim selues banquished and slayne in greate nombze.

Frederich the emperour retournyng to Rome, subdued a great parte of the borders of Hetrucia, and beclipped the cite of Rome with a stronge syege: at whiche tyme a great nombze of his souldiours and many of the noble men perished with a sodeine pestilence.

William succeded his brother Malcolme and was ordeined kynge of Scottes.

Alexander the bishop was agayne constrained to fflye into Fraunce.

In this meane tyme the cite of Millaine was repayzed and newly bulded.

The Venetians expelled the Hungares from Fadars. The people of Dalmacie submitted theym to Emanuell the emperour of Grece. A bitter commociō was kindled betwene the emperours of Grece and the Venetians whiche bereft him of diuers citees, towne, and ilandes.

After the decese of Malcolme, William king of Scottes, came into England and did to king Henry feaultee and homage, as Malcolme had done before.

14 The cite of Alexandria in Italie, was erected by the people of Millaine Placentia, and Cremona, king Henric of Englande caused Henric his eldest son to be crowned king: as he thought to the great quyetnesse as well of him selfe as of his realme, but as it proued to the better disturbance of them both.

15 Guydo the Antipape dyed, after whom succeded Ioannes which was the thirde bishop that was set up by the emperour against Alexander.

The Romaines utterly destroyed Alba.

Egg.iii.

Raynolds

The | The
yeare of | yeare of
the world | the world
1165

1126

1165

1127

1166

1129

1168

1130

1169

The third parte of

- The** **Reynold Erle of Tusculane** submitted hym selfe and his Ann
 vere of 1200 ship to the Romaine bishop. gum
 & world Chypre **Siracinus** or **Baracon** the fyrst Soaldaine of Aegypt, angl
 5131 1170 after he had murdered **Zuar** the Catiph. 16
 5132 1171 **Thomas Becket**, by the mediacion of **Alerader** byshop 17
 of Rome, and **Lewys** the Frenche kyng, was restored to
 his bishoprike, and not longe after by certaine gentilmⁿ,
 was slayne: the faulte whereof, was iniustly laied to the
 kyng.
 5133 1172 **Saladine**, kyng of the Turkes, adnered to his signory 18
 Aegypt and Surp. He was a man of great pissance, and
 a mightie and stronge warriour, whiche wrought much
 cathe to the Christians.
Baldwine the. iiii. was the. vii. kyng of Hierusalem.
Kyng Henrie of England sent ambassade to **Alerader**
 bishoppe of Rome, to purge hym of the false accusaciō of
 the death of **Thomas Becket**. Amonge other thinges it
 was enioyned him in his penance, that it shuld be law
 ful to his subiectes as often as theim list to appeale to
 the sea of Rome, and that no man shuld be accounted as
 kyng until suche tyme as he were confyrmēd by the Ro
 mayne bishop. Wherby it manifestly appeareth that the
 byshops of Rome in all theyr doynges endeavour only to
 haue princes and kingdomes subiecte to theyr becke, but
 this his intunction was at no tyme fulfilled of the kyng
 of England.
Bela the. iiii. and sonne of **Stephene** kyng of Hungary
 reigned. xliiii. yeres. He beyng not troubled with exter
 nall hostyltee gaue hym selfe to peace, quyetnesse, and
 iustice.
Kyng Henrie subdued Irelande, and adnered the same
 to his kyngdome.
Peter, a bishoppe of **Lumbarde**, wrote the boke of the
 Sentences.
 5134 1173 **Frederich** the emperour entered into Italy with a huge 19
 host the. v. tyme.
Lewys king of France sent an Erle of his in Asia with
 a great summe of money, whiche he had leuted of the be
 auolence of the people, to susteine the Christians beyng
 in warre against the Turkes.

Tho:

1170 re Thomas Becket was canonised by the bishop of Rome
 1171 m Baldwin king of Jerusalem nere to Ascalen, banqueted
 1172 Engl. shed Saladin the Turke and in like maner at the second
 20 encounter about Tiberiads.

21 The people of Britaine with their confederates, en-
 countering the emperour in Italy obtained of him a blud-
 die victorie.

Henrie the sonne of king Henrie of Englande, was
 crowned the secounde time with his wife Margaret the
 French kinges daughter.

Emmanuel emperour of Grece invaded Sicilia, and was
 overthrowen and chased of the Turkes.

22 King Henrie the sonne by the exciting of the kinge of
 Fraunce, Alinour his mother, and certaine other nobles
 toke armes and arrerred deadly warre againste his natu- 5137
 rall father. Divers stronge battayles were foughten: as
 well in Englande, by the deputies and friendes of bothe
 partes, as also in Normandie, Poitou, Guyen, and Bri-
 taine, where they were corporallie present: but the victo-
 rie enclined alwaye to the father. There tooke parte a-
 gainst king Henrie the father, Lewis king of Fraunce
 William kinge of Scotlande, Henrie, Gessrey, John
 his owne sonnes Robert erle of Lecester, Hugh of Che-
 ster, and other: but in the ende, the sonnes with their a-
 lies were constrained to bende to their fathers will, and
 desire peace, whiche he gentlye graunted, and forgaue
 their trespass. William king of Scottes, in this warre
 was taken, and yelded for his ransome the citie of Car-
 lell, the castell of Wamburgh, the new castell upon Tyne,
 and swore for euer to be true to the kinge. And as wil he
 as his successors, to do their homage as ofte as it shulde
 bee required. The Scottishe historie reciteth an other
 cause of this warre of William agaynst kinge Henrye,
 and sayeth he was taken in the. 1174. yere of our lord.

Friderich the emperour, after the discomfiture taken
 at Comum, made peace with his aduerlaries, and came
 to Venice to the bishop of Rome, where he so humbled hi-
 selfe, that he suffered the bishoppe to treade upon him, at
 which time was songe the verse of the psalter. *super as-
 pidem et basiliscum ambulabis, conculcabis leonem et draco-*

The 1 The
 yeare of yeare of
 the world Chz. 6.

5135

1174

5136

1175

1175

The third parte of

The The hem: And when Friderich sayed, that he did not that of Ann
pere of pere of beylaunce to Alexander, but to Peter, he answerer. bothe gum
p would Chypte to me and peter.

Of this outrageous pryde, what is to angl
be iudged, euerp mā may effeme, But this is vndoubted
that he ffered such mortall and cruell warres as we haue
befoze shewed without anye iust cause onelye for his pry
uate election, and woulde obey neyther to counsayle, noz
auctoritee, noz yet condescende to any attonement. Pea
and besides this, with vnestimable pryde, dyd conculcate
and treade vnder fete, the highest power of prynces, whi
ch god commaunded with great reuerence to be obeyed.

Bishop Alexander coming to Rome made peace with
the citisins on this condicion, that their consules should
not be admitted vntill they had sworne to be obediēte to
him, and to enterpryse nothing, wherby the power of the
Romaine bishop might be diminished.

5139

1178

In Englande fell great weathering, & tempest of thun 24
dye and lightning in midwinter: & in sommer folowinge
fell hayle of such greatnesse, that it slewe bothe man and
beast.

Gilbert of Galloway, rebelled in Scotlande, he was
chased by Gilchrist, and driuen into Irelande: not longe
after this, Gilchrist was banished for killinge his wyfe,
the kinges syster: & stealing after agayne into Scotland,
liued a poore life a longe tyme, vntill by great chance he
was receiued to the kinges mercie.

5140

1179

Philipp the sonne of Lewis king of Fraunce, after the 25
decease of his father, toke on him the gouernaunce of the
realme, which he gouerned well and noble, xlii. yeares.
At the beginning he expelled the Iewes out of his lande.

At this time were many Iewes in England, which a
gainst the feast of Easter, did vse to crucify yong children
in despite of Christian religion.

5141

1180

Alerius, being but a very childe, was exdeyned empe
rour of Constantinople after the death of his father, by
whom he was committed to the tuition of a noble man
called Andronicus: who first vles him selfe towarde the
yonge emperour as a good tutor, after as a felow with
him in the empyre, and lastlye as a shamefull traytour
murdered him, when he had reigned. iii. yeares.

Lucius

		The	The
		peare of	peare of
		Christe	
27	Lucas the .172. byshoppe of Rome. lxxi. yerres, who en- deuouring to pull downe agayne the gouernance of the consulles, was byrnen out of the citee, and fledde to Nero	5142	1181
28	Henrie the eldest sonne of king Henrie of England, en- ded his life. Shortlye after beganne the warre betwene king Henrie and Philip of Fraunce: for homage that the Frenche king required to be done for the landes of Poy- tow and other, and for the castell of Gisors.	5143	1182
29	Byng Philip of fraunce warred vpon the Duke of Burgoyne, for the castell of Clerginde. Andronicus, after he had murdered Alexius, toke on him the imperiall crowne, and reigned .xl. yerres. Baldwine the v. being but a childe, was proclaimed king of Iherusalem. Saladine kinge of Turkes, inuaded and spoyled the countrey about Iherusalem, and broughte much trouble to the Christians.	5144	1183
30	William kinge of Sicillie, for certane iniuries done to the Latines, ledde a huge armie both by water and by lande, against the emperor of Constantinople, and toke the citee Thessalonica of Macedone, and subdued many cites of Thrace and Grece to his obeisance. Gydo toke on him the kingdome of Iherusalem: for the which was great contention betweene him and the Erle of Tripolis named Raymunde, which discord gaue occasion to Saladine the Turke more cruelly to assaulte the Christians in Asia.	5145	1184
31	Heracles Patriarke of Iherusalem, whiche had bene in diuers partes of Europe, came to king Henrie, desyr- ing him of ayde against the Turkes. Iacius banquished & put to death Andronicus em- perour of Constantinople, and reigned there .xvi. yerres. Urban the .iii. bishop of Rome. ii. yerres. Fridrich emperor of Germanie, ordeined his sonne Henrie gouernour of the citees of Italie.	5146	1185
32	In England the Jewes crucified a childe in the towne of Burie. The Saracens were chased and slaine at the citee An- gone. Saladine the Turke belleged Iherusalem, slew the	5147	1186

The thyrde parte of

The
yeare of
the world

The
yeare of
Christ.

1148

1187

1149

1188

1150

1189

the Christians, toke prisoners king Guydo and the may. Ant
sers of the templares. He receyved by agreement the ci. gun
the Alcalone, and possessed Ladicea. Then he wente to ang
Jerusalem, and conquered againe the citee. 92. yeares
after it was taken by the Christians. In the meane time
the people of Antioch chased & slewe the Turkes in great
numbre. & Here endeth the kingdome of Jerusalem.

The citee of Antioch was geven vp to Saladine by the
Patriarke for a great summe of money.

Gregorie the. viii. bishop of Rome. 57. dayes, and after
him Clement the. iii. thre. yeres. v. monethes.

Richard erle of B. y. made warre againste kynge 34
Henrie of Englande his father, and takinge parte with
the French king wanne from him divers citees, towres
and castles, and namely the citee of Ch. omanna. For so
roto wherof shortly king Henrie ended his life.

About this time the Venetians bought the ile of Crete
of Ladd of one Boniface surnamed Pontif Ferratensis.

Richarde the first of that name, for his valiant and
lustre courage, surnamed Coz de Lyon, the second
sonne of Henrie was crowned king of Englande
and reigned 21. yeares. ix. monethes. xx. dayes. He was
bigge of stature and hadde a merve countenance, in the
which appeared as wel a pleasaunte gentleness as a no-
ble and princely maiestee, to his souldiours he was fa-
vourable, bountifull to his frendes & straungers, a gre-
uous enemye and harde to be pleased, desirous of warre,
and abhorring idleness. He inclined somewhat to pryde
lecherie and avarice: but mooste of all he is to be blamed,
because he seemed to be impious toward his father. The
Lombarders obtained ii. officers to gayde theyr citee, whi-
che were called bailliffes.

Great preparacion was made for the recoverie of Jer-
usalem, and to ayde the christians in Asia, by Frederich
emperor of Almayne, Richard the kynge of Englande
Philip of Fraunce, Odo Duke of Burgoyne, the Alex-
clans, Bisshoppes William king of Sicilie, and other.

The frisoners Danes and Flemmings, with sword
and fire, destroyed the sea costes of Afrike and Spaurita-
nia belonging to the Saracens.

Fride

Frederich the emperoure, after he had subdued the lende
Armonie, and conquered diuers citees of Asia, by misfor-
tune was drowned in the riuer Selephius.

Phillip kyng of Fraunce, and Richard of Englande,
went forwarde in theyr iourney toward Hierusalem.

Henry the. vi. and sonne of Frederich, was ordeyned
emperour of Almayne. The bishop of Coloine, and other
bishops, with the princes of Burgoyne rebelled.

Alphonse the. viii. surnamed the good, recovered his
fathers kyngdome of Spayne, and reigned. 53. yeres. He
toke to wyfe Cleunore, the daughter of kyng Henry of
Englande, lately deceased.

Kyng Richard, in his iourney toward Hierusalem,
subdued the Island of Cipres: and than wigning his put-
saunce with the frenche kyng in Asia, conquered Acon:
where was kiled betwene kyng Richard and Phi-
lip kyng of France, a greuous dyspleasure. For whiche
cause Phillip shortly after departed thens, and comynge
into Fraunce, invaded the countrey of Normandy: and
erected also John the brother of kyng Richard, to take
on him the kyngdome of Englad in his brothers absence.

Celestine the. iii. of that name, byshop of Rome. vi. ye-
res. viii. monethes.

The bishop of Rome gaue Constance, the daughter of
William kyng of Sicilie, to Henry the emperoure: by
whiche meanes Sicilye became subiecte to hym. About
this tyme the emperour was occupied in warre in Puel.

Saphandinus expelling his kinsmen was made soule
dare of Aegypt.

Kyng Richard of Englande restored to the Christy-
ans the citee of Joppe: and in manye battayles put the
Turkes to great sorow.

Warre betwene the citees of Venice and Vise.

William bishop of Elie, to whom kyng Richard had
committed the gouernance of England, practised much
cruelte, and vled to ryde with a thousande horses: wher-
by he greened the places the whiche he sojourned.

Kyng Richard exchanged Cipres with Guye of Le-
Angbam for the kyngdome of Hierusalem. Wherfore the
kyng of Englande a longe tyme after was called kyng

of Wile:

of Wile:

The
yeare of
the world
5151

The
yeare of
Christ
1190

5152

1191

5153

1192

The thyrde parte of

The
yeare of
the world
1554

The
yeare of
Christ.
1193

of Iherusalem. Kyng Rycharde, hauyng knowlage, that Philip of Fraunce inuaded Normandy, and that John his brother by hys counsaile aspired to hys kyngdome, made peace with the Turkes for .iii. yeares, and with a smal company retournyng homeward by Thrace, straiterouslye was taken prisoner, by the Duke of Austrike, and brought to Henry the emperour: it ther kept in streit pylson a yere and .v. monethes: where it is layed, that he slew a lyon, and toke out his hert.

1555

1194

Emericus, kyng of Hungary, reigned, .viii. yeres. Kyng Rycharde, paynge hys ransome of .100.00. poundes, was deliuered, and retournyng to hys countrey, made sharpe warre vpon the frenche kyng, and John his brother: at whiche time was foughten diuers fyerce battailes, to the great losse of bothe partes.

1556

1195

The Sarasens of Afrike, with a greate naule, entered Spayne, toke prisoner the kyng of Castile, subdued the countrey now called Granada, whiche they possessed to the tyme of Ferdinando, late kyng of Spayne: by whose manhode, pollicie and prowes they were expelled.

1557

1195

Peace betwene Rycharde of Englande and Philip of France for one yere, and John submitted him selfe to his brother.

1558

1167

The secte of Crosse friers began fyrst.

1559

1198

The warre was renewed betwene Rycharde and Philip, in the whiche either of them spredde dyuersly.

Henry the emperour sent an armie to ayde the Christians in Asia, vnder the guydynge of the bishop of Wense, and the Duke of Bawone: which the next yere following, hearyng of the emperours death, returned toward their countrey.

Azo of Bononie a lawier: Thebit, an astronomer: Kimbi the Jew, and Daplas a grammarian, were famous.

Innocent the thyrde, byshop of Rome. .xviii. yeres. He fyrst compelled men to auricular confession, and forbade the sacramēt to be ministred to the laicce vnder both kindes. And with al endeuous was agaynst the emperour Philip.

1560

1199

The Sarasens wan fro the Christians the citee Xoppe and exercised great crueltie towards them.

A league

mi re A league was made, betwene the kynges of England
and fraunce, for .v. yeres.

12 Philip brother of Henry the last emperour, by the helpe
of the Bohemes, Sarones, Bauarays, & Suenians, take
on hym the imperall auctoritee, contrary to the mynde
of the byshop of Rome: at whiche tyme the countrey of
Germanie was tourmented with most cruel warres, for
Innocent the pope coude in no wyse abyde this Phil:
lip, for displeasure that he had conceiued towarde hym:
wherfore he did excommunicate him, and caused the by
shop of Colokie and other electours to make Otho empe
rour: betwene whome and Philip were fought many
battayles. But Philip defended hym selfe so manie,
that by force he helde the imperall crowne all his lyfe
tyme, mangre bothe Otho and the byshop: whiche often
tymes hadde threated, that eyther he woulde pul from
Philip the imperall crowne, or els that Philip shoulde
take from him his triple Diademe, so meke was this ge
nil byshop.

Kyng Rycharde of Englande, beslegging the castile of
Gaillarde, was wounded with a quarell, that was shotte
from the walle, and therof died.

1 John brother to the aboue named Richard, was crow
ned kyng of Englande, and reigned .xviii. yeres. Of
personage he was indifferent, but of a melancoly and
angry countenaunce, he contemned the byshop of Rome's
auctoritee, whiche if he had doen constantly with iudge
ment, to the entent to take away superstition, to reforme
abuses, to pul downe idolatrie, to set by true relygion, to
disaunul his vsurped power, as he seemed to doe for coue
tousnes and of a froward mynd, vndoubtedly he had ben
worthy high commendacion. By his cowardise & slouth
ful negligence the signory of England greatly decayed.

Phillip king of France (in the quarrel of Arthur Duke
of Britaine, who certayne of the lordes had named kinge
of Englande) made warre vpon kyng John, invaded
Normandie, and toke from him diuers castles and tow
nes: but after many skirmishes, to the losse of bothe par
tes, a peace was agreed, which continued no longer time.

Kyng Phillip of France was cursed by the byshoppe
of Rome.

The 1 The
yeare of yeare of
the world. Christ.
1161 1200

1101

The third parte of

The Emperour of Rome, because he would not receive his wife, whom he had repudiated without lawful cause.

Alexius by treason depyved his brother Isaac, of the empyre of Constantinople, and putting out his eyes, cast hym in pylson. Alexius the sonne of Isaac, fledde to the Venecians and Flemmings being as then occupied in warre in the borders of Hungarie, and delvyed of theym succour: whiche restored hym to his fathers empire. But because he was shortly after poisoned, by one Byzellus, the Venecians and theyr company besieged Constantinople, expelled the misdoers, and by one consent made Baldwin Erle of Flaunders, emperour. Wherby the empyre of Grece came first to the Frenchmen. This Baldwin granted the Venecians all the Ilandes in the Grecke seas.

Ladislaws the. iij. kynge of Hungary, reigned. vi. moethes, and after him Andreas his uncle. 36. yeres.

The kynge of Scottes did homage, and swoze to be true liegeman to king John of England.

1102

1102

Alfonso the. iij. emperour of the Saracens in Africke, invaded Spayne, and with sworde and fyre destroyed the countrei even to France, at length the kinges of Spaine, so banquysht his armye, and so sharply pursued him, that he helde only the countrei of Granade.

Odefredus an interpreter of the lawe, Alsabaranius a phisicion, Hali aben Ragel an astronomer, Guntherus Ligurinus a poete, and Sero a grammarian flourished.

David a Persian, called also Changius or Guiscan, coming out of the mountaines of India with an innumerable multitude, invaded the Persians Armenians and Medes, he was the first emperour of the Tatarians.

1103

1103

In Byzantyne, were sene. v. moones: one in the East, another in the West, the thyrde in the North, the fourth in the South, and the. v. in the myddes of the elements. The next yere folowed a sharpe winter, and hayle fell as bigge as hennes egges, wherwith men, cattalle, & fruite, were greatly hurt.

Philip of France invaded Normandy, and toke divers castels & townes, whiche he gaue to Arthur Duke of Britayne. But shortly after the same Arthur, with many

and re manye other noble men, were taken prisoners by kynge John, and led into Englande.

Philip of France ceased not two or three yeres, continually to make warre upon the Duchie of Normandye, till at the last he subdued the same to his dominion, with the provinces of Guyan Boyters and Britaine: whiche before pertained to the crowne of Englande.

King John sailed into Normandie where he warred in the borders of France. But of his victories is lytell written.

Innocent bishop of Rome, sette abroad many decrees amonge the whiche were: that as often as princes fell at variaunce, the correction and amendement thereof should pertain to the bishop of Rome: and that he only shoulde be counted emperour, which was crowned wth the imperial Diadem by the Romaine bishop.

Mariance beganne betwene king John and the bishop of Rome, for the admission of Stephen Langhton, whiche Innocent by false menes had caused to be chosen bishop of Canturburie.

Dominike and Frances, perceiving that bishops, prelates and monkes (beinge as lordes of the worlde) were even more to mainteyne warre with princes, then to teache the word of god, professed to forsake wholly the worlde, and geve them onely to preaching. Whose holy pretended purpose, their followers in procelle of time turned to most dyuelly supersticion.

Phillip the emperour, when he had in diuers battalles vanquished his enemies, besieged Coloine, and chased from thens Otto, whiche fled to kynge John of England his uncle.

The bishoppe of Rome denounced kynge John with his whole realme a cursed, because he wolde not admitte Stephen Langhton to the bishoprike of Canturburie. But he little regarded his fulmynacion, and obeyed hym nothing the rather.

At this tyme in Southff. a fyre was taken lyke to a man, and was kepte luyng. by monethes after upon the lande with rawe fleshe and sylle.

Agreement made betwene the byshoppe of Rome and Phillip

The
yeare of
the world
1165
1204

1156

1209

1157

1206

The third parte of

The yere of the world	The yere of Christe	Philip the emperor.	Ann
5168	1207	King Philip of Fraunce, subdued to him the countrey gu of Normandie, whiche sens the time of Charles the sum ¹ ang ple that is the space of .300 yeres was not in the possessio ⁷ of the kinges of Fraunce	
5169	1218	About this time the Irishemen, and shortly therupon 8 the Welshemen rebelled: whom king John constrained to redome peace with great summes of money. Hence emperor of Constantinople, augmented the em pire of Grece.	
5172	1219	Philip emperor of Almaine was murdered by the treason of the erle of Palatine. Otto, a duke of the Saxones, was made emperor 9 and crowned with the imperfall Diademe by Innocente bishop of Rome. The Venecians subdued Corcyra, Duthonum, Corzo num, and many other landes. King John sailed into Normandie, where after cer taine saynishes, he made peace with Philip of Fraunce, for .ii. yeres.	
5171	1210	The mayzes and thyzettes beganne first in the citee of London. Otto the emperor invaded certayne citees, which In 10 nocent the bishop, affirmed to pertyne to the church of Rome. Wherefore he excommunicated the emperor and deprived him of all imperiail auctoritee, causing the elec tours to chose Friderich king of Sicilie, and nephew to Fridericus Barbarossa.	
5172	1211	Philip king of Fraunce made warre upon Fernando 11 Duke of Flaunders, because he ayded him with kynge John of Englande. The welshemen rebelling were brought in subiection. The Englishemen whiche were sent by king John to ayde the erle of Flaunders, chased the frenchemen, and in the haven of Melise, compassed & toke their whole na vle of ships, which was in number .1020. sayle.	
5173	1212	Friderich the seconde, king of Sicilie, and Duke of 12 Suaue, after that Otto was expelled by the bishoppe, was ordeyned emperor, and reigned .23. yeres. Though this man was endued with many noble and princely ver tues	

perpetrated, and tendered the wealth of the empyre exceedingly, The pope
 an: yet was he vexed with most shameful injuries by the bi- of the of 1214
 shops of Rome, which in his tyme most abundantly de would.

clared their outrageous enny, pryde and malice. This
 Friderike was skilfull in diuers languages. as in Cricke
 Latin, Almaigne, and the Sarasens tongue, he fauoured
 good letters excellently, and furthered muche the studie
 therof. By his procuremente the Almagest of Ptolomet
 was translated out of the Sarasens tongue into Latine,
 wherby the knowlede of a stronomy, which of long tyme
 no man hadde professed in Europe, was called againe to
 light. He warred first against Dthp his predcellour, by
 the counsaile of the Romaine bishop, but in the ende he
 receiued the same rewarde that other dyd before him.

Cazari, Patarent, Leoniste, Almaricus Carnotensys
 and many other heretikes were in these dayes.

- 13 Kinge John of Englande beyng overset in warre by 5174 1213
 Phyllyp of Fraunce, submitted him to the byshop of Rome
 by who amonge other thinges he was bounden, that as
 well he as his heires shuld euer after be feudaries to the
 see of Rome, and pay for perely tribute. 1000. markes.
 and moreouer to holde the title of the crowne, by the by-
 shops of Rome, here may you se y the bishops of Rome
 in theyr so often cursinges, did not couet to reconsile the
 soules of mē to god, but to subdue princes to their tiran-
 ny, but this iniunction was not kept, at any tyme by the
 kinges of this realme.

- 14 Friderich the emperour made league with Phyllip of 5175 1214
 Fraunce.

At Courney a cruell bataille was foughten, betwene
 the late emperour, and Phyllip of France (in the quarrel
 of kinge John of Englande) where the two princes en-
 countred eche other so fierly, that they were bothe vn-
 horsed, but in the ende, Dtho forsoke the fiede, and Fer-
 raunde Erie of Flaunders, Reighnold of Boloine, and
 28. other men of name, were taken prisoners. Shortly
 after entrecty of peace was made betwene the kinges of
 Englande and France.

- 15 A synode holden at Rome, wherin communicaciō was 5176 1215
 had for the recovery of Hierusalem.

III.

Alexans

The third part of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere 1218 Alexander succeeded William in the kingedome of Scot lande, and reigned .34. yeres. At the beginning of king Henrys reign in England. was variance betwene this Alexander of Scotlande and him, but after, thei were ali-
ed by mariage.

Peter was emperour of Constantinople. .5. yeres, he came to Rome and was annointed of the bishop. Shortly after he besieged the cite Dyrrachium, & despying to obtene it, entreated a peace with Theodorus Duke of Epirus, who not withstanding his promysse, layed pryuy waite in the wooddes of Tempe, where he toke the emperour and cast him in prysō, after which time Joles the wife of Peter gouerned the weast empyre.

1177

1219

Great strife and variance hapned in England between king John & the nobles and commons of his realme, because he wold not vse the lawes of S. Edward, & other auncient liberteis, which the people required, whom the king had dyuers times appeased with faire wordes and promisses, but because the lords perceiued them to come to smalle effect, they pursued him so hardlie, that he was gladd to send for ayde to Flaunders, and in like maner the nobles with their allies sent for Lewis the sonne of Philip of Fraunce, and him saluted as king, and maine-
teyned in warre against king John, to the great hurt of this realme of England. During the time of this warre king John ended his lyfe.

Honorius byshop of Rome. .x. yeres. .viij. monethes. He chose Iohannes de Columna a cardynall, to be soueraygne capitaine of the warres into Asia, who sped him thither-
ward with the souldiours, that bishop Innocent had pre-
pared for that purpose. There went with him Andrew kinge of Hugarie. Henry Duke of Aquerna, Gultherus chamberlayne to the frenche king, which ioyning their puissance with the king of Hierusalem, besyged Damas in Egypt somtime called Heliopolis.

The ordie of our ladies souldiers began first in Arrago-
After the disceasse of John, Henry his sonne, of the age of .ix. yeres (by the counsaile of William Duke of Gloucester, and the Erles of Penbroke and Chester) was proclaimed kinge of England. These nobles

1179

1218

re: noble men before mentioned with their retinewes, kepte The yere The yere
an: sharpe warre with Lewis the french kinges sonne, and of the of 1218
his affinitee, who by the conuauentes made before with would.

the Engliſhemen claimed the crowne, but after certayne ſkirmilhes and batailles, Lewis ſomewhat more inclyned to peace, which laſtly was concluded, and he departed hence into France. Then was Henry conſtituted in the kingdome, who coming to full age, warred ſtrong & mighty of body, and of meſely comely perſonage, of nature gentyll, of minde more ſage and wiſe than valiant and hardye, liberall towarde the poore. In his tyme he ordeyned many lawes to the great commoditie of thys realme, and reigned. 56. yeres.

Ranulph Duke of Cheſter took his iorney towarde the holy lande.

3 The citee Dampara in Aegypt was taken of the chriſtians after long ſiege.

5180

1219

3 Robert the ſon of Peter was ordeyned emperour of Conſtantinople, and reigned. vii. yeres.

5181

1220

In Thracia, two erles poſſeſſed certayne citieſ belonging to the empyre, whych whan Fryderich by force of armes, had reconered, the two erles fled to Benozius biſhop of Rome, who commaunded Fryderich to reſtoze to the their citieſ, whiche thinge whan he denied, the biſhop denounced him accuſed, and forbade him the communion with the faythfull, ſaying, that thoſe citieſ belonged to the church of Rome.

Hocota Can, the ſecond emperour of the Tartariſs. he vanquiſhed the Turkes, his thre ſonnes invaded Perſia, India, and Cumania.

King Henry of England began to builde our ladye church in Weſtmiſter.

4 The Chriſtians in Egipt, being brought in great ſeopardy, by the pollicie of the Mouldayne, reſtozed to hym the citee Dampara, and making a peace, returned into Europe.

5182

1221

The Tartariſs (a people of Scythia, after many other countreys. of the eaſt, ſubdued to them Georgia & the greater Armenie, and then paſſing the mountaynes called Riphel, invaded Polonia, and Hungarie. They in

III. ii.

1222

The third part of

The yere
of the
woldes.

The yere thort space cōquered so manye countreys, & their pynce
of Christ for his large poffessions was called the great Caban.

Alexander king of Scottes maried Johā the sister of
kinge Henrre of Englande. A proclamacion made thro-
roughout Englande, to auoyde straungers because one
Jonkes de Went helde the castell of Bedforde agaynst
the kinges wyll. At the same time appeared a blasynge
sterre, and much hurte was done by thunder, lightning
and earthquakes, and many vncought and strange sigh-
tes were sene.

1183

1122

Robert emperour of Constantinople, married a maiden
which before was fianced to a noble man of Burgoin
wherwith the burgonion being greatly mewed, entred
by violence into the emperours palace, and cutte of the
maydens nose, and cast her mother into the sea.

John king of Jerusalem came to Rome, and gave his
doughter in mariage to Friderich the emperour geving
for her dower the title of the kingdome of Jerusale, for
whiche cause the kinges of Sicilie to this day be wryten
kinges of Hierusalem.

A counsaile holden at Drenford, of the bishops of En-
glande, where a certayne man was condemned, which
saught, that he was Iesus Chryste, and to confirme the
same, he shewed the tokens of wounds in his handes, bo-
die and feete.

About this time Gileble was rebelled against Alexan-
der king of Scottes, and was subdued and slayne with
his two sons by the erle of Buchthane, whom the king
sent agaynst hym.

The gray friers of the order of Francis came first in-
to Englande.

1184

1223

Friderich the emperour, whiche was excommunicated
by the bishop of Rome, caused his sonne to be made par-
taker of the empire.

John kinge of Jerusalem, toke in mariage Beringa-
ria, the doughter of the kinge of Spayne.

The men of Caithnes in Scotland, burned their bishop
because he cursed them for not payinge their tythes, for
whiche dede the kinge didde hang. iiii. hundred of the
chiefe doers, gelded their childzen, & disherited the erle.

A con-

- | | The yere
of the
worlde | The yere
of Christ |
|--|------------------------------|-----------------------|
| <p>ut res: A conspiracie was made agaynst king Henry of Eng
land by one Constantine in the cite of London, for the
whiche he was drawen and hanged the moztowe after.</p> | | |
| <p>7 Lewys the eyght (or after some the ninth) was made
kyng of Fraunce after his father, and reygued. xiii. ye
res. He made league with Friderich the emperour wher
by the name of brotherhoode was renewed betwene the
Frenchmen and Germaines.</p> | 5185 | 1234 |
| <p>8 The lordes and gentilmen of Englande first graunted
to king Henrie the warde and maryage of the y2 heyres.</p> | 5186 | 1225 |
| <p>9 Richard the brother of kinge Henrie, ouercame the
Frenchmen, recovered Boyters, and kept the Gascoins
in due obedience.</p> | 5187 | 1226 |
| <p>Robert emperour of Grece ended his life in Achaia.
Gregory the. ix. was bishop of Rome. xiii. yeres.
He was a man inflat with pride, and for certayne vain
causes (as witnesseth the Abbot of Ursberge) agayne ex
communicated the emperour Friderich.</p> | | |
| <p>10 Ferdinand king of Arragon, expelling the Saracens
out of the cite Valencia, and the pls called Malorica, re
duced them to the fayth of Christ.</p> | 5188 | 1227 |
| <p>Lewys king of Fraunce wan certayne castels in the
countrey of Boyters, and shortly after toke and spoyled
the cite Aignon, which for the heresy of the Albigen
ses was cursed of the bishop of Rome the space of seuen
yeres.</p> | | |
| <p>Baldwine the. ii. being yet a childe, was made empe
rar of Grece, to whom, bicause he was not of sufficient
age, John Brenne king of Jerusalem was appointed as
a tutor and gouernour.</p> | | |
| <p>The bishop of Rome made John king of Jerusalem
Duke of Romandiola, and lord of Rauenna.</p> | | |
| <p>11 Lewis the. ix. and sonne to Lewys the laste kinge be
gan his dominion ouer France, who for his youth was
of opuers thought vnmeet to take on him so greate a
charge, but by the helpe of his mother Blaunch he que
ted his enemies, and reigned. xliii. yeres.</p> | 5189 | 1228 |
| <p>The abbot of Ursburge an historiographer & Petrus
de Vinea a lawier were famous.</p> | | |
| <p>12 Friderich the emperour toke his vyage toward Asia,
At. xliii. whych</p> | 5190 | 1229 |

The third part of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

where he behaued him so knightly that he reconered Je
rusalem and diuers other citees, which he repaired and
fortified, and thā made peacs with the Souldanes for
yeres.

5191

1230

King Henrpe of Englande sapled with an army into
Bytaine agaynst Lewis king of France, where after
spoyling of the countrey a peace was cōcluded betwene
the two yonge princes.

5192

1231

Notwithstanding the great bilanie that Gregory by-
shop of Rome had shewed to Friderich the emperour as
well by inuadinge his landes while he was absent, and
spreading a false rumour of his death in Asia, as also in
relecting his louing letters, and publishinge him to be
an enemy of Christian religion, and no lesse to be hated
than a Saracen or Turke. Yet ceased not thys gentyll
prince at his returne to entreat meanes of concoꝝd, whē
che he could not obteyne vntill he had payed to the bishop
in the of penance. 120000. ounces of golde, and than
was he agayn proclaimed emperour of Almayn, & king
of Sicilie. Blondus, Platine, Sabellicus and other It-
alian historiographers, cast al the fault vpon the emper-
our, and make him worst of all men. But the abbot of
Wilsberge, whiche was in those dayes, sheweth the pride
auarice, and stubborne frowardnesse of the Romayne
bishop.

Wariaunce chanced betwene the students of Paris &
the citisins, in so muche that the scholars were myn-
ded to haue departed from the citee.

A great discencion and ruffling betwene the bishop of
Rome and the citisins for their auncient liberties, custo-
mes and gouernance of their citee, wherof ye may read
in Blondus, *De inclinatione Romani imperii*. the. vii. booke
by what meanes the bishoppe extorted from theim their
libertes.

5193

1232

The Welchemen aboute this time rebelled. Great
harne was done in the citee of London with fyre.

5194

1233

Wariaunce kindled betwene king Henry of Englande
and his lordes, because he put from his seruyce English
men, and trusted straungers as wel in his counsaile as
other offices nere about him.

The

nt re³ The cite Verona came agayne to the obedyence of the The pere² The pere²
an² emperour. of the of Christ
worlde

Theobalde of Campaine was kinge of Navarre.

The emperour retourned the .lii. tyme into Germanie, and warred in Austrieh against the Hungares, wher he toke Bacheria, Gaza, and Vienna, whiche he ordeyned to be the imperiall cite, and there made his sonne Chunrade Cesar.

18 Edward of Bounthay was ordeyned byshop of Canturbury. Kyng Henry beganne the foundacyon of S. Johns hospytall in Drenforde. In this yere fell verpe vnseasonable weather of thūder, lightning, and erthquakes, wherof ensued a famine and pestilence. Kyng Henry put from him the strāgers, and receiued the Englysh men to their offices.

5196

1235

The Irishemen rebelled.

The Jewes dwelling in Dorwyche were accused for sleing of a childe, whom they purposed to crucifie.

Friderich the emperoure married Isabell the syster of kinge Henry of Englande.

19 King Henry toke to wyfe Glenour the doughter of the Erle of Poynce. In Englande appeared as it were hostes of men fighting in the element.

5197

1236

20 The statute of Merton was first enacted, or after some in the thyrtyeth yere of this kinge Henry.

5198

1237

Theobalde king of Navarre, Almarith Erle of Mountfort, Henry Erle of Campaine, with a great multitude of souldiours went into Asia, where at the beginnyng they went forwarde prosperously, and gathered muche prayse: but in the end betwene Stolomais and Gaza they were banquished of the Turkes, and a great nombre slaine.

Pyllaine and certayne other famous cities of Italy rebelled againste the emperoure, whiche he banished and brought in due obelauce. And therfore was againe cursed of Gregorpe, and proclaimed an heretike. Whiche thyng caused great trouble in Italye.

Deadly warre betwene the cite of Gen, and the Venetians, for the Ile of Crete.

Bela the .lii. succeeded his father Andzew in the kyngdome

The third part of

The yere
of the
worlde.
5199

The yere
of Christ

dom of Hungary, and reigned. 35. yeres.
The Venecians ouercame certaine Greclans, whiche hadde beclipped the cytie of Constantinople with a hard siege. The Rhodes became subject to Venice.

5200

1239

At the Uniuersitie of Parys it was concluded, that no prest vnder payne of deadly synne coulde haue. ii. benefices.

5201

1240

A clerke of Orenford, or moze berly a certaine souldour feignynge him selfe mad, enterprised to haue slaine king Henry of England, but he was taken & put to deith. Partes were taken in Italie for the emperour and the bishop of Rome, they whiche fauoured the bishop, were called Guelphi, the other Gibelini, of whiche discencion rose most cruell and deadly warres. For the bishop promysed eternall lyfe to all them, that fought against the emperour, and desyred he alpe of the Englyshemen and Frenchemen. He called also a generall counsaile, where in he depriued the emperour of his auctoritie, and obeyned, *salve regina*, &c. and that bellies shoulde be ronge at the consecracion of the sacrament, and to the praise of our Lasse, with suche other toply thinges. The emperoure toke. ii. cardinales, and kepte them in prison at Amalphia, he subdued Rauenna, and the Seneses came to his parte.

5202

1241

After the death of Gregoꝛpe Colesstinus was bishop of Rome. xliiij. dayes, and than was the see of Rome, boide xxi. monethes.

The great Caban prince of the Tartarians, after he had wan from the Turkes much of the east landes, with an arme of 500000. men, invaded Hungary, with whō Be la their king encountring, was vanquished, and fled into Dalmacia. Than the Tartarians conquered Macia, Maradinum, Stridoniam, wyth oither places & so destroyed the countrey wyth sword and fyre, that the inhabitantes were constrained for hunger to eate their owne chyldren, whiche crueltie continued thre yeres. And at the last the hepythen Pagaines being forced with tempeste, were faine to departe out of the countrey.

James kinge of Arragon.
Friederich the emperour subdued to him Fauencia Parma, Bononia

nt re wa, Bononia, and transferred the Studentes from Bono
m nia to Padua.

nght. Henrie king of Englande subdued the Welshemen
whiche oftentimes rebelled.

19 Baldwine emperor of Constantinople, and Raimunde
Erle of Tolows, coming into Italy, obteyned of Friderich
that the ii. cardinals, whiche he kept in prison might
be sette at libertee.

Aldermen first chosen in the citee of London.

26 Kinge Henrie of Englande, by the sterking of a fren-
chman named Erle of Marche, sayled into Normandie
with a fayre compaignie, purposinge to reconer Boyters,
Fupan and other countreys: but after manie bekeryn-
ges somewhat to the losse of the Englishemen, Henrie
founde meanes of peace, whiche was concluded for the
space of, v. yeres.

Innoce. the. iiii. being ordeined bishop of Rome fled
to Lyons in Fraunce for feare of Friderich emperoure
where he called a counsaile. This man gaue redde hat-
tes first to the cardinales.

Henrie the firste, was kinge of Spayne. ii. yeres, be-
ing but a childe. He married his kinswoman the kynges
doughter of Portugall, and died as he was playing with
chilozen by the falling of his throte

27 Ferdinande the fourth, a man of great noblenesse, was
king of Spayne. xii. yeaeres. He conquered well nerelall
Spayne from the dominion of the Saracens.

Gino Can the. iii. emperour of the Tartarians, vnder
him Batho. vanquishinge the Scythes, made his royall
seate in Cathay.

28 The Tartarians ouerran Asia, called Geozgiana, and
after that inuaded Armenia, & entred euen to Iconstain,
the royal palace of the king of Turkes. An other com-
paigny of the Tartarians, vnder their leader Bato, with
most cruel inuasions, wasted the countrey of Polonie
Hungarie, Russia, Gasa, and with great tirannie afflic-
ted the same.

At Collet in Spayne a Jew digging in the grounde to
enlarge his vineyarde, found a holow stone, wherin was
a bokel of the bignesse of a psalter, written in greke, latine

kkk

and

The
yeare o
y world. The
yeare of
Chypte

1203

1242

1204

1243

1205

1244

1206

1245

The third parte of

The
yere of
the world

The
yere of
Christe

and hebrewe: the matter whereof was of .lxx. worldes to An
come, and declared the coming of Christ to be the begin, gu
ning of the thirde, which was exprest in this maner. ang

In the begynnyng of the thirde worlde the son of god shalbe borne of
a mayde. By occasion of this booke, the Jew was turned
to the faith of Christ.

5207

1246

The bishop of Rome assembling a counsaile at Lyons 29
excommunicated Friderich the emperour, and deprived
him of al imperfall auctoritee, commaunding that he
should no moze be called Cesar.

The emperour committed the gouernance of Italy and
Lumbardie to his sonne Catus, king of Sardinia, and
then besieged Parma: which he toke and destroyed, and
buylded a newe citee in the same place called Victoria.
About this time was a terrible earthquake in Englands
and in Fraunce.

5208

1247

Cressioni, a people of Arabie, by the steering of the
Souldaine of Babylon, cruelly afflicted the Christians 30
in all Asia, and vsed most spitefull vilanie towarde the se
pulchre of Christ in Jerusalem.

The electours of Germanie hearing of the depolition
of Friderich, ordeined the Lanthgrane of Thuring to be
king of Romans: who shortly after disceased and then
they chose William erle of Hollande.

At this time were many preachers in Sueuia, whych
sharpe rebuked the abuses of the bishop of Rome, and
his cardinales, & namely his false & vsurped Pardones.

5209

1248

The newe citee Victoria was taken, spoyled and de- 31
stroyed by the friendes of the bishoppe of Rome, and the
emperour Friderich chased.

Lewis the Frenche kinge departed fro Paris in his
journey toward the holpe land, with many other nobles
and bishops of Fraunce. Shortly after his arrivall he
brought to his subiection the citee Dampet of Egypt.

Friderich notwithstandinge the bishop of Romes cur
sing, subdued well nere all Italye, ercepte a fewe cityes
whych favoured his enemies.

King Henrie of England seised the franchises of the
citee of London for a iudgment geuen against a widow
named Margaret Wyell: But shortly after they were
restored

nt re restozed.

133 Alexander the thynde. ix. yeaeres of age, succeeded hys peare of
father in the kyngedome of Scollande, and reigned. 35. y. woꝝld. **The** **The**
yeares. He hadde perpetuall amytie with the kynges of **year of**
England. **Chypte**

133 Friderich ordeyned Manfrede, his bastarde son, pꝛince 5211
of Tarentum: Chuncade his sonne by his wyfe Iole, he
ordeyned his heyre, and shortly therepon payed hys debte
to nature in Puell. Some wyte, that he was poisoned,
and not onlyke: for the blessed fathers thought theim ne-
uer in quiete, until they had dyspatched that good empe-
roure oute of lyfe. After whiche tyme Italye was still dy-
vided into the faccions of the Guelphes and Gibelynes.

34 In Italle bloud issued out of hꝛead, as oute of woundes 5212
flesshely cut, and bloudy cloudes appeared.

Leuys kyng of Fraunce, entending to bessege Babi-
lon, by sickenelle and other maladies, lost a great part of
his arme, and in the ende was hym selfe taken pꝛysoner
of the Souldaine, with his. ii. bꝛetherne Charles and Ro-
bert, the Erle of Poytiers, the Erle of Angew, the Erle
of Flaunders, the Duke of Britain, the Erle of Scissons,
which were al deliuered vpon a great raunsome.

In Fraunce a company of younge men (nampng them
selfes shepherdes) bowed to restoze their kyng to libertie:
but for the hooꝝedome and robbynge that they vsed, the
people of the countrey about the dead sea, set vpon them,
slew the yꝛ capitains, & disperced that simple felowshyp.

Chunrade the sone of Friderich, toke on hym the king-
dome of Puell. He was cursed also by the byshoppe of
Rome.

35 James kyng of Arragon, by the ayde of Ferdnande 5213
kyng of Castile, subdued the isles called Belears.

Mango Can the fourth emperoure of the Tartarians.

Chuarade kyng of Puell was popsoned by his bꝛother
Manfrede, who was suspected also for the death of hys
father

King Henry of Englande married his daughter Mary
to Alexander kinge of Scottes, and receyued homage of
the same Alexander, for the realme of Scotlande.

The Augustine friers beganne to inhabite in Wales.

kkk.ii.

About

1250

1251

1252

The third parte of

The
pere of
the world

The
pere of
Chyffe

Abouts this tyme the Tartaryans, vnder theyr kynge Mangoo or Metho, receiued the fayth of Chyff, and after made charge warre vpon the Turkes, & toke from them many countreys.

Ann
gum
angl

Accursius that made gloses on the lawe, Compostellanus and Otheelis that wrote on the decrees. Bertracius a physycyon, Vincent an hyttopographer, Alexander Gallus a grammaryan, and Stanlay the holy byshoppe were famous.

36

5214

1253

Lewis kynge of fraunce returned out of Asia into his countrey.

Alexander the. iiii. was bishop of Rome. di. yeres. He was so much occupied in maintaining the ciuile warres betweenes the Guelphes and Gylbelynes, that he sent as brode preachers to steere men agaynst the Gibelines, to the great disturbance of all Italie. He excommunicated also Manfrede the sonne of Fryderyche. Naples yelded to the bishoppe. The Gibelines were driuen out of their countrey. The Florentines vanquished the Pisanes, and subdued Volaterra

5215

1254

Manfrede founde meanes, that he was proclaimed and crowned king of Sicilie.

37

5216

1255

Alphons kynge of Castile, gaue Glenour his daughter in mariage to prince Edward, the sonne of kynge Henry of Englande: to whom his father gaue the principate of Wales, and gouernance of Gutan and Irelland. Wherof began first, that the kinges of Englande ordeined theyr eldest sonnes, princes of Wales.

38

Alphons the. ii. and sonne of Ferdynande was kynge of Castile. r. vii. yeres.

About this time certayne noble men of the hous of Comynges, rebelled agaynst the kynge in Scotland, and held him in prison a certayne tyme.

5217

1256

Mariannce betwene the electours of Germanie for the emperour, parte named Alphons kynge of Castile, parte Rycharde the brother of kynge Henry of Englande: but because neither of theim was receiued by the whole empyre: the imperial auctoritee was counted boide the space of. r. vii. yeres.

39

The king of Scottes, to his quene, came into Englad.
Pyuers

into the Dyuers lordes of Almaine came into Englande, and dyd homage to kyng Rycharde Erle of Cornwall, and the kynges brother: who vpon ascencion day after, was crownd world. The yere of Chylye 1217.

40 ned kyng of Romaines at Aquisgrane, by the bisshope of Coloine and other of his frendes. 5218

King Henry went into Wales to subdue Llewellyn, whiche with his welshemen rebelled against hym and his sonne prince Edward.

41 Albertus Magnus, Thomas Aquine, Bonaventure, and Peter Hispanus were famous. 5219.

Great variaunce betwene kyng Henry and the Londoners, in so muche that the Maior, Aldermen, and sherriffes were depriued of theyr offices, and the gouernance of the citee committed to certayne persones of the kynges appoynting.

The secte of S. Augustines armites began.

For so much as kyng Henry had promysed ostentimes the restitution of certayne auncient lawes and ordinaunces, whiche were moze easie and commodious to his people, and by his longe delaye brought nothing to effect, the lordes of England began to murmur and grudge against hym: wherfore to appease theyr malice he helde a parliament at Drenforde, whiche was after called the madde parliament, because manye thynges were therein enacted against the kynges prerogative: whiche proued after to the confusion of the realme, and death of manye noble men. For the confyrmacion of these actes were chosen xii. pieres called Douze pieres, whiche had auctoritee to correcte the breakers of theyr ordinaunces. These pieres transposed and altered manye thynges according to theyr owne pleasure, greatly to the discontentynge of the kynges mynd, and disquieting of the whole realme, as in the Englishe histories doeth appeare.

42 Rycharde the kynges brother returned out of Almaine into England. 5220.

Manfred fortified the citee of Senes with a great garrison against the bisshope of Rome, Ccelinus, whiche favoured the Gibelines, vanquished the byshoppes armie, and toke his legate. Brixia was geuen by to Ccelinus.

Deadly warre betwene the Venetians and Genoways

The third part of

The
yeare of
p world.
5221

The
yeare of
Chrifte.
1260

for the possession of a chureh in the citee of Ptolomais in Ann

Gaye duke of Florentia.

The Florentines fauouring the part of the Guelphes went part of them to Luke, part to Bononi, and forsoke their olone citee: whiche shortly after beinge inhabited with a few indifferent persons, was brought in the subiection of Manfred and the Gibelines, and fortified with their fauours. This faction of Guelphes and Gibelines continued in Italie almost to our time.

Michael Paleologus, a noble man of Grece, depriued William of his principate of Achaia, and by the helpe of the Genowais naute, toke Constantinople, slew Balduine the emperor, put to deathe the son of Theodozus Mattaris, and blurped the imperiall auctoritee. rrrb. peres.

The Aeneclians ouercame the Genowais at Ptolomais, and toke. rxiij. of their ships and galleis.

King Henrie of England, fearing some rebellion of his nobles, went into Fraunce, and there concluded a final peace on this condicion, that Normandye, Angeleme and Cennomanna, shuld euer after be in the possession of the frenchemen, and the king of England to haue Guyan, and that Lewis shoud geue to king Henrie for his expenses in warre. 50000. crownes and for pearclpe tribute a. 100000. after which peace synpshed: the kyng returned into England.

Deadly warre betwene the bishop of Argentine and the cistris, wherein the bishoppe him selfe fought manfully like a balliant champion.

All the countrey of Herrucia was brought vnder the subiection of Manfred, and the Guelphes expelled.

About this time mortal warre was reared betwene Alphons king of Castile, and Richarde the kinges brother of Englande, because they bothe affected the empire of Germanie. Alphons suspectinge the treason of his two brethren, Henrie and Friderich expelled them out of his reelme: of the which the one fled into Affrike, the tother into France, intending to excite the people of bothe those nacions to invade Castile.

Urbane

gun
Ang

43

44

Urban the fourth was bishop of Rome. lll. yeres. He first ordeyned the feast of Cozpus Chzist, with great plesure of pardon.

The yere of
the world. Chzist
1223 1262

45 King Henrie of England published at Poules crosse the bishop of Romes absolucion for him and all his that were sworne to mainteyn the articles made in the parliament holden at Orensforde, for which cause the Barones of Englande beganne to utter their malice, whiche they had long before conceiued agaynst the kinge, and caused an insurrection, that continued. lll. yeres.

46 The Barones of England armed them agaynst theyr kinge, and at this yere houred about London and other places, without any notable act of rebellion, saving that they robbed and spoyled alices, and certayne other persones, whom they knewe to be agaynst theyr purpose.

5224

1263

Urban bishop of Rome obtained of the frenche kyng that his brother Charles the earle of Angeowe and province, might come into Italy with an army agaynst Pafrede, where the saide Charles was proclaimed kinge of Sicillie and Naples: by whiche meanes that kyngedome came first to the frenchemen.

This yere was an exceeding dearth in Scotland, where of Acho kinge of Norway and Denmarke took occasion to invade the landes of Scotlande, to the great terror of the kinge and the whole realme: but not longe after at Largis he was discomfited in a great battayle, and loste xrb. thousande of his men, wyth all his thyppes, savinge foure.

47 Ffue hundred Jewes were slayne by the citizens of London because one Jew would haue forced a chzistian man to paye moze then two pence for the blake of. xx. s. for a weke.

5225

1264

After the death of Acho, Magnus reigned amonge the Danes.

Hugh Le Spenser with the citizens of London, speyled and burnt the manoures of Richard the kinges brother, whiche hitherto had ben a great staye of the warre betwene the king and his nobles.

Here to Lewis, king Henrie and his Barones fought a cruell battaille, in the whiche he him selfe, with Richard his

his

The third part of

The his brother kinge of Romaines, sir Edward his sonne, An
 yere of yere of and other noble men to the noumbre of xlv. were taken: gu
 world. Chyfte. and of the commons were slaine aboute 20000. An

The king, and his brother, were deliuered vpon firme
 promise made to perfourme the actes of the forenamed
 in adde parliament: for suertie whereof, prince Edward
 remained as pledge.

Wenceslaus the fourth king of Boheme.

Clement bishp of Rome. iii. yeres. ix. monethes.

1226

1265

Debate and variance betwene Simon Mountforte
 Erle of Leicester, and Gilbert de Clare erle of Glouce-
 ster, the chiefe capitaines of the Barones: whiche turned
 to their great euell. For prince Edward, being now set
 at libertee, aided him with the Erle of Gloucester, and ga-
 theringe to him a great power, warred so fiercelye vpon
 Simon of Leicester, that in the end, he and Hugh Spen-
 ser, with many other of the nobles were slain in battaille.
 And the same yere was holden a parliament at Winche-
 ster: where all the statutes made before at Oreworde,
 were fozedone, and al writinges made for the confir-
 macion of the same cancelled and broken. The citee of Lon-
 don was in great danger to haue bene utterly destroyed
 by the king, for great ire and displeasure, that he had ken-
 dled toward it, becauie of the forenamed commocion.

This yere was such infinite noumbre of wormes in all
 partes of Scotlande, that floures, herbes, leaues, and
 frutes of trees, were consumed therewith.

Manfred in Italy was vanquished & slayne by Char-
 les the frenche kynges brother, who toke possessiō of the
 kyngdome of Sicilie and Bonenent, and for the same be-
 came feudarie to the Romaine bishoppe, and paid to him
 yerely tribute.

1227

1266

By daily faste and labour of frendes to kyng Henrie
 for the Londoners, he lastly graunted his pardon. But
 so that they shulde geue to hym for all transgressions and
 offences the summe of 20000. markes, and than to re-
 ceue againe theyr libertees.

Kyng Henrie besieged the castell of Benelworth, whiche
 Henrie Hastings defended agaynst hym the space of
 halfe a yere, and than gaue it vp into his handes.

Chung

re Chunradinus Duke of Suane, the sonne of Chunrade, and nephew of Friderich, and right heire as well to the imperiall crowne as to the kingedome of Sicilie, came with a huge armie into Italy to recover his fathers kingdome of Sicilie, which the Romaine bishop had wrongfully geuen to Charles the Frenchman.

50 The olde franchises and libertees of London, with a new graunt for the shire of Middlesex, were confirmed by a parliament at Northampton: where also many noble men, that had taken part with the Barones, were disfranchised of their landes: and therfore fledde to Cle.

Friderich the kinges brother of Spaine, whiche was banished his countrey came out of Afrike with a great compaignie of Saracens, and arrived in the sea costes of Sicilie, where in the quarrel of Chunradine, he subdued the whole lande, savinge three citees called Panormus, Siracuse. and Messina.

Banducar or Bendago souldaine of Egypt, overcame the christians.

The Genowais spoiled & wasted a citee of Crete called Canea.

51 The gentlemen of Englande, which fled to Cle, robbed & did much harme to the countrey next adioynynge. Chunrade the Duke of Suevia, which in the beginning of his warres had prosperous successe in Italie, encountering with Charles, was vanquished and taken: toward whom the bishop of Rome shed much spiteful billayne. In hlm ceased the Dukes of Suevia.

52 Gilbert de Clare, Erle of Gloucestre, for unknown displeasure, allying him selfe with the exiled gentlemen, & other nobles of England, rose against the kinge: & helde the citee of London: but by the diligent labour of sir Richard king of Romaines, and the bishop of Beines, an agreement was made betwene the king and him.

The bishops see of Rome by meane of a disencion betwene the cardinales, was boyde the space of .ii. yeres.

53 A rancune betwene the felowshippes of goldsmithes and tailours of London, caused great ruffling in the cite, and manye men to be slaine, for which riotte. xiii. of the chiefe capitaines were reigned, cast, and hanged. Aline Touch

The
pere of
the world.

The
pere of
the world.

5228

1267

5229

1268

5230

1269

5231

1270

The third part of

The
yeare of
p world.

The

was discharged of his maiestee by the kinge, and Ste-
phane of ptene Edworth made constable of the tower, and custos gu-
Chyille. of the citce.

The discredited gentlemen were reconciled to the king.

Lewis king of Fraunce and his three sonnes, Philip, John, and Peter, with a great nauie sailed into Afrike a gainst the Saracens: where by his pollicie and manhode they toke the citce of Thunes: but by reason of the unhol- some countrey, a pestilence infected his host, of the which the king him selfe died.

5232

1271

The river Thames was so hard frozen from the feast of S. Andrew to Candelmas, that men and beastes pas- sed ouer on soles from Lambeth to Westminster. The ci- tee of London with the reuenues was geuen to prince Ed- warde.

Gregorie the .x. was bishoppe of Rome. iii. yerres.
Warre betwene the Venecians and people of Bononie.
Philip, the sonne of S. Lewys, kynge of Fraunce re-
igned. xv. yerres.

Othacarus the .v. king of Boheme: he was a ballaunt prince, a man of great prowes, and desyrous of warree whom neither counsaile fayled in dangerous enterpri- ses, nor courage in aduersitie and misfortune. By his wife Margaret he was Duke of Austrich. When the electours, profered to make him emperour, he refused it sayinge, that it was a greater thinge to be kinge of Bo- heme, than emperour of Rome. At his entre he married vpon Bela king of Hungarie, and him banquished, and wanne the prouince of Stiria.

5233

1272

Prince Edward of England, sailing into Asia, against the Infideles by his pollicye and manlye actes so demea- ned him selfe, that oftentimes he put the Turkes to grea- t shame & disworship: for despite whereof they subourned a false Saracen, by whose treason he was putte in grea- t danger of his life. For he was wounded with a vene- mous dart, and therof was sicke longe after.

Ephzen a Greke of Constantinople, and Ptolemais of Luke in Italie, historiographers.

Stephene the .v. was king of Hungarie. ii. yerres.
He by the ayde of the Germaynes ouercame Othacarus
kyng

the kinge of Boheme, and subdued Buda to hys kingdome.
 The Tartarians conquered and overrode all Persia.
 At Grenewich beside London, was a lambe pened, ha-
 ving two perfitte bodies and but one head.

Richard kinge Henries brother, and king of Romay-
 nes, finished his life, and was buried at Bayles.

A counsaile called at Lions in Fraunce by Gregorie
 the Romaine bishop, against the Grecians, for the proce-
 ding of the holy ghost, and for communication to be had
 for the recouerie of the holy land.

Michael emperor of Constantinople, submitted hym
 to the church of Rome.

Halderich king of Carinth, solde his principate of Car-
 rinthia, and the countreys of Carniola, Marchia, Scla-
 vonie with other, to Dethacarus kinge of Boheme: for
 which landes was after warre betwene Dethacarus and
 the emperor.

Rodolph of Habsburge, was ordeined emperoure of
 Almayne. This man neuer receyved the imperiall dia-
 demme, nor entred into Italie. For he bled to recite to hys
 familiars, the fable of the fore, that sayde to the Lyon, he
 was a ferde to enter into his denne, because he perceived
 the steppes of many beastes goinge inward, but of none
 that retourned out agayne. And so (he sayed) many em-
 perours have entred Italie with great pompe and glozy
 but by the meanes of the bishop, they retourned enel han-
 dled with great inturles.

At the citee of Forinulsi in Italie, the Gibelines slew
 wel nere, 8000. of the Guelphes.

King Henrie of England departed out of this life.

Edward the firste of that name, after the conqueste,
 surnamed Longeshanke, began his reigne over this
 realme of Englande, and reigned:xxiii. yeres. He
 was muche troubled with the rebellion of the Welsh-
 men, and Scottes, and also with warre in Fraunce. Of
 stature he was taile, and mightie of bodie, but nothinge
 grosse: His eyes were somewhat blacke, and in tyme of
 anger seemed fierpe, of so noble and valiant hart that his
 courage neuer fainted in most hard and dangerous en-
 terpryses, of witte excellent, of great towarnesse & apte

to every

The
 yere of
 the world. 5134
 The
 yere of
 Christ. 1273

5135

1274

The third part of

The to euerye thinge that he him selfe applied. He hated ex- Ann
 peare of peare of treimelye the insolent presumption of p[re]lates, whiche he gun
 p[er] world. I[st]te, thought onely to rise of aboundaunce of riches: he was a Ang
 sure friende, and at idle times muche geuen to huntinge
 He p[ro]fited greatlye his realme with newe and holisome
 lawes, to the redressing of many enormities, and special-
 ly of the false dealing of bakers and millers.

Ladislaws the fourth was kinge of Hungarie syrtene
 peeres.

5236 1275 Alexander kinge of Scottes, did his homoge to Ed- 2
 ward of England.

Innocent the. v. was bishop of Rome. vii. monethes.
 Bonozius the. xiii. fiftye dayes. John the one and twen-
 tieth. viii. monethes. The bishoppes see was voyde. vi.
 monethes. And then Nicholas the thirde made bishop
 He was eased from the emperour of Almaine, al the coun-
 trey of Bononie & Flaminia, & in the emperours name
 toke from Charles kinge of Sicilie, the gouernance of
 Netturia.

5237 1276 Warre betwene the Venetians and the citee Ancon. 3
 King Edward entred again into Wales against Lew-
 line, and forced him to desire mercie and grace.

Ladislaws king of Hungarie, made warre to the pec-
 ple called Comani, and them vanquished. He v[er]ied hym
 vnjustly toward his wife, keeping other Drumpets at
 his pleasure.

The citee of Rome was werre of the dominion of these
 bishoppes.

5238 1277 The statute of Mortmaine was first enacted by kinge 4
 Edward.

Michael Conte was hanged drawen and quartered for
 treason.

Nicholas bishop of Rome endeuoured to erect. ii. newe
 kingdomes in Italie for his two nephewes. He vsurped
 the power of a senatour in Rome, and would suffer none
 other to be created.

5239 1278 Deadly warre was reased betwene Rodulph the empe- 5
 rour, and Otthacarus king of Boheme, whiche encounte-
 ring in the fieldes of Austrie, feughte a foz battayle,
 wherein the emperour obtained the victorie, and Ottha-
 carus

re carus was slain. Whose soune Albert the emperor gen-
tly entreated, and made him Duke of Austrie.

Reformation was made in Englande, for clippinge of
the kinges coine, for whiche offence. 284. Jewes were
put to execution. Halpense and farthings were in the
copied in England.

Clencellans was the. vi. kinge of Boheme: who for
his holiness is numbred among the sainctes.

Discencion in Rome for the election of the bishop.

8 Martine the fourth was bishop of Rome. iii. yeres. In
his first yere, was borne a childe (of a woman that was
verie familiar with him) all beate and armed with cla-
wes lyke to a beare. Wherof when the bishop had know-
ledge he caused all the images of beares in his palace to
be raised out, for a manifest pfoe that he was perswaded
that such fauours as the woman doth conceiue in time
of her conception, shal be represented in the childe at hys
byrthe.

Michael Paleologus emperour of Grece, was excom-
municated by the Romaine bishop, for breaking certain
promises that he made in the counsaile of Lyons.

The Sarasens vanquished the Scythes and Arment-
ans nere to Canala, and after great slaughter, wanne
the citee.

Peter king of Arragon sailed into Africke with a great
naue, and brought from them much riches and praye.
He endeuoured also to recouer the kingdome of Sicilie,
wherto he made claim by the right of his wife Constance
the daughter of Manfred.

9 Dauid the brother of Leweline prince of Wales unkind-
ly and traitterously excited his brother agaynst king Ed-
ward of England.

The citee of Bile was destroyed by the Germanes
Longader the Tartarian, first receiued the law of Ma-
homet. He conquered Babilon by the helpe of the Arme-
nians.

About this time Wilhelmus Placentinus and Iad-
deus philicions were famous. And likewise Cupdo Bo-
natus an astronomer.

The people of Sicilie, detesting the prybe, anarice, & effe-
minate

The
peare of
the world.
1240
1279

1242 1281

1243 1282

The third parte of

The
yere of
the world

The
yere of
Christe

1244

1283

minute to inuentione of the Frenchmen, by the counsaile
of a noble mā called John Biochicus, in one night slew
all them that were within the island, & in like manner was
it done in the citee of Formidul: shortly after whiche
murder the king of Arragon entered Sicilie, and subdued
to him a great part of that lande.

King Edward sent a company of souldiours into Wales
les, vnder the guiding of the erles of Northumberland
and Surrey, of the which compaigne manye were slayne,
and sir Roger Clifford taken prisoner. The Welshemen
subdued certayne castelles and holdes.

Peter king of Arragon, after he had conquered a great
part of Sicilie, took on him the imperiaall crowne therof
and was for that cause cursed by the bishoppe of Rome, &
his kingdome of Arragon proclaymed to be open to eue-
ry man that would invade it. Charles the younger was
vanquished and taken in battayle on the sea.

Philip king of Fraunce, in the quarell of his brother
Charles king of Sicilie, proclaymed warre agaynst Pe-
ter of Arragon.

1245

1284

Lewline prince of Wales, was slayne by Roger Mortimer,
and his head set vpon the Tower of London.
Sanctus the. iiii. reigned in Spayne. xi. yeres.
Charles king of Sicilie ended his life.

William Marston chancellour of England, about
this time buylded Marston colledge in the vniuersities of
Oxforde.

1246

1285

David the brother of Lewline prince of Wales was tak-
en and beheaded: and diuers holdes and castelles of the
Welshemen geuen to the Englishe lordes.

Prince Edward of Canarua was bozne in Wales
Laurence Duket a citisin of London was founde deade
and hanged in the church of S. Marie Bowes.

Philip king of France fought a strong and cruel bat-
talle with Peter king of Arragon nere to Gerunda in
whiche Peter receyued a wound, wherof he died shortly
after: leauing two sonnes, Friderich whom he ordeined
king of Arragon: and James to whom he gaue Sicilie.
These two brethren mainteyned their fathers warre a-
gaynst the Frenchmen.

Philip

Rebe

300

years of
the world.

peare of
C. C. P. G.

5247

1236

10

5247

1236

1243

1152

1243

1152

1243

1152

1871

The third parte of

The
yere of
the world

The
yere of
Christe

of this kinge and his sonne, till it was lastlye solde for .xl. shillings a quarter.

Peace agreed betwene the Frenchmen and Arragons. The Florentines with great slaughter vanquished the Gabelines of Arentine in Italie.

The citee Triple was taken and destroyed by the Souldaine of Egypte, and the christians slayne in most cruell wise.

1251

1290

Ries a Melchman rebelling against Paine Ciptof warden of that countrey, was by the erle of Cornewall in the kinges absēce taken, drowen, hanged & quartered.

About this time the Jewes were expelled wholly out of this realme.

Charles the yonger, which was prisoner a longe time in Arragon, receyved the kingedome of Sicilie, and for the same was feudarie to the Romaine bishop.

The Souldaine of Babylon conquered the citee of Asia called Tite, Sidon, Barotum, and raised them even with the earth: whiche were before inhabited with Christian people. He besieged in like maner the citee of Ptolemaia called also Acres or Acon, and the same being forsaken of the christians, with great crueltie burnt and destroyed: By this meanes were the christians utterly chased out of Surie. .90. yeres, after they firste wonne Jerusalem under Godfret of Boloine.

Ladislans king of Hungarie was slaine by the Comanens, and then succeeded Andzewe the thirde, whiche reigned .xii. yeres.

Rodulph emperor of Almaine overthrow wel nere 60. castelles and holdes in the prouince of Thuring, and by that meanes quieted the countrey of Germanie.

1252

1291

Andzewe king of Hungarie subdued Austrich,

Alexander kinge of Scotland (as is before sayd) dyed without issue male, wherof ensued great discord among the Scottes, whiche toke parte with John Bailoll, and Robert Bruce making claime to the crowne: and shortly after deadlye warre folowed betwene the .ii. realmes of England and Scotland.

1253

1292

The election of the king of Scottes was committed to the iudgemente of kinge Edward of Englande: who after

An
gu
ang

17

18

19

ter

the / The
 re / re
 ter / ter
 suffi / suffi
 cient / cient
 p / p
 ro / ro
 se / se
 made / made
 to / to
 the / the
 Scot / Scot
 tes / tes
 that / that
 he / he
 was / was
 chiefe / chiefe
 head / head
 and / and
 souer / souer
 aigne / aigne
 of / of
 the / the
 realme / realme
 of / of
 Scot / Scot
 lande / lande
 by / by
 all / all
 their / their
 consentes / consentes
 toke / toke
 full / full
 possession / possession
 of / of
 the / the
 same / same
 and / and
 then / then
 caused / caused
 John / John
 Bailol / Bailol
 to / to
 be / be
 orde / orde
 yned / yned
 kinge / kinge
 because / because
 he / he
 descended / descended
 of / of
 the / the
 elder / elder
 daughter / daughter
 of / of
 Erle / Erle
 David / David
 kinge / kinge
 of / of
 Wyl / Wyl
 lams / lams
 brother / brother.

Adoulphus was chosen emperor of Almaine, and reigned. vii. yerres. He was unfortunate in all thinges that he went about, & therewith so nedye and pooze, that when he had receiued of king Edward of Englande. 100000. markes, to ayde him against the Frenche king, he spent the money vpon his housholde, and had not wherewith to fulfill his promise when time required.

By discession of the cardinals the bishopricke of Rome was boyde. ii. yerres and. iiii. monethes.

About this time (as witnesseth Polidors, and as it seemeth most agreeing with other histories) greuous and cruell warre began betwene king Edward of England and Philip of France, for takinge of certayne shippes of Normandie. Philip summoned king Edward to appeare at his parliamente, but he thereat disdeigned, and yelded vp into his handes the Duchie of Guyan, entendinge ere it were longe to make claime to the whole Duke dome of Normandie.

Philip sent Raoul de Sele the constable of France with a mightye power against the Gascoines, whiche by the ayde of Englishemen, defended them so manfullye, that great hurt was done on both partes.

Adoulphus the emperor endeuoured to depriue Albert of his duchie of Austrie, and certayne other landes: for which cause was betwene them fierce warre.

King John Bailol of Scotlande, came to Berwick, and did homage to king Edward.

The Welshemen, by the stirring of Madocke and Morgaine rebelled against the kinge, who sped him towards them in al hastie wise, and shortlye brought that vnstedfast and unruly people to a newe reclaime, and then commaunded their woodes to be cutte to the grounde. After whiche time he helde them in more rest and quiet.

The Frenchmen with a company of ships, arrived at

W m m

W m m

The third parte of

The
were of
the world

The Douer, robbed the towne, and were chased thens byth Ann
were of the losse, of many of their men. gum
the world Chypte angl

Charles de Valois kinge Philippes brother, besieged
the castell of Rion in Gascoyne, wherein were sir John
seint John, and John de Britaine Englishe capitaines.

Michael Paleologus emperour of Grece, ended his
life, whom the Grecian priestes suffered to be buried
because that at the courtyale of Lyons, he agreed to the
Romaine church, in proceedinge of the holy ghost.

5255

1294

Celestine bishop of Rome. vii. monethes, he resigned
the papacie to Boniface the, viii. whiche reigned. viii.
peres. ix. monethes.

Andronicus & Michael emperours of Constantinople.
Madoke, which caused the Welshmen to rebell, was
hanged drawen and quartered at London.

John Bailol king of Scottes, contrarie to his allegi-
ance, by the exciting of the Frenchmen, rebelled agaynst
kinge Edward.

Dinus Mugellanus, Lamfranke, Balbus the gather-
er of Catholicon, and Rabi Gerundentis flourished.

King Edward wanne from the Scottes the castels, of
Barwike & Dunbarre: he slewe of the Scottes aboute. xl.
thousande, and toke prisoners sir William Douglas, sir
Simon de Fressel, the erle Paisike, sir Robert Le Bruze
with many other of name. He conquered also Coenboun-
rough, where he founde the regaul insignes of Scotland
that is, the crowne, the sceptre, and the cloth of estate.

John Bailol king of Scottes, with his sonne Edward
came to Mont Ros, where he, boyde of all kinglye orna-
mentes, with a white rodde in his hande, came before
king Edward, and resigned all ryghte and tytle that he
had or might have to the crowne of Scotland, and made
him a charter therof. Also shortly after at Barwike, all
the nobles were swozne to be true subiectes to hym in ti-
mes coming.

In this meane time, the Englishmen susteined many
kozmes in Gascoyne and Guyan.

Sir Hugh Gressingha was made regent of Scotland.
Boniface the, viii. was bishop of Rome, whiche by his
trecherie and falshode, caused his predecessour Celestine
for

Annals re to forsake his byhoprike. He reared also deadly warres
gam in Italy.

Angli. Kyng Edward sailed into Flaunders to rescue Guye

23 thep. Erle, which was greuously overlet by the frenche
kyng, so that he had wonne from hym muche of his lan-
des. Shortly after kyng Edwardes comynge, a peace
was concluded for. ii. yeres, and then he went to Burdun

The | The
yeare of yeare of
the world Chyffe
1257 1256

The Scottes by the intisement of the frenchemen, and
leadynge of one Wylliam Wallace rebelled, and put the
Engli shemen to much trouble and losse of many men: as
monge the which was sir Hugh Gressingham.

The electours chose Albert Duke of Austria, to be their
emperoure, and deposed Adoulphus, because he was not
of power to mainteine the imperial maiestee.

24 Kyng Edward vanquished the Scottes, and nere to
a towne called Fankirke, slewe of them in one battayle
32000. at whiche tyme (as some wyte) were slaine of the
Engli shemen, but barelye. xliii. persons. After this o-
uerthrow the Scottes yelded, the Scottyshe hystorpe re-
ferreth this to the next yere folowynge.

1258

1297

Kyng Edward for a synall peace to be had betwene
Englande and Fraunce, toke to wyse Margaret the sister
of Phillip the frenche king.

A league and truce was graunted to the Flemminges,
whsch continued not long. For the Flemminges of Bru-
gis (while they Duke Guye and his sonne were kepte in
pzyon by the frenche kyng) set vpon the frenche capy-
taines, and put them to a great afterdiale.

The bishoppe of Rome vled great crueltie towarde the
house of Columneses, and toke from them theyr castels.

25 Kyng Edward, hearynge of the vntrowth and rebelly-
on of the Scottes, made his thirde vyage againste them.
wherin he behaued hym so knyghtly, that in thorse space
he subdued a great parte of the lande, and toke the castell
Estrinaline, with other holdes, & made the lordes sweare
to him feaultee and homage.

1259

1298

Adoulphus and Alberte (contendynge for the imperfall
auctorytee) on the mountaine Hansenbull, fought a cruel
battaille: wherein Adoulphus was slayne, and Albert suc-
ceded in the empyre, and reigned. x. yeres. He, desyringe

Wynter, ii.

to be

The third parte of

The pere of Chyfte to be crowned with the imperiall Diademe of the byshop An
pere of pere of Rome, could not obteine it. For Boniface saied to him, gur
h wozld Chyfte that his election was frustrate, withoute his auctozptee, and
whiche helde the power of bothe swoozdes, that is, of ec-
clesiastical and ciuill iurisdiction.

Boniface made the sixt boke of the decrees.

5260

1299

The kyng of Englande gaue to Edward his sonne the
principate of Wales, and inaigned therto the Erlidome of²⁶
Cornwall.

James kyng of Arragon and Sicillie, ended his lyfe.
Wherefore Robert, Duke of Calabze, and sonne of that
Charles, whiche contented with the Arragons for Sicil-
lie, invaded Sicillie, and toke Cathina: but the Sicillie
ans fauourynge moze the parte of the Arragons, with-
ode Robert, and in a battaile on the sea banquished and
toke Phillip his brother, & slew many of hys souldiours.

The Flemminges of Brugis were foughten with, of
Otto Duke of Burgoyne, in the quarell of the frenche
kyng, who by the ayde of the frenchemen slew of them
xv. thousande.

5261

1300

Friderich of Arragon beyng ordeyned kyng of Sicily,²⁷
subdued to hym the countrey of Calabze.

Great ruffling and vnquietnesse was in Petruria, the
space of .ii. yeres.

Charles of Valois was appoynted of the byshoppes of
Rome, to be defendour of S. Peters patrimonie.

Boniface the eight ordeined for a Jubilee in Rome: in
the solemnysing wherof, the fyrste daye he shewed hym
selfe to the people in his pontificalibus, and gaue free re-
mission of synnes to as many as came to Rome out of all
partes of the woꝛde: the seconde daye, beyng arrayed with
imperiall insignes, he commaunded a naked swoozde to
be caried befoze hym, and saied with a lowde voyce: *Loe,*
Beholde the power and auctoritee of both swoordes.

Othomannus, a man of vnknown byth, steered with
despye to beare a rule, toke on hym the kyngdome of the
Turkes, and subdued to his seignory a great part of Bi-
thynia and other countreys: of him descended finally the
kynges of Turkes to this daye, whose generacion hath
brought much scathe to the Christians.

warre

Annals
re
gum
angli.
18 Warre was renewed betwene Fraunce and Flaunders,
in the which the Flemmings were put to great damage
and losse of men: shortly after peace was concluded.

The The
peare of peare of
1261 1301

18 New factions rose in Italie: where, as before time they
were called Guelphes and Gibelines, so were they now
called Albi and Nigri, by the which Italye was wonder-
fully disquieted with sedition and warre.

At this tyme sprang a new heresie not unlike to the A-
nabaptistes, y^e followers wherof were named Fratricelli.

Tamoz Can the first Emperoure of the Tartarians in
Cathay, a prince exceeding riche.

Henricus de Gandano, Arnouldus de Villa nova, Cox-
donius, Mundinus, Scotus, and Dantes the poete lived
at this time.

29 Boniface for his private displeasure, dyd excommuni-
cate kyng Phillip of France, & proclaimed him, not to be
kyng. Phillip set at libertee Barra, a noble man, whome
the bishop had depriued of all his landes and possessions.

In this yere the Scottis the bishope maketh mention,
of a great ouerthrow geuen by the Scottes to the Englis
themen, at Rosslyn, and that kyng Edward being there
with meue, percer the realme of Scotlande, and wente
throughe all the lande from the north to the southe partes
therof, and forced them all to sweare to hym homage and
feaultee, whiche seemeth to be the same conquest that we
spake of in the .xxv. yere of his reigne.

Boniface crowned and confyrmed Albert in the empire
on this condiclon, that he would take on him the crowne
of Fraunce, and expell Phillip: but the .ii. princes wylle
lye agreed betwene them selfe, and contemned the ty-
ranny of bishop Boniface.

Wenceslaus, whiche of the Hungares is called Ladys-
laus, the sonne of the kyng of Boheme, reigned in Hun-
gary .iii. yeres.

30 Boniface bishoppe of Rome was cast in prison by Bar-
ra, whom he had expelled out of the citee, in whiche pris-
on he dyed. Of this bishop it is wyrtten, that he entred
into the bishoplike lyke a fore, reigned lyke a woulfe, and
died lyke a dogge.

31 Bennet was bishop of Rome. viii. monethes: he assap-
Mm. iii, led the

1302

1303

1304

The thyrde parte of

The
yeare of
the world
5266

The
yeare of
Christ.
1305

led the Franche kynge, the byshoppe was bypde. xi. mo. nettes.

Venceslaus the. vii. kynge of Boheme, for his dounke-
nolle and lechery was slaine in Moravia.

Faccions, sedicions, commocions, and deadly warres
in most miserable wise tourmeted the countrey of Italy.

Sir Robert de Bruce the Scotte, stole priuylge oute of
Englande, and fledde into his countrey, where he slewe
the Erle Sir John Cumyn, because he hadde in certaine
letters betrayed hym to kynge Edward, as going about
to keere by the Scottes to a new rebellion.

Seraph or Melecnalet Souldaine of Egypte, he was
fore ouerset by the Tartarians.

Otho, Duke of Bawarie was ordeyned kynge of Hun-
gary, by the nolles.

5267

1306

Clemente the fift was bishop of Rome. viii. yerres. He
transferred the bishoppes see of Rome, from Italye into
France, where it continued the space of. 74. yerres.

A great sedicion in Paris betwene the noble men and
the commons, for enhancing of rentes.

William Wallace, which had doen so many dysplea-
sures to kynge Edward in Scotlande, was taken and
hanged. The nobles of Scotlande in a parlyamente at
Westminster, voluntarily swore to be true to the king of
Englande, and to kepe the lande of Scotlande to his yle
against al persons.

At the coronacion of Clement byshop of Rome, by the
fall of a walle, the Duke of Britayne was slayne, and
kynge Phillip of France mainied. A carbuncle was stre-
ken out of the bishops miter, whiche was in value worth
vi. thousande crownes. The byshop ordeyned. iii. cardy-
nalles, whiche (as it were. iii. senatours) shoulde gouerne
the countrey of Italye to his behoullie. He gaue also the
islande of Sardinia to friderike kynge of Sicillie, to the
entent he shoulde expel the Saracens.

The emperour Albert ordeined his son Rodoulph king
of Boheme, and expelled Henry the Duke of Carinth.

5268

1307

The Scottes, by the counsaile of the Abbote of Stone,
purchased a dyspensacion of the byshop of Rome, for the
othe that they had made to the kynge of Englande, and
chose

chose to their kinge Robert Le Bruce.

When king Edward heard of this treason, he wente with all hast into Scotlande: where, in a playne, nere to S. Johnes towne, he encountered, vanquished, and char- sed sir Robert le Bruce, and all the power of Scotlande: and toke manye of the noble men prisoners, amonge the whiche were certayne bishops, and an abbotte that were armed in the fildes, contrarie to their trouthe and allegi- ances: Robert le Bruce fled into Norway.

Henrie, that was expelled by the emperour was againe made king of Boheme.

All the templares were put downe in France, and their goodes and possessions throughout all Christendome, ge- uen by the bishoppe of Rome, to the knyghtes of S. John Baptiste. This order was destroyed for their detestable heresie and other enormities.

The hospitallars recovered Rhodes from the Saracens

Continuing the war in Scotland the noble kinge Ed- warde ended his life, who at his death charged his lo- des to boile his bodie till the fleshe seuered from the bo- nes, and then to burie his fleshe in Englande, and kepe till the bones, and as often as the Scottes rebelled: to assemble the people and carie with them his bones, trust- ing that if they were present, that forward people should the soner be vanquished.

Edward the second, sonne of the first Edward, and 5269
prince of Wales: begane his reigne ouer England
and reigned. xviii. yeres. This Edward was fayre
of bodie, but vnstedfaste of maners, and disposed to lyghe-
nesse. For he refused the company of his lordes and men
of honoure, and haunted amonge villaines, and vile perso-
nages. He gave him selfe also to ouer muche drynkyng,
and lightlye woulde disclose thinges of great counseyle:
and besides, that he was geuen to these vices of nature, he
was made much worse by the counsaile and familiaritee
of certayne euell disposed personnes, as Pierre of Gane-
ston, Hugh the Spensers, and other whose wanton coun-
saile he folowing gave him selfe to the appetite and plea-
sure of the body, nothing ordering his common weale by
sadnesse, dyscrecion, and iustice: whiche thinge caused
first

The The
peare of peare of
the world Chyia.

13-3

The thyrde parte of

The
peare of
the world

The first, great variance betwene him and his nobles, so that
hostily he became to them odible, and in the ende was de
prived of his kingdome. This Edward toke to wyfe
Isabell the daughter of Phillip the sayre, king of France
The Scottes did homage to kinge Edward at Dun
freis.

Otho king of Hungarie was taken and cast into prison
by a noble man called Ladislaus.

Calphons the .xi. kinge of Castile reigned .xl. yeres
Robert was king of Naples

John nephew to Albert the emperour, slew his owne
uncle betwene the two rivers of Helnecia, called Risa.
and Arula, nere to Rhine, the place to this daye is called
kinges fildes, where the quene of Hungarie. buylded an
abbey. After the death of Albert was great unquietnesse
in Italie, for euerie citee desired a peculiar governoure
And Phillip of France was put in hope by the bishop of
Rome, to obtaine the empire, and therfore came into It
talpe wth a great power, and toke manye townes,
but failed of his purpose

Henric the .viii. was ordeined emperour of Germanie
and reigned .v. yeres. viii. monethes. He was a noble
and victorious prince, & therewith gentill, liberall, and
of great iustice and honestye. He assembled .iii. mightye
armies, of the whiche one he sent agaynst the Duke of
Wirtenburge, from whens he toke 72. castels. An other
he sent with his sonne John into Beheme, to obtaine that
kingdome: the thirde him selfe led into Italie against the
citees Bizium, Florence, Cremona, and other rebellous
whiche favoured the Guelphes: to whom he brought su
che terror and feare of his name, as few emperours ha
done before time. At Pillaine he was crowned wth
a crowne of yron.

The crouch friers came first into Englande.

So great a dearth in Scotlande, that the common peo
ple did eate horsefleshe, and other vnaccustomed meates
to susteine their liues.

Charles, was chosen king of Hungarie, and reigned
xxiii. yeres. He hadde successively. iii. wifes, Marce
the daughter of the king of Polonie: Beatrix the daug
hter

1270

1305

1271

1310

untire let of Henrpe the emperour, and Helisabeth, the daugh-
um an- ter of the Duke of Bobeme, of the lasse he receyued list. of the
sonnes, Ladislans, Lewes, and Andrew.

Robert Le Bruze began to be of power againe in Scot
lande, & discomfited sir John Cummin Erie of Buchan
and certaine other, whiche helde on the Englishe part.

4 A counsaile holden at Vienna, where the name of the
templares was abolished.

Roberte Le Bruze expelled the Englishmen out of a
great part of Scotland, and invaded the borders of Eng
lande.

5 At Rome Henry the emperoure receyued the imperpall
Diademe of the cardinals. He assigned certaine lieuten-
nantes to the cities of Lumbardye.

The Flemminges rebelled against kinge Philpp of
France

The pride and tyrannye of Piers of Gaveston caused
grudge and malice betwene king Edward of England
and his nobles, so that for this cause the saied Piers by
suite of the nobles was thwisse or thryse banished & realms
and styll called againe by the kinge. Wherfore (in thys
pere) the lordes beyng confederate, slew him beside war-
wike, to the great discontentyng of the kinges mynde.

John, the emperours sonne, was king of Bobeme.

Of Andronicus and his successours, emperours of Co
stantinople: I finde no certaintie, howe longe time they
reigned: I wyll therfore name as many of theym as I
know, getting as nte the time as I can, Egnactus saiet
that Michaell Paleologus reygned aboue. xl. yeares,
next to hym he setteth Andronicus, which had longe con-
tencion with the younger Andronicus. Blondus setteth
betwene theim Carolotoannes.

6 Henry the emperour besieged the cytic Florence, he
made peace with Friderich king of Sicilie, and ledde an
armye against his mortal enemy Roberte Duke of Na-
ples. Not long after, he was poisoned by a monke, whp-
che in ministring the sacrament gave him popson.

7 The Englishmen encountred Robert Le Bruze & his
Scottes at Strualin, wher was foughten a strong bat-
talle, in the ende wherof the Englishmen were discom-

Ann.

lyted.

The year
of the
world

5272

1313

5273

1312

5274

1313

5275

1314

The thirde parte of

The ver:
of the
worlde

They were fited, and so egrely pursued by the Scottes, that many of the noble men were slaine, as the Erle of Gloucester, sir Robert Clifforde, sir Edmund of Maule, with other lordes to the number of. xlii. and knyghtes and baronettes 67. beside. xlii. men of name, whiche were taken prisoners, and. 10000. other common souldiours slaine, or after the Scottishe historye. 50. thousand. After this tyme, the sozenamed Robert Bruce, reigned as kinge of Scotlande.

The celsyns of Visce in Italy, chose for theyr Duke a noble man called Ruguicio.

Lewis the tenth, sone of Phillip Le Beue was ordeined kyng of France, and reigned. ii. yeres. He led an armie against the Fleminges, but he achieved nothing worthy memory.

§276

1315

A vilayne, called Johan Tanner, in dyuers places of England named him selfe the sonne of Edward the first and sated, that by a false nurse he was stolle out of his cradell, and Edward that was nowe kinge, put in hys place. But shortly after he was convict of his vntrowth. and confessed, that he dyd it by the mocion of a familiar spiritte.

The Scottes inuaded Irelande, and kept warre with the Irishmen the space of. liii. yeres.

Lewys was emperour of Almanie. 33. yeres, betwene him and Friderich Duke of Austreich was longe warre For part of the electours chose Friderike, part Lewis of Bavarie. These two Cesars, with their armyes, mette first at Frankforde, but they suigned not in batalle, than Leopalde, a Duke of Austrie, compynge to healte hys brother, profered battayle to Lewes, but he gaue backe, and fled to Ellengham, wher was betwene them a soze conflict so greatly to the losse of bothe parties, that neyther of them claimed victoize.

The byshoppe of Rome, after the death of Clemente, was boyde. ii. yeres. iii. monethes.

§277

1316

The castell of Berwyke was yelden by to the Scottes, by the treason of Peter Spaldyng.

A great moraine of beastes in Englande, and therewith pestilence, and other sickenesse.

Phillip

Philippe the .v. for his heyghthe surnamed the Longe
was made king of Fraunce, and reygned .vi. yerres.

The yeres
of the
world

5278

1317

¹⁰ The Scottes entred the borders of Northumberland
and most cruelly robbing and harping the countrey, spa-
red neyther man woman nor child. For this myscheyfe
was soygned so exceeding dearth & scarcitee, that wheats
was solde for .iiii. markes a quarter, the common people
did eat horsefleshe and diuers other vile beastes, and ma-
ny dyed for hunger.

At the same time was a great death in Fraunce.

Robert le Bruze, leauing James Douglas gouernour
of Scotland, went into Irelande to ayde his brother Ed-
warde.

King Edward assembled a newe hoste, and went into
Scotland, where he layed siege to Berwike. But in the
meane time the Scottes by an other way, invaded the
borders of England, and wasted the countrey euen to
Pozke, wherby Edward was constreyned to breke his
siege and retourne with great daunger.

At this time sir Hugh the Spensers, the father and the
sonne, were of great power in Englande, and by the fa-
uour of the king, practised suche cruelty, and bare them-
selve so haughtly and so proude, that no lord of this land
might gaine say the in any thing that they thought good
whereby they were in greete hatred and indignacion a-
monge the nobles.

John the .xiii. was bishoppe of Rome, .xviii. yerres. He
was a cruel and wicked tiranne, geuen only to heaping
vp of riches, and bered greatly the emperour, he proclay-
med them heretikes, which taught that Christe and his
apostels had no possessions in this worlde.

Albert and Lewys encountred the second time at Bzaf-
co, a riuer of Alsacia, where Lewes was faine to forsake
the fielde.

¹² The lordes and nobles of Englande (desesting the out-
ragious pride of the Spensers, whereby they wroughte
dayly both great dishonour to the king, and hinderance
to the common weale) in suche wise conspired agaynst
theim, that they caused the king halfe agaynst his mind
to remoue from him the Spensers, and banyshe theim

5280

1319

An n. ii.

the

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere of Christ
the realme.

Ann
sum
gli.

The Irishemen, by the ayde that they had out of Eng
lande, drove the Scottes out of their lande, at whiche
time manye of the noble men of Scotlande were slayne
amonge the which was Edward le Bruce, the kinges
brother.

In Italy Huguccio, Duke of Pype, vanquished y peo
ple of Hecuria, at the mountayne called Catinum.

5281

1329

Kinge Edward contrarie to the minde of his lordes
reuoked the Spensers from banishment, and set theym
in like auctoritee as they befoze had bene, to the greates
disturbance of the realme. and not long after pursued y
Barons, and chased them so egrelpe from place to place
that in shorte space he put to death about the nombze of
xii. of the greatest men of his realme.

The Flemminges made league with the Frenchmen.

Italie was miserablye tourmented with diuers com
mociions and sediciions of the Guelphes and Gibelines
In all these debates the Guelphes fauoured the byshops
partye, and the Gibelines the emperour, or some other
noble men.

5282

1321

After that kinge Edward hadde put to deathe manye of
his lordes, he ordeyned. W. Roberte Baldoke a man of
euell fame to be chaunceller of Englande.

The two noble men, whiche contended for the empyre
of Germante, toynded in battayle, betwene Milberge and
Oetingen, where Lewys obteyned the victorie, and Frie
derich was disconfited and taken.

The leproses or lazars, by the counsaile of the Jewes
poysoned diuers wels in France, and were therfoze put
to shameful death.

5283

1322

In Englande the sonne appered as bloud, and so con
tinued. vi. houres.

Lewis the emperour ordeyned in the cities of Italye
certayne deputies, to gouerne the same to his behoulfe.

The Scottes inuaded the realme of Englande.

Rainerius, Lampertus de Raponibus, Joannes An
dree lawiers, Marignana, Platearius phisicians, Rai
mundus Lullus, Franciscus Baronis, Nicholas de
Lyra, and William Occham were famous.

The

Ann. 122. The citizens of Luke and Pyle in Italy expelled Hugucio, with his sonne Perius, and toke for their gouernour one Castrucio, which was before time imprisoned in the citee of Luca, by the forenamed Hugucio. The yere of the world. The yere of Christ.

Charles the third, and sonne of Philippe the sayre, began his dominion ouer France, and reigned .v. yeres.

16 Kinge Edward, with a myghtye armie, entred Scotlande, but with syckenesse, and other mysfortunes that chaunced amonge his souldiers, he within shorte space was forced to retourned into Englande, wherof sir James Douglas, and the Scottes hauing knowlage, pursued him in suche wise, that they slewe many Englyshmen, and had wel nere taken the kynge. 5284 1322

17 Charles of France warred vpon the landes of king Edward in Gascoyne and Guyan, and toke ther many townes and castels. 5285 1324

Kinge Edward sent his wife Isabell to entreat with her brother Charles for peace, or (as Froisard sayth) the quene her selfe, fearing the tyrannie and mischiete of the Spensers, fled with her yong son Edward into France and was gentelly receyued of her brother, whych made great promise to ayde her agaynst the iniurie & tyranny of the Spensers.

Robert duke of Buell, after he had obteyned the citee of Gean, expelled the Gibelines from Soana. Galaeus chased the Guelphes out of y citee called Mercelle. 18 Charles king of France, partly being corrupted with money, partly fearing the manassinges of the bishop of Rome (whiche was in lyke maner bribed with riche giftes, by the Spensers) forsoke his sisters quarel, and commaunded her to abyde his lande. 5286 1325

19 Quene Isabell, by the ayde and bealpe of sir John of Beinhalt, with a small company of Henowayes, retourned into Englande, to whom the nobles and commoners gathered in great noubre, and pursued the kynge, the Spensers, and other enemies so narrowly, that shortly after they toke them, and kept the king in prison at Barteclet, where not longe after, he was murdered by sir Roger Mortimer, sir Hugh the Spensers, John Erle of Arundell, Robert Baldoke and other tyrannes, whych of 5287 1326

The third parte of

The yere
of the
world
5288

The yere
of christ
1327

longe time had greued the realme, they put to worthe punishment.

Edward the thirde, after the depoling of his father was crowned kinge of Englande and reygned .50. yeres. This man, besyde al other gistes of nature, was endued with passing comely beauty and fauour, of witte prouident, circumspect, and gentill, doing nothing without great wisdom and consideracion. He was a man of excellent modestie and temperance, and aduanced suche persons to high dignities, as did most passe othet in integritie and innocency of lyfe. In feates of armes he was very experte, as the noble prowesse by hym atchieued doe well declare. Of his liberalitee & clemencie he shewed many great examles, bresely in al princely vertues he was so excellēt, that few noble men before his time can be to him compared. At the beginninge he was chesely ordered by sir Roger Mortimer and his mother Isabell.

Robert kinge of Scottes sent his defiance to yonge kinge Edward, and invaded the borders of England.

King Edward, made preparacion toward Scotland, at which time fel great variance betwene the archers of Englande, and the souldiours of sir John of Heynalde and shortly after the English army being in the borders was so sore distressed for lacke of forage and other necessities, that they were all in great danger. By the treason of sir Roger Mortimer the Scottes escaped without battaile, wherby the kinge losse that byage and all his charges.

By the counsaile of sir Roger Mortimer and the olde queene, king Edward made a dishonourable peace with the Scottes. For he restored to theim all auncient wyrtinges, charters, and patentcs, whereby the kynges of Scotland had obliged the to be feudaries to the crowne of Englande, with other like vnprofitable conditions. Lewys the emperour at the instance of many noble men of Italye, came to Millaine, where he according to hancient custome, was crowned with a Diademe of yron.

John the bishoppe of Rome excommunicated Lewys and disanulled his election, because he vled imperial dignitie

Anni re gustee in Italy befoze he was auctorised by him. Thys The yere The yere
 gum an: bariance continued well nere. xx. yeaues, in whiche the of the of Christ
 gli. emperour profered often times to make entreatie of con world.

corde and peace, but the stiffe necked tyrannie of Rome wolde neuer bende. The wytinges of bothe partes concerning this controuersie remaine at these dayes, in the which the byshop feareth not to make his auaunte, that he had full power to create and depose kinges and emperours at his pleasure, and at the same tyme were many learned men, whiche did greatly disallowe the byshop of Romes doynges, amonge the whiche was Occham, a man in his dayes of great fame. A booke also was made by a learned man, and geue to the emperour, which was called, *defensor pacis*, that is, the Defendour of peace. Wherin this controuersy is disputed, and the bishop of Romes unlawfull tyrannie sette forth to the uttermost. A great cause of this bariance (as some write) was bicause one of the emperours secretaries, unknowing to the emperour in cerayne of his letters had called the bishop the beast rising out of the sea, alluding to the place of the Apocalips

Castrucius gouernour of Luke, and Accus of Villain slaying their pissaunce, banquished and slew the Florentines.

¶ Lewis the emperour was receiued into Rome wyth great honour, and crowned with the imperial Diademe of Stephene de Columna a cardynall.

Castrucius recovered the citie Bissoznall, and shortly after ended his lyfe.

¶ Que Peter was made Anspape by the emperoure against John, whiche was all this tyme in France, Lewis retournyng to Germanie lefte byshop Peter at Luca.

¶ Charles the frenche kinge dyed wythout issue, after whom the kingdome of fraunce by right of inheritance was due to kinge Edward of Englande, for so much as he was the sonne of Isabell the syster of Charles. But they defected him of his righte, saynge, that the crowne of France was neuer wont to come by succession to the woman, but to the issue male.

2 David the yonge prince of Scotland married Jane the sister of king Edward.

5189

1328

Dale:

The third parte of

The yeres
of the
worlde

The yeres
of chryste

Dulcinus and Duuandus heretikes.

Ann
sum
gli.

5290

1329

Phillip of Haloyes, by the counsaile of the .xx. yeres and specially of **Robert of Artois**, was made kynge of France, and reigned .xv. yeres. He made warre upon the Flemminges (whiche rebelled against **Lewys** their Erle) and them banquished in a stronge battaile, and restored **Lewys** to the possession of his landes, after he had beaten downe and destroyed the towne of **Castell**.

Muzanes the seconde kinge of **Turkes**, reigned .xxii. yeres. He wanne **Bzasis** from the **Grecians**, while **Cantazzenus**, and **Paleologus** contended for the empyre.

Edmund Erle of Kent, vnckle to king **Edward of Eng** lande, beyng falsely accused of treaso, was by sir **Roger Mortimer** put to death.

Prince Edward was borne at **Woodstocke**. which in procelle of tyme grew to a noble and famous man, and was in his days counted the flower of chivalry throught out all the worlde.

After the death of **Robert Le Bruze**, **David** his sonne viii. yeres of age, succeeded in the kingdome of **Scotland** and reigned .xxix. yeres.

5291

1330

Sir **Roger Mortimer** was accused for dyuers poyntes of treason, and namely that he was ouer familiar wyth the olde quene **Isabell** the kinges mother, for whiche accusations he was shortly after beheaded.

Robert Erle of Artois, a man of great power in France was banished the realme for a certayne plea, whiche (as men thought) he made by vnlawful meanes to the Erle dome of **Artois**, who not long after came into **England** and excited king **Edward** to claime the crown of France.

The cittyssyns of **Vise** and **Luca** in **Italye**, whych were brought in subiection to the emperour, claymed agayne their libertee. After the emperoure was departed from **Italye**, **Boniface Erle of Vise**, toke **Peter** the Antipape, and presented him to **John**, of whom he was cast in prison, and shortly after dyed.

The **Germanes** solde the cite of **Luca** to a noble man of **Gen**.

5292

1331

Edwarde Bailloll, the sonne of **John Baillol**, late king of **Scotlande**, by lycence befoze purchased of kinge **Edward**,

warde, entred Scotlande, claimyng the crowne by the ryghte of his father, where he vanquished the Scottes, and was crowned king at Sconoe.

The yere
of the
worlde.

John king of Boheme, entering Italy, brought under his subiection Brixia, Bergamum, Luca, Parma, Vbergium and Modena.

- 6 Kyng Edward went into Scotland with a great power, and (as witnesseth the Englyshe hystories) at a place called Halldoune hill, gave to the Scottes batayle, where he obtained a triumphant victorie. So that he slew of the m. viii. C. x. knights and Baronettes. 400. Esquiers, and. 31000. common souldyours, and of the Englyshmen were slaine onely. xv. persons, at the same biage he won the towne of Edenburgh and Barwik, with many other castelles, and gave the governaunce of Scotlande to Edward Balliol, betwene whom and the Scottes were foughten many batayles, with great dyversite and change of fortune.

1293

1332

- The yonge king David fled into France.
- 7 After this time the Scottes so often rebelled, that king Edward made. iii. vyages into that lande wythin the space of. lvi. yeres. and with greute manhode alwaye vanquished his enemies, and caused theim to sweare to him feaultie and homage. In these battalles were slaine well nere all the nobillite of Scotlande, wyth insynye numbze of the common people.

1294

1333

Kyng Phillip of Fraunce made great preparacyon for a biage into the holy lande.

- 8 Bennet the. xii. was bishoppe of Rome. vii. yeres. He by the counsaile of Phillip king of Fraunce, confirmed the censours and cursinges, that John his predessour had published against Lewys the emperour.

1296

1335

Martinus Scaliger, lord of Verone, Brixia, and Bergamum in Italy, subdued of him Parma, Luca and Patalum, against him conspyred the Venecians, Florentines and dyvers princes of Italye, betwene whom were foughten dyvers batailles, greatly to the losse of bothe partes, but in yende peace was made with Scaliger on this condicion, that he shoulde forsake Patanye, Brixia and Bergamum, & holde in his possession Verone, Min-

D o o.

cence,

The third part of

The yer
of the
worlde.
5297

The yer
of Christ
1336

ence, Parma, and Luca.

Warre was proclaymed betwene the kynges of Eng-
lande and ffrancee.

The bishop of Rome beyng in ffrance, sent ambassade
to Rome, requirynge of the people, that the .ii. senatours,
whiche befoze tyme were created to gouerne the cite in
the name of the emperour, myght henceforth be ordeyned
in the bishoppes name, and gouerne the cytie to his be-
houlse, whiche was graunted, and that dignitie given
for the space of .v. yeres, to Stephene de Columna a car-
dinall, some write, that the bishop him selfe had certayne
yeres befoze vsed the auctoritie of a senatour in the em-
perours name, and now required it in his owne.

Tauleros a diuine, Cincus, Dicadus, Paulus Peruss-
nus, lawyers, Michus Splanaticus, Nicolaus de Rhe-
gio, phisicians, and S. Koke liued at this tyme.

About this tyme (as Fabian mencioneth) by reason of
scarcitie of money, was suche plentie of bytalles and o-
ther mercimonies in this realme of Englande, that the
lyke had not ben seen. For a quarter of wheate was sold
for .ii. s. a fatte gosse for .ii. d. a pigge for a peny, a fatte
ore for .vi. s. .viii. d. a fatte shepe for .vi. d. and .viii. d. .vi.
pigeons a peny.

5298

1337

King Edward, for the expedition of his warres against
the ffranche kyng, sent ambassadours into the parties
beyonde the sea, to alpe wyth him the Erle of Herynald
and others lordes, whiche obeyed not the ffranche kyng
Where, by meanes of Jaques Dartuel, he hadde great
comfort of the Flemminges, and dyuers lordes and prin-
ces of the empyre.

King Edward sent a company of men in shippes to con-
quere the towne of Gagaunt, which banquished the fle-
minges that were set ther, by the Erle to stoppe his pas-
sage into ffrance.

5299

1338

King Edward for more sure stablissement of amytie
betwene hym and the Holanders, Belanders, and Fla-
landers, sailed to Antwerpe, wher he concluded the mat-
ter with his allies, and by the consent of the empe-
roure Lewis proclaymed vicare general of the empyre.

5300

1339

The kinge of Englande, ouer and besyde a great army
of En

of Englyshe souldiours, hauing with him well nere the whole power, of the empyre, began to entre the borders of the french kinges dominion, and made claime to the whole.

whole realm of Fraunce, as his rightfull inheritaunce and for moze auctoritee named him selfe kinge of France and entermebled the armes of England with the armes of Fraunce, as it remayneth to this daye.

In this passe time a certayne of Frenchmen had entred the haven of Southampton, and robbed the towne, and vpon the sea had taken .ii. great Englysh shippes, called the Edward and the Christofer.

Franciscus Petrarcha was famous in Italye, & made poete Laureat in Rome.

Diuers robbinges, bickeringes. and small battalles were betwene the Frenchmen, and the Flemminges & Henoways and other frendes of kinge Edward.

14 King Edward sayling toward Flaunders, nie to the haven of Heluse, mette with the frenche kinges nauye, where was foughten a cruell batayle, wherof the king of Englande had the victorie, and the french flete, that was in numbze. 400. sayle, was wel nere al destroyed and the souldiours, taken, slayne, and drowned, so that of. 33000. there scaped not one.

Shortly after the king besieged Turney continuinge the time of whiche siege diuers outridinges, and enterprises were ventured by the Henoways, Almains and other his frendes, to the great hurte of bothe parties, but the moze fell still to the Frenchemen. At the ende of .xi. wekes a peace was agreed vpon for the space of .xii. monethes, and kinge Edward returned into Englande.

In this pasetime the Scottes, by fteringe and ayde of the frenchemen recovered a great part of that land, and in most cruell wise bered the englyshe garisons.

Bennet bishop of Rome, saying that the whole empire was fallen into his handes. because it was of long time boyde (for he reputed Lelops as no emperour) ordeyned rulers ouer the citee of Italye at his will and pleasure, by whom Luchinus and John his brother, obtained the gouernance of Apellayne, Mastinus Scalaget of Ueron and Vincentia, and other of dyners other places at his appointment.

Do. 11.

Robert

5301

1340

The yere
of Chris

The third part of

The yere
of the
worlde.

5312

1341

The yere of Christ 1154 Robert Stewarde gouernour of Scotlande, and Wylm Douglas conquered Berth, Strimellne, Edenbourgh and other holdes from the Englyshemen.

After the deth of John duke of Britain, mortal warre ensued betwene Charles de Bloys, and John earle of Mountfort, for the possession of that Dukedome. John of Mountfort was taken and caste in prison at Paris. but the warre was still maintained by his wife, a woman of valiant courage, who with the ayde of the Englyshemen defended her housbandes quarell vigorously, and with a great stomache.

Alexander Ramsay a Scotte, invaded the borders of Englande.

Edward Bailoll fled out of Scotlande into Englande and left all the gouernance of the realme, that he held to the vse of kinge Edwarde.

Kinge Edwarde went towarde the Scottes, but for so muche as he was disprouided of vitayles for his armye at the request of the lordes of Scotland he made league for .iiij. monethes.

King David of Scotland returned out of Fraunce into his owne countrey.

The erle Gaullier of Hanny, a noble & hardy knyght was sent of kinge Edwarde, to ayde the countesse of Britaine agaynst Charles de Bloys, where he by his manhode and pollicie atchieued many enterpryses.

5313

1342

Clement the .vi. by the labour of kynge Whyllyppe of France, succeeded Bennet in the bishopricke of Rome. He was in like maner a mortall enemy to Lewis the emperour, and confirmed the sentences, published agaynst him before time, and stirred many princes of great power to make warre vpon him. but the emperour doinge lyke for lyke, invaded the possessions of the church of Rome and ordeyned therein many deputies and rulers at his pleasure.

King David of Scotland, with muche crueltee, diuers times crossed the englyshe borders, and destroyed the towne of Durham, wherfore kinge Edwarde sped hym thitherwarde in all haste, but a peace was entreated for .iiij. yeres, without any notable battaile.

King

King Edward sente Robert Dartops, Erle of Ryche: The yere of the
 mount, with the countesse of Britaine into her countrey of the
 who wasted and destroyed those partes veray soze, and worlde
 shortly after died of a wound that he receyued at the ch
 see of Hannes. 5304 1343

Clement bishop of Rome, toke vpo him to geue diuers
 bishoprikes and benefices, which than fel boyde in Eng
 lande, wherwith the king was greatly discontented. In
 so much that he sent out commissions, and freight com
 mandementes, that no man should present or induct a
 ny suche person, that so by the bishoppe was promoted
 without the agremente of the kinge, because it touched
 his prerogatiue.

When Lewis the emperor, at the instance of his no
 bles, with great humilitee made diuers meanes for en
 treatie of con corde with Clement the bishop, his outragi
 ous pride prescribed to him so shameful and vnworthye
 conditions, as vneth the vilest slave in the world would
 haue condescended vnto, amonge the whiche were, that
 he should openly acknowlage his errors and dysobedy
 ence, & therewith to resigne the empire, neuer to receyue
 it, but at the bishops pleasure, and moreover to yeld him
 selfe & his childezen, with al his goodes into his handes.

King Edward with a strong armie sayled into Brit
 taine, and besieged the citee of Hannes, Kents, & Paun
 tes, & toke the towne of Dynant. By meane of two car
 dinalles, peace was concluded for a certayne space.

18 The order of the garter, first inueted and ordeyned by
 king Edward. 5305 1344

The erle of Derby was sent by king Edward wyth a
 company of englishe souldiours, to make warre in Gas
 coyne, where he wanne the towne of Bargarath, the ri
 coll, with many other townes and castelles, befoze Anbe
 roche the erle of Derbye, by the pollicie of Walter of
 Manti, with a thousande Englisshemen, discomfited and
 slew x. thousand Frenchmen, and Gascoynes, and toke
 prisoner the erle of Lay their chiefe capitayne, with dy
 uers other nobles, and subdned the countrey.

19 John duke of Normandy the sonne of king Philippe
 came with a great army into Gascoyne against the erle
 5306 1345
 D o o. iii. of

The third part of

The year
of the
wilde.

The year of Derby.

of Christ

Godfrey of Anticourte, was banished out of Fraunce and fled to king Edward, whom he incensed and stirred to invade Normandie.

Jaques Dartnell, a great friende of kinge Edward was murdered at Gaunt in Flaunders.

Gaulter duke of Athenes, usurped tirannie at Florence. monethes, whom Angelus Acciolus expelled and restored them to their libertee.

1307

1346

The king of England, with his son prince Edward sailed into Normandie, and overrode, spoiled, and destroyed the countrey before him, even to Paris, and gathered wonderful riches of prey, whiche he sente into England. Shortly after he encountered the french kinge nie to the forest of Cressie, where he had not in his host eyght man in comparison of the french armie, and obtained of them a noble and triumphant victorie, by the manhode of his archers. In that battell was slayne the floure of the chivalrie of Fraunce, for there fell on that part, the kinge of Boheme with ten other great princes foure score banners. 1200. knights, and mo than. 30000. of the common souldiours, after this victorie king Edward went toward Calles, and besieged the towne the space of a leuen monethes.

Bishop Clemet, with most dispitious wordes, enueyghed in a sermon against Lewis the emperour, & caused certaine of the electours to chose a newe emperour.

While king Edward besieged Calys, David of Scotland by exciting of the french kinge, warred upon the borders of England. But the Quene assembled a strong armie, as well of the clergie and prestes, as the other commons and nere to Durham toke in bataille the king of Scottes prisoner, with many of his greatest lordes, and erlee, and slewe one and other 15000. souldyours. After this victorie, the Englishmen toke the castell of Korburch, subdued Anandale, Galloway, Pers, Teulda, Twedale and Cetrike forest.

1308

1347

The warre was quickened againe in Britaine, and sir Charlos of Bloys taken prisoner by the Englishmen but the warre continued fiercely, betwene his wife and the

ni re the forenamed Countesse of Mountfozte.

Charles king of Boheme was chose emperor, while
Lewys was yet a liue, who not longe after dyed.

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
of Christ

After the deathe of Robert kinge of Sicillie and Apulye,
his daughter Johan toke to her husbände Andrew the
sonne of Lewys kinge of Hungarye, whom not longe af-
ter she murdered, and married Lewys Duke of Tarant.

Edwarde Bayloll, and the Erle of Northamberlande
spoyled Louthall and Cludisdale in Scotlande.

Lewis king of Hungarye came with a strong army in
to Italye, to reuenge his sonnes death, where he chaled
the queene Johan, and obtained her kingdome of Apulia.

Diuers of the cities of Germany, behemety withstode
the tyranny of the Romaine byshop, toward Lewis their
emperor.

Nicolas, a man of unknown byrthe, takynge on hym
great auctorite in the cytie of Rome, expelled the sena-
tors, and saied he woulde restore the cytie to her priu-
ate libertie. But shortly after he was taken of Charles
the emperor, and sent into Fraunce to the byshop.

About this tyme the emperor solde the Duchy of Br-
lance and Delphinoy to the French kynge.

Cales was yelded vp to kinge Edwarde of Englande
22. Lewys whan he had subdned to him the kyngdome of
Apulia, returned to Hungary.

1309

1348

Peter the first was ordeined kinge of Spaine. He pas-
sed all his pcedecessours in crueltie, manslaughter, and o-
ther myschefe, he put to death all the nobyltie, and the
chiefe of his affinitie and kynred.

William Douglas, the sonne of James Douglas, wan
againe certayne landes in Scotlande, that the Englysh
men had subdued.

A great and wonderfull famyne and pestylence raged
throughtout all the worlde. In Italye scante the .x. per-
son of an hundred was left on liue. In the city of Parys
in Fraunce, dyed .50. thousande. In S. Denys. 14000.
in one yere.

A treason was conspyred by the capytaine of Cales to
betraye it againe to the Frenchmen. The bystory wher
of declareth wonderfully the great manhode, pollicy, ly-
beralitye

The third part of

The yere
of the
worlde.
5310

The yere berallste, and gentylnesse of the noble kynge Edward, Anno
of Edward the. 156. ca. 10. of his first booke.

1349

Certaine of the electours of Germanye agreed not to
the election of Charles, and therfore profered the empire
to king Edward of England, who refused it as a thing
by reason of the bishop of Rome, full of troubled and un-
quietnesse, than that chose Friderich Marques of Misna
whiche in lyke maner refused it.

In this yere was so great death in the cite of London
that ouer and besyde the bodys buried in churches and
churche yardes, monasteries and other accustomed pla-
ces of buriall, there were layed in the charterhouse yard
30000. persons and aboue, as writeth Fabians.

At this time in many partes of Italy France and Ger-
manie, wandzed dyuers great companies of the phanta-
sticall sette of theini, whiche vsed to scourge and whippe
theini selfe, pretending therein great holinesse and religi-
on, of the supersticion of these men ye maye reade in the
cronycle of Albertus Crantz, Lt. viii. ca. 28. and in the
addycions iuigned to the Abbote of Alsperges cronicle.

5311

1350

This was the yere of Jubilee or cleane remission of sin
nes, kept at Rome at euery fifti winters end, as the yere
of Grace was continued at canturburie.

Philipp kinge of Fraunce ended hys lyfe, whose body
was buried at S. Denis, his bowels at Jacobins in Pa-
ris, and his herte at Bourefontaine in Maloys.

Johan the eldest son of Philipp, and Duke of Norman-
dy, was ordeined king of Fraunce.

Johan deputie of Millaine, iuigned to his lordshyp the
cite of Bonone.

5312

1351

Clement bishop of Rome ordeined Lewis prince of Ta-
rent king of Naples, and made peace betwene the kyng
of Hungary and Johan Queene of Naples, whiche (as
I sayed) murdered hir husbände. Of hir also the byshop
bought the cite of Aquino.

This yere was so gret dearth in France, that a ceptier
of wheate was woorth. viii. li. of Parys money, and a
ceptier of otes. xl. s.

Kyng Edward ouercame Charles Constable of Fran-
in a battaille on the sea.

The

- 26 The emperor of Constantinople, and the kyng of Arragon were confederate with the Venecians. The Genowayes chased the emperor of Constantinople and overcame the Venecians and Catalanes. The year of the world 5312 The year of the church 1352
- Recupetus, Lopus, Bartholus, lawiers, Gentilis Fulginas, Dinus de Garbo, Trustanus, phisians, and Damascenus a phileosopher were famous.
- 27 Innocente the. vi. byshop of Rome. ix. yeares. viii. monethes and. vi. dayes.
- Charles kinge of Navarre caused Charles Constable of Fraunce to be murdered in his bed. For which thing grew great displeasure betwene him & the French king.
- The Genowayes beyng vanquished of the Venecians submitted them selfe and all theyrs to the archebishop of Pyllaine. whiche was than chiefe gouverneur of the cytye. In this discomfiture the Genoways leste well nere xl. galeis.
- The towne and castel of Gules was yelded to the Englishmen.
- 28 Carolus Johannes emperor of Constantinople, after he had by force of armes expelled Cataculines whiche afflicted the empyre, by the ayde of Frances of Genoway, returned into his countrey, to whom in reward he gave the ile of Lesbos.
- Charles emperor of Germaine was crowned at Pyllaine with a crowne of yron.
- 29 Prince Edward of Wales with a strong company of souldyours passed into Gascoyne, where he made soze war, and destroyed castels and townes before him, wpth great successe, and toke the castell and towne of Rhemorentide, with other.
- Kynge Edward sailed to Calles, and began to make warre vpon Fraunce, but shortly after he returned, because the Scottes rose and invaded the English borders.
- Charles received the imperiall Diademe at Rome, of ii. cardinales, on this condicion, that he should not tary at Rome, nor in Italye.
- The citisyens of Pise rebelled agaynst the emperor.
- John, kyng of France, toke Charles king of Navarre with dyuers other noble men, as they were baketing in
- P p p. the

The thirde parte of

The verie
of the
worlde

Theyere the castel of Roan, of the whiche, some he kept in prisson, Anne
of Christ some immediatly he put to death. gum

About this time the Venecians were overcome of the
Genoways by the ayde of the archebyschop of Pyllaine,
and lost aboue. 30. galeis. At whiche tyme was reuen-
ged the great losse that the Genowais had taken at their
handes not longe before.

The Duke of Lancaster, beyng confederate with Phi-
lyp, brother to kinge Charles of Nauerre, made warre
in Normandy, and heloe ther dyuers landes and castels
agaynst the Frenche kinge.

5317

1356

Prince Edward of Males, ny to the cite of Poicters
fought bataille with kynge John of Fraunce, of whō
the prince by his marciall pollicie, wanne a noble victo-
rye, notwithstanding that he had in his armye but one
ly eyght thousande souldiours one and other, and on the
Frenche parte were. 60000. feightinge men. In this con-
flicke kinge John was taken, with his young son Phyl-
lyp, and many of his nobles. The Englyshemen hadde
twise so many prisoners of the Frencemen, as thei were
in number them selves, whiche is almost increadible.

A great eclips and earthquake in dyuers partes of Ger-
many, and therwith a great pestilence.

5318

1357

In the time that kynge John was prisoner in England
great sedicion, ciuile discorde, tumulty and ruffling was
in the realme of Fraunce, for so much as the Duke of Nor-
mandy, the kinges eldest sonne, had much trouble with
the citisins of Paris, and diuers bzeaches and defiances
betwene hym and the kinge of Nauerre. Many compa-
nies of straungers, also ouerrode and spoyled dyuerse
countreys.ouer and bysyde at this a great noumber of
the rude commons conspired agaynst the nobles in such
wyse, that they entended to haue destroyed all the noble
lytie, and practysed mosse extreme cruelty and despitous
vilany to dyuers gentilmen and their ladyes and dangh-
ters. This miserie continued. iiii. yeres.

Kynge David of Scotlande was deliuered out of prisson
and set a libertie, after he had been a leuen yerres priso-
ner in Englande, and promysed to bringe the crowne of
Scotlande to kynge Edwardes sonne.

Egidius

- 31 **Cardinal** **Egidius** a cardinall, and the bishops legate or graunde capitayn of his warres in Italy, conquered again a great parte of Italye, and all S. Peters patrimonie, whiche diuers noble men had innaded, by the appoyntment of Lewis late emperor, and expelled them all, sayyng certayne which did for feare submitte them to the church of Rome, whom he suffered to remayne in their possessions.
- 32 **Hyng** **Edward** toke the prince his sonne, passed the sea to Calis, and from thence rode throught Fraunce, by Picardy, Artoys, Rheenes, Campaine, and other places even to Brittain, ever destroying the countre before him. The garrisons also made warre in this behalfe in Beaunois, in Picardy, in Wy, in Campaine, and destroyed and spoyled well nere all the countrey. Moreover the kinge of Navarre vexed sore the marches of Normandy. Thus was the realme of France miserably beset at this time on all sides.
- 33 A finall peace was concluded betwene the kynges of England and of France, on this condiction, that kinge Edward should haue to his propre possession the countreys of Gascoyn and Guyen, Poytiers, Limosin, Beleuile, Crantes, Cales, Guines, and diuers other lordshippes, townes, castels, and all the landes to them belongyng, without knowlagynge of any soveraigntee, obessace, homage, or subiection for the same, and that the king of France shoulde pay for his ransome. 30000. scutes, King John returned into France.
- The Monnes of S. Brigettes order began first. The cite of Bononia in Italy, which belonged to the lordes of Millaine, came to the possession of the church of Rome, by the treason of one Aulegianus, in rewarde wherof the towne of Firmium was geuen to hym.
- Greuous warre betwene the citelins of Pise & Florence.
- 34 The Duchye of Burgoyne fel by herstage to king John of France.
- The warre continued still in Brittain betwene Charles de Bloys, and the countesse of Mountfort, and her sonne John Erle of Mountfort.

The year	The year
1319	1358
1320	1359
1321	1360
1322	1361
After	

The thirde parte of

The vere
of the
worlde

The vere
of Christ

After the peace concluded betwene England & France Anno
remayned diuers felowships of robbers called compani
ons, that liued only by rauen and pillage, which wasted
and robbed the countre of Fraunce in most cruel wile,
and could not be expelled by any meanes, but in sundry
conflictes, ouercame the lordes of Fraunce. They ver-
ed and disquieted also Italy and Germanie, and robbed
in those partes verie sore.

1362

1362

A great death and pestilence in the realme of Englad. 36

Urbane the. v. beyng ordeyned bishop of Rome at A-
uignon, sent Agedius his cardinall and legate, with a
great puissance into Italy, who by his meanes incensed
Lewys Gonzaga, Nicolas Estensis, Francisce Cacrort
us agaynst Bernabas lord of Millayne, in suche wyse,
that he was of them sore beaten, and in the ende so ban-
quished and wounded in battel, that he scantly escaped
the daunger. With those example other being sore as-
bashed, submitted them to the church of Rome. Thus
mekely and godly came that wicked church to her great
possessions, whiche her patrones will nedes father vpon
the godly emperour Constantine.

In England (as Fabian writeth) were sene castels and
hostes of men in the ayer.

Melchella souldaine of Egypte.

1363

1363

Amurates kinge of the Turkes, blyng the ships of the
Genowayes passed Helespoute and arrived in Europe, 37
wher he conquered the townes of Hadrianopolis, and
Calliopolis, with other cities, and with a great puissance
ouerthrowe them, which encountred him at his coming
A great wind in Englande, wherwith steeles and tow-
ers were ouerthrowen.

King John of France came into England and shortly
after dyed at the Sauoy in London.

Prince Edward toke possession of the duchy of Guy-
an and Aquitaine.

1364

1364

Charles the. vi. or after some. v. was ordeyned kynge
of France. He was of witte righte sage and subtille, that 38
well appeared all his life time. For althoughe he kepte
him priuy in his chambze, taking his plesure and spore
yet he conquered agayne that, which his predecessours
had

anni re had lost armed in the fiede, and theyz swozdes in theyz handes.

The pere
of the
world.

The pere
of Christ

Sir Bertram of Clequy, in the quarell of the French kinge, nye to Cocherel, banquished and toke prisoner a capitayne of the king of Navarre, called the Captall de Beusse, and slewe a great nombze of his souldiours.

Albergothus, Baldus, & Angelus lawiers, Johannes de Linerits, an astronomer, Johannes Vocarius, & Henricus de Wallia were famous.

Charles de Bloys encountered with John Mountfort which long before hadde striven for the Duchye of Britayne, of whom he was banquished, taken, and slayne, & many Frenchmen and Britaynes, which toke his parte. After whiche time the erle Mountfort, had quiete possession of that Duchye.

Henry the bastard not susteyninge the injury and cruel tyrannye of Peter hys brother, kinge of Spayne, by the counsaile and comfort of the Romayne bishop, and ayde of the Frenchmen and Arragones, expelled hym out of the realme, and toke on him the crowne.

Charles came to his brother Phylippe the Duchy of Burgoyne.

39 Dampeter of Spayne fled to prince Edward of Aquytayne, to whom he made complaynt of the violēce of his brother Henry, that expelled him out of his kingdome.

5326

1365

There was an heretike burned in Spire, whose opinions were these, that Christ in the time of his passiō was so forsaken of his father, that he doubted of his saluacyon: that Christ on the crosse for wonderfull tourmentes and peynes, cursed his mother that bare him, & the erth that receyued his bloud: that a man may so much profite in this life, that he nedeth not to fast and pray.

40 Prince Edward entred Spayne, with a gret puissance where he ouercame the Spaniards and Frenchmen in a stronge and fierse battaile, and expelled Henry the bastard, settinge Peter in his former estate as kyng of Spayne. But not long after the princes returning home Henry repayred his army, and warred upon his brother so fiercely, that in the ende he utterly banquished him and put him to death: and then withoute resistance possessed

5327

1366

P p p. iii.

the

The third parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
of christe

the kingdome of Spayne.

Wincellaus was ordeyned the .xii. king of Boheme by his father Charles the emperour.

Witellise, about this time was famous in Englands, who for speaking agaynst the usurped power of the Romayne bishop, and other enormities thā accustomed in the church was called an heretike.

King Edward of England gaue commaundement that Peter pence shoulde be no more gathered & payed to Rome.

1328

1367

Prince Edward to arrere a sawage, set great taxes and impositions upon the people of Aquitaine, whiche thing the erle of Arminake, of Bret, of Berigort and other nobles would not in any wise consent vnto, but appealed to the french king for remedy, and in suche wyse perswaded him, that he, contrary to the league, summoned the prince to appere at Barps, by meane wherof the peace was broken, & open warre agayne proclaymed betwene both princes, to the great mortalitee and desolacion of the people on bothe partes, but the more losse & damage fell alway to the kinge of Englands. In so muche that in the ende, he lost the more parte of the landes whiche was graunted him by the composition and agreement of peace. And fortune whych the space of .xl. yeres had pleasantly smiled vpon kinge Edward, now in his later dayes frowardly frowned & chaged her coper.

1329

1368

Charles the emperoure yode toward Italy with his wife and children. In his tozney he subdued to the empire of the citees of Luke and Viniare, whych a certaine time had rebelled, & were in subiection, the one to Vise the other to Florence.

The duke of Lancastre arrived at Calys, and entred Fraunce with a company of souldiours, where not far from Arde the duke of Burgoyne lodged within a myle of his army, with a great power the space of .xliii. daies, and neuer profered batrile, but lastly stole away pryvely in the night: and then entred the Duke further into Fraunce.

1330

1369

Urbane bishop of Rome retourning into Fraunce left John Baucuth an englysheman, as his chiefe capitaine to be

And
gum
gli.

41

42

43

to be

anni re to defende the right of the church against the rebels and
 gum an: other enemies, and not longe after dyed.

Whyllyp Duke of Burgoyne toke to wyfe Margarete
 daughter of Lewys Erle of Flaunders.

Queene Phillyp of England dyed, whiche was a wo-
 man of great sanctimony and bulded the college in Ox-
 ford called Quenes college,

Sir Robert Knoles entred the realme of Fraunce with
 a stronge army, and passed even by Parys ranged in ba-
 taye, and throughtout the countreys of Fraunce robing
 and spollyng as he went without any notable bataile, at
 whiche blage by reason of discention that barned in the
 Englyshe hofte, dyuers men were slaine and taken priso-
 ners of their enemies.

St: Bertam of Clesqui, a noble and valyant knyghte,
 was ordeined Constable of Fraunce. He wanne againe
 many cities, towne, castels, and holdes in Poicters, Li-
 mossin, and other countreys, from the kyng of England,
 and restozed them to the signorpe of Fraunce.

Gregozpe the .xi. byshop of Rome.

44 Kyng Dauid of Scotlande, makynge prouisiō to go on
 pylgremage to Ierusalem ended his lyfe.

Robert Stewarde succeeded Dauid of Scotlande, and
 reigned .xix. yeres.

45 Charles the emperour by meanes of giftes, whiche he
 promysed the electours obtelneq his soonne Wincellaus
 king of Boheme, to be made Cesar, and caused them of
 the empyre to sweare to hym feaultie and homage.

The Erle of Penbroke, comynge on the se to rescue the
 towne of Rochell, was encountred with a flote of Spa-
 niardes, whiche king Henrie of Castile had sent to ayde
 the frenche king. Of these Spaniardes after cruel figh-
 the Erle was taken, with sir Guscarde de Angle, and o-
 ther to the noubre of an. 160. persones, and the moze
 parte of his men slayne and drowned.

Kynge Edward beynge soze displeased with the takynge
 of the Erle of Penbroke, sent hys soonne the pryncce into
 Fraunce, who by contrary wyndes was kepte on the sea
 the space of .xi. weekes, and than retourned agayne into
 Englande.

Anna

The yere
 of the
 world.

The yere
 of Christ

1370

1338

5332

1371

The third parte of

The yere of the worlde 1333	The yere of chriſte 1342	Amurates kinge of Turkes invaded Serula and Bulgaria. Lazarus king of Serula was ſlayne in battaile, and Amurates not long after murdered of his owne ſervaunte.	46
		Bertram of Cleſqui Conſtable of Fraunce warred ſo fiercely upon John Erie of Mountfozte, Duke of Brytayne, bycauſe he ſemed to ſauour the kyng of England that he was forced to forſake his landes and fly to kinge Edward, and that Duchy was well nere all ſeiled to the uſe of the Frenche kyng. John of Gaunte, Duke of Lancaſter, entred by Calles into France, and paſſed throughout the reame by Vermandois and Campaine iuſt to Burdeaur in Aquitaine without batayle. Not withſtandynge the great hurt and damage they dyd to the townes and countreys as they paſſed.	
1334	1373	Bazaites the .iiii. kyng of Turkes. The Genowayes for certayne diſworſhip doen to them invaded and ſpoyled the contrey of Cypres, and conquered y^e citie of Famauguiſta. Thei conſtreigned alſo their king Petrine to pay vnto them a great tribute the ſpace of certayne yeres. Diuers entreties of peace were made betwene the king of Englande and Fraunce, by meane of the biſhoppe of Rome, but none was concluded.	47
1335 1336	1374 1375	A great dearth bered the countrey of Italie .ii. yeres. The people of Florence deſirous of libertye, gaue occaſion to many cyties of Italie to forſake the biſhoppe of Romes domynion, wherby enſued great tumulte and warre in all the countrey. The people that fyrſt rebelled were the Tybernates, the Peruſines, Tuderlines, Spoletanes, Cagubines, the ciſſyngs of Aliterbium, Fozolium, and Aſculum. Many wonderfull ſickenefſes fell amonge the people, as well in Italie as in Englande, wherof they died mervailouſly. Warre and rufflynge betwene bozderers of Englande and Scotlande. The Duke of Brytaine, by the healpe of Engliſhemen recovered againe many caſtels and townes. Gregorie	48 49

Gregory the. xi. contrarye to the minde of the frenche kyng, departed out of Fraunce, and retourned to Rome 70. yeres after the byshops see was first transferred out of Italy into Fraunce.

Byshop Gregory excommunicated the Florentines, but they yet regarded his curse, and continued their priestes to minister diuine seruice.

Prince Edward of Englands departed out of this life who was in his tyme the floure of chivalrye.

Andronicus expelled his father from the imperiall by: gistle of Constantinople, whom the Venetians restored againe to the empyre, whereby ensued great warre betweene Venice and Genoway, for the one took part with the father, the other with the sonne.

King Edward the. iii. ended his life in Richemonte the. xxi. daye of June.

The duke of Anjou, the constable of France, Owen, of Wales, with many other of the frenche parte, made sore warre in Gascoyne, Guyan, Poitiers, and Britaine and conquered agayne diuers castles, townes, & cities, subiecte before to the king of England.

Owen of Wales besieged Mortaine a yere & an halfe, & ther was slayne by the treasor of one of his seruantes.

Richard the. ii. the sonne of Prince Edward of Wales, was ordeined king of England, being as yet but a leuen yeres of age, in bounty and lyberalitye, he farre passed all his progenitors, but he was neuer muche geuen to rest and quietnesse, and loved lytel deedes of armes and marcyall prowes, and for that he was younge, he was most ruled by young counsaile, and regarded nothyng the aduertisements of the sage and wyse men of his realme. For the chiefe about hym were of no wysedome nor estimacion, which thing turned his land to great trouble, and of him selfe in fine to extreme myserye.

The frenche king sent a great naute to the sea, which entred in dyuers partes of this realme, and dyd muche harme in the places where they lauded.

By the entysing of the Frenchmen, the Scottes began to rebell, and a squier of thys called Alexander Ramsay, with

The yere of the

1337

1376

1338

1377

The third part of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

1339

1378

set, with. xl. other, by stealth in a night toke the castell of Barwike, which was rescued and recovered by the Erle of Northumberlande.

Warre renewed againe betwene the kinges of France and of Navarre, who shortly after was allied with king Rycharde of Englande.

The Spanyardes of Castile warred upon the kinge of Navarre, and besieged the citie Pampelon.

Charles emperor of almaine, came into France, where he beyng received with great honour and triumphe, established with the kynge and his nobles perpetuall amitie and friendship.

All that the kynge of Navarre hid in Normandye became Freuche saving one castell.

After Gregorie the leuenth a great schisme rose in the church of Rome for the election of the byshop. For the cardinales of Italy chose an Italian byshop, and named him Urbane the. vi. The cardinales of France in the cite of Fondes elected Robert cardynal of Basyle, and named him Clement the. vii. These two blessed bishops, disallowed one the others election, and cursed eche other with most cruel censures, so that mortal warre betwene them was arreared to the bitter disturbance of all Christendome. Germany, Hungary, Englande, Fannonie and Italy fauored Urbane, France, Spaine, Cataloigne helde with Clement, and thus beganne the schisme, whiche continued. 39. yere. For neuer one of these holye byshops woulde geue ouer, lest the tone shoulde seme more meke and lowly than the other.

The Germanes bered them selves with moste cruell warres.

Bazates king of Turkes, desirous to reuenge the death of his father, made fierce warre upon the Bulgares, and banqueted their kynge Marcus in a great batayle, and subdued to his seignorie a great parte of Bulgarie.

The lordc Beuell of England was sent with a company of souldiers to raise the siege before Montaigne in Picardie, and to ayde the king of Navarre agaynst the Spanyardes of Castile.

1340

1379

Peace betwene the Spanyardes and the Navarroyes, shortly

the yere of the world

the yere of Christ

the yere of the world

the yere of the world

the yere of Christ

the yere of the world

the yere of the world

the yere of Christ

the yere of the world

the yere of the world

the yere of Christ

the yere of the world

the yere of the world

the yere of Christ

the yere of the world

the yere of the world

the yere of Christ

the yere of the world

the yere of the world

the yere of Christ

the yere of the world

the yere of the world

the yere of Christ

the yere of the world

the yere of the world

the yere of Christ

the yere of the world

the yere of the world

the yere of Christ

the yere of the world

534

1380

The third part of

The year
of the
worlde.

The year
of Christ

into Britayne, without battayle, and euer destroyed the
countrey as he went, and skirmished with the frenche-
men.

Warre betwene the king of Castile and of Portugal.

Charles the. vi. beinge. xli. yerres of age, was ordey-
ned kinge of Fraunce, vnder the gouernaunce of his un-
cles, the Duke of Anjou, the Duke of Berry, the Duke
of Burgoyne. &c.

5342

1381

After longe and cruell warre bothe by sea and lande, &
peace was agreed betwene the genoways & Veneciās.

The erle of Cambridge sayled into Portugall, with a
company of men to ayde the kinge agaynst the kinge of
Castile.

By meanes of a payment that was set bpō the people
of England, the commons of the land, and especially of
Kent and Essex, sodenlye rebelled, and assembled toge-
ther vpon blacke heathe to the nōbre of. 60000. and a-
boue, which had to their capitaynes Watte Tyler, Jack
Straw, Jacke Sheparde, Tomme Wyllar, Hob Kar-
ter, and other suche noble personages. They caused mu-
che trouble and businesse in the realme, and chiefly a-
bout the citee of London, where they practised much vil-
lanie in destroying many goodly places of the nobles as
the Sauoy and other, and being assembled in Smithfeld
used them selves very proudly and vnreuerently toward
the kinge, but by the manhode and wisdom of Willy-
am Maulworth mayre of London, that rude companye
was disceuered, and fled as shepe to their owne houses.
Some write that these rebelles pretended cause of lyber-
tee, for that they were oppressed, and bled as slaues by
nobles of the realme.

5343

5382

Lewis duke of Anjou (to whom bishoppe Clement
had geuen the kingdom of Sicillie, Naples Puell, and
Calabre) went with an army of. 30000. men, into Italy
agaynst his enemy Charles de la Bayes, nephew to
the king of Hungarye, who had cast the quene Johan in
pylson, and held by force muche of her landes, and tooke
part wyth the Urbanistes.

The rebellious flemminges of Gaunt, after they had
suffered great famine and pouerte ouercame their erle,
and

And he chased him so narrowly, that he was fayne to hide hym in the couche of a poore widowe in the towne of Bruges. The pere of the world. The pere of Christ.

Charles the younge, kinge of Fraunce perced y countrey of Flaunders with a puissant armie, where he banquished the Gauntys & other Flemminges in a strong battayle, and slewe of them wel nere. 40000.

A wonderful great earthquake in the realme of England, the like wherof was neuer sene befoze that day nor sens.

7 Bishop Urbane published in England and other countreys, free remission *A pena & culpa* to as many as wold cyther geue any thing, or the selves take armes & warre agaynst the Clemetines, & in like maner had Clemente done befoze to his adherentes agaynst the Urbanistes, so that cyther of the parties reputed other as heresykes, and miscreantes.

5344

1383

Henry Spenser, bishop of Norwiche, at the commandement of Urbane, passed with great power of spiritus: all men and other into Fraunce, and so into Flaunders and conquered the countrey befoze hym, but by the great puissance of the frenche king, they were constrained to retourne without great worthyp, and losse as muche as they had wonne.

Marie the king of Hungaries daughter, guyded that kingdom after her father wel nere the space of. ii. yeres.

Lewys Duke of Angeow dyed in Italy, and the frenchemen retourned into theyr countrey. Charles de La Payr, conquered, to his seignory y kingdom of naples.

8 About this time the Turkes wasted and burnt Bosnia Croatia, and the farther partes of Allyria.

5345

1384

The erle of Northumberlād, with certayne other borderers, made a biage into Scotlande, and spoyled the countrey even to Edenbourgh.

Kynge Richarde maryed a daughter of Alincslaus, emperour of Almayne.

9 After the death of Lewys, erle of Flaunders, the heretage therof fel to the Duke of Burgoyne.

5346

1385

Warre in Portugall and Castile, in Flaunders, in Province, in Fraunce, in England, in Scotlande and in Italy.

The third part of

There
of the
wilde.

The yere
of Christ

John surnamed Galetius, erle of Merone, toke Ber: Ann: nabos, lord of Millayne his vnckle, and kept him in pri: gum son all the dayes of his life, seisinge to his owne vse the whole lordship and seignory of Lumbardy.

The nobles of Hungarye finding them greued, that they were gouerned by a woman, sent for Charles king of Naples, and Sicilie, and ordeyned him theyr king at the citee of Alba, who by the treason of Mary the quene and her mother Elizabeth, shortly after was murdered. In reuenging wherof a noble man called Iohannes Banus of Bozuach, slewe the erle Palatine and one Blaspius, that were the doers of that myscheyse, and drowned Elizabeth the quenes mother, in the river Dunaw, keepig Marie her daughter in prison vntill he hard of the coming of her husband Sigismunde, brother to the kyng of Boheme, and emperour of Rome.

An army of Frenchemen sayled into Scotland, where they accompanied with the Scottes, perced the borders of Englande, and spoyled the countrey cruellie. Agaynst whom kinge Ricorde sped him with so great puissance that they were glad to geue backe into Scotlande, and shortly after returned into France with great disworshippe. At this voyage the kyng of Englande burnt the towne of Edenburgh, and all the countrey therabout.

King John of Portugall disconfited the kinge of Castile in a great battail, nere to Juberoth. In this conflict were slayne many noble men of France and other countreys, that came to ayde the Castilians.

The Saracens about this time bered the emperour of Constantinople, & other countreys of Grece. The Turkes warred in Hungarye. Where manye of them were slaine at the Greysse entring into the countrey.

The king of Armentie was chased out of his countrey by the Saracens.

5347

1384

The duke of Lancastre, vnckle to kinge Ricorde of England, sailed with a company of souldiers into Spaine to make claime to the realme of Castile, for so much as he had taken to wife the eldest daughter of kinge Peter that was expelled his kingdome by Henry his brother. He conquered the countrey of Galice, and made alliance

ant re- alliance with the kinge of Portugal. But by great mozt, The yere
gum an- talitie, whiche fell amonge, bys people, he was fayne to of the
gli. dimisse his armie, and shortly after losse all that he had worlde
wonne.

The king and the lordes of France made wonderfull preparacion for the expedition of a biage into Englande. Ther was redye apparailled with great costes and charges in the haven of Sluse, and els where. 1500. shippes, with so great plentie of prouision, and all thinges necessary that the lyke therof was neuer sene in Fraunce. But this byage was stopped and broken by the meanes and counsaile of the Duke of Berret.

Great sowages and tares were reised in France, and lyke wyse in Englande, whiche was after cause of great myschiese.

11 Maruellous discencion, and trouble in Englande betwene the kyng and his counsaile and other nobles and prelates of the realme. The commons by the ayde and comfort of the kinges vnckles & other lordes of the realme (that is the Duke of Gloucester, the Duke of Yorke, the Erle of Darbie, of Arundell, and of Pottingham) put to death dyuers of of the kinges counsaile and chiefe officers and chased the Duke of Irelande and other oute of the realme, for that thei caused the king to burdeine his people with exactions, and coulde make no iuste accompt of the same whan they were required.

5348

1387

Whyle Scalager of Peron, and Francisce Carrary us of Padua, kepte moztall warre in Lumbardy, eche against other, Galeatius of Apollaine wanne from them bothe their cities, and aduigned them to his seignorie.

The Scottes inuaded the borders of Englande.

Sigismunde kyng of Hungarye. xli. yeares. He subdued Bosna and Croatia.

A great breach betwene the French king and the Duke of Bretayne, bycause that he for enuy toke prysoner and ransomed the Constable of France, by mene wherof an other biage was geuen by that the French lordes had prepared in Englande.

The Scottes spoyled the towne of Calingford in Irelande.

The

The third part of

The yere of the worlde. 5146	The yere of Christ 1388	The Duke of Britaine allied with the Englyshmen. The Scottes this yere brake into the borders of Eng lande, robbed Cumber and Northumberlande, besieged New Castell, and discomfited and roke prisoners the .ii. sonnes of the lord Percie of Northumberlande. A mariage entreated and finished betwene Katharine the Duke of Lancasters daughter, and Henry the kinge of Castiles sonne, his other daughter Philip was mari- ed to the king of portugal, wherby the warre in Spayne was finished. The Duke of Britaine reconciled him selfe to the Fre- che kinge, and sware to be true vnto him. A great iustes and feast was holden this yere in Eng lande. Bazates kynge of Turkes besieged Constantinople. 8 yeres. After the death of Urbane Boniface the .ix. was ordey- ned bishop of Rome in Italy, the Antipape Clement con- tinued still in Avinion in Fraunce. Robert Erle of Gloucestre, and the second sonne of king Ro- bert, was made gouernour of Scotlande, because his fa- ther was waken olde, and not able to gouern the realme. This Robert inuaded Northumberland, and spoiled the countrey. The vniuersities of Coloyne and Erphurd, about this tyme were firste founde. A truce betwene England, Fraunce and Scotland for iii. yeres. The lordes of Englande and Fraunce, at the interces- sion of the Genowes, made a vage into Afrike against the Saracens, where they besyged the cite of Tunes, and spoiled the countrey there about, in the end a league was agreed, and the siege gyven vp, on this condicion, that the saracens should holde them within theyr boun- des, and absteyne fro the sea costes of Italy & Fraunce. and the plades lying betwene Afrike and Europe. But Frosard maketh mencion of no such thinge, but sayeth that the Christians departed sodenlye from the cite of Tunes, without any league or truce making fering by uers perilles and incidentes that might els haue chaun- ced to	Anni- gum gli. 12
5350	1389		13
5351	1300		14

Butt refused to the same

sum an-
gl

Herbertus B. Aemilius continued his his historye.

In Englande it was decreed, that the auctoritie of the byshop of Rome shoulde be ended with the Ocean sea, and that it shoulde be lawfull henceforth, to no man, to appeale to the byshop of Rome, or make suite, that any Englishman shoulde be cursed by his auctorite, neyther that any man shoulde execute such commaundment, though it were obtained of the byshop, on paine to lese all his goodes and his bodie to perpetuall prison.

After the death of kynge Robert of Scotlande, John Erle of Carreke his eldest sonne, succeeded & reigned .16. yeres, whom the Scotis called Robert after his father, because they thought John an unluckie name in a kinge he was maymed with the stroke of an horse in his youth & therfore was unhable for the gouernance of the realm. Wherfore duke Robert of Albanie, continued as gouernour all the tyme of his reigne.

Cruell warre in Lumbardy betwene Calyastus lord of Apellaine, and the people of Florence and Bonony,

The Erle of Armygnack, comyng with a great army to ayde the Florentines, nere to the cite of Alexandria, receiued a wounde, wherof he dyed.

15 Peace betwene Calyastus and the Florentines.

After the death of Clement the Antipape, Bennet the xiii. was chose of the cardinales in France. the schisme still continued betwene the .ii. byshops. This Clement graunted to the frenche kynge the tenthes of the clergy. Kynge Charles of Fraunce gaue the Dukedome of Calabriaunce to his brother Lewys.

The king of fraunce making war into Britaine, was suddenly taken with a phrensy.

16 Peter Gambacurta, lord of Masse, and his sonnes, were slayne by one Appian a comon scribe which Appian toke on hym the gouernaunce and lordshipp of that cite.

Sigismunde king of Hungarie, ledde an army against the people called Malachi, whiche desired ayde of the Turkes, whom, notwithstanding Sigismund vanquished, and by force toke the towne Pskod.

Cersio, & Cozra diuines, Ancozanus a famous lawier, Rrr. Pico:

The yere
of the
world

The yere
of chryste

5352

1391

5353

1392

The thirde parte of

The ver
of the
worlde

Chapter
of Christ

Nicolaus florentinus, and Marsilius de S. Sophia pst Ann
fictions, Johannes de sacro Bosco an astronomer, flou^r gum
rished. 16.

Kyng Rycharde of England conceiued a great displea
sure towarde the citie of London, for a certaine outrage
or riotte committed by the citisyens. For whiche cause he
deprived them of their liberties, but the eyre was short-
ly after rectified to the kinges favour by the earnest supre
and labour of Doctor Granisend byshop of London, in
memozy wherof the maior with his brethren, resort yere
ly. ix. principall dayes to S. Paules church.

15354

1393

A truce prolonged betwene Fraunce and England for 17
iii. yeres. This yere died queene Anne, wife to king Ry-
charde.

5355

1394

John and Albriche, lordes of Cumme, reduced all Itas 18
lie into one felowship or compante of S. George, and tea-
chinge theim to beare armes in defence of theim selfe, ex-
pelled from them all foreyne souldiers and straunger, as
Germanes. Englishemen, Bretaines, and other, whose
ayde and helpe they had bled befoze tyme in defendyng
their countrey.

Kyng Rycharde made a biage into Irelande, whiche
was moze to his charge than honour.

A great tempest of wynde in Englande.

5356

1395

Calas lorde of Byllayne was made a Duke by the 19
emperour, this Calas favoured the Turkes & was a-
lied with their kinge.

A truce for 30. yeaeres betwene England and France
and kyng Rycharde toke to wife Isabell the daughter of
Charles the frenche kinge.

5357

1396

The kinge of Hungarie with ayde of the frenchemen 20
passed the riuer of Dunaw, and ledde a great army into
Bulgarie and Turky, wher by force they conquered by
uers townes, and besieged Nicopolis, but than Balsach
or Bazaitos kyng of Turkes encountred theim wyth
great passaunce, & the by pryde of the frenchemen, ban-
quished and slew manye Christians, and toke prisoner
John the sonne of the Duke of Burgoyne, wyth dyuers
lordes of of Fraunce, the kyng of Hungary escaped hard-
ly in the chase.

The

21 The duke of Gloucester, king Richardes uncle, wyth the erle of Arundell and other, was put to cruell beathe of the for so much as they rebuked the king in certayne maters worl'd ouer liberally, and endeuoured to ercpte the commons to 538
broke the peace made with the frenchemen, and to dis-
pose the king, whom they accused of slouthfulnesse, neg-
ligence and misgouernynge of the common weale.

22 Henrye Bolinbroke Duke of Hereforde, and the duke of Nozthfolke were banished out of the realme. 539

King Richard let the realme of Englande to ferme to sir William Scrope, erle of Wilshyre, and certayne other knyghtes.

Emanuel Chrysoloras brought agayne the knowlage of the Greke tongue in Italy, whiche hadde bene as it were banished out of that countrey the space of .v. ages
King Richard went with an army into Irelande.

At this time reigned in Scythya a cruell, fierce, and bloudpye tyranne named Tanberlans, which subdued to him well nere all the east part of the worlde, and last- ly with an vnnumerable multitude of men, invaded the Turkes landes, with whom Pazaites theyr kinge met, and in the confines or marches of Galatia & Bithinia, nere the mountaine Stella, gaue to him a sore bataile in the whiche fell on the Turkes partye .20000. and Pazaites, the kynge him selfe was taken prisoner. After whiche tyme this Tartarian Tanberlans, conquered al the landes betwene Canais and Nilus, and vanquished in battaile the great souldaine of Egipte, che led hym be yonde Nilus, and toke also the citee Damascus.

Mahomet kinge of Turkes, after Pazaites, reigned .xviii. yers, and wrought muche scarpe to the Christiāns.

Henrye Bolinbroke, duke of Hereforde, whiche was banished into Fraunce, being sent for of the Londoners came into Englande with a small power, to whom the commons gathered i so great multitude, and forsoke their prince, that not longe after at the castell of Flynte, they toke kinge Richard, and helde him as prisoner in the tower of Lodon, where he yelded vp and resigned to the sayd Henry Duke of Hereforde all his power and king- ly title to the crowne of England and Fraunce, know-
R r r. ii, laginge

Eleger
of the
Re

1397.

1398.

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

They were lagging, that he was worthely deposed for his demerites and
of Christ and misgouerning of the common weale.

Ann
gum
all

Warre in Lumbardy betwene Galias duke of Myllayne and the citees of Florence and Mantua.

Boniface bishop of Rome, went to Perugia, to set agreement betwene the nobles and the commons of the cytees which were fallen at variance.

5360

5399

A great noumbre of people in Fraunce, were bered and dyed of the plague of Epidemie.

A blasing sterre was sene at the same tyme wpyth beames of most feruent fire.

Henry the .iiii. was ordeyned kynge of Englande more by force, as it appeared, than by lawful succession or election, which thing turned him to muche vnquietnesse, & caused often rebellion in this realme of courage he was noble and valiant, and after the ciuill warres was appeased, shewed him selfe very gentil and louinge to his subiectes. Hence his sonne was made prince of Wales.

Galias duke of Myllayne bought the citee of Pyle of Robert the sonne of James Aprian. He receyued also by composition and paye promysed the citee of Perusium which belonged to the bishoppe of Rome, and not long after brought to his subiectiō Bononia and Luca, wher by his seignory was greatly augmented.

This yere a certayne priest, arayed all in white, came out of the alpes into Italie, bzinging with him a noumbre of men, in the same apparasse, called the white sect or felowshyp, which secte of white companions, Boniface the bishop of Rome disperced, and burnt the priest, that was theyr head and mayster.

Bishop Boniface, at the intercession of his people, returned to the citee of Rome, which thing he refused to dooe, until they had graunted to receyue a senatour or gouernour of their citee at his appointment, & that a stranger, and none of the citee, according to the decrees of his predecessours, this senatoure was called Malatesta, being before of the citee of Vianale.

Bahomet the Turke murdered Orchane his brother.

5361

1400

Sir John Hollande Duke of Exeter, brother to king Richard

June re. Ricorde and the dukes of Ammarke and of Surrey The pere of Christ
 gum an: with the erles of Saleburpe and of Gloucester, & other of the world.
 gli. that fauoured Richard of Bardeur, conspired agaynst king Henrie, and appoynted priuily to murder him at a feast and iustes, whych should be holden at Orenford or as some write at a mumming in the castel of Winsor. But howe it was, they treason was disclosed, and they all for the same put to death, with as many knightes & squiers as were of that alpaunce and confederacy.

King Ricorde was put to death in the tower of London, and caried thzough the citee that men myght se him and so conueyghed to the abbey of Lagles, & there buried.

A certayne priest was burned in Smithfelde.

Marriage in Scotland, betwene the erle Douglas, and the erle of March, for which the erle of Marche fled into Englands, and after wrought the Scottes much wo.

Sigismunde, kinge of Hungarye, caused to be put to death. xxxii. of the noble men of his realme, wherefore in his absence, certayne of the people sent for Ladyslaus from Payles, and made him theyr kyng, shortly after Sigismund recovered agayne his kingdome by strength and force of armes; but yet it was not longe ere that he was agayne taken, of the nobles of his realme, and cast in prison at the towne of Soclos, and there kept a good space, being put into the handes of a wydow whose husband he had putte to death, whom he entreated with so sayre wordes and promisses, that he was sette at his libertye, and recovering agayne his kingdome, putte to death Stephen Quapuoda.

In Englands sir Roger Clarinton a knight, with his 5362
 3 ii. seruantes, the priour of La. and. bisi. gray friers were hanged at Tyburne, for making of tauntinge and scoffing rimes and verses agaynst the king.

1401

King Henry went towarde Wales to quiete a rebellious sedition, which was arrered among the Welshmen, by one Owen of Cleandere.

Warre betwene Galias of Pyllayne and the Florentines.

Vincennes the emperour, for his cowardise and unho-
 nest life, was deposed, and Robertus or Robertus duke
 of

The third parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
of 1328

of Banarte, advanced to the imperial auctoritee, by the auctoritee of the electours of Germany. This emperor went into Italy agaynst Gallatius of Millain but he prevailed nothing.

The bishoppe of Rome published a law, that no priest shuld be admitted to a benefice, untill he had payed the first scrupes of the same, whereby he was made lord of the worlde.

Radissas the sonne of Charles, who was before kyng of Naples, was restored agayne to his fathers kingdom.

5363

1402

About this time sir Henry Percy Erle of Northumberlande, made a biage into Scotlande, in the quarrel of Rumbay erle of March.

Patrick Hepburne invading the borders of England was discomfited and many of his men slaine and taken prisoners.

Sir Thomas Percy Erle of Worcester & Henry Percy, sonne to the erle of Northumberlande rebelled and gathered a great power agaynst king Henry of England with whom they encountered nere to Drogheda, but to theyr owne confusion, for in that conflict was slayne sir Henry Spenser with divers noble men on both partes and prince Henry the kinges sonne wounded, with an arrowe in the face, Sir Thomas Percy was taken, & after beheaded, his brother the Erle of Northumberland fled for feare into Scotlande.

Gallatius duke of Millayne, departed out of this life and gave to John his sonne the duchye of Millayne to Philippe the lordshippe of Paue. After his deceale, rose many tyrannes in Italy, which bred that countrey with most cruell sedicion and warre. For the nombre of xv. citees forsoke the dominion of the lordes of Millayne, and chose to them private governours.

Mahomet the Turke, when he had slaine his brother obtained alone the kingdom, who after the death of the Tartarian Tanberlans, recouering again his fathers dominion, vered with extreme murder and slaughter the Bulgares and Malaches, & toke the citee Hadrianopolis, which he made his seat royall.

5364

1403

The emperor Robert came into England only to see the countrey and commodities therof, wher he was re-

ceived

And re- ceined with great triumph.

Cambralschia, Reptatun and Quinsall, great cyties of Scythia vnder the dominion of the Tartarians, were first founden.

The yere of the world. The yere of Christ

6 Great discension and variance in France betwene the Dukes of Burgoyne and Orleans, in so much that moztall warre was arrered on bothe partes, to the great tynurbandance and vnquietnesse of the realme.

5355

1404

Certaine of the Bretaines and Frechmen, which the yere before had spoyled and robbed the towne of Plimouth, were discomfited and slaine of the Englyshmen in a battaile on the sea nere the towne of Dartmouth.

James Steward, the sonne of Robert kynge of Scotlande, sayling into Fraunce, was taken by the Englyshmen, and holden as prisoner. xviii. yeres, as witnesseth the Scottishe historye.

7 Sir Rycharde Scap, archbysshop of Poze, and diuers other of the house of the lord Humbray, for grudge that thei bare towarde king Henry, gathered to them a great power of Scottes and Northumbers, intending to haue deposed hym from all kyngely auctoritie, but he hadde knowlege therof, & made agaynst theim in so speedy wise that he came vpon them vnwarres, and taking the said bisshop with his alpes, commaunded them to be beheaded at Poze.

5366

1405

Emanuellempereour of Constantinople.

Innocent the. vii. a cruell tyran, was bisshoppe of Rome after Boniface. ii. yeres. He made his nephewe Lewis Marques of Vise and prince of Frinsum.

The Venetians by force of warre wane from France Carrattus the cities of Alexone and Paule, and taking hym with his brother, caused theim to be put to death at Venice.

Innocent byshop of Rome, cruelly put to death. xii. of the chiefe men of the citie, because the required of him in hauntly, to prouyde some meanes to auede the schysme that had been long in the church, and to refozme diuers other enormities, whiche were used as wel in the citie of Rome as also in the countrei of Italie. Which crueltie the people taking very greuously, set for Ladislans king of Pa

5367

1406

The third parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
of chryste

of Naples, who came to Rome with such puissance, that he caused the byshop and Lewis his nephew to forsake the cite. Then Paulus Arlines, that toke parte wyth the byshop, encountred Ladislaus in the fieldes of Nero, and hym vanquished and putte to flighte. Shortly after the pleople were reconciled to the byshop.

Charles lord of Cremona was traitterously murdered of his subiect Cabzinus Fuludulus.

Guccaldus lorde of Ceane, made warre on the Duke of Wyllaine in the quarell of the frenche kinge.

Kinge Robert of Scotlande, for sorowe that his sonne James was taken prisoner, ended his lyfe, after him Robert his brother, & Duke of Albanie, governed the Scottes a good season, the Englyshe histories referrre his death and the takynge of his sonne, to the .xlii. yere of kynge Henrre.

5368

1407

Sir Henrre Percy Erle of Northumberlande, and the lorde Bardolph, comyng out of Scotland with a strong company, to worke displeasure to kynge Henry of Engleland, were encountred, banquished and taken by the gentylmen and commons of the North, and their heades being stricken of, were sent to London,

The vniuersitie of Croonia in Polonde beganne. Gregorpe, the .xii. was byshoppe of Rome, he promysed to geue by his byshoprike, if Bennet the Antipape wold do the same. But whan Bennet fled from Auignon to Spaine, he called againe his promyse, and wolde not resigne.

The Duke of ozliance was murdered at Paris by meanes of the Duke of Burgoyne, who shortly after dyed, but this grudge was so derined also to their childre, that the deadly hatred was still mainteined w moztall watre. Salicetus, a fauous lawier, and Chrysoloras, whiche restored the Greke toungue, at this tyme flourished.

5368

1407

A frost in Englande continued .xv. weekes.

Comunde Hollande, admyrall of Englande, scoured the seas, and wanne the castel Bzake in Britaine, wher he receiued his deathes wounde.

5370

1409

In England was helde a great iustes betwene the Denoways and Englyshemen, in the which were many feates of

the of armes doon to the honour and aduancement of the Englyshmen. The reue of the world. 5371 The vire of Lhpa 1410

21 A tapler was burned in London for opinions concer nyng the sacrament of the aulter.

The commons of Englande presented a byll to kynge Henry, desyryng him to take the temperall landes from the spirituall mens handes, the effect of whiche byll was this, y the temperalities disordynally wasted by meane of the churche, myght suffice to finde to the king. xv. C. lxx. hundred knyghtes. 6200. squyers, and an hundred houses of almes to the releefe of poore people, and ouer all this. xx. M. poundes yereely to the kinges eschequer. Provided that every Erle shulde haue of yereely rent. lxx. M. markes every knyghte an hundred marke, and. lxx. plow lande, every squier. xl. marke with two plow land, and every house of almes an. C. marke w ouer sighte of it. true secular men vnto every house, so this bill none an swere was made.

Rise ap Dee of Wales, whiche hadde longe rebelled against the kinge, was put to death at London.

The vniuersitie of Paris was at this tyme of so great power and actozitte in Fraunce, that every noble man was glad to haue their fauour.

A counsaile holden at the cite of Vize, where both Grego: goye and Bennet were deposed, and Alexander the. v. chosen byshop of Rome, Grego: y and Bennet, that deposition notwithstanding, heloe styll the title of the papa ltye, and so were there thre byshops vntyl the counsaile of Constance.

The Hungaryans bered sore the cite of Rome in the quarell of the kynge of Naples.

Alexander in the counsaile of Vise, depzied Ladislaus of the kingdome of Sicillie of Naples, pnblyshinge that it belonged to Lewes Duke of Angew, who styll wzat him selfe king of Sicillie.

The Florentines boughte the cite Crotona of Ladislaus.

31 This peere vpon the. xii. daye of October, the ryuer of Chamis flowed thre tymes.

5372

1411

In Scotlande was great discencion and ciuile warre betwene

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
of Christ

betwene Donalde of the Iles, and Robert the gouernour of the Erldome of Ros.

King Henry sent a company of souldours into France, to ayde the Duke of Brabant against the Duke of Burgoyne.

John the .xxvi. byshop of Rome. .lxi. yeres. .x. monethes. He willed the electours to chole Sigismunde kyng of Hungary, to be emperour.

John the byshop taried at Bononia, Gregoꝝy at Arminum, Benet in Spaine.

The cite of Rome was vexed wth the sedycion of the Guelphes and Gibelines.

The vniuersitie of S. Andzews beganne in Scotland. John the yong Duke of Wyllayne was murdered of his owne people.

Sigismunde sonne of the .lxi. Charles, kyng of Boheme of Hungarye, was ordeyned emperoure, and reygued .27. yeres. He was a prudent, witte, learned and noble prince, in person and countenance of such maiestie as was comly and mete onely in a gret monarke and ruler of the worlde, but in warre and dedes of armes vnfortunate, for he was oftentimes ouerthrowe and chased of the Turkes and ether enemyes.

Ladyslaus kyng of Naples, conquered the cite of Rome.

Henry the .v. was crowned king of Englande, and reygued .x. yeres. he was a prince of greate noblesse and prowes, of stature & personage raile and skender, of nature gentill and liberal. In dedes of armes expert and cunning, wherby he conquered manfully his enemyes, and brought France to his subiection. Befoze the deathe of his father, he applied and gaue hym selfe to all vice and insolencie of life, and dzeu vnto him riotous and wilfully disposed persons, but whan he was admitted to the rule of the lande, sodainely he became a new man and conuered all that rage of wilfulness into sober & wysse behauiour, and vice into vertue. And that he mighte not be againe corrupted, he charged all his olde companions that vpon paine of their liues, none of them shold come withyn .x. myles of the place that he was lodged in.

By p. 20

1. By procurement of the emperor Sigismund a great countaile was holden at Constance for the union of the church, whiche continued the space of .iiii. yeres, to what purpos of the church let hym iudge that bath diligently redde the histories of that tyme, with the actes of the countaile, and wel considered, what therof ensued. In this countaile were the thre bishops deposed, the doctrine of Wickliffe condemned, and M. John Husse with Hieronimus of Prague adiudged to be burned for preaching agaynst the byshop of Rome's usurped power.
2. Johan the sister of Ladislaus, a woman of notable lightnesse and unconscience, succeeded her brother in the kingdom of Naples.
3. King Henry of Englande sent an ambassade to Charles the frenche kynge, makinge clayme to the realme of Fraunce, to whom answer was made with great getting and scoffing.
4. In Englande, for so much as sir D. cassell knyghte was appched of heresy and fled the lande, many of his adherentes entending a commocion assembled them in great nombre. Wherof the kynge being enfourmed by strength toke many of them. Of whiche nombre .38. were after for the same hanged and bznt in Thickettes fiede beside S. Giles at London.
- John Husse was burned for preaching agaynst the byshop of Rome. It is written that a lytle before his death he sayed in this wise. The monye of Husse hath this inscription on the one parte. whan a hundred yeres be come and gone, ye shall answer to god and to me. And in lyke wyse. In the yere of oure lord. 1415, John Husse was condempned. In the other part ye read, beleue that there is oneye one catholike church.
- Amurates the sonne of Mahometes king of Turkes 34. yeres.
- John the .ii. king of Spayne or Castile .50. yeres.
4. While king Henry was shippinge of his people into Fraunce, sir Richarde Cile of Cambridge, sir Ryehard Scrope treasourer of Englande, and sir Thomas Gray knight were arested for treason, and so strayctly examined, that it was confessed, y they were purposed to have

The yere of the world
5375
1414

5376
1415

5377
1416

The third part of

The per
of the
worlde.

The per
t Chzill

flayne the kinge, by the corrupting of the frenchemen. And wheretoze they were all thye aduogged to dye there presently.

Kinge Henrie, whan he had taken the towne of Harz flewe in Rozmandye, was compassed and enclosed with a wonderful great host of frenchemen, in the which were aboue. xl. thousande fightinge men, at whiche time not withstanding that he had with him not passinge. 13000. footemen, and. ii. thousand speares, of which many were sicke and diseased, by the grace of god and a noble pollyce by him inuented, he discomfited his enemyes & slew of theim to the nomb. e of. 10000. and toke prisoners wel nere as many. His pollicie was, that euerpe bowman shoulde prepare him a sharpe picked stake, and at the encountering of the horsemen to pitche the same befoze him and looynly to retyre backe, shooting wholye together with great violence, by whiche meanes a great nombze was distressed, and the whole host discomfited. Thys is called the battaile of Agincourte.

Antonius de Butrio, a lawier, Valescus and Monteger rana, phisicions, Leonardus Aretinus and Pogius learned men flourished,

Hieronimus of Prage was condemned by the counsaill of Constantine, and burned. Of the great learninge eloquence, and honest life of this man, with the hole stozze of his death, read in the epistle of Pogius witten to one Niccolas.

In Boheme after the burninge of Husse and Jerome, was a great tumult, sedicion and ciuile warre. For the common people, which favoured Husse, gathered together in great nombze, and by the rashenesse of their leaders, exercised many cruell dedes. This sedicion encreased muche by the effeminate negligēce and cowardise of their king Wenceslaus.

1378

1407

Whā Martine the. v. was chosen bishop of Rome, by the agremente of the counsaile, and the other. iii. deposed. the emperour Sigismunde made mencion of the reformation & amendement of maners, as wel of y clergy as of the laytee, that by negligence and ouer much llicēce were greatly corrupted but it pleased the bishoppe to deferre

unfil re- ferre that matter to an other time, and departed toward The pere
gum an- Rome contrary to the emperours will and pleasure. of the
gli. The emperour Sigismunde came in to England to en 1602:82
treate a meanes of peace betwene the king of Englan d
and Fraunce, but all was in vayne. For in the end no
peace could be agreed vpon.

King Henry made an other byage into Normandy
wher he wan the castel of Towike, the townes of Canal
Lovers, Falois, Newlin, Cherburgh, Argentine, & Ba
oua, with diuers other stronge castels, holdes, abbayes,
and piles, and lastly besieged the citee of Roan.

6 Philipe the sonne of Calias, by force of armes made 5379
claime to his fathers Dukedome of Millayne, and wan
diuers citees from the new tyrannes,

Brachius a noble man of Italy, conquered fro the bis
hop of Rome well nere al S. Peters patrimony.

Debate and varpance in Fraunce betwene the dolphin
and the Duke of Burgoyne, whiche turned the realm to
great misery. At the same time, one John Willars by the
procurement of the duke of Burgoyne (as the common
fame went) entred by night into the citee of Paris with
a company of men, and went where the kinge was and
gatte the rule of his person, and after murdered with in
the citee them that they knewe to beare any rule, to the
nombze of .iii. thousande.

7 John Duke of Burgoyne, which was the occasioner 5380
of the duke of Orleans death, was slayne in pzeence of
the Dolphine.

King Henry of Englande, after that with great no
bleness and manhode he hadde continued his warre in
Fraunce, conquered Roan, subdued al Normandy, and
by composition, with the lordes was proclaymed regent
of Fraunce. for terme of the lyfe of Charles being than
kyng, and after his decease the crowne of Fraunce with
all rightes belonging to the same, to remayne to kyng
Henry and to his heires. For confirmation wherof he
toke to wife Katherine the daughter of Charles. By
this treaty it was also agreed, that kinge Henry with
the Duke of Burgoyne, & al the power of Fraunce shuld
pursue the Dolphin, as an enemy of the realme, because

¶ s s iii

he ende

They re
of Chy
1418

1418

1419

The third parte of

The yere
of the
world

The yere
of christe

he endeavored to let the peace as muche as laye in hym that
Sigismund the emperour succeeded his brother Wenceslaus
laus in the kyngdome of Boheme.

There was in Boheme a newe sect of phantastical peo-
ple, called Adamites, which went altogether naked and
blesed they; women as common sayinge that they were
only free, and all other bonde, whiche company of here-
tiques (for crucke that they bled) was suppressed by Zis-
che, chiefe capitaine of them which pretended to fauoure
Husse, whiche than was of great power, and his adhe-
rentes, were named Thaborites a newe citee that they
had builded.

5581

1420

Amurates kinge of Turkes, in manlinesse and pro-
wes farre passed all his predeceffours, but he was cruel
and most greuously bered the christians, his first voyage
he made agaynst the kinge of Serua, from whom after
long siege he wanne Scopia and fewmount, and toke
in battaile two of his sonnes, whom he berefte of theyr
syght, but after he toke theyr sister in marriage and resto-
red fewmount. Then he invaded the Vlaches, Hunga-
rians, and Almaynes, and after tourned into Epyre,
and conquered Croia. Finally he prouoked agaynst him
the power of the Venetians, by taking from them, The-
salonica.

Sigismunde toke on him the crowne of Boheme.

John Zische capitaine of the Thaborites, brought bre-
der his subjection wel nere al Boheme, and at diuers en-
countres discomfited Sigismunde the emperoure, in so
much that he was fayne to entreat Zyscha, priuely to fo-
uour his part, and make the Bohemes acknowledge him
for theyr kyng.

Philip duke of Millaine, with great successe subdued
and conquered all his fathers heritage of Lombardy,
and toke the citee of Vene.

5582

1421

Katherine the daughter of king Charles of France,
was crowned quene of England with great solemnitee.

The Duke of Clarence king Henries brother of En-
gland, was ouerset by the Dolphin of France and slaine
to the kinges great displeasure.

Wozdo Stewarde, sonne to duke Robert was made
gouern

Annal re: Governour of Scotland after his fathers deeth.

gum an: Martine the byshop came to Rome, and was received
gli. with wonderfull ioye of the people & nobles of the cite.

King Henry went againe into France, and made war
upon the Dolphine.

80 The river Tyber overflowed the cite of Rome & ther
about.

Great trouble and warre in the kyngdome of Naples,
by the unconstance of Johan the quene, whiche toke by
adoption for heire Alphons king of Arragon.

Lewys Erle of Angeoy was pronounced king of Sicel
lye, & Naples by the byshop of Rome, to whiche, appoint
ment agreed Johan the quene, & refused Alphons, whom
before she had chosen heire.

Kynge Henry departyng out of this lyfe in France, oz
beined his brother Hufreai Duke of Gloucester to be pro
tector of England, and the Dukes of Bedforde and of
Burgoyne to be regentes of the realme of Fraunce.

Ammurates emperour of Turkes, after gret conquestes
and victories, made hym selfe a monke of the religion of
Mahomet.

Charles the. vi. kinge of Fraunce ended his lyfe whyp
che had ben vexed with a phrenesie the space of. xxiij. yea
res, to the great discouragynge and incommoditie of the
realme, by reason of whose death the realm and crowne
of Fraunce by right of composition fel to the yong king
Henry of Englande.

Henry the. vi. was proclaymed king of Englande
being yet an infat of eight monethes of age, wher
fore continuynge the tyme of his youth he was com
mitted to the tuition & gouernance of the noble Duke
Humfret of Gloucester his uncle, whan he came to mans
state, he was of wytt and nature simple, gentill & meke
and loued better peace than warre, quietnesse of mynde,
than busynesse of the worlde, honeste, than profite, rest
and ease, than trouble and care, all trouble, vexacion, un
quietnes, & injuries þeuer hapned to him (whiche were
many and great) he suffered so patiently, that, he reputed
thems to be worthely sent to him of god for his offences
He fauoured good letters excellently well, in token wher
of, he

The yere of the
of the
world.

The yere
of Lark

5383

1433

1384

1413

The third part of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere of, he erected. ii. famous colleges, the one at Cambridge, and
of, called kynges colledge, the other at Acton, by meanes
wherof good learninge greatly encreased.

A priest was burned in London for heresie, called Wil-
liam Tassour.

A generall counsaile at Pansie in Italy.

Phillip of Spyllaine conquered Gen, and made warre
on the Florentines.

5385

1424

The Duke of Bedforde regent of Fraunce, warred so
fiercely upon the Dolphine, that he wane from him ma-
ny strong holdes and townes, and nere to a towne called
Vernoye discomfited his whole power, to the great losse
of his enemyes. For in the fyght were slaine the Erles of
Turon and Brucan, with the Viscount of Parbon, and
diuers other men of name, & of the commons were slaine
vi. thousande, or after the Englysh cronicles. x. thousand
Whiche aduenture Polidore affirmeth to haue chanced
in the yere folowynge.

James the kinge of Scottes sonne, was deliuered out
of Englande, and at Stone was crowned king of Scots-
lande. He was a vertuous and good prince, geuen more
to the ministring of iustice than the troubles of warre, he
was him selfe well lerned and fauoured al learned men.

5386

1425

Sir John Mortimer hanged and drawen for treason.
Bacchus the tyranne of Italy, whiche of longe tyme
had disquieted the countrey, was vanquished and slaine
of the byshops souldiours.

The Duke of Britaine forsoke the Englyshemen, and
allied him with the Dolphine.

5387

1426

The Prince of Portugall came into Englande.
Grudge & varpance betwene the Duke of Gloucester
protector of England, and his halfe brother the byshop
of Winchester, whiche was appeased by the regente of
Fraunce.

James Stewarde, the iii. sonne of Duke Morde rebel-
lynge against kinge James in Scotlande, was chased in
to Irelande.

5388

1427

The Venetians & Florentines were confederate and
made sharpe & fierce warre upon the Duke of Spyllaine
Carmignola, by whose manhode and pollicy Phillip of
Spyllaine

William had recovered and augmented his heritage, for The yere of the
 sokehim, and went to the Venetians. of the worlde.

In England was verie vnseasonable weathering, for
 it reigned most parte continually from Easter to Michel
 mas, wherby hey and corne were greatly buydred.

The Englyshmen besieged the cite of Orleans, con
 tinuyng the time of which siege, the noble and valyante
 knyghte sir Thomas Mountague was slaine by a great
 mysfortune, whose death was the beginninge of al mis
 rye to the Englyshmen. For after this mishoppe they lost
 by little and litle all their possession in Fraunce.

Alexander, lord of the isles, and shortly after Donalde
 his brother, rose with a gret power against king James
 of Scotlande.

In these daies was in Fraunce a young woman about
 6 11. yere of age, whiche by sorcerye and diuyllyshe wayes
 was in great estimacion with the Dolphine, sayng that
 she was a messenger set of god to reconquire for him his
 heritage from the Englyshmen. This woman was ar
 med and rode in mans apparayle in war farre the space
 of .ii. yeres, and dyd many wonderfull feates, and gatte
 from the Englyshmen many townes and holdes.

5389 1428

Certaine theues and Robbers caused ruffling and bus
 sinesse in Scotlande.

Warre beganne betwene Luca and Florence in Italy
 7 Charles the Dolphine was crowned king of Fraunce
 by his allies and confederates.

5390 1429

Paulus Guinisius lord of Luke in Italy, was taken
 by the treason of his people, and gyven into the handes of
 the Duke of Myllaine, by whom he and his childre were
 kept in prison.

The warre continued betwene the people of Boheme
 and the emperour.

The bishop of Winchester, beyng ordeined cardinal of
 Martine byshop of Rome, ledde an army against the Bo
 hemes.

King Henry, the .vi. beyng about the age of .viii. yeres
 was crowned at Westminster.

8 One approached of heresie was burnt in Smithfield, and
 not longe after an other at Towerhill, called Rycharde
 Lit.

5391 1430

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
of Christ

Hundred.

Anni
gum
m.

Johan the holy woman of Fraunce, in whom the Dol-
phine had putte all his truste, was taken by one sir John
Lorenburge, and adiudged to be bzent.

At Abyngton beganne insurrection of certaine lyghte
and brutall persons, that entended to haue wrought mu-
che sorow to the priestes, which commocion was quieted
by the lord protectour, and the chiefe aucthour punished.

5362

1431

Henry the. vi. was crowned king of Fraunce at Paris
Philipp Duke of Myllayne was vanquished in a bat-
taille by the Venetians and Florentines, in the haven of
Ceane, after whiche tyme cruell and fierce warre was
continued betwene theym, to the greuous losse and do-
mage of both partes.

Warre was reued against the kinge of Hungarye by
seruautes and slaves.

Eugenius. the. iiii. a man bitterly vnlearned, beyng or-
dained byshop of Rome, demened him selfe so nicely, that
cruellie debate and variance hapned betwene him & the
familie of the noble mē called Columini, in so much that
in the cytie was foughten a sore battaille, wherin manye
men were slaine and hurte.

Thomas Bargini prest, was accused of heresie, and
burned.

5393

1432

At Toparum, a towne nere to Bile, the Myllanours
were vanquished taken and slaine of the Florentines.

The Emperour came into Italye.

Johan Queene of Naples ended her life.

Kynge Henry retourned out of Fraunce, and was re-
ceiued at London with great preparacion of lightes and
pageantes,

5364

1433

The Erle of Huntington was sent with a company of
souldiours into Fraunce, where he achieved many great
feates of armes.

Sigmunde the emperour was crowned with the im-
periall Diademe of Euguius the byshop of Rome,

Peace betwene Philipp of Myllayne & the Venetians.

Duke Philipp of Myllayne tourned his whole power
and strenght against Eugenius the Romaine bishop, in so
muche that the byshop by his meanes was bereft of
cruel

anni re eruell warre, bothe at home of his cistelins, that he was expelled out of Rome, & also of forayne enemyes, that al the lande belonging to the church of Rome was at the handes of his enemies. The year of the world 1434

In Naples, after the decease of Johan the old quene some of the nobilitie sent for Renato the brother of Leopold duke of Anjou lately deceased whome Johan by her last will and testament had left for her heire willing to chuse him for they king and gouernour. But diuers other sent for Alphonse king of Arragone beinge as then in Sicilie, willing him by force of armes to reconer the kingdome of Naples to his posteritee. By whiche meanes cruell warre was arrered betwene the parties whiche continued a longe season.

12 The lord Talbote, with a goodly company, sailed into Fraunce, where he wrought much wo to the frenchmen. but that notwithstandinge they wan alwayes vpon the Englyshmen both in Fraunce and in Rozmandye.

5395

1434

Johannes Paleologus emperor of Constantinople. The Genoways in a battaile on the sea nere to Calta vanquished and take Alphonse kinge of Arragone, and his brother the king of Nauar, with diuers other noble men, whom they sent to the lord Philippe of Wyllayne as prisoners who, immediately let them at libertee wthout fine or ransome, wherwith the genowayes findinge them selfe sore greued, forsoke the empyre and dominion of Philip and claymed their auncient libertees.

Johannes Vitellescus, Patriarke of Alexandria, and chiefe leader of the bishoppe of Romes army conquered the citee of Rome, and all the landes belonging to the church, by the ayde and helpe of a capitayne called Sforza, throughe whose prowes and successe in warte the bishop Eugenius became very hant and vpon.

13 A great counsaile holden at Arras in Picardy for treaty of peace betwene England and France but their mindes were so obstinately set on warre, that nothyng might content them.

5396

1435

The duke of Burgoyne, which to this time had maynteyned the english party, throughe great giftes allied him with Charles kinge of France, and became bitter enemye

It. ii.

mye

The third part of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

1436
mle to the kinge of Englande, soone after died the noble Anne
prynce John Duke of Bedforde, after whose deathe all
thynges went backward with the Englishmen in France.

At this time was kept the counsaile of Basile without
any profite to the church and to the great trouble and dis-
quietnelle of the same. For there was a long season hor-
rible contencion amonge the prelates and bishops there
assembled, whether the auctorite of the Romayne bishop
were of more power than a general counsaile or not. In
so much that of diuers learned bishops and other it was
concluded, that the bishop of Rome was an heretike and
by the censures was deposed because he would not o-
bey the auctorite of the generall counsaile. Eugenius
the bishop perceyued that the counsaile entended diuers
thynges contrary to his prerogative, endeouored by all
meanes possible, to delay the same counsaile, or to trans-
ferre it to some other place, where more fauour shuld be
shewed him, as at Bononia, Ferrara, Florentia or other
where, but by the aduertisement of the emperour he gra-
ted it to procede at Basile, but there present he wold not
be for any thyng.

5397

1436

Charles of France recovered by treason the citee of Pa-
ris, and wanne by force the towne of Harflew and of S.
Denis, expellinge and murdering the Englishmen in
great nombze.

Lewys the Dolphine, sonne of Charles tooke to wyfe
Margaret the daughter of the kinge of Scottes.

The duke of Burgoyne besieged the towne of Cales.
but whan he hard of the coming of the duke of Glouce-
ster protector of England he fled in al hast, leving much
of his ordinaunce behind him, to his great dishonoz whō
the duke of Gloucester pursued a. xi. dayes boaruyng
& destroying the countrey as he wēt euen to S. Omers

The sectes of the Bohemes called Orphanes and Tha-
bozites, were vanquished in battaile by the barones and
noble men of the countrey, & after the discomfiture ma-
ny thousandes of them burnt and destroyed with fire in
the common barnes, into the whiche they were gotten
and inclosed by a trayne and decept, invented by the no-
bles. After which time the countrey of Boheme became
subiecte

sent re: subject to the emperour, & acknowlaginge him for they? The vere The vere
sum an- king, so continued al his life tyme. of the of the
gli. 5398 1437

15 The kinge of Scottes was trayterously slaine of his
owne men, which were after taken and put to most pain
ful death.

All the Lions died in the tower of London, which had
liued there a long time.

Sigismunde the emperour departed out of this life.

Albert duke of Austrich, kynge of Boheme and Hun-
gary was made emperour. He was a religious and de
vout prince, for his liberalitie, iustice, and manlinesse in
armes greatly renowned. He subdued the Bohemes,
brought in subiection the people of Moravia, and Mar-
macia, and prepared a great power agaynst the turke.

About this time the turkes being vanquished and o-
uerthrowen in a great battaile by the Hungarians desi-
red a truce for .x. yeres.

The cardinal of the holy crosse, by the appoyntments
of Eugenius bishop of Rome, beganne the counsaile of
Ferraria, to the whiche came John Paleologus empe-
rour of Constantinople, with the patriarke and diuers
other noble men of Grece, to the entent to treat a unitee
betwene the Latines and the Grekes whiche was there
concluded, and one church made of them both.

The warre was renewed betwene Philip of Mayne
and the Venecians to the great murder and desolaciō of
both partes.

Eugenius, by the auctoritee of the counsaile of Basyle
was deposed, and Amodus duke of Savoy in Fraunce
chosen in his place, but Eugenius notwithstandinge
continued still as bishop and would not resigne.

16 Walla which restozed againe the purtee of the Latyne
tongue, Trapezuntius, Blondus, Johannes de immola
a lawier, Guanerus and Hugo Senensis phisityōs Ca-
zulus, Rhagusinus, and Johannes Gnaundensis astro-
nomers flourished.

About this time were sene in Italy. ii. great swarmer
of Bissemeres coming out of a peare tre, which fought so
fiercely eche with other, that many were slaine on bothe
partes, and not long befoze in France a flock of crows

Et. iii.

and

1499

1438

The third parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

5400

The yere
of chryste

1439

And another of Goffehaukes, met in the ayre, & foughte And
so longe, that the bloudde and feathers appered after in gund
great plenty. gli.

Zensla, king of Persie, he was a famous philosopher
The counsaile of Ferrare by reason of a great pestylence 17
was transferred to Flozence, where the chystians at Ar
menie, and Indie consented to the Romaine church, and
the Greekes agreed, that the holy ghost proceeded fro the
father and the sonne, that there was a purgatozre, that
the sacrament ought to be celebrated onely with unlea
uen bread made of wheate, and that the bishop of Rome
was Peters lawfull successour, and chystes glorijs bi
car in earth, to whom all the worlde oughte to obey, whi
che they neuer consented to befoze this time, neyther at
this time did long continue in that belyefe.

So great a dearchy in England and Fraunce that the
poore people made theim bread of fetches, pelin, beanes
and fearne rootes.

Nicolaus Bicennius, capitaine of the Myllanours, be
sieged Guria, and by treason toke the citee Verona, whi
che Frauncisce Sfortia, leader of the Venecians armie.
within .iiii. dayes recovered and brought in subiection.

5401

1440

Friderike the .iii. Duke of Austrich after the deathe of 18
Alberte, was ordeyned emperour of Rome, and reigned
15. yeres.

The warre continued betwene Englad and Fraunce
and diuers towines and castels were wonne on both par
tes, which were elssoones recovered, but the more losse
toured cuer to the englyshemen.

A priest was bourned in London, which of the common
people was counted so holy a man, that they made theyr
prayers to him, and had him in wonderfull great reue
rence, until a commaundement was geuen by the king
to the contrary.

Albert kinge of Hungarie, departing out of this lyfe,
lette his wife Elizabeth great with childe, whiche shortly
after was deliuered of a son called Ladislaus, whom
immediatly she and certayne other proclaymed king of
Hungary and Bohemie, and committed him to the cu
stody of Friderich the emperour. But diuers of the nobles
chose

Ani re gam an: gli.	chose for their kynges Wladislaus the kynges brother of Polonie, by whiche means was deadly warre betwene the queene Elyzabeth and the Polonians, for the crown of Hungary, and the realme of Hungary diuided among theim selfe.	The yere of the world.	The yere of Christ
91	The Bohemes also profered their kyngdome to Albert Duke of Bavarpe, whiche refused it with great modesty In England Dame Glenour Cobham, wife to the lord proctour, and certaine other persons, were accused, that by sorcery and inchantmentes practised by an image of ware, they endeououred to bring out of lyfe by littell and littell the kynges person.	5402	1441
10	In this yeere (after some) Amadeus Duke of Savoye was chosen byshop of Rome for Eugenius. The towne of Depe was besieged by the lord Talbote, and rescued againe by the Frenchemen.	5403	1442
21	Peace was concluded betwene Myllayne and Venice after the warre had continued fiercely the space of .iii. ye res, Sforza the Venetians capitain toke to wife Blanch Duke Phillips daughter of Myllayne, and hadde for hir dower Cremona and Pontremulm. The steple of S. Pauls thurche in London was sette on fyre with lightning, and lastly quenched by great dis ligence and labour of many men.	5404	1443
22	Alphons, king of Arragon, after longe warre, conque red the cite of Naples, and expellyng Rhenatus Duke of Angrow, obtelned the kyngdome of Puell. Eugenius the byshop retourned from the counsaile of Florence of Rome. The Swizers banquished the Thuricenses in battaile and bled towarde them so extreme rage and crueltie, that in the same place, wher they obteyned the byctory, great bankettes and feastes were by theim made, in the whiche they used the dead corpes of the aduersarys in stede of sto les and tables, yea and moreouer opening their bodie dranke their blood, & tore their hartes with their teeth. The counsaile of Laterane was indicted. Lewys Patriarke of Aquileia, began first to kepe dog ges and hoxses. Charles of Fraunce, by the counsaile of Eugenius the byshop	5405	1444

The third part of

The yere
of the
wilde.

The yere
of Christ

5406

1445

byshop of Rome, set his sonne the Dolphine with a gret army
company against the Switzers, and them of the counsaile
of Basile, where the bloudy victour with raine, sword
and fyre destroyed all the countrey of Alsacia, after whiche
the counsaile of Basile by litle & litle was dys-
solved, the Frenchmen in their return were banquished
chased, slaine & lightened of great pray by y^e Sleswattines.

Byng Henry the. vi. by the aduise and procurement
of the Erle of Suffolke, toke to wyse Margaret the kyn-
ges daughter of Sicile, and refused the daughter of the
Erle of Armpnake, wyth whom he made his first con-
tracte, whiche thynge was cause of muche myserye and
trouble in England, as first the losynge of Normandy,
the diuision of the lordes within the realme, the rebellion
of the commynalte against the prince, and synallye the
king deposed, and the quene with the prince, fayne to fleye
the realme.

Henry Chechley, byshop of Canturbury, dyed, who in
his lyfe time builded two houses for studentes in the vni-
uersitie of Orenford, called Alsolne college and Bernard
college.

The Hungaryans by merces of the byshoppe of Rome,
contrary to the othe and leagu made befoze with Amma-
rates, arrered new war against the Turkes, in the whiche
the Vladislaus, and Julian the byshoppes legate, nere to
Uarna, were banquished, chased, and fayne, with great
losse of Christian bloude. At Basila in lyke maner John
Hunziades of Hungarye, was ouerthrowen, and Pelopo-
nesus brought in subiection to the Turkes.

After the death of Vladislaus, the Hungaryans wyth
one consent agreed to haue to their king Ladislaus the
young sonne of Albert, and ordeined John Hunziades to
be protectour of the realme.

Eugenius byshop of Rome made war vpon Sextia a
famous capitaine of Italy, and toke from him Picenum
whiche befoze he had geuen to his possession and gover-
nance.

The warre was renewed againe bytwene the Veneci-
ans and Myllanours.

5407

1446

The Veneciens and Florentines, bytwene Cremona & 24
Man

Anni re Tactus, banquished the souldpours of Duke Phylp, The yere of the
sum an- and ouerode the countrey euen the suburbs of Phylp of the
gle. laine. worlde

George Poggeobzattus gouernour of Boheme.

- 25 Humfrey Duke of Gloucester, and protectour of Eng
land, by the meanes of certayne malicious persons, was
feared, cast in holde, and strangled to death in the Abbey
of Wury, to the great displeasure and grudge of the com-
mons, which suspected the Marques of Suffolke of that
cruell deede. This Duke Humfrey, for bys honorable
and liberall demeanour, and good rule that he kept this
realme in, was called the good Duke of Gloucester.

5408

1447

William Wanslet a man of great deuotion, wisdom
and iustice, was made byshop of Winchester and chace-
lour of Englande. This man to the furtherance of let-
ters and healpe of studious younge men, erected the fa-
mous colege of Mary Magdalene in Drenford, to wh^{ch}
I knowlede my selfe to be greatly bounden for so much
as that small learning that god hath sent me, I haue ob-
teined by his benefite, and the ayde and sustinace of that
worshipfull house.

Phylp Duke of Myllayne, paid his debte to nature,
whose deeth notwithstanding the warre against the Ve-
necians still continued, for Sfortia, which had forsaken
the Venecians, warred vpon them in the quarell of Myl-
laine.

Nicolas the .v. byshop of Rome. viss. yeres.

Alphons Kinge of Arragone and Naples, made warre
against the Florentines.

- 26 Francisce Sfortia discomfited the Venecians in a gret
bataile nere to Caranazium, and shortly after beyng re-
confiled to their amitie, made so sharpe warre vpon the
Myllanours, that he subdued their cite to his obeisance.

5409

1448

Constantinus emperour of Constantinople.

- 27 Amadeus, which was made byshop of Rome by the or-
dinance of the counsaile of Basile (through menes made
by byshop Nicolas) was compelled of the emperour Fri-
derich to resigne his papacy, and gaue place to the lated
Nicolas, and so the schisme was senned that had con-
tinued. viss. .v. yeres.

5410

1449

Abb.

W. L. H. O.

The thirde parte of

The ver
of the
wolde
1411

There Mahomete and sonne of Ammurates, was emperoure of
Christ of the Turkes, he wrought much hurte to the Christians

1450 The Marques of Suffolke was banished the lande for
the space of .v. yeres. to appease the murmure and grudge
of the commons of Englande, for the death of the Duke
of Gloucester. In sailyng towarde Fraunce he was met
on the sea by a shippe of warre, and ther presently behea
ded by the capitaine called Nicolas Tower, and the dead
corpes cast by at Dover.

The commons of Kent, for grudge that thei bare to cer
taine noble men nere about the king, as well for the ge
uing by of the Duchy of Anjou and Maine to the king
of Sicillie, as for diuers iniuris and oppressions, that the
poore people had suffered, raised a great commocion, and
on black heath, by the leadyng of Jacke Kade, overthrew
the Erle of Stafford, hauing with him a good company
of souldyers. Than after they came to London, where
after thei had put to death the lord Say with other, and
committed diuers robberies and cruel deedes, their com
pany was disperckled euery man to his home, and the
capitaine taken and put to death, and after that lust exe
cucion doden vpon many of the rebelles by the king and
his officers.

The byshop of Saleburge was murdered by the com
mons of the weast country.

The Venecians made peace with Alphons king of Na
ples, and greed to make warre against Sforza Duke of
Mollaine, with whom they were againe fallen at vary
aunce, because he wolde not stande to the peace made be
twene them and Mollaine.

Charles of Fraunce reconered againe Rhean and diuers
other townes of Normandy and Fraunce.

This was the yere of Jubiley of Rome.

1412

1451

The whole Duchte of Normandy was yelded by to the
Frenchmen by menes of the Quene, the Duke of Som
merset, and other of her counsaile, whiche thinge caused
so much trouble and debate in Englande, that moztall
warre therof ensued.

Friderich the emperour, with his wife Glenour, was
crowned with the imperial Diademe at Rome, and than
yode to

And the pope to Naples, wher he was receiued with great hono-
 gam an and triumph by Alphons the kinge.

The year
 of the
 world
 5413

The year
 of christ
 1052

30 The countre of Aquitaine was reconquered and wonne
 by the Frenchmen. 297. yerres after it was first ioygned
 to the crowne and seignory of Englands by Henrpe the
 secoande, which was Duke of Angeowand. 192. yerres
 after it was by Henry the .iii. recouered from the fren-
 chemen, which had won it by force of armes from king
 John his father.

A commocion beganne this yere by the duke of Porke
 and other noble men, whiche was appeased for a tyme
 and the malice dissimuled.

Lewys the Dolphine, sonne of king Charles of France
 rebelled agaynst his father, and fled to the duke of Butz
 goyne, with whom he was ten yerres.

One named Iodannes Faustus first found the craft
 of printinge in the citee of Vens in Germanie.

31 The lord Talbote recouered by dedicion the citee of
 Burdeaus in Aquitaine, where after long & cruel fighte
 he was slayne with a gunne and the citee won agayn by
 the Frenchmen.

5414.

1413

Mahomet prince of Turkes, after .50. dayes of conti-
 nuall assaut made by his innumerable multitude of tur-
 kes agaynst the citee of Constantinople, with exceedinge
 force & power, obteyned and conquered the same to the
 great blinderance and shame of Christendome, & highe
 advancement of the turkes dominion. Of the exceedinge
 and unspeakable crueltie, that they vsed towarde all soz-
 res of men, women, and children, and the despitous be-
 lante that they shewed toward Christia religion, it wold
 rue any christian heart to heare or read.

32 The fyre of enate, that a good space had couertly smou-
 dered betwene the dukz of Porke, and the duke of Som-
 erset, with other of the quenes counsaile, at this time
 brake out in hote and fierce flames of warre, in so much
 that betwene the kinge who defended the se persons and
 the duke of Porke with his allies at S. Albones a cruell
 battayle was fought, in the ende wherof the victorie fell
 to the duke of Porke, and on the kinges part was slayne
 the Duke of Somerset, the Erle of Northumberlande.

5415

1414

Ab b. 11.

the

The year
of the
world.

The year
of Christ

the lord Cliforde with many other honourable men of knights and squiers. After whiche time the duke with great reuerence broughte the kinge from S. Albones to London, where by a parliamēt he was made protectour of the realme, the Erle of Salsburie chauncellour, and the erle of Warwike capitayne of Cales.

Peace and league was made in Lombardye betwene Franciske Sforza, of Millayne, and the Venetians after the warre had continued wel nere .v. yeres.

3416

1455

Calist the .iii. beinge ordeyned bishop of Rome, made preparation for warre agaynst the Turkes, and sent agaynst theim with great prouision, Lewis patriarke of Aquileia.

Bellaraphus the souldaine of Egypte a man of great power.

Georgius Castriotus, called also Scanderberge, duke of Eptre and Albanie, was famous in dyuers partes of Asia and Europe for his prowes & noblenesse in armes, and especially for such victories as he atcheued agaynst the Turkes.

James Picennius of Lombardye made warre to the cite of Senes.

3417

1456

By meanes of the quene and other lordes, the duke of Yorke was discharged of his protectourship, which thig was cause of new grudge and malyce.

A great riote committed in London agaynst the Lombardes & Italians, because a mercers seruaunt was cast in prison for striking an Italian.

Here to the citee Taurinum, that is now called Alba, where as the riuers of Danubie and Saw do mete, Mahomet the Turke was overthowen chased and dyuen out of his campe by a smal company of Christians.

About this time were sene many strange syghtes and wonderfull thinges, as well in the citee of Rome as othre places of Italie, In the place called Sabine a calfe was broughte forth with two heades. In Rome at the gate of Venus and in Lpguria it reigned bloudde. In Picene a child was borne with sixe teth. A blasing sterre terrible to beholde was sene, well nere all the moneth of June. An horrible tempest vexed a part of Italy, and especially

Annali re- cally Bettraria, and Venice, many countreys of Italye The yere of the
sum an- were taken also with a terrible earthquake, in so muche of the
gli. that in Huel and Naples, muche housinges and greate worlde
byldinges were ouerthrowen, and (as wryteth Cronica
Cronicozum) there perished .40. thousande Christian
men.

35 At Crich within .xii. miles of London were taken, 4. 5418
wonderfull fishes, wherof one was called Mozs mariz
na, the seconde a swordfish, the other two were whales
A flote of Frenchmen landed at Sandwike, and spoyle
led the towne with great crueltee.

1457

Alphons kinge of Naples, made sore warre vpon the
cite of Ceane.

36 A feigned agreement was made betwene the kinge the 5419
queene, and the duke of Bozke, with his retinew, which
endured not longe.

1458

Bessarion and Cusanus, cardinales, Ludouiscus, P
tanus, Paulus Castrensis, & Antonius Rosellanus law
yers, Cermisonus, Sauonarola, & Barzizius phisicians,
Peaurbachius & Blanchinus astronomers, Argitrople
Philadelphus, Perottus & Datus learned men flourished
Fregofus capitaine of Ceane, gaue vp the cite to Char
les of Fraunce, because he was not able to defend it a
gaynst the violence of Alphons.

Ferdinande the bastarde son of Alphons succeeded his
father in the kingdome of Naples, betwene whom and
John duke of Angeow, was sore warre for the right and
title of the sayd kingdome.

Ladislaus king of Hungarie and Boheme, ended his
life, after whom succeeded in Boheme George Poggebe
braicus or de Podebza, & in Hungarie Mathias the son
of Huniades, who made war agaynst the emperor Fr
derich for the crowne of Hungary, betwene whom whē
the warre had continued .vi. yeres a peace was conclu
ded on this condicion, that Mathias should be kynge for
his life time, but he should leaue no heyre after him.

Lewis the .xi. after some computacions, was ordeyned
kinge of Fraunce, which for his crueltee and harde de
meanour was called the sturpy and fell Lewis, betwene
him and his nobles was muche strife.

Ab b. iii.

Aeneas

The third parte of

They were
of the
worlde

They were Acneas Siluius a man of great witte, learninge and eloquence, was made byshop of Rome, and named Pigs gum the.ii. he wrote the hystoꝝe *De origine boenorum.* The warre that he enteded agaynst the Turkes was stopped by meane of the discencion among christian pꝛinces, soz than, & long after was great warre betwene Ferdinãd of Naples and the duke of Angcow, and in diuers other partes of Italy likewise.

5420

1459

The duke of Yorke, the erles of Salisbury and Warwike with a great host mette the kinge and other lordes of Englande vpon Bloze heath nere to London, where because Andrew Trollop, a capitayn of Cales the night befoze the battaile should haue bene, fledde wyth a company of the best souldiours to the kinges parte the duke of Yorke, the erles of March, Salisbury, and Warwike mistrusting them selfe to be to weake, departed wyth a pꝛiue companie and fledde, the duke into Irelande, the iii. Erles into Cernesey, & after to Calys without anye notable battaile.

5421

1460

The.iii. Erles coming from Calis with a puissance armie, the.ix. day of July mette kinge Henrye at Northampton, and gaue to him a stronge battaile, in the ende wherof the victoꝝy fell to the Erles, and the kinges host sparled, chased, and many slayn, among the which was the duke of Buckingham, the erle of Shresburpe, the lord Egremont, with other, and the kyng taken in the field.

The duke of Yorke, retourning into Englande made suche clayme to the crowne that by consent of a parlyament he was proclaymed heye aparrant, and al his pꝛogenie after him.

Margaret the quene in this meane tyme, in all haste possible had gathered a companie of Northemen, and nere to a towne in the north called Wakefeld in a ciuel fight discomfited and slew the Duke of Yorke, with his sonne the erle of Rutlande, the erle of Salisburpe was taken pꝛisoner, with diuers other noble men.

5422

1461

The quene with her retinew, nere to. S. Albones dyscomfited the Erle of Warwike and the duke of Yorke folke, and eclipered king Henry her husband.

Great

Anni re-
gum an-
gli.

Great distencion and civile warre at Mens in Germa-
ny for election of their byshop Dietherus de Cusenberge
and Adolphus de Passaw, were bothe chosen, the byshop
of Rome favoured more Adolphus, because Dietherus
was again him in dyuers thynges, and woulde not con-
descende to his mynde.

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Chark.

Edwarde Erle of Marche, and eldest son to the Duke
of Yorke, came vpp to London wyth a myghtre power
of Marchemen, accompanied wyth the Erle of War-
wyke, and by agreement of a counsaile was proclaymed
kinge of Englande, and called Edwarde the. iiii. Shortly
therupon he pursued king Henry toward Yorke wher
he gaue a soze bataile to y king and his company. Thys
fight was so cruell and fierce that in the fiede and chase
were slaine. 30. thousande of the commons, bysps men
of name, of the whiche were the Erles of Northumber-
lande, & Westmerland, the lord Clifford, Andrew Trol-
lop, and other to the noubre of a. xi. and kinge Henry
losse all, and was fayne to flee the lande, whan he hadde
reigned. rrrbiii. yeres. bi. monethes.

Quene Margaret with the younge pynce fledde to her
father the Duke of Anjou.

Edward the. iiii. began his dominiõ ouer the realme
of Englande, and reygued. xxi. yeres. He was a
man of noble courage and gret wit, but in his time
was muche trouble and vniquietnesse in the realme.

About this timethe nobles of Fraunce, bycause they
kinge Lewys refused the company of his lordes, and be-
sed the counsaile of bi'laines, rose against him in great
noubre, and met in plaine battaille at Charters, where
the king was ouercome, his mē chased, and he forced to
flee for his sauegarde to a castell named Montcher, but
shortly after an greement and concoorde was made be-
tw:ne them, which continued but for a time, for the king
retourne to his oide demeanour, and oppresyon of hys
subiectes.

Mahomettes emperour of Turkey, beside the empires of
Constantinople and Trapezunce, whych he subuerted,
toke from the Christians. xii. kingedomes, & conquered
200. cyties. He also by force of armes wrested from the
Vene-

5424

1493

The third part of

The yere
of the
worlde.
5425

The yere
of Christ
1464

Veneçians the land of Calays and obtayned Scodza by Ant
composition, he mainteyned war on the sea many yere gum
against the Christian people, he conquered Capha the ci
tee of Ponte, assailed the Rhodes and lastly after he had 4
taken Hydunte invaded Italye.

The Turke conquered Poloponesus & Pontus, in win
ning wherof he greatly endamaged the Veneçians.

The lord Montague, hauinge the rule of the North,
discomfited kinge Henry comyn g out of Scotland wpyth
a great power to recouer the crowne, thys is called the
battaile of Erham, in the whiche was taken the Duke of
Somerset, the lord Hungerfource, the lord Roos, wh
che were after put to deathe wylch many other.

Kynge Edward was secretly married to Elisabeth late
wyfe of sir John Graue, at whiche mariage was none
present but the kinge, his spouse, the Duches of Bedford
the priest, two gentill women and a yong man to heape
the priest to masse, for whiche mariage rose gret variance
betwene the kinge and the Erle of Marwike, his chiefe
friende and mainteinour.

Paule the seconde was made bishop of Rome. He was
couetous, cruel, inurions, rude, and nether learned him
selfe, nor yet fauoured learned men. He endeouored to
steere Christiana princes to warre agaynst the Turkes as
dyuers of his prediceffours hadde dooen, to the intent he
myght vnder that pretence, gather money.

5426

1465

Friderich the emperour was besieged in the tower of
Vienna by his owne citisins, from whens he was deliue
red by George kinge of Boheme.

This yere the coignes were altered, and new made in
England by Edward the fourth, as the royall, the halfe
royall, the angell, the halfe angell, and the ferthing, the
grotes were made of lesse value than they were by eight
pence in an ounce.

Dyuers of the nobles of France forsoke the dominion
of Lewys, and cleave to his yonger brother Charles,
whiche made claime to the crowne of France by the wil
of his father, but after they had taken the cite of Rho
an in Normandy, and bene a good space before the cite
of Paris, a peace was agreed vpon, by condicion wherof
the

the kinge granted to his brother the Duchy of Normandy: The year of the world.

les the sonne of the Duke of Burgoine he gaue Perone, Rova, and the citie Montiderium, with Guinarpe & the Erledome of Boloine for his perpetual posselsid, & with other princes it was agreed as they desyred. It was not longe after, but that Charles the kynges brother was againe depriued of the Duchy of Normandy.

Henry the. iiii. kyng of Castile, bytwene whom and his brother Alphons was arreyed warre for the kyngdome, in the whiche the moze parte of the nobilitie fauoured the younger brother.

John Galearius, after Frauncesse Sicilia, was made Duke of Apellaine.

5427

1468

The bishop of Rome condemned the kinge of Boheme for heresie, and depriued him of his kyngdome.

The Turkes inuaded Sicilia, and toke fro thens great pillage and praye.

5430

1469

Mathias kinge of Hungarye, by the incensynge of the byshop of Rome, made sharpe warre vpon George king of Boheme the space of vii. yere continually, and added to his seignory a geat part of the kyngdome of Boheme.

The grudge, whiche the Erle of Marwike had conceiued against king Edward for the foresaide marriage, declared it selfe openly, so that he alied him with the Duke of Clarence the kinges brother, and by their meanes incensed so the Northemen, that they dyuers tymes rebelled and touned the kyng and the realme to muche trouble but shortly the kinge so demeaned hym selfe, that the rebelles were suppressed. Wherefoze the Erle of Marwike perceiuyng his parte to be weakened, fled with the Duke of Clarence and other into Fraunce,

5431

1470

Mahomet emperor of the Turkes, inuaded the Ile Cebu, and destroyed the great cite called Pigropony and not long after Isaac his capitaine entring Hungary, and Croacia, toke with theim a great noumber of prisoners.

The Duke of Clarence, the Erles of Marwike, Penbroke and Drfozth, landed at Dartmouth, to whom by meanes of proclamacions that were publyshed in the name of kyng Henry, the commons gathered in so gret

Arr.

compas

The third part of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

5432

1471

companies, that Edward fearing his parte fledde into Flanders to the Duke of Burgoyne. Then was Henry the. vi. set at large, and againe proclaymed kinge by menes of the Cle of warwike with other, and Edward proclaymed blurper of the crown, but that continued not longe.

King Edward, retournyng out of Flaunders, arrived in the North part of Englande with a veray small company of souldoyers, but by meanes that he vnderstanded, and though his brother the Duke of Clarence, who turned now to his part, he came so pissauntly to London, that he entered the cite, and took King Henry in the byshoppes palace, and then wit against the Cle of warwike, whom he vanquished & slew with his brother Marques Montague nere Barnet. x. myles from London. Shortly after at Tewkesbury he overthrew queene Margaret, the wyfe of Henry. In whiche battaile was taken the saied Margaret with Edward the ynce her sonne, the Duke of Sommer set, and dyuers other. King Edward refused his regalltie, and was againe taken for kinge.

Prince Edward the sonne of Henry was put to death A commotion steered by the bastarde Fancobridge and the commons of Kent and Essex.

Henry the. vi. was putte to death in the Tower, and buried at Chertesse.

The king of Portugal passed the sea into Africke, where he subdued to him. ii. cities of Mauritania, called Tynaga and Argilla.

Sixtus the. iii. byshop of Rome. riss. yeres.

5433

1472

Matthias kinge of Hungary was chosen kinge of Bohe-
me.

5473

1473

The Venetians, with the ayde of the byshop of Rome, and the kyngs of Naples made sore and spere warre upon the Turkes, and wnt theim ostentymes to great damages on the sea coastes of their dominion, yet dyuers times they were chased and overthrowen with great losse of men.

James kyng of Cyprus departed out of this lyfe, leaving after him a yong sonne begotten of his wyfe a Venetian boyne, by whiche meanes the Venetians obtained the go-

the governaunce of his kingedome, and not longe after
(when the childe died) possessed the kingdome of Cyprus.

About this tyme Cassanus kinge of Persie made soze
warre vpon the Turkes, whom they discomfited in two
great battalles, but in the ende Mahometts by pollice ob
teyned the vpper hande, and made league woth them.

Mariaunce betwene Charles duke of Burgoyne, and
Lewys kinge of Fraunce. The duke of Burgoyne be
sieged Russia, but when Friderich the emperour mette
there woth him hauing a great power, after leage made
he left the siege and departed.

- 15 Kinge Edwards of England went ouer the see woth
a great armie to ayde the duke of Burgoyne, but by the
earnest suite of the frenche kyng a peace was concluded
betwene England and fraunce for .vii. yerres. For per
formance wherof king Lewys gaue to Edward. 75000
crownes of golde, and yerely after for the space of .vii.
yerres. 50000. crownes.

In Spayne after the decease of Henry the .iiii. hapned
great diuision and variaunce. For Ferdinande the son
of John kinge of Arragone, whiche had taken to wyfe
the sister of Henry the .iiii. and Alphons of Portugall,
maintenning the quarrell of Johan the doughter of Hen
ry decided the kingdome betwene them.

At the citee Trident a childe named Simon was mar
dered of the Jewes of that citee, in derision of the passy
on of Christ. For which mudrer and vilanie, the Jewes
suffred great and worthy punishment.

Charles duke of Burgoyne invaded the prouince of Lo
rayne woth great power.

The Jubilee was ordeyned by the bishop of Rome to be
euer .x. yerre.

The turkes in the countree called Moudantia, or Ma
lachie, were banquished and slayne, and in lyke maner
agayne in the lower Asia ouerthrowen and chased.

About this tyme at Ingolstade and Tubing in Germa
nie were founded certayne scholes and colleges, and a li
tle before at Basile and Friburge.

- 16 Charles of Burgoyne leading an armie agaynst the
Switzers at a place called Gransee, was by the pyn ban
quished

The yere
of the
worlde
5435

The yere
of Christ
1474

5436

1477

5437

1476

The third part of

The y^e of
of the
woylde.

The y^e of
of Christ

quished, chased, and lightned of his tents, and other pur-
uance. At Burthen he was agayne ouerthrowen, and
thortly therupon at Panses, by Henatus Duke of Lo-
raine, coming with a company of Argentines and Switz-
ers agaynst him, was bitterly banquished and slaine, af-
ter whose death Lewis king of France, recovered again
all that before time he had graunted to the sayde Duke
Charles by coposition or otherwise, and endeoured al-
so to bring to his lordship Burgoyne and Flanders but
that labour of his engendred great warres. For h Bur-
gonions forsoke the daughter of Charles.

Mathias of Hungary wanne a strong forte from the
Turkes by the river Sane.

Johannes de Monte regio, the noble astronomer was
famous.

5438

1477

Maximilian Duke of Austria, and sonne to Friderich¹⁷
the emperoure, ledde a great army into Flaunders, and
coupled to him in mariage Mary the onlpe daughter of
Charles duke of Burgoyne lately deceased.

The bishop of Rome and king Ferdinande of Naples
arred warre agaynst the Florentines in Italy

5439

1478

Cathubetus, the great souldaine of Egypte and Arable
George duke of Clarence, brother to kinge Edward¹⁸
of Englande, was secretly put to death was drowned in
a barell of Malmesey within the tower of London. A
death this yeare in the citre of London.

The Venecians made league with the Turke.

Grenous warre betwene Maximilian and Lewys of
France, for the possession of Burgoyne, at Doubla they
encountred in a strong battaille, where Maximilian ob-
teyned to the victory, & Lewis was banquished, and lost
a great numbze of his men.

Alambecus called also Alancasan, king of Armenie
Mede, Parthia, and Mesopotamia, after many other vic-
tores ouerthwe the Turkes with great slaughter of
men.

5440

5479

Mahomet the turke besieged Rhodes, which was so¹⁹
manfully defended that he lost all his labours with ma-
ny of his men.

Maximilian made league for. vii. peeres with Lewis
the

Anni re: the French king.

sum an- A wonderfull deluge of water, wherof ensued a great
gli. famine well nere in all Europe, and after that a soze ye
20 Silence.

The yere

The yere
of Christ

of the
wilde

5441

1480

5442

1481

21 The Turke Mahomet besieged Hydrunt in Calaper
and with great power inuaded Italye. Shortly after he
ended his life.

The Scottes, this yere beganne to feere, agaynst wh^{ch}
king Edward sent the duke of Gloucester and certayne
other, which retourned without any notable battayle.

The Scithes with a great nombie of Jewes in their
company, inuaded the North partes of Germany.

22 The bishop of Rome and the Venetians made war ag- 5443
gainst Hercules of Ferrare, and Ferdinand of Naples
to the great inquieting of Italy.

1482

Bazaites kinge of Turkes. xxx. yeres, betwene hym
and his brother Zizinus was fierce warre, in so muche
that he chased him out of Turkie, and forced him to flee
to the Rhodes.

Marie the wife of Maximilian, being with child rode
on hunting, and by great misfortune fel from her horse
wherof she toke her deth, leauing after her a sonne called
Philip, and a daughter named Margaret.

23 Kinge Edward of England makinge great prouision 5444
for warre into France, ended his life, leauing after him
two sonnes. Edward the yth prince, and Richard duke of
Borke, with. iiii. daughters.

1483

Edward the. v. of the age of a. xl. yeres, beganne his
reigne ouer the realme of Englande the. xi. day of A
prill. This Edward was neuer crowned but cruelly
murdered by Richard duke of Gloucester his vnaturall
uncle, who after vsurped the crowne, and was called Ry
chard the. iii.

At this time was famous Picens Mirandula, George
Alala, Hermolaus Barbarus, Politian, Cais. Platine
Sadellicus, Pomp. Letus, Aldus, Manucius, Marsp
lius, Ficinus, Johannes de Monte Regio.

Bazaites the Turke conquered certayne townes in Ma
lachie, and then made warre vpon the sculdapne of E
gypt, of whom he was often vanquished & put to flight,

Ex p. iii. with

The third part of

The pere
of the
worlde.

The yere with great slaughter of his men.

of Christ

Margaret the daughter of Maximilian was betrothed to Charles the eldest sonne of Lewis kinge of Fraunce, and brought into Fraunce, with great pompe, and royallte Peace betwene Venice and Ferrara.

Richarde the. iii. brother vnto Edward the. iiii. through manye cruell deedes lastlye obteyned the crowne of Englade. First to compasse his wicked and diuelishe purpose, he put to death those noble men whiche he thought wold not consent to his minde in all thinges, the other he corrupted with riche gyftes, than by his vntrouth and falshode he wrested from the quene Elisabeth (being than in sanctuarie) Richarde her yonger sonne, and brother to the prince, thirdly he caused to be published at Pauls crosse, by one doctoz Shaa, that Edward the. iii. his elder brother, was not rightlye begotten of his mother, but by aduoutry, and therfore that neither he nor his childezen had right to the crowne or as some write, he caused to be published that the prince and his brother were not rightfully begotte of quene Elisabeth, and therfore the right of the crowne to be his, whiche in fine he toke vpon him and to make a perfite work of his crueltie, shortly therupon shamefully murdered the two yonge childezen in the tower of London, & usurped the crowne. ii. yeres. ii. monethes. ii. yeres.

1445

1484

Charles the eyght king of France, after the decease of his father Lewys, warred agaynst the Britaines.

Innocent the eyght bishop of Rome. viii. yeres, he was genen to drynkinge and bollinge, and without shame openly aduanced his bastardes to great riches honour, & dignitee.

Grudge betwene kinge Richarde the. iii. and his nere frende the Duke of Buckyngham. In so much that for displeasure therof the duke conspired with diuers other noble men agaynst him, and entended to bring into the lande Henry Erle of Richmonde as rightfull heyre to the crowne. This Henry had fled before into Britayne, fearinge the crueltie of Edward the. iii. For whiche conspiracie the sayd duke of Buckyngham, with diuers other was shortly after taken and put to death.

Henry

Ante res
am an-
gli.

Henry Erle of Richmount ayded wth the Bytains, The yere
entended to arrive in Wales, but his naupe was so scarce of the
red with a contrarie wynde, that he was fayne to gyue worlde
backe againe into Bytaine for that tyme, dyuers noble
men detestynge the tyranie of kynge Rycharde, fled into
Bytaine, and there alied theim with the Erle of Rich-
mounte.

The yere
of Eliz

5446

1485

3 The noble prince Henry Erle of Richmounte, wth a
smalle company of Frenchemen lauded at the haven of
Mylborne, whose compynge beyng ones knowen, dyuers
noble men, with their retinew forsaking Rycharde, ga-
thered to him in great noubre, so that his strengthe in
short space gretly encreased, at a village nere to Leicester
called Bosworth he mette wth his enemyes, where be-
twene theim was foughten a sharpe battaile, in conclusy-
on, kynge Rycharde with dyuers other was slayne, and
Henry obtained a noble victorie, after whiche conquest,
he was immediatly proclaimed king of Englande.

1 **K**ing Henry the .7. begā his reigne ouer this realme
of Englaū, and continued .23. yeres a prince of mar-
vellous wysedome and pollicy, and of great iustice
temperaunce and grauyte. He so behaued him in the
tyme of his reigne, that notwithstanding many and gret
occasions of trouble, ynquietnesse and warre, he kept his
realme in right good order and pollicy, wherfore he was
greatly esteemed and reuerenced of foraine princes.

The sweating sicknesse beganne first in Englande, of
the which a wonderfull multitude died for lacke of good
kepyng,

2 Frederich the emperoure made Maximilian his sonne
partaker of the empire. Not longe from this tyme Maxi-
milian, after the death of his wyfe, was taken by the
Flemminges & cast in prisson, wherof ensued great war,
mortalitie, and persecucion in Flaunders.

5446

1486

Algerus after he had slaine his bretherne, was made
kynge of Persye, Armenye and Media.

Kynge Henry of Englande toke to wyfe Elisabeth, the
eldest daughter of Edward the .iii. by whiche meanes
the two families of York and Lancaster, which had long
caused great diuision, was knytte together, in one.

About

The third part of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

1443

1487

About this tyme Francis Louel, and Humfrey Staf. Ant
forde rebelled in the North, which commocion was quite sum
ted by the pollicie of the Duke of Bedforde. gli.

Nicolas an heremite of Beluecia, and Hieronoms Sa
nonarola, that had the spirite of prophete, were famous
Ferdinand king of Spaine, by knightly force and man
hode, conquered againe the kingdome of Granada, and
chased from thens the Saracens.

Warre betwene the Venecians & Sigismund Duke
of Austrich.

1450

1447

A great businesse in England, by meane of a pzeff cal
led Rycharde Simon, whiche takyng with him a yonge
childe, called Lambert, fledde into Irelande, and seigned
to the nobles of that countree, that he had brought wpth
him, the yonge sonne of the Duke of Clarence, nephew
of king Edward the. iiii. & lawefull heyre to the crowne
of Englande, wherwith the Irishemen, beyng excited,
alled with theim Margaret the syster of Edward, and
dyuers noble men of England, which gathering which
theim a great power of Irishemen, Englyshmen, & Ger
maines, entred the lande, and at Stoke mette with king
He rye and his hoste, and there fought a strong battaile
in the whiche was slaine the Erle of Lincolne, Francis
Louell, Thomas Broughton, Thomas Gerardine of I
relande, and Martine Swarte a Germaine, which were
chiefe capitaynes of the rebelles, Rycharde the pzeffe,
and Lambert the counterfested king, were taken in the
fielde. Fabian seemeth to auouch this to be dooen in the
yere of our lozde. 1487.

Warre betwene Britaine and the Frenchemen.

Charles of Fraunce forsoke Margeret the daughter of
Maximilian, whiche was to him affianced.

This yere was a fielde foughten in Flaunders by the
lozde Daubenet in the quarel of Maximilian the emper
ours sonne, and Erle of Flaunders.

1451

1490

In Englande was a care arrered of the tenth penie of
mens landes and goodes by menes wherof the comons
role, and slewe the Erle of Northumberland. For whi
che cause Chamberlaine their capytaine, with dyuers o
ther were after hanged at Poze.

Maximi

The year of the world	The year of the world	The year of the world
7	Maximilian recovered the parte of his Duchie of Arrich, which Matthias kyng of Hungarie had with holden from him a good season. The kyng of Scotis was slaine in battayle by the nobles of his realme, and James his sonne ordeined kyng in his place. Maximilian, by his deputie (as the maner is of greates princes) married Anne the daughter of Frances Duke of Britaine, after the death of her father, but that marriage notwithstanding, Charles of Fraunce found such meanes, that he toke her to his wife in open marriage, and by her obtained the dominion of Britaine. For whych cause was great grudge and malice betweene him and Maximilian, and so much the more because Charles did repudiate Margaret his daughter, whiche was to him affianced and betrothed.	1491
8	Kyng Henry arrived in Fraunce with a great army, entending to ayde the Britaines against the French king but Charles by entreatie concluded peace, the condicion wherof was, that he shulde paie to kyng Henry soothe with for his expenses and charges in the warre a greatesumme of money, and verely after as a certayne tribute 25. thousande crownes, after whiche agreement Henry returned into England. The Turke with a great power, bothe by sea and land invaded the inhabytantes of the hilles in Greece, called Ceraunus, and them subdued to the Turkishe empire. Certaine new landes were found in the Decea se first by Amerinus Vesputus, & after by Christophorus Columbus. Ther were dyuen out of Spaine by commaundement of the kyng. 125. families of the Jewes, of the whiche 30. thousande dyed of the pestylence in their iourney, as they were departyng. Alexander the. vi. byshop of Rome. xi. yeares, a bloude dyer and cruell tyranne.	1492
9	Maximilian succeeded his father Friderich in the empire, and reigned. 27. yerres.	1493
10	Charles of Fraunce made clayme to the kyngdome of Naples and Sicillie, and so, that cause went into Italpe	1494

The ver
of the
worlde

1456

1495

Theyere with a great army, wher in short space he conquered Pa Anni r
of Christ ples, and compelled kinge Alphons to forsake the coun, guni ar
frei, and than retourned into France, and in his tourney eli
was encountred by the Meneciās, which endeuoured to
stoppe his passage, where after soze fyght, to the losse of
bothe partes, he toke an other way.

About this tyme beganne the foule scabbe and horrible ii
sickenesse called the Frenche pockes.

Dyuers gentilmen in Englande appeached of treason
and for fauouring the conspiracte of Perkin Warbecke
of the whiche some were pardoned, some put to death.

Perken Warbecke, whiche by the counsaile of Margare
ret of Burgoyne, named him selfe Rycharde of Poike,
kinge Edwardes seconde sonne, arriued in kente, where
he was bynne backe by the vplandishmen, and other in
habitantes of the countrey, with losse of dyuers of hys
men.

Ferdinand, the sonne of Alphons, was restozed againe
to the kyngdome of Naples immediatly after the depar
ture of the Frenchemen.

Sozinus and Jason lawiers, Alexander Benedicens,
and Antonius Beniuensis phisicians, Iohannes Pau
clerus, Kaphael Molateranus, Robertus Cagutius, hie
Kozlograppers, Rodulphus Agricola, a man of excellent
learning, Iohanes Iouintanus, Pötanus, Petrus Cri
stus, Stephanus Piger, Ambrosius Calepinus Philip
pus Beraoldus flourished.

Blanch Mary, the princes daughter of Ansbria, was
married to Maximilian.

Wladislaus the kyng of Polonies sonne, obtayned the
kingdomes of Hungarye and Boheme. He made league
with Maximilian the emperour.

1457

1496

The Scottes brake into the North partes of Englande 12
by the excityng of Perkin Warbeck, & dyd much harme
to the borderers.

In Italy a stone of wonderfal biggenesse fell out of the
ayre, whiche by the violence of the tal(as some say) brake
in .iii. great pieces, the coloure of thys stone was as it
had been burned with fyre.

In these dayes preached at Florentia in Italye a frier
called

That was called Hierome Sauonarola, whose sayings were these **The year** **The year**
 that Italy should be purged with the scourges of God, of the **of the**
 for the manyfold offences of the princes, as well of the **world**
 Clergie as the laitie, and that after the subuersion of the
 citiees of Florence and Rome, should follow a reformation
 and redresse in the church, and moreover that one Quib
 come ouer the Alpes like to Cyrus, which should subuert
 and destroy Italye.

While king Henry of Englands made preparation
 for warre into Scotland, by meanes of a paymente that
 was graunted to the kyng by act of parliament, a new
 commocion was ariued by the commons of Cornwall
 whiche vnder the leadinge of the lord Audley came to
 blacke heath, where the kinge mette with them, and dis-
 comfited the rebelles, and toke their capitaynes whiche
 were shortly after hanged drawen and quartered.

King Henry sent an armie into Scotland, vnder the
 guiding of the erle of Surrey and the lord Peuell, wher
 he made sharpe warre vpon the Scottes.

A marriage concluded betwene prince Arthur and lady
 Katherine the kinges daughter of Spayne.

Perkin Warbecke landed agayne in Cornwall, and as-
 sayled the towne of Exeter and other places, but finally
 he toke the sanctuarie of Beandley, and was after par-
 doned of his life.

Lewys the twelue of that name duke of Orleans
 and Valoys, was ordeyned king of France, who after
 he had possession of his kingdome, forsooke Joha his first
 wife, and married the widowe of Charles his predecessor
 four.

Maximilian invaded Burgoyne, where after battaile
 to the losse of both partes a peace was concluded.

A peace proclaimed betwene the kinges of England
 and Scotlande, for the terme of both theyr lyues.

Perkin Warbecke endeouored to steale away secretly
 out of the lande, but he was taken agayne by his keepers
 and by the kinges commaundement cast in the tower of
 London.

The Turkes toke from the Venetians, Methon, Pat-
 pactum, and shortly after Dyrrhachium, & with sworde
 P p. ii. and

5458

1467

5459

1498

The thirde parte of

The ver
of the
worlde

Theyere
of Christ

and fire spoyled the prouince of Fozzulis.

Annal
re
gum an

The Switzers warred vpon their borderers of Au
rich, wherfoze Maximilian the emperour came out of
Celderlande, where he was occupied in warre to defend
his subiectes, but after diuers skirmishes and smal bat
tallies to the losse of both partes the warre was finished.

9460

1499

At S. Thomas Marring a frepeling was put to ere
cucion, which by the entisement of a monke named Pa
tricius, called him selfe Edward Erle of Marwike and
sonne of George Duke of Clarence, whiche sens the be
ginning of king Hentis reigne was kept secretly in the
Tower.

25

Perkin Warbecke was put to death, & sone after the
Erle of Marwike, because he demed to be consentinge
to the treason of the sayd Warbecke.

Lewis kinge of Fraunce teke Millayne. The newe
bridge at Parys, with the housing ther vpon fel downe,
This yere was a great pestilence in the citee of Londo
by reason wherof the kinge and the quene sayled to Ca
lis, and at S. Peters they mette with the Duke of Bur
goyne.

9461

1450

26

Sir Edmund de la Poole, duke of Suffolke, depars
ted secretly out of this land, by meane of who was lyke
ly to haue bene a new insurrection.

King Henry of Englande fianced his daughter Mar
garet to James the kinge of Scottes, and Ferdinande
king of Spayne, married his daughter Katherine to the
noble prince Arthur, who ended his life in easter weeke
folowing.

Sfozia reconered the citee of Millayne, and expelled
the Frenchemen, whom while he pursued more fiercely
than aduisedlye, he fell into their handes vnwares, and
was taken of them and led into Fraunce.

9462

1501

The Frenchemen, by the counsaile of the bishoppe of
Rome, ledde an army against the turkes, and ioyng
in battaille at Nistene, were ouerthrowen and taken.

17

The figure of crosse appered in the garments of dy
ners persons of Germanye, and droppes of bleudde fell
from heauen.

9463

1502

Elisabeth queene of Englande dyed in the tower of
London

18

Anni re- London, as she lay in childe bedde, and shortly after was The yere The yere
gum an: Dame Margaret the kinges doughter married to the king of the of Christ
96. of Scottes. world.

A great pestilence in the countre of Germanye.

The Frenchmen brought Naples vnder their dominio

19 This yere was much hurt done by mischance of fyre, 5464 1503
in diuers places of London.

Presto Johannes, emperour and high byshop of Andie
and Aethiope.

Ferdinand of Spayne, sene a nauy of shippes into Italy
where they banquished, chased and slew the Frenchme,
and recouered the kingdome of Naples, wyth all the do-
minion belonging to it.

Plus bishop of Rome onely. xxx. dayes, after whome
succeeded Julius a cruell and fierce tyzanne, geuen only
to murder and warre.

20 The warre of Bauarie beganne, in whichs Cesar, 5465 1504
Maximilian defended the princes of Bauarie, agaynst
Philpperle Palatine of Rhine, and his sonne Duke Ro-
bert, who because he had maried the doughter of Geor-
ge Duke of Bauarie latelpe deceased, made claime to that
Duchye, But continuing the time of this warre, he en-
ded his life, and the was a peace concluded betwene his
father and the emperour.

21 Philippe the Archduke of Burgoyne, the emperoure 5466 1505
Maximilians son, as he sailed into Spayn to take posses-
sion of the kingdome of Castile that fell to hys wife and
hym by the deathe of Elisabeth, the wyfe of Ferdinande
was driven by force of tempest to land in Englad, wher
he was honourable receyued of king Henrype, and then
departed on his iordey toward Spayne.

Elisabeth the quene of Polonie ended her life, which
was a woman of great noblenesse, boughter to a kynge
wife to a kinge, and mother to diuers kynges,

Santes Pagnino, a great Hebricij, Leonicens Cat-
tinaria, Caballus and Optatus phisicians,

Niphus Jacobus Faber, Stapulensis, a Dignus philoz-
sophers, Petrus Bembus, and diuers other lerned men
were famous.

Al the inhabitantes of Granada were eyther forced to
P p. iii. receiue

The third parte of

The yere
of the
worlde
1467

The yere receyue the sayth of Chyzt, 02 to forsaake the land.

The Sophie of Persia, banquished, chased and slewe the Turkes.

The Genoways forsaake the dominion of Lewis king of France.

Julius bishop of Rome toke the citee Bononie.

A mariage concluded betwene Charles Archduke of Austrie, prince of Castile, and Marpe the daughter of king Henry of England.

The famous clerke Reuchline restozed again the knowlage of the hebrew tongue.

1468

1507

Philip king of Castile payed his debt to Nature.

Lewis king of France by agreement receyued again the citee of Gene.

Maximilian the emperor beganne the cruel and long warre agaynst the Venecians. In time whereof were foughten many bloudy battalles, and diuers great mutations and chances hapned. At the first Lewis kynge of France ayded the Venecians, but after he forsaake the and went to Maximilian, contrarie wile Julian byshop of Rome first fauoured Maximilian, and after turned to the Venecians. By this warre the Venecians lost many of their chiefe citees.

1469

1508

The citee of Constantinople was shaken with most terrible earthquakes. Innumerable houses and towers were cast to the ground, and chiefly the palace of the great Turke, in so much that he was forced to flee to an other place, many of the people were destroyed with tempest.

Charles duke of Belria renewed his warre with the emperor, and invaded the Brabantsois.

Ismael Sophie, king of Persie, Armente, and Hircania became chrystened, and banquished the turkes in diuers great battalles.

1470

1509

The noble king Henry the. viii, ended his life at Richmount the. xxi, day of Aprill.

The renowned prince Henry the eight being. xviij. yerres of age succeeded his father in the gouernance of this realme, & reigned in great fame and noble maner. 38. yerres. Of personage he was taule and myghtie, in witts and memory excellent, of such maiesty tempered

peres

Uni re- pered with humanitie and gentylneſſe, as was comly in The yere The yere
sam an: so great a pynce. In knowlege of good letters he farre of the of Chriſt
li. passed all kinges of Englande befoze this time. For his world.

magnifice & liberalitie he was renowned throughe all the worlde. In his time was great alteration of thinges within this realm. For he reformed and altered the state of the comyn weale in many thinges by making diuers most honest and godly lawes, to the great profite as wel of hym selfe as of hys people. He abolished the usurped power of the byshop of Rome. He redressed the state of religion, diminished supersticion and idolatry, forbade pilgrimages, pulled downe abbeyes and monasterys, and rooted out the sedicious sectes of religion, which maintained false worshipping of god, and greatly aduanced and set forth the true knowlege of goddes worde and al other honest learnynges and sciences. He founded .ii. colleges, one at Orenforde, an other at Cambrydge, and set vp byuers free scholes in other partes of the realme.

The knowlege of good letters by continuall warres being neglected and driven out of Italy, increased greatly in Germany, Fraunce, England and Scotlande. For augmenting and furthering wherof, Margarete the kinges grandmother builded .ii. colleges in Cambrydge. In like maner William byshop of Lincolne, and Rycharde of Winchester builded .ii. other in the vniuersitie of Orenforde, of the which one is called Brasenose, the other Corpus Christi college.

Kynge Henry married the lady Katherine late wyfe to his brother Arthur, hauing the dispensation of Leo bishop of Rome, but not without great murmuring of the Cardinales and diuers learned men of other realme.

Leopold king of Fraunce vanquished the Venetians, toke the cities Vicia, Bergamū, Crema, and Cremona and subdued them to his dominions.

Maximilian recovered from the Venetians, Verona, Padua, Verulam, and diuers other townes and cities.

Diuers ambassadours came to kinge Henry of Englande.

The cite of Pise was brought in subiection to the Venetians.

Julius

*3 Disposition
of the Pope
to the King
for marriage
of the Lady
Katherine
with his brother
Henry.*

The third parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

5471

The yere
of christe

1510

Jullus byshop of Rome, by force of armes toke **Ranen** **Thul** **na**, **Amola**, **Francia**, **Fozliu** and other possessions of the church, which were withholden by the **Venecians**. sum 8
gli.

The byshoppe of Rome beyng reconciled to the **Venecians**, toke **Putina** and **Mirambula**, which he restozed to **Frances Vicus** lord of that cite.

Joachim Marques of **Brandenburge**, toke all the **Jewes** within his dominion, of the whiche .38. were bzont, and .ii. beheaded, because thei martyzed the sacramente of the altar.

Empson and **Dudley**, whiche in the time of king **Henrie the .viii.** had been great rulers, were put to deathe to stoppe the murmuring and grudg of the people against theim.

Bugia in **Afrike** was conquered of the **Spaniards**.

The famous and gret lerned man maister **Erasmus** of **Roterodame**, flourished, by whose benefyte and diligence as wel diuine knowlege, as al other good learning was maruellously furthered and augmented.

The woorthipfull clerke doctour **Collete**, whiche builded the fre schole of **Paules** in **Londō**, liued at this time and by his diligent preaching, first beganne to open the slouthfulnes and negligence of the clergy of this realme in those daies.

A sedicion at **Ertfozd** in **Germany**, by occasion wherof great displeasure was kended, betweene the byshoppe of **Mens**, and **Friderich Duke** of **Saronie**, in so much that the matter was lyke to haue been decyded by deute of sword, had not the emperours auctoritie stopped their rage.

Henry, the first sonne of kynge **Henry the eyght** was borne on newe yeres daye, for iole wherof a great iustes was kept at **Westminster**, and on **S. Mathewes** day following the childe dyed.

5472

1511

Kynge **Henry** of **England** sent the lord **Darby**, wyth a goodly company of men into **Spaine**, to ayde the king his father in law against the **Moores**, but ere he arrived a peace was concluded betwene theim, wherfore shortly after he retourned home againe.

The same time sir **Edward Poyninges** accompanied with

Went with the lord Clinton and dyuers other) was sent into the year of 1512
 Gelderlande with .xv. C. archers, to appe to synce of of the
 Castile, at the request of Margaret Duchesse of Savoy & would
 regent of Flaunders.

Sir Edmund Hawarde and lord Thomas Howard
 toke Andzewe Barton, and .i. 50. Scottes, with .ii. greates
 myppes.

The cite Bononie forsoke the byshoppe of Romes do-
 minion.

The king of Scottes requyred his ships that were late-
 ly taken to be restored accordyng to the leage. But an
 swere was made by kinge Henry, that the matter per-
 tained nothing to the league, because that Andzew Bar-
 ton, was a pyrate and robber on the seas.

The .xv. daye of Januarpe was a parlyamente, in the
 whiche two fiftenes and two dismes of the clergye, were
 graunted to ayd the kinge in his warres, that he enter-
 ded against the French kinge.

By the auctorite of the emperour and the french king
 a counsaile was indicted at Vise, which was after trans-
 ferred to Myllaine.

4 The lord Marques Dorset (with dyuers other lordes
 and knyghtes) was sent of king Henry into Spaine, with
 an armie of .i. 300. men, who (a good parte of the sum-
 mer) dyd much harme in Gulan by spoiling the countrey
 but in the winter he returned by means of a flie, whiche
 chanced amonge his men.

Sir Edward Hawarde admiral of England, with a
 great nauy scoured the seas, and then went toward By-
 taine.

The cite Bizia gaue vp to the Venetians, which was
 shortly after recovered and dispoyled by the Frenchmen
 and the Venetians beaten and slayne. At the same tyme
 was Rauenna robbed and pilld. On easter day a great
 battaile was foughten nere to Rauenna, betweene the
 French kinge and the byshop of Rome, in which the by-
 shops armie was dyscomfited, and .i. 600. of his souldy-
 ours slaine.

King Henry sent forth a nauie of .xv. ships, among
 the whiche the regent a ship royall was chiefe.

The third part of

The yere
of the
wylde.

The yere
of Christ

Not onely all partes of Europe was disquieted wth Ann^l the warres of the Venetians, but also the countreys of Asia, Persy, and Armeny were vexed with most cruel and deadly warres, wherein the hethen tyrannes infested ech other with all crueltie, for Selinus the Turke expelled his father out of his kyngdome withal his brothers and knismen, and after dyuers gret battailes, vanquyshe chased and slew two Souldaines, and annexed Aegypte and Araby to his kyngdome.

Sir Edward Hawarde, lorde admirall of Englande, throughte his so muche hardnesse was slaine in Britaine after wh^o his brother sir Thomas Haward, was made admyrall by the king.

The nauyes of England & Fraunce meeting at Britain Bay, fought a cruell battaille, in the whiche the regent of Englad & a Carke of France beinge craped together were barnte, and their capitaines & men all drowned, the Englyshe capitaine was sir Thomas Bneuet who had with him. 700. men in the French Carke was sir Piers Morgan with. 900.

A parliament was holden, wherein it was determined that the kinge hym selfe, shoulde personally invade the realme of Fraunce.

Warre betwene the Polonians and Moscovites.

1474

1513

Kyng Henry of Englande, beyng confederate with the emperour and the kinge of Spaine, passed with a great power into France, where hauing in wages vnder his banner the emperour Maximilian, and all the nobilitie of Brabant, Flaunders and Hollande, he discomfited and abashed the whole power of France, and conquered Teruine and the great city of Turney, whiche is saied to haue in it as many towers as ther be days in the yere In this citie the kinge builded a goodly castell & tower, with exceedyng costes, and kepte ther a garrison certayne yeres after.

The lord Chamberlayne of Scotlande, inuadinge the borders was discomfited by sir William Bulmer.

In this meane tyme the kyng of Scottes, notwithstandinge that he was sworn on the sacramēt to kepe peace, perced this land with a mighty armie, but by the good diligence

And the diligence of the quene, and the pollicy & manhode of the Erl of Surrey the kinges lieutenat, he was him selfe of the
 slayne, with a. xl. of his Erls, and the Scottes discomfited. The yere
 of Christ
 1514

ted, but not without great losse of Englyshmen.
 Sir John Mallop burnt diuers villages & townes in
 Normandy.

6 A peace concluded betwene Englad and France, and
 on S. Denis day was Lewys the French king coupled
 in marriage with lady Mary the kinges sister, on twelve
 yeres day folowinge, he ended his lyfe, wherfore kynge
 Henry sent agayne for his sister by the duke of Suffolke
 and other.

5475

1514

Richarde Hanne this yere was hanged in Lollars
 tower.

5476

1515

7 Frauncis the first of that name, succeeded in the kynge
 dome of France. This man is greatly praysed of al wyl-
 lers in those dayes, for his singulat humanitee & fauou-
 ring of learned men. He maynteyned the warres which
 king Lewis had begunne, and alied him with the Dukes
 of Belric, Leigie and Burgoyne, which did him due
 homage. He would also haue ben confederate wyth the
 bishop of Rome, but he sayled of his purpose, for shortly
 after betwene the bishop of Rome, the imperour the king
 of Spayne, the Switzers, and other was made a pryue
 league and confederacie agaynst the Frenchmen & Ve-
 necians.

Lady Marye kinge Henries daughter, was borne at
 Grenewiche.

Lady Mary the kinges sister before maryed to the fren-
 che king, returned into Englad, and shortly after was
 maryed to the duke of Suffolke.

A great battayle foughten betwene the Switzers and
 the Frenchmen, in the which the frenche kinge was in
 so great dager, that the brayne of his owne men spercked
 in his face, and him selfe was thysse stricken with a spere
 but in the ende of the fight, by helpe of the Venecians &
 other whiche came in good season, the Heluecians were
 discomfited and slayne, and the citee of Millayne yelded
 to the French kinge.

An horrible sedicion in Hungary by a company of soul-
 diours

Z 11.11.

The third part of

The year
of the
worlde.

The year of Christ they had the signe of the crosse for Dani
if Christ they badge and cognisance, which minded to destroy gum an
all the nobilitie and gentlemen.

Wiziragen by by composition to the frenchmen.

A peace concluded betwene the emperour, the kinges of
Fraunce and Spayne, and the Venetians wherby that
crnell warre ceased.

A sollemne meeting at Vienna, of the emperour, the king
of Polonie, and of Hungarie whiche by marriage were
confederate.

Margaret the queene of Scottes, king Henries elder sya
ster fled into England, & late at Warebottell, where she
was deliuered of a childe called Margarete. In Maye
she came to London, where she tarped a hole yere before
she departed into Scotland.

1477

1516

This yere was so great frost in England that men
might esely passe with cartes ouer the riuer of Thames
from Westminster to Lambeth.

Mathewe bishop of Sedonon and cardinall of Sloys
thes, came as Ambassadour from the emperour to king
Henry.

Charles Arch duke of Austrich, was ordeyned king of
Spayne.

1478

1517

On Maye euen in the citie of Londo, was an insurrecti
on of prentises and yong persons agaynst strangers,
of which diuers were put to execucion, and the resydne
came to Westminster with halters aboute their neckes
and were pardoned. This is named ill Maye daye.

Lady Margaret the kinges sister returned into Scots
land.

Johannes Frauncis Picus of Mirandula, a knight of
excellente witte and learning was famous, and in the pre
sence of Leo bishop of Rome, made a vehement oracy:
on, exhortinge him to reforme the vicious & naughty
life of the clergy.

Many dyed in England of the sweating sicknesse and
especially about London.

Lewys about this time succeeded his father in the king
domes of Hungary and Boheme.

A great

anni res
um an
li.

A great famine and pestilence in many places.

The yere of the
worlde

The yere
of Christ

The terme kept one daye at Orenford, and adourned agayne to Westminster.

The cardinall Campelus, the bishops legate, came fro Rome in ambassade to king Henry, and was receyved with great pompe by meanes of the cardinal of Englan Thomas Wolsey, which was then of great auctoritie in this realme.

The admirall of Fraunce came into England as ambassadour, with a great company of gentlemen. The cite of Turney was deliuered agayn into the french kinges handes, for the which he should paye. 60000. crownes, and for the castell that the kinge had buyded. 40000. and. 23000. poundes, Turneys, which the cite ought for their libertees and franchises.

A peace concluded betwene the kinges of Englands Fraunce and Castile for terme of their liues.

The Spaniards vanquished, chased and slewe Aeneas barbus, with his brother in Africke. 5479

1518

A sedicion in Pannonie, by meanes of the bishoppe of Eschbrune.

The emperor held a counsaile at Auguse.

Selinus the great Turke, after he had with continual and bloudye warre conquered Egypt Spzie, Phenecia Palestine, Coele, and chased out of Armentie the king of Persie, as a sodayne tempeste or storme returned into Europe, and besieged the cite Belgradum, or Caurodurum.

Martine Luther wrote first to Leo bishop of Rome concerning the vse of pardons, and in certayne priuate disputacions called in doubt diuers thinges concerning the bishops primacy, for which after he was troubled, and lastly proclaimed an heretike, vnder the defence & mayntenance of Friderike duke of Saxonie, he preached & wrote agaynst his power. All Germanye soone after forsoke the bishoppe of Rome, and so was the hole state of religion by his meanes altered among them.

Phillippe Melancton and Bomierane men of excellent learninge, but infected with the pestilente heresies of

martine luther
to leo 7 pope
wrote to him
pardons

The third part of

The yere
of the
worlde.
1480

The yere of Luther wrote sondaye workes agaynst the catholyke doctrine,
of Christ doctrine,

1519

The emperour Maximilian ended his life, after who¹² was chose by 8 princes electours of Germany, Charles the 5. Duke of Austrich and Burgoyne, king of Spaine and nephew to Maximilian, betwene him and the frenche king the warre was renewed.

Trouble in Ireland wherfore the erle of Kildare was discharged of his office o to deputye, and the erle of Surrey sent thither, who brought the erle of Desmound and other to good confirmtee and order.

Huldricus Duke of Wittenberge was expelled out of his heritage.

Soleimanus, the .xii. emperour of the Turkes, succeeded his father Seninus, and subdued Gazelles which rebelled in Syria.

1481

1520

As kinge Henry was at Canturbury with the quene¹² in a redisse to hane passed the sea, he harde of the emperours coming, with whom he mette at Douer & accompanied him to Canturbury, where after the emperoure had saluted the quene his aunte he toke shippinge into Flaunders.

King Henry passed ouer to Calis, and mette with Francis the frenche kinge at the campe betweene Arde and Guynes, wher was great triumphes, and many goodly sightes, in so sumptuous maner as the like had not bene sene. Immediately after he met with the emperour with whom he went to Grauelin, and the emperour returned with him to Calis where he had gret chere and feasting after which time they departed and king Henry returned into the realme.

1482

1521

The emperours souldiours gatte the towne of Meluzon, and besieged the noble citiees of Meesters & Turney¹³

The french king toke the towne and castel of Beding from the Burgonians.

The admiral of Fraunce toke the towne of Fontenay in Biskay.

The towne and castel of Turney was yelded to the emperour.

The

The Duke of Buckyngham was beheaded at London The yere of the
 the xviii. daye of May. of the
 The cardinall of England went ouer the sea to entreat of the
 a peace between the emperour, and the French king. At world
 Bruges he communed with the emperour, and at Cales
 consulted with the French ambassadours tyll December
 But he brought nothing to passe.

Lewys king of Hungary married Mary the emperour
 Charles sister, and Ferdinand Duke of Austrich the em-
 perours brother, toke to wife Anna the syster of Lewys
 the fornamed kinge of Hungary.

Warre betwene Leo byshop of Rome and the French
 kinge, the byshops souldyers wanne Pyllayne from the
 Frenchemen.

In the assemble that was holdē at Wormacia the prin-
 ces electours and other princes of Germany, expounded
 diligently to the emperour the dyuers and sundrie bour-
 delins, wher with that countrey was charged by the see
 and clergye of Rome, and proposed to him well nere an
 110. articles.

The excellent clerke Budeus, Zasius, Alciatus, Pire-
 kaumerus. Beutingerus grete lawyers, Copus, Linaker
 the Englysheman, Danarous, Bissotus, Massa phisico-
 ons, Constall byshop of Durham, Moore, Rycharde pace
 Polydore Vergil, Decolampadius, Zuinglius, Hutten
 Capio, Egnacius, Pellicane, Adrian Scepelus, Mosel-
 lanus, Cordus Curcius, a many other mē of great lear-
 nyng were famous in these daies.

The Frenchmen robbed the Englysh marchantes and
 other the kinges subiectes on all partes of the sea.

Solemanne the great Turke, conquered the cite Bel-
 grade, the moſte ſure and ſtronge Garrison of the Chry-
 stians.

The French king attached the Englyshmens goodes
 at Burdeaur, and deteyned the kynges trybute, and the
 French Queenes dowry.

The Genoways velded them to the emperour, and for-
 soke the French kinge.

All Frenchmen were attached in the cite of London,
 and cast in prison.

The

The third part of

The yere
of the
warre.
5443

The yere
of Christ
1522

The cardinall rode thzough London to Dover to mete Angl
with the emperour, beyng accompanied with.ii. Erles gum
cccvi. knyghtes .an. 100. gentylmen. viii. byshoppes. x. ell.
abbotes, thirtye chapelleines all in velvet and satin, and 14
700. ynnen.

Charles the. v. emperour of Rome came into England,
and was honozably receiued into London by the Maier,
the aldermen and commons of the cytie, the kynge hym
self accompaniing hym, from thens he went to Wynd-
sore, and satte in the stall of the Garter. After great fea-
styng, iustes, & honozable interteynment, he departed to
Hampton, and sailed from thens into Spaine, Duringe
this time the Erle of Surrei, lozde admyrall, bzant Moze-
les in Britaine, and than retourned into the realme. Not
longe after hauing an armye appoincted to hym by the
kinge, he passinge ouer to Caley, perced Picardye, and
bzant dyuers towne and castels. He besieged Hesoyng
but because winter dze we nere, he raised his siege and re-
toured home.

The Duke of Albanie beganne to enter this land with
a great armye, but whan he harde that the Erle of Shre-
usbury was comyng to geue him bataille, he toke a truce
for. vi. monethes and departed.

A pestilence in Rome, whiche consumed an. 100. thou-
sande.

Leo the tenth, byshop of Rome dyed, not without suspi-
cion of poisonyng. After whom succeded Adrian one yere
who was in lyke maner popsoned.

The lozde Kosse and lozde Darres of the Pothe, bur-
ned the towne of Kessel in Scotland, with fourescore vil-
lages, and ouerthrew eyghtene towers of stone, withall
their bulwarkes.

The emperours souldours wan Gean from the fren-
chemen, and the war continued cruelly betwene the em-
perour and the frenche kynge.

The emperour Charles, king Henry of England Fer-
dinande Duke of Austrich, the byshop of Rome, the cytie
of Venice, and dyuers other in Italie, were confederate
against the frenchemen.

The Turke besieged Rhodes, and on Chrysamas daye
toke it.

anni re The lord Marques Dorset warden of the Castle Mar: The pere The yet
gum an ches, bzent dyuers villages, holdes and other places in of the the yet
el Scotlande. world 1523

15 The cite of Wyllaine was bered with a soze pestilence, 5484
wherof dyed, 50. thousande within the space of. int. mo:
nethes.

Christierne kyng of Denmarke, and his wyfe Isabell
(beyng dyluen out of his realmes by his vncle Friderike
Duke of Hesse, and his owne subiectes, for his notable
crueltie) came into England, and were honorably recey-
ued and interteined of the kyng.

Sharpe warre and often skymyshe betwene the boz-
derers of Englande, Scotlande and Fraunce.

The Erle of Surrey bzente. 37. villages in Scotlande,
and haried the countrei fro the east marches to the west
and ouerthrew dyuers holdes and castelles.

The Frenche king prepared a great army to send into
Italve against the Duke of Wyllaine.

The Duke of Suff. with many other lordes and knigh-
tes, was sent this yere into France by king Henry, with
an armie of. 10000. men who passing the water of Sone
without battaille, toke diuers townes and castels, and de-
stroyed the countrey befoze him, in December he retour-
ned agayne into England.

The Erle of Surrey bzent Jedworth in Scotland, and
toke dyuers holdes.

The Duke of Albany besieged the castell of Marke,
and had in a redynesse a great army to inuade England.
But whā he had knowlage, that the Erle of Surrey was
coming against him, he cowardly fled and gaue back in
to Scotlande.

The emperour recovered the towne of Fountraby.

Clement the. vii. a florentyne bozne was ordeyned bys-
hoppe of Rome, and toke parte wyth the Frenchemen.

Treatie was made by the Quene of Scottes for an
abstinence of warre.

In the kingdome of Granada diuers citees were inla-
bored and in Naples was so great tempestes of wynde,
rayne, & thunder, that many toweres, great places, and

Aaaa.

myghty

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
of Christ

myghtie bygge trees were ouerthrowen and caste to the ground. Anno
gum an

5455

1524

The souldiours of Guines take a great booy at a faire
in the towne of Marguysan, and sir Robert Herninghā,
and certayne disuillances of Cales, take dyuers French-
men prisoners.

The lord of Campher and other came from the empe- 16
ror to king Henry.

The byshop of Dunkell and other ambassadours came
out of Scotlande.

A legate came from the byshoppe of Rome to entreat a
peace betwene Englande and Fraunce.

Sharpe warre betweene the marches of England and
Fraunce.

Sir Kaulke a fantoke, Leonarde Husgrave, and Ba-
rarde Heron were slaine in Scotland by to much hardi-
nesse in pursuyng their ennemys, at whiche tyme 300.
Scottes were taken prisoners by the Englishmen.

The Duke of Burbon made sharpe warre on the French
kynge's dominions, and dyd many enterpryses.

The French kinge passed with a great army into Ita-
lye, wher he besieged Paulte, & shortly after was encoun-
tered by the emperours army, and of theim vanquished,
and him selfe taken prisoner, fro thens he was conueigh-
ed into Spaine to the emperour, wher after certayne con-
dicions of peace agreed vpon betwene theim, he was de-
liuered.

Great triumphe and ioy in Englande for taking of the
French kinge.

The cardinal obteyned lycence of the byshop of Rome,
to suppress dyuers abbates to the entent to erect two col-
leges, one at Drenforde, an other at Ipswolche, and to in-
due theim with the landes, whiche colledges he began so
sumptuously, that it was not lyke they woulde come to
good ende.

King Henry was lyke to haue been drowned by lea-
ping ouer a ditch in folowynge his hawke nere to Abindō.

5486

1525

A great and horrible insurrection in Germany, of the 17
rude and vplandyshe people, whiche dwelled in, Alsacia,
Saxaue, Francia, Thuring and the countreys about the
rivers.

that the ruler of the, which commotion was suppressed by the
great power & strength of the princes. In so much that
within litell more than .iii. monethes, an hundred thou-
sand of that bpland the people were slayne like beastes,
by the iust iugement of god. Furthermore one surnamed
Sapheus wrote .xii. articles, which he entituled of
Christian libertee, among the which this was the chiefe
That tributes ought not to be payd to princes. Whoughe this
doctryne to attayne libertee, men suppose that the grettest
parte of that people was stered to rebel againste the ma-
gistrates.

In Mulhausen a towne of Thuring, was a preacher
named Monestarius, which taught openly that he would
reforme the state of the church, and made his auant pry-
uile, that reuelacions were shewed to him by god, and
that the sworde of Gedeon was committed to him, to o-
uerthrow the tyrante of the impious. He led out greate
companies, commaunding them to spoile and robbe mo-
nasteries, and the places of great men. But whyle the
bucryle people were scatered and disceuered without or-
dre, the princes of Saronie sodenly oppressed theym and
toke their capitaines, whom they put to worthy punish-
ment. This Monestarius was the first auctour of the dy-
uelishe sect and heresy of the Anapabtytes, which longe
time after vexed Germanye, and is not yett all together
extinguyshed.

Coppe was enhanced in England.

18 A murmuring in al partes of the realme for paymēt
of mony. And in Suff. 4000. men arose against the duke
and other commissioners, which were appeased by the
duke of Northfolke and other.

A truce betwene England and Fraunce for a certain
space and ambassadours, were sent into Denmarke for
restoring of their kinge, but the Danes wold graunt no-
thing, they did hate him so extremely for his crueltie.
A peace betwene Englands and Scotlande, for .iii. mo-
nethes.

Doctor Barnes a friser Augustine, bare a faggot be-
foze the cardinall in Paules.

A a a .ii.

Great

The per
of the
world

*Sapheus wrote
12 articles of
Christian libertee*

5487

1525

Doctor Barnes

The thirde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere
of Christ

Great death in London.

Anni
gum a
16.

Francis the frenche kinge was sette at liberty by the emperour vpon diuers condicions, whiche he sware to perfourme, but after he reuoked his othe and sayd, he was forced therto, or elles he should neuer haue bene deliuered.

The emperour after the french kinges deliuerance gaue to Charles duke of Burbon the whole Duchye of Millayne, on condicion to paye 4000. ducates, and find a certayne numbze of souldiours yerely.

Solemannus, the great Turke inuaded Hungarie, and spoyled the citee Buda. With whome Lewys the kynge and Paule Tomorus bishop of Coleinc, encountred in a great battaile, and were of him vanquished and slayne, with a great nombze of chzistian people.

Ferdinand Archduke of Austrich was chosen kinge of Hungarie and Boheme.

Charles married Isabell the kinges sister of Portugall.

Variance betwene the byshop of Rome and the house of Columnensis.

The byshop of Rome, the Veneciās, and diuers citees of Italy proclaymed warre agaynst the emperoure & by their incitement the french king was moued to warre, agayne vpon the emperour. In so muche that the emperours souldiours toke the towne and castel of Millayne and shewed such crueltie towarde the citeesins that they were in mind to haue forsaken their citee, the confederates of Italy required to haue king Henry as protectour of their league, but he chose rather to be an indifferēt mediator of peace betwene the two partys.

A proclamacion published in England agaynst al be lawful games, as Dice, Cardes, and Boules, which continued not long in effecte.

The emperours souldiours toke the cite of Rome, spoyled it and besieged the bishop Clement with his cardynalles in the Mounte Adzian, from whens he coulde not be dismissed by any meanes, vntill he agreed with his souldiours, notwithstanding that the emperour Charles himselfe, being then in Spaine, and fearing the thunderbolt

of exo

3488

1527

Anni re- of excommunication (which the souldiours nothing re- The yere
gum an- garded) did excuse him selfe by letters, that he knewe not of the of Christ
gli. of that his men had done, and therfore willed the bishop world.

to be sette at libertee.

Don Hugo de Mendosa, a great man borne in Spaine came to king Henrie as ambassadour fro the emperour.

The bishop of Tarbe, the Viscount of Foix, and Antony Melsy seconde presidente of Paris, came in ambassade to the king out of Fraunce. Ambassadours also came from the king of Hungary desiring ayde agaynst the Turke.

The cardinall of Englands went with great pompe into Fraunce, where he concluded a leage betwene kinge Henry of England and the Frenche king, whiche bothe by the cardinales meanes, sent their defiance to the emperour, and a strong army into Italie to deliuer the bishop, and drive the emperours power out of y countrey. The great master of Fraunce came to Londo with great triumph, for the conclusion of the sozenamed leagne.

The emperours sonne of Tartarie, with great puissance invaded Pannonie, but in the ende he was banquished and taken.

This yere were sene. iiii. sonnes, which in some places were included with a double rainbow.

Arthur Bilnei, Gessray Lome, and Garret were abjured by the cardinall, for speakinge agaynst the bishop of Romes auctoritee.

The citee Gean, was brought to the French kinges dominion.

Lord Lawdyske, and the French kinges souldiours, toke and spoyled Baile.

Ferdinand made warre vpo a noble man of Hungary named Quauopda, and toke from him diuers castles & townes.

Charles the emperour made open protestacion diuers times before the kinges heraldes of England & France, that what soeuer was done in Italie by his souldiours agaynst the bishoppe, was contrary to his wil and commaundement.

Lord Lawdyske, capitayn of the french kynges armie

A a a a, iii. in Ita:

The third parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

5489

The yere in Italye, in takinge the towne of Belise, losse ten thousand men.

1528

Open hostilitie & warre betwene the kinges of Englande and France, and the emperor. And the marchantes and ships of all partes were arrested.

Coine was very deare in England and had bene much the dearer, had not bene the good prouision of the marchantes of the Stillarde, and an abstinence of warre betwene England and Flaunders.

Charles Duke of Gelders invaded Holland and was discomfited by the lord Illsteine, whom Ladye Margarete regent of the countre sent agaynst him.

The famous and excellent clerke Iohannes Reueling ended his lyfe, by whose great learning and diligence the knowlage of the iii. tonges, and especially Hebreu was agayne restored to the world.

On S. Denis day a legate came from Rome to kynge Henry.

The sweating sicknesse raged in diuers partes of England.

The emperor sente the Duke of Brunswike with a great puissance into Italye. The Villanours were still miserable oppressed by the emperours souldiours. The Duke of Brunswike tooke the citee of Paulte, whiche shortly after was taken agayne by the frenchemen & the walles beaten downe. Extreme warre, pestilence, and famine in all Italy. Aboue 24000. of the frenche armie, that besyged Naples, dyed of the pestilence, beside the most parte of all theyr horses and beastes, so that there was not left passing, v. thousand men in all.

5490

1529

In this yere in the moneth of June the legates satte at the blacke friers in London concerning the kinges marriage & diuorsemēt from the p^rincesse Dowagier which had bene his brothers wife.

In October the cardinall was deposed from the chancellourship of England.

Ferdinande of Hungary recovered many places whiche before were taken from him by the Turke, & expelled out of the realme his enemy John Quatopda, which making claime to the crowne of Hungary, fled for ayde to the

Anni re- to the Turkes.

gum an-
gli.

The Frenchemen and Venetians wente with an army of the
of 40000 men to subdue Naples, upon whom the em-
perous souldiours came suddenly in the night and slew
of them a great number, and afterwarde in plaine bat-
taile discomfited their whole power, wherwith the fren-
che kyng being greatly moved sent a naup into Spaine
whiche spoyleth the countrey, but in the ende they were
all well nere taken and slaine.

The Turke (in the quarell of Quauoyda) perced Hun-
gary with a terrible puissance, hauing in his army 250000
fighting men, and exercised towarde the inhabytauntes
most extreme cruelty, for some the berefte of their sight
some the rent and mangled in diuers pices, cutting of
their noses, eares, handes, armes, pryncipe membes and
other partes of theyr bodys, Virgines in most dishonest
wyse they rauyshed, of other women the pulled of the
pappes, and opening their wombes, whiche were great
with chylde, burned the yonge babes. Afterwarde he be-
sieged Vienna, a cite of Austrich, and assailed the same
very cruellie, twenty tymes he came to the walles, and
till by the Christians was expelled, and driven back. In
fine aboute the Ides of October, by the manhode, wyse-
dome and pollicy of Philip Erle Palatine of Rhine, and
the Duke of Banary, whiche were there as soueraygne
captaines, the Turkes were faine to retourn into their
countrey, with the losse of 60. thousande souldiours.

A synode holden at Marsburge, where communicacion
was had betwene Luther, Melancton, Oecolampadius,
Zuinglius, for an agreement concerning the sacramen-
tes, whiche controuersye had caused great varyaunce a-
monge the preachers of Germanye, at whiche tyme the
mattier was not concluded, because the sweating sick-
nesse that raged soze in that cite, dissolued the counsaile.

A great famine and derth in Venice and the countrey
ther about, wherof a gret numbze dyed for lacke of su-
ffinanace.

Seane in the tyme of a great pestilence was recovered
from the Frenchemen, by the emperours souldiours.

William Tyndale first translated the new Testament
into

The yere
of Christ

The third parte of

The yere
of the
worlde

The yere into Englyshe,
of chyrche

The sweating sickenelle bered Brabant, and a great
part of Germanie, wherof very many dyed and especial-
ly in Antwarpe, wher in thre dayes space it consumed, 6
hundred persons.

A peace was agreed upon betwene King Henry of Eng-
land, the emperor, the French king, the king of Bo-
heme and Hungary, and Clement the byshop of Rome.
for the conclusion wherof and the delivrance of his chil-
dren, the French king was bounde to pay to Charles
the emperor. 20. hundred thousande crownes, besyde
dyvers other condicions.

Fraunces Sfortia was restored to his Duchye of Mil-
laine & paid therfore to the emperor. 90000. crownes

The cardynal was cast in a prison, & forfayted all
his landes and goodes to the kynge.

A parliament begon, at Westmynster, wher in a refoz-
macion was taken for dyvers enormities bled of the spi-
ritualtie, as probates of testametes, mortuaries, plura-
litie of benefices, none residence, bying, selleng, and ta-
king of benefices by spirituall persones. &c. also the loan
of money borrowed in the .xv. yere of the kinge was re-
leased.

The emperoure Charles, with great solemnitye, was ²²
crowned with the imperiall Diademe by Clement the .7.
byshop of Rome, at Bonony, after whiche time he went
to Augusta in Germanie, wher was holden a counsaile
for preparacion of warre against the Turke, and for ad-
gement of matters in Almaine.

Justus Jonas, Brenckins, Urbanus Rhegyus, Mart,
Bucere, and dyvers other, with their preaching and writ-
tyng sowed the seedes of heresy in Germany.

Kipa, Sblamonius, Stella, famous lawyers, Falco,
Jontus, Ruellius, Cornarius, Fuchsius, phisicians, Sar-
zor, Zieglerus, Drouctus, Apianus, Munsterus, excel-
lent in the quadrantalles, Urbanus Hessus, Widas, Arsi-
nus, Clarean, Sapidus, poetes, Paulus Riccius, Rhe-
nanus, Sadoletus, Gryneus, Alines, Anrogallus, Wole-
tus & other innumerable learned men, and most exper-
te and cunnyng in all sciences, lyved in these dayes, whose
woorkes

5461 1530

Charles 5.
crowned by
pope Clement
7. at Bonony

the Epitome of Chronicles.

at rea woorkes declare them to the whole worlde.

Commaundment was geuen by kyng Henrie to the bishops, that Tyndalles translation of the new Testament should be called in, and that they shulde see an other sette forth to the profite of the people.

A great deluge in Brabant, Holland, Selande, and the sea coastes of Flanders, where the waters of the sea and other ouerflowed all the countreies. Muche harme was doon also about Rome by the greate risynge of the ryuer Tyber, and vnseasonable tempestes of wyndes.

The wyld Irishemen perceiuyng the Erle of Beldare to be in Englande, inuaded his landes and dyuers other countreies. Wherefore kyng Henry sent thither the Erle of Beldare and sir William Skevington, which shortly brought them to good order.

The byshop of London caused a great nymbre of the new Testamentes of Tyndals translation to be burned.

At Augusta the emperour helde a counsaile of the pryncis of Germany, where it was consulted howe to mayntain warre against the Turke, & to haue an vnitie in matters of religion. Whereupon the churches of Germanye offered their confession to the emperour, but nothyng was doone therein, sayng that certayne malicious friers take vppon them to confute those confessions withoute scripture or reason.

The Cardinall was arested, and on S. Andrewes day dyed at Leycester as he should haue been broughte to the Tower of London.

One boyled in Smithfielde at London for poysonyng.

23 The Emperour Charles made Ferdinand his brother kyng of Rome.

A great earthquake wel nere in al Portugall the space of eyght dayes. In the citie of Alisbone or Lurbozne, a thousande foure hundred houses were ouerthrowen, and aboue. 600. so shaken, that they were redy to falle. All the churches were caste to the ground as it were heapes of stones. This earthquake cam (as it were) by fittes seuen or eight tymes in a day, the people forsooke the citie, and went into the fieldes.

A great pestilence rose by meanes of the vapours of this
Bbbb earth.

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ.

5492

1531

an earthquake
in Portugall

continued six
dayes

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ.

earthquake.

A blasynge sterre appeared in Germanie, Italye, and Fraunce towarde the weast thzee weekes together in the moneth of Auguste.

The Turke came agayne into Hungary entending to conquere Vienna, but he was ouerthrowen by the capitaynes that were lefte in the garrisons, and a great number of his men taken and slayne.

In the sea coastes of Hollande a fyssh was caste by by the sea. that was in lengthe. 68. foote, in the thychenesse xxx. the paunp of his mouthe was. xiii. foote wyde.

In this season were dyuers preachynge in this realme one agaynst an other, concernyng the zynge's mariage & diuorcement from the lady Katherine.

The frenche kynge's mother dyed.

The kyng of Polonie vanquished Quauoyda and the Walachians.

A battayle was foughten betweene the Tigurines and theyr neyghbours, wherin Zuinglius was slayne.

Kynge Henry beganne to buylde his palaice at Westminster.

1493

1532

Kyng Henry went ouer the sea to mete with the french kyng, with whom he went to Bulleynne, and the french kyng came agayne with hym to Caleys, where after feastyng and bankettyng, eche toke leaue of other, and returned to theyr realmes.

The kyng of long tyme had not kept company with the lady Katherine, bycause his mariage was in controuersye, and by dyuers vniuersities and learned men, determined to be agaynst the lawe of God. Wherefore on S. Erkinwaldes day he married pryncely the lady Anne Bulleynne, whiche on Whitsunday the next yere folowynge was crowned Quene with great solemnitie.

It was ordeyned by acte of parliament that the kinges subiectes shuld no more paie annates or fyrst frutes, nor susteyne any suche exactions or impositions they hadde befoze tyme paid to the see of Rome for consecratyng, electyng or geuyng of licences or dispensations: But that they shulde haue all suche thinges within the realme and

the end

Ann
gum
gli.

24

the Epitome of Chronicles.

at re- sue no further for the same.

King Henry was diuorced from lady Katherine which had been his brothers wife.

On Micholmer daie died the French Queene, wife to the Duke of Suffolke.

Ladie Elizabeth was borne at Grenewiche.

An esquire of Gloucestershyre called William Tracie by one Doctour Parker, the byshop of Worcester's chancellor, was taken out of his graue, and burnt after he had been dead. iiii. yerres, because he sayde in his wpll, he wolde haue no funerall pompe at his burieng, neither passed vpon Masse, and that he trusted in god onely, hopping in hym to be saued, and by no saincte.

Within the space of these two yeaeres appeared. iiii. blasfyming sterres in dyuers partes beyonde the sea.

Chaamas Sophie of the Persians, nere to Euphrates ouerthrew the Turkes in a great battayle.

Kyng Henry sente the Duke of Northfolke, the lord Rocheforde and other in ambassade to the French kyng, as then intendynge to mete with the byshop of Rome at Pere.

Daily skymishing betwene the borderers of England and Scotlande, and yet no warre proclaimed, and many robberies, murders, and slaughters done on bothe partes, and althoughe the commissioners of Englande and Scotlande satte at Newcastell entreating a truce and amitee, yet the Scottes ceased not to robbe bothe by land and Sea.

A peace concluded betwene Englande and Scotlande.

The bishop of Rome cursed king Henry and the realme of England, bycause of the diuorle from lady Catherine.

Certain monkes, friers, and other euill disposed persons, of a diuellysh entent had put in the heades of many of the kynges subiectes, that they had knowlage by reuelation of god and his saintes, that he was highly displeased with kyng Henry for the diuorlement from the lady Catherine, and surmised among other thynges, that God had reuealed to a Nunne named Elizabeth Barton (whom they called the holpe mayde of Kent) that in case the kyng proceeded to the sayde diuorle, and married an o-

Bbbb. ii.

ther,

The yere
of the
worlde.

5494

The yere
of Christ.

1533

*In relation of the
monks and friers
and how they
sent of the
revelation*

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ.

1495

1534

*For the lorde an
anabaptist of
the fente of the
anabaptist
all sorts.*

*married
to a woman. to
the lorde.
to a man
to a man
to a man*

ther, he should not be kynge of this realme one moneth after, and in the reputation of god not one day nor houre. Ann
gum
gli.

This Elisabeth Barton by false dissimulation had often practised and shewed to the people meruapulous alterations of her visage and other partes of hir body, as she had been rapt or in a traunce, and in those feyned traunces by false hypocrisie, as though she had been inspired of god, spake many woordes in rebukynge synne, and reprouynge newe opinions, whiche she called heresies, and amonge them vttered diuers thinges to the greate reproche of the kynge and the quene, and to the establisshynge of ydolatry, pplgremage, and false worshippynge of god: for whiche naughtynes she was condemned and put to death with certayn of her counsaile, in Aprile.

Moulte and his wyfe for a shamefull murder by them committed in sleayng of two marchant strangers, were arreigned and hanged at the place where they hadde done the murder.

The Anabaptistes caused great trouble and ruffling in the north partes of Germany, and at the cite Monstere, chusing to theyr kynge one John a Leyde, exercised much crueltie, expellynge other out of the cite, that would not condescende to their beleefe. This John a Leyde in token that he had bothe heauenly and earthly power, gaue to his garde greene and blewe, and had for his armes the figure of the worlde rounde with a sword thrust through it. He married hymselfe. xv. wyues, and ordeyned that other should haue as many as they liked, and all other thinges to be common amongest them.

The byshop of Monstere, by the ayde of other princes, besieged the cite against the rebellious Anabaptistes fiftene or sirtene monethes. In whiche tyme the flubburne and frowarde people susteyned so great scarcitee and hunger, that they beyng alyue, were lyke dead corles, and did eate commonly dogges, cattes, myce, with other vile beastes, and seathynge hydes, leather, and olde howes, dyd poune the same, and made breade therof. After long siege the cite was wonne, spoyled, and destroyed with greate crueltie and slaughter of that wicked people.

Paule the thirde was ordeined byshop of Rome.

Charles

the Epitome of chronicles

ant re-
um
uglt.

Charles the emperor sailed with a great naue into A The pere of the
frike, & restozed Altrachenus to the kyngdom of Tunes. of the
worlde.

The lord Dacres of the North was arreigned of high treason, who so wittilpe and directlpe confuted his accusers, that to theyr great shame he was founde giltlesse.

Frith a yong man of excellent witte and lernyng, was bzrent in Smithfield for his opinion concernyng the sacrament.

*John Foxe
Burdett*

The bishop of Romes unlawfull tyrannie was utterly abolisshed out of this realme, and commaundement geue that he should no moze be called pope, but onelye bishoppe of Rome, and that the kyng should be deputed and taken as a supzeme head of the church of Englande, & haue full auctoritie to refourme and redresse all errors, heresies and abuses in the same.

The first frutes and tenthes of all spirituall dignitees and promotions were graunted to king Henrie by act of parliament.

The erle of Kildare died in the tower of London, and his sonne Thomas Fitzgararde rebellynge in Irelande, slew the bishop of Duellinge, and toke the kynges ordinaunce. Wherefoze kyng Henrie sent thither sir William Skeuington with a compaignye of souldiours.

27

Sir Thomas Mooze, not longe befoze chauncellour of Englande, John bishop of Rochester, and three monkes of the charter house were putte to death, for denyng the king to be supzeme head of the churche, and mainteinyng the bishop of Romes auctoritee.

5496

1535

An order was appointed for sanctuaries and sanctuarie men, because dyuers naughty persons, trusting to the liberties that befoze tyme had been vled, committed many detestable murders robberies and other abhominable actes.

Lorde Cromwel was in this tyme in high fauour with the kyng, and bare great rule in this realme.

Ladie Katherine princeesse Dowagier ended her lyfe in the moneth of Januarie, and is buried at Peterborowe.

William Tyndale, whiche translated the newe Testament into the Englishe tonge, by the crueltee of the clergie of Louene was burnt beside Bruxelles in Brabant.

Bbbb iii

Badurius

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ.

Badurius kyng of Cambaia in Indie, beyng ouerset in warre of Aymanus kyng of Carmania, willyngly be came tributary to the kyng of Portugall, that he myghte obteyne ayde of hym agaynst his enemy.

At this tyme were geuen to the kyng by consent of the abbottes, all religious houses that were of. 300. marke, and vnder.

5497

1536

Kyng Henry was agayn diuorced from the mariage of Lady Anne Bulleyn, as vnlawfull and vngodly, and the sayd lady Anne with her brother George Bulleyn lord Rocheforde, and Henry Poireis, Frauncis Weston, William Bzereton, Marke Smeton, gentylmen of the kynges priue chamber, shortly after was beheaded for dyuers treasons and naughty actes intended and comitted with the sayde gentylmen.

The kyng toke to wife the right excellent and most vertuous lady Jane Seimour daughter to Syr John Seimour knyght.

After many thynges wer published here in this realme by kyng Henry and his counsaile, with consent of the bishops and his clergie, concerning the alteration of diuers poyntes of religion, and that certayne holy daies were forbidden, and many abbaies suppressed: the rude people of Lincolneshire, fearynge the utter subuersion of theyr old superstition, whiche they had lyued in so many yeres, raised a great comocion, and gathered togyther welners 20000. men, agaynst whom the kyng went with a strong power. Wherof when the rebelles had knowlage, they desyred pardon, brake vp their army, and departed euery man to his home, theyr capytaynes were apprehended and worthily punished.

Immediately after began a newe commotion in Worcheshire, for the same causes, but the people wer more incensed through bayne tales and lyes that were spred by certayne naughty and sedicious persones, as that all theyr syluer chalices, crosses, iewelless, and other ornaments shoulde bee taken oute of theyr churches. That no man shoulde bee married or eate any deintie meate in his house, but he shoulde paye a tribute for the same to the kyng. These people were gathered to the nymbre of. 40000. hauing

*in the aduance
to morrow*

*rebellion
in the
in the*

*0000 men
gathered*

*comotion in
the
for
the*

the Epitome of chronicles

haupng for theyr badges the. v. woundes, with the figure of the sacrament, and Jesus written in the middes, and called their diuelishe rebellion a holpe pylgremage, in token that they intended to fighte for the mayntenaunce of Chyristen religion. The yere of the worlde. The yere of Chyist.

Agaynst these rebelles the kyng sent the Duke of Suffolke, the duke of Northfolke, the Marques of Excester, and other, with a great army, by whom after the day and place was appoynted to fyght, sodenly the nyght before the battayle shuld haue ben, the water that was betwene them rose in suche wyse, that the two armies coulde not com together. By the occasiō wherof the captains of both partes had communication of peace, and promyse was made to the rebelles, that such thynges as they were grieved with, shoulde bee redressed by the kynges auctoritie. Wherewith they beeyng appeased by the prouidence and healde of god departed without bloudsheddyng.

The ryuer of Thames was ouerfrosen.

Thomas Fitz Garet (late Erle of Kildare, and syue of his vnclen were hanged, drawen, and quartered at London in February.

Nicol Musgraue, Thomas Gylby and other stered a newe rebellion, and besieged the citee of Carlile, frome whens they were driuen, and many of theym taken and put to deathe.

Sir Frances Bygot, syr Robert Constable, and other beganne an other conspiracie, and for the same were atteinted and excecuted in the moneth of June.

On S. Edwardes euen the noble prince Edward was born at Hampton court, who is now our soueraigne lord and kyng. Shortly after the vertuous lady queene Jane his mother dyed in childbedde, & was buried at Windsor.

An assemble was holden at Wittenberge, wherin the preachers of Germany agreed concernynge the controuersey of the sacrament of the body and bloud of Chyriste.

Sir Thomas Percy, syr Stephē of Hamelton, sir John Bulmer and his wife, William Lomley, Nicolas Tempest, and the abbottes of Jerney and Riuers, also the lord Darcey, the lord Husey, Robert Askwer condemned and put to deathe for high treason.

James

5498

1537.

*King Edward
born at Hampton
for ransom*

*men sent to
for treason*

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

5499

The yere
of Christ.

1538

James kynig of Scottes, married ladie Magdalene the frenche kyniges eldest daughter.

Frier Fozeit was hanged and bzent in Smithfielde for treason and heresie, with the image of Daruell Gathern of Wales, in whiche idolle the Welshemen had a greate confidence and feigned of him many straunge thynges.

In the moneth of december, the Marques of Excester, the lord Mountacute, and sir Edward Neuell were beheaded for treason, that was layd to their charges.

Sir Nicholas Carew maister of the hoxses, was beheaded for treason.

Pilgrimage and idolatrie were forbydden: dyuers images also haupnge inginnes to make theyr eyes open and shutte, and other partes of theyr bode to steere, and many other falle iuglynges, as the bloud of hayles, and suche lyke, wherwith the people of longe tyme had been deceiued, were espyed out and destroyed.

Abbaies were suppressed, and all friers, monkes, channons, nunnes and other sectes of religion, were rote out of this realme, for theyr iniquitie and naughtinesse.

In Maie the citisyens of London mustred al in bryghte harneis, with coates of white silke and clothe, and chaines of golde, in thre great battailes.

The abbottes of Redinge, Glasseburge and Colchester, wyth dyuers other were atteinted of treason and put to death.

It was ordeined, that suche religious persons as were discharged of their profession might purchase, pursue and be sued in al maner of accions.

Autoritee was graunted to the kyng by acte of parliament, to nominate and make bishops and bishoprikes by his letters patentes or other wrytinges.

The landes and profites of all abbates heretofore dissolved, or that hereafter should be dissolved were assured to the kynges hyghnesse and his heires.

The greate Ouele of Irelande invaded the Englishe pale, and bzent almofte. xx. myles within the same, wherfore the lord Grate, beyng deputie there, assembled a stronge power and droue hym backe.

Duke Friderike of Bawerie, Palsgraue of Rhins, the

*Pilgrimage
Idolatrie
in England*

Ann
gum.
Angl
30

31

the Epitome of Chronicles.

unt res
m.
nglt.

Marshall of Duke John Friderike, electour of Saronie, with certaine other came to London: by whome the marriage was concluded betwene Kyng Henrie and the lady Anne, sister to the Duke of Cleue, who in Decembre was receyued into the realme with great triumphe and sumptuous prouision.

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

The commons of Gaunt rebelled, and were brought in subiection and cruelly handled by the Emperour.

The acte made for the abolishinge of opinions concerning the. vi. articles was published with greate rigoure and extremitie. Whiche ye maye reade in the actes of the parliament holden the. xxxi. yere of the kyng.

In this yere was so great a heate and drought, that in many places the people wold haue geuen one bushel for the grindinge of an other, and dyuers great ryuers were dreyed.

5501

1540

The byshoppe of Chichester and doctor Wilson were deliuered out of the tower vpon the kynges pardon.

Many died of hote burning agues and of the laske in all partes of this realme.

The religion of the knyghtes of the Rhodes, was dissolved by acte of parliament.

By commaundement of kinge Henrie, certaine learned men were apointed to set forth an vniforme introduction into the latine tongue, whiche onely shoulde be taught in all scholes, the vse of all other grammars beyng sette a parte.

Barnes, Hierom, Garrarde priestes, were forced to recante, at S. Maries spitle in London.

Lorde Cromwel late befoze created Erle of Essex, and Water lorde Hungerforde, were beheaded the. 28. day of July. The. xxx. day, Robert Barnes, Thomas Garrarde, William Hierom priestes were burned. The same daye Thomas Abell, Edward Powel, and Richarde Fetherston were hanged drawen and quartered, for mainteinyng the byshop of Romes auctoritee, and denyng the kinge to be supzeme head of the churche of Englande.

Robert Barnes
burned

Kyng Henrie by auctoritee of the clergie was dinorsed from his pretended marriage made with the ladie Anne of Cleue, and maryed shortly after the ladie Katherine Harwarde.

Cccc.

The

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ.

5502

1541

The winter was very sharp, and much frost and snow fell, so that many beastes dyed for colde. Ann
gum
gli.

The kyng began great buildyng at Calais & Guisnes.

A subsidie graunted to the kyng of. xii. d. of the pounce of goodes, and. ii. s. of landes.

The courtes of the fyyst frutes & wardes wer erected.

Egerton and Harman were put to deathe for counterfaytynge the kynes great seale.

Alexander Seton Scotte, and William Tolwaine pries-
tes were constreigned to recant openly at Paules crosse

The countesse of Salesbury, for treason y she wrought against the kyng, thzough the persuation of the traitour Raynolde Poole hir soonne, was beheaded within the tower. The same daye also were executed at Tyburne thre whiche had begunne a new rebellyon in the North partes: but by the pollicie of the counsaile ther, they wer quickly appzeheaded.

Two of the garde were hanged at Grenewiche by the courte, the kynes grace beyng there, for robberies whych they had committed about blacke heath.

The. xxviii. daye of July were hanged at S. Thomas Matryng, Mantill, Roydon, and Froudes gentylmen, for a spoyle and murder that they had doone in one of the kinges parkes, vpon Maie mozynge, the lorde Dacres of the South beyng in company with theim. And on the mozowe, whiche was S. Peters daye, the lorde Dacres was ledde from the tower a fote by the two shiriffes thorough the citie to Tyburne, and there putte to execution for the same offence.

A pzoclamation sette forth by the kyng for the abrogation of superfluous holpdaves, and the bayne ceremonies of the Nicolas byshop, with the absteynyng frome fleshe on saint Markes daie.

The lorde Leonarde Graie, whych befoze was deputie generall of Ireland, was beheaded at Tower hill, for certayne treason whiche he had there committed.

A pzoclamation was published, that the Englishe Bible shoulde be had in euery parvse churche, ready for all sortes of men to resozte vnto at tymes conuenient.

About this tyme a new trade of dancyng of galiardes vpon

the Epitome of Chronicles.

unt re- upon five paces, and vaunting of horses was brought in
um. to the realme by Italians, whiche shortly was exercised
nght. commonly of all yonge men, and the olde faction left.

The yere
of the
woylde.

The yere
of Chas

Doctour Bates, whom king Henry had sent in ambal-
sade to the emperour, at the comynge of the byshoppe of
Winchester into Almayne, secretly fledde away to the
byshop of Rome, most lyke a traitour, beyng put in trust
by his prince.

The emperour at the breakyng bp of the counceyl in Al-
mayne, departed from thens into Italy, where he prepa-
red an army to go to the citie of Argiers in Afrike, in whi-
che viage fortune was contrary to hym. For his navy li-
yng in the rode of Argiers, by a tempest & contrary wind
were driuen perforce vpon the coune where they were de-
stroied, and many of the galeys also were drowned with
ordinaunce and other abillimentes of warre. The empe-
rour beyng on lande, with part of his army was in great
distresse, what for lacke of vitayle, & through great weate
whiche fell on them. In this voyage, sir Henry Knevet,
ambassadour for kynge Henry hardely escaped the daun-
ger of the sea. And so the emperour was forced to returne
into Spayne without obteynyng his purpose.

A welsheman was hanged drawen and quartered, for
prophecying of kynge Henries deathe.

Kynge Henry toke his progresse to the citie of Worke,
where he looked for the comynge of his neww the kynge
of Scottes, who had promysed to come vnto hym, and
came not, but in stede therof made an inuasion vpon En-
gland, and after in the Chyristmasse, sent ambassadours to
dissimule his vnfaithfull and vnnaturall herte, whom ne-
uerthelesse the kynge honourablye intertayned.

A parliament holden in Irelande, where by the comon
consent of that realme, they desyred the kynges highnes
to take on hym the name of kynge of Irelande, for auoy-
dyng of continuall warre amongst theym. Whereupon
the kynge by proclamation altered his style, and receaued
the name of kynge of Irelande.

A parliament was begunne the xvi. day of Januarie,
in whiche witchcraftes, conirations, inchauntmentes,
with declaration of armes names and badges in prophe-
cies,

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ.

lies were made felonie.

Annt
gum
glt.

The bishopricke of Chester, and the Isle of Man, was seuered from the bishop of Canturburie, to the iurisdiction of Worke.

The ladie Katherine Haward, whom the kyng had married, for hir vnchaste liuynge and naughtie actes committed with Thomas Culpeper of the priue chamber, and Francis Dereham, was by auctoritee of parlyament attainted and putte to death in Februarie, with whom also died Jane ladye Rochforde, as prouie vnto all her deedes. Lorde Wyllyam Hawarde and his wyfe, with dyuers other were condemned to perpetuall prison, for mispryson of highe treason, but afterwarde by the kynges pardon they were delyuered.

5503

1542

A mayde was boyled for poysonynge dyuers persones within the citee of London.

In Maie kyng Henry toke a loane of money of al suche as were aboue the value of fiftie pounde.

34

The great Onele, a lord of the wyldie Irish, with other, submitted them to kyng Henry.

The commissioners sente to the borders of Scotlande, to determine the debate of the confines, were fayne to departe, because the Scottes woulde agree to no reasonable demaundes.

The Scottes the fourth of Julie, beganne to inuade the borders spoyling and burnynge as it hadde been in open warre: for which cause a garrison was sent thither. Then the Scottes after theyr false maner pretended peace and amitee with earnest suite for the same: and neuerthelesse in the meane tyme spoyled the borders with sodeine torreis and incurlyons. In reuengement wherof sir Robert Bowes made a rode into Scotlande, where he with other were taken without putting to ranfome. Than the kyng sent the Duke of Northfolke thither with an army royal. But at Worke (by the craftie dissimulation of the kyng of Scottes, who sent ambassadours to intreate for peace) the armye was stayed, and after longe consultacion, with muche tyme spent, the Scottes woulde condescende to no indifferent condicions. Wherfore the Duke wente forward and entred Scotlande, burnynge and wastynge all the

the Epitome of chronicles

the marches, and there tarped wythout any battaile pro- The yere of the
ferred by the kynge of Scottes, untill the myddes of No- of the
uember, and so returned. worlde.

This sommer by the procurement of the French kyng, the Duke of Cleue rebelled against the emperoure, and a greate noumber of Cleueners and Gelderers, with one Martine of Rossein the capytayne, came downe to Antwarpe, and lay before the towne trustyng to gette it with the healde of a great noumber of traytors, whiche were within: but by the wysedome of the gouernours, it was preserued, and the traitours within beyng tried out, were woorthily punished: throughe whiche theyr enemies departed disapointed of their purpose.

The French king prepared greatly for the warres, fortifying all partes of hys realme: and wente with a greate army to besiege Dampinion a strong towne in the entrie of Spayne wherby he myght haue passage into Hauern: but he nothing preuayled, the towne was so wel kepte.

After the departure of our armie from Scotlande, the kynge of Scottes, to be reuenged, pryncely assembled a stronge armie, purposyng to take Carlile, and destroy all the weast Marches, whiche he thought to be but weake, because all the power and prouiso of the Englyshemen laye in the east marches aboute Warwyke. Therefore he sent the lord Marwell, warden of hys weast marches who knew the countrey well, with the Erles of Castiles and Glencarn, and suters of his pryue chambze to conducte this armie. But by the prowes and wysedome of sir Thomas Marton and sir Wyllyam Bulgraue, with a ryght few of the borderers, beyng in all not aboue two thousand, these Scottes were mette vpon. S. Katherines euen: where by greate power of God, they being in number betwene .15000. and .18000. and well prouyded for the warres, were ouerthrowen. In whiche conflict was taken the lord Marwell, the Erles of Glencarn and Castiles, with all the chiefe captaynes of the armie: and on S. Thomas euen the apostell, they were brought to London to the Tower, where they lay that night, and the next daye folowynge they were by the kynges charge apparayled al in silke and rode throughe the citee to Westminster, Cccc.iii. where

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ.

where they were sworne to bee true prisoners, and than were deliuered to the custody of dyuers noble men, whiche honourably intertainued them.

Ann.
gum.
Anno.

In this season an heraulde of England, rydyng on the borders syde to doo a message, was mette by certayne rebelles, which cruelly against all lawe of armes slew him in his coate armure. But they for this moste bengeable deede were sent to the kyng the yere folowynge, who worthily executed them for that offence.

After the ouerthrowe of the Scottishe army, the kyng of Scottes dyd not long enioy his lyfe: for he died incontinent after, leauynge his queene with chylde, who was deliuered of a mayden.

At Newe yeares tyme the Scottes that were taken by Carlile, were by the kyng sent home agayne with greete gyftes, vpon condicion to agree to certayne articles for the welth of bothe realmes.

The Burdeur flete was arrested in Gascoyne, and lyke wyse the Frenchmen here, and at the Ile of Wight were taken seuen shippes laded with marchandise of the frenchmen. Wherevpon the ambassadours of bothe parties were restrained, & after dyuers requestes proponed to the ambassadour of France, certain respite was graunted to knowe his maysters mynde, who wolde not agree to any reasonable demandes, nor yet receiue the kynges herald, who came with honozable and indifferent conditions of peace: for whiche causes and most specially for the common profite of Christendom, seyng the French kyng had entred in league with the Turke, and procured hym to make warre vpon Christendome, and also that he withholdynge from kyng Henry his tribute, he with the emperour Charles ioyntely proclaymed warre agaynst the frenche kyng.

In the meane tyme a parliament was holden at London, in which an act was made, wherby the common people were restrained from redyng the holy scripture, and in lieu of it was sette forth by the kyng and his clergie, a doctrine for all his subiectes to folowe, to the whiche all bookes that were repugnaunte by auctoritee of the saied parlia-

the Epitome of chronicles

Anni re-
gum
Angli.
35

parliament were condemned. In thys parliamente was graunted a subsidie to the kynge of. ii. s. of the pounde of goodes and. iii. s. of landes to be paied in thre yeares.

The yere
of the
worlde.
The yere
of Chriſt.

5504

1543

Thomas Becon, Wylsedom, and Shingleton wer forced to recante openlye at Paules crosse.

The Abzine a lorde of Ireland, with diuers of the wild Irishe submitted them vnto kynge Henrie.

king Henry married lady Katherine Latimer at Hampton court.

About this time the Sacre of Diep, a shippe royal, and the minion of Englande foughte a cruell fyght, tyll both parties were werie, and so parted.

At Windsoze were thre men burned.

An armie sent ouer by kinge Henrie, of which sir Iohn Mallop captayne of Guines, was generall, sir Thomas Seimour high marshal, Sir Robert Bowes treasourer, sir George Carew, Thomas Palmer, John Kainessforth, John Saint John, and John Gascoyne knyghtes, capitaines of the footemen, sir Richard Cromwell capitayne of the hoursemen, who departed from Calais, the. xxi. of Iulie.

London was soze bered with the plague, for whyche cause the kynge with all the nobilitie kepte theym frome thens, and the terme also was adiourned to, S. Albones, where it beganne, the. xiii. of Nouember.

Doctour London, deane of Osenay, with William Symons for periury, rode with papers at Windsoz, and after were sent to the flete.

About Alhalowtyde a roade was made into Scotlande by the garrison there, who burned. 60. villages, and toke great praies bothe of men and beastes.

In France sir George Carow, & sir Thomas Palmer were taken prisoners in the pursuite of the frenchemen, when they fledde from their campe. The siege of Landerssey was broken by, vppon hope to haue foughte with the frenche kynge, who came with a mighty army, promysing by his heraldes to haue gyuen bataille, but he entended nothing lesse. For whan he had bitailed Laundersay, the nyght befoze he shoulde haue fought, he fled with all his power. In Nouember the Englishmen men that wer sent

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Chyest.

sent thither came home againe.

A litle befoze Chyristmas the Viceroy of Sicil came fro
the emperour to kynge Henrie in ambassade, of whom he
was honozable entertained: and shortly returned againe.

At that time a shyp was drowned in Goodwynes sand,
wherin many gentilmen of Spaine, goyng toward theyr
countrey, were losse.

In the Chyristmas tyme the flete goyng toward Flaun-
ders by tempest were soze tossed, and in great daunger: at
whych tyme a vessell laded with cozne was taken by the
Frenchmen, and certayne ships of theirs laded with fishe
was taken by the Englyshemen.

In this yere beyng the leape yere, chaunsed foure eclips-
es, one of the sonne the .24. of Januarpe, and thre of
the moone.

In Januarie all the Scottes, whiche were taken and
sworne to be true to kynge Henrie, settyng a side both the
feare of God and all humanyte, trayterously fell from
him, nothyng regarding his exceding gentlenesse shewed
to them, in deliuerpng them free (taken in the inualsion of
his realme) noz yet the honozable interteinmet here moze
lyke princes than prysoners.

In Febzuarpe Germin Gardiner, Thon Hestwood, with
other, for denyng the kynges supzemitie, were arrayned
and condemned to die. The same time siue priestes, for an
insurrection that they entended, were adiudged to dye.

The lone whiche was lente in the .34. yere of the kyn-
ges reigne, by auctoritee of parliament, was forgeuen.

A licence graunted to vse the feate of shootyng in hand-
gunnes: Whiche befoze men were prohibited to dooe.

In the beginning of Lent lord Edward Seimour Erle
of Hereforde was made lieutenant of the North partes,
and sente thither with an armpe for the defence of that
countrey.

Germin Gardiner, and Larke person of Chelsei beside
London, were erecuted at Tyburne, for denyng the king
to be supzeme head of the churche.

The .xxii. daye of Marche the lord admiral, with a
great nauie departed from the port of London towardes
Scotlande.

Anni
gum.
Angli.

5505

1544

All

the Epitome of Chronicles.

ant res
um.
glt.

All this lent season a counsaile was holden at Spire in Almayne, at which the emperour with the princis of Almayn, and the byshop of Romes legate were present.

The yere
of the
worlde.

There
of Chas

The. 29. of Marche the parliament begunne in the. 33. yere, was cleane dissolued, wherin was establisshed the succession of the kynges highnes, and also an act for preservation of wooddes, and the rigour of the acte of five articles was somewhat qualified.

Upon Maie euen died the lord Thomas Audeley high chauncellour of Englande: after whom succeeded lord Thomas Mithoseley.

Upon Maie day the naute sente by the lord admyrall, whiche vntil this tyme had no good wynde, tooke theyr viage into Scotlande from Lynmouthe: with whome was lord Edward Seimour Earle of Hertforde, the kynges lieutenant, and generall capitayne of the army, whiche the fourth daye of May arriued by Lith, the ha- uen of Edenbourgh, and tooke the towne of Lith, and spoyled it. After whiche they made towardes Edenbo- rough, where at a certayne bridge, the Scottes hadde layde their ordinaunce, but by the policie and manhode of our capitains and souldiours, the Scottes ordinaunce was wonne, and discharged agaynst theim selues, and therby were put to flyght. After this the town of Eden- bourgh, sent vnto the army, pretendinge to deliuer the towne vpon certayn conditions, to the behoufe of oure kyng: but whan the armye entred, they were inuaded by theym, for whiche cause the towne was destroyed, and cleane walled.

Kyng Henry and the Emperour agreed ioynntly to in- uade the realme of Fraunce, with two great powers.

A proclamation made, enhauncyng the value of gold to the rate of. xlviij. s, and siluer to. iij. s. the ounce.

The. xv. daye of May, all frenchemen not beyng de- nysens, were commaunded to depart the realme within xx. days, vpon payne to be sent vnto the galeyes.

Kyng Henry made great prouision for a viage into Fraunce.

Arishemen to the number of. 700. with dartes and handegunnes after theyr maner, mustered befoze the
Dodd kyng

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ.

kyng in S. James parke.

Bonfires were made in London for the good speede and safe returne of the kynges armie out of Scotlande: and the lord Marwell was agayne taken prisoner.

After the whitsun holy days, the duke of Norfolk and the lord priue seale with a great armie, toke their voyage into Fraunce, and besieged Mountrell, where they lay untill the kyng had wonne the towne of Bulleyn. Not longe after, the duke of Suffolke, with many other noble men, passed the seas, and encamped before Bulleyn on the east syde. The. xiiii. day of July kyng Henry hym selfe, with a goodly company passed from Dover to Calys, and on the. xvi. day of the same moneth, encamped on the north syde of Bulleyn. After whose coming the towne was so sore battered with gunshotte, and certayne of their towers beyng undermined, so shaken with force of gunnepowder, that after a moneths siege, the capitayne sent worde to the kyng, that he woulde yelde the towne to his behalfe, on condition that all whiche were within, myght departe with bagge and baggage, whiche condition kyng Henry mercifully graunted. And the Bulleynors departed one and other, to the number of. 4454. In this meane tyme the Emperour had made a peace with the frenche kyng, wherat kyng Henry was not a lyttell displeased, and shortly after returned into Englande.

Shortly after, the Frenchemen came by nyght vpon the Englyshemen in Baseholeyn, and slewe of them a great nuber. Howbeit they wer shortly chased fro thence and the Base town holden after that in good quietnesse.

Monsire de Beese, with. xv. thousande Frenchmen encamped ouer agaynst Bulleyn on the other syde of the water, entending to buylde there a forte. But shortly after he was set vpon in his campe, by therle of Hertford, the lord Lisle, the lord Grape of Wilton and others, and fledde with all his power, leauynge behynde hym his ordinaunce, tentes, and plate.

The. xix. daye of Februarie was cruelly bourned at Torney in the frontiers of France, one Peter Wulius a frenchman, somtyme preacher of the gospel of Christ, in Argen

5506

1545

Am
gun
glt.

the Epitome of Chronicles.

nt res
m.
glt.

in Argentine, a cite in Germanie. The maner of his death was this, he was burned with a small fyre, to the ende to make his tourment the greater. He stode manfully to his doctrine euen to the last breath, and beyng in prison he dyd by letters confirme his disciples, and comfort his wife and children euen after he was condemned to die. The doctrine that he stode to in his lasse examination consisteth in these poyntes. First, that in the supper of the Lorde duely ministred and receyued: is in spirite by faith receyued the very bode of Chryste. That the masse is a mere mans inuention insuriously to Chryste. That the worshippynge of the consecrated breade, is ydolatrie. That there is none other purgatorie but Chrystes bloud. That we can not honour saintes better, then by folowynge them in faith and vertue. That mans freewill is so letted by the fall of Adam, that without goddes grace it can do no good thynge. That it is faith whiche byngeth vs saluation. That no mannes traditions ought to be receyued to bynde conscience. That to haue ymages in temples, is very dangerous, for fallynge into ydolatrie. That baptism is the signe of the couenant that God hath made with vs, and of the mortifications and newe lyfe that shulde folowe baptism, and that this sacrament ought not to bee denied to infantes, lithe the promise pertayneth to them also. That no vow ought to be made more then the word of god requireth, or that is not in mans power to perform. That eareshtift, other then for counsell in doubtfull matters, is a very dangerous tormentynge of the mynde. And that he dydde not doubt of the perpetuall virginite of the virgin Mary.

The yere
of the
worlde.
The yere
of Chryst

The Somer after, the Frenchmen came downe with a great power, and builded the fort or bastilion, ouer agaynst Boloigne, whiche the french kyng named Monpleasure, betwene whiche fort & the towne of Boloigne, were continuall skirmishes, to the losse of both partes.

Word came to king Henry the frenchmen intended to land in the Isle of Wight. Wherefore he went to Portsmouth, & sent letters into diuers partes of his realm, to haue men in a redynes. At which his being ther, a goodly ship of the kings named Mary rose wth sir George Carew

Dodd. ii.

capit

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
woorde.

The yere the capitain, and manye other gentylmen was drowned Ann
of Christ. in the middes of the haven by great foly and negligence. gum
gll.

Lozde Edward Seimour Erle of Hertforde was sent
by the kyng into Scotlande with an armie of. 12000. mē
where he destroyed dyners towones in the myddle mar-
ches, and greatly endomaged the Scottes.

A parliament holden at westminster, wherin was gra-
ted to the kyng a subsyde. of. ii. s. viii. d. in the pounde
of moueable goodes, and. iiii. s. of landes, to be pated in
thre yere, also colleges, chaunteries, & hospitalles: were
geuen into the kynges handes, for his lyfe tyme.

Lozde Lisle highe admyrall of Englande, landing in
Normandie, bzente the suburbes of Treiporte, and toke
and spoyled well nere all the shippes in the haven: after
that he destroyed many villages by the sea syde, and got
great prais.

Bounsiere de Bees inuaded the Englishe pale besyde
Grauelin.

By meanes of the emperour, cōmunicatiō of peace was
had betwene the ambassadours of England and Fraunce
but nothing at this tyme was concluded.

Kyng Henry sent the lozde Edward Seimour Erle
of Hertforde, and the lozde Lisle hygh admyrall with a
company of. 7000. men, to pzeuent the frenchemē, who
intended to bulde an other forte at S. Johns Kode, At
whiche tyme they entred into the haven two days before
the frenchemen had appointed to be there. And so defea-
ted them of their purpose.

Often skirmishes betwene the Englishe garrison of
Bulleyn and the Frenche forte, greatly to the losse of
bothe partes. And at one tyme especially wer slayn. xvi.
englishe gentyll men, and. lxxx. other, and fewe or none
of the frenchemenne.

The Stewes and other lyke brothell houses were by
the kynges commaundement put downe in all partes
of the realme, as places that dyd mayntayne whozdom,
manslaughter, and all other mischiese and naughtines.

A peace concluded betwene Englande and Fraunce,
which was proclaymed on Whitsonday to the great re-
ioycyng of both realmes. For conclusion of this peace,
the vicount Lisle hygh Admyrall, with the byshop of Du-
resme

the Epitome of chronicles

resme, and a goodly cōpany of men went into France, The yere of the
after whose returne, the byshop of Eueux and two Cr: of the
les came into England, and were honourably receyued worlde.
with great ioye and triumph.

Anne Askew gentlewoman, John Laffels gentilmā,
and two other were bzente in Smithfielde for opinions
contrary to the acte of the six Articles, At whiche tyme
doctour Shaxton also recanted.

The duke of Nozfolke, and his sonne the Erie of Sur
rey, wer attaynted of treason. For which his sonne was
put to execution, and himselfe committed to the Towre
where he remayned longe tyme.

In Januarie, the renowned King Henry the eyghte
ended his lyfe, and was buried at windsore.

The most gratiouse and noble prince Edward the
sixt beyng. ix. yeres of age, succeded bys father in
the gouernance of thys realme, and was crowned
at Westminster on Shrofe sondaye, with great solem-
nitie. In whome the pesple muche reioyced, wishynge
hertily bys longe and prosperous reigne ouer them, for
that they sawe in hym euident lyklyhodes of Christian
and politike gouernemente, when yeres shoulde make
ripe those frutes of vertue which euen in his tender age
appeared to be sowne in bys royall herte.

Under this kynge, in the tyme of bys minoritye,
bys vnckle Edward Duke of Somerset, Lorde protec-
tour, with the rest of the counsel, gouerned this realme.
By whome, to the furtheraunce of gods worde and true
religion, commissioners were sent into al partes of the
realme with commaundement to take all Images oute
of churches, for auoydinge of Idolatrie, and to cause al
persons to leaue the superstitious vse of beades. With
these commissioners were sente certein godlye learned
preachers which dehorted men from superstition, and en-
fructed them to geue them selfe to true and vnfayned
worshyping of god in heart and mynde, with due obe-
dience towarde thei? prince.

This yere order was taken that the pompous and su-
perstitious maner of goyng in procession shuld be leste,
and no moze vled.

The

5508

1543

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ.

The last day of July, Steuen Gardiner Bishhoppe of Winchester was sent prisoner to the towre of London. Anno
gum.
Angli.

And about the same tyme, Doctour Smith of Oxfoꝝd recanted openly at paules crosse, diuers articles conteyned in twoo bookes whiche he had made: one for the defence of the sacrifice of the Masse, an other to proue that vnwrittten verities oughte to be beleued vnder payne of damnation.

Shortly after, the Lorde Protectoure and Erle of Marlike, wente into Scotlande with a stronge army requiringe the Scottes to fulfill their promise made before to kynge Henry, concernynge the mariage of the younge Quene with noble prynce Edwarde hys sonne. But the Scottes alwayes vnfaithfull of promise, Rumburghelpe came againste them with a greate puissance. And not long after, the two armies encountred in the felde of Muscleborough at a place called Pinkersloughe, the englishmen not thinckynge as then to haue battaile. And because the fronte of the Scottishe army was so terribly set with pikes, our horsemen that gaue the firste onset, were enforced to recule, with losse of certen gentlemen, whiche reculyng muche abashed our footemen. But yet, by the great wisdom and pollicy of the capitaynes, and the good stomake of our souldiours, wherewith god had at that present strenghted them: they gaue a new onset, and without any notable fight discomfited the Scottes and obtayned a noble victorie. At this tyme were slaine of the Scottes betwene thyrtene and foureteene thousande, and not passynge an hundred Englishmen.

This yere dyd the pestilence so rage in the Citie of London, that men fell to buryng their deade, early in the mornynge, and late in the euenynge, wherupon a commaundemente was geuen to all curates, that they shoulde bury none before. vi. in the mornynge, nor after. vi. at nyght, and that a bell shoulde ryng. iij. quarters of an houre or moze.

After Wyghelmasse was holden a parliament, wherewithin chauntries were giuen into the kynges handes, to be altered and disposed at his pleasure.

At

the Epitome of chronicles

It was also ordeyned in this parliament, that the bo-
dy and bloude of Chyriste shoulde be receyued of all per-
sones in bothe kyndes, breade and wyne. And an order
was appoynted for the auoidyng of sturvy vagabundes
and beggars.

The yere
of the
worlde,
The yere
of Chyrist.

In this meane whyle, Peter Martyr, a Florentine
borne, and of excellent knowlege in diuinitie, being sent
for by Thomas Cranmer archebysshop of Canterbury:
came into Englande in Nouember, and shortly after
was made reader of diuinitie in the vniuersitie of Ox-
forde for his excellencie and soundenes in doctrine.

Also in this parliament were repealed certain bloudy
statutes made in the tyme of kynge Henry the eight, e-
mongest whiche the statute of sixe articles was one.

5509

1548

The fifte day of Februarie, the aboue named duke of
Somerset, with the reste of the counsaylours of the re-
almie, dyd wyte unto the Scottes in the kynges name,
a very longe and pithy oration, exhortyng theim to
embrace peace, but in vayne, as afterwarde appeared,
to the great losse of bothe realmes.

In this February hotte persecution beganne agayne
in Fraunce, and especially at Parys, for the doctrine
of Martyn Luthere, where as in the meane whyle, in
Englande, mens wyttes were occupied in dyspyng
howe to abolysh the masse utterly.

In Aprile folowynge, Martine Bucer, beeyng sente
for by the marques of Brandenbrough one of the prin-
cis electours, came frome Strasbrough in Germa-
ny to Ausbrough, and was there of hym and other at
his appoyntemente, entreated and perswaded, by fayre
wordes and promyses, by roughe wordes and threate-
nynges, and by all meanes possible, to geue his consent
to a booke called Antididagma, whiche the Papistes
had bene in hande with, frome the yere of our Lorde, a
thousande fye hundred fortye and two, to this presente
yere a. 1548, and hadde as nowe made it perfect as they
thought: But al this notwithstanding Bucer departed,
not geuyng consent to theyr booke, but not without dan-
ger of his lyfe. This booke was fyrst pende against that
booke of reformation of religion which Herman byshop
of Coleyn

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Chrest.

of Coleyn caused to bee drawen, and was afterwarde sette forth in his name. But yet when they had made it as perfect as they coulde, and had confirmed in it all popery, welmoste it coulde nor be allowed by Gods bicar of Rome, bicause there were in it some thynges graunted to the contrary parte.

Annal
gum.
Angli

The fyrst day of October Edmund Boner byshop of London was depriued of his byshoprike, and put in prison in the Marshalsey, for that he obstinately stode in the defence of popishe superstition, and Nicholas Ridley byshop of Rochester, was by the kynges authoritie translated to London.

The fourth day of Nouember was a parliament holden at Westminster vpon prorogation, wherin was authorized a booke of an vniforme order of common praier and administration of the sacramentes in the englishe tongue.

Also the mariage of priestes was in the same parliament made lafull.

Moreover the acte made in the. xxii. of the reigne of kyng Henry the eight concernyng contractes of matrimonie, was in this parliament repealed, for that many beastly persons, maliciously enterpzyting the same, did by obtaynyng the fyrste carnall copulation, take from honest men their desposed wyues.

5510.

1549

Sir Thomas Seimour lord Seimour of Sudley high admyrall of Englande, was by parliament attainted of treason, for which his head was stricken off at the tower hill in London the. xx. of Marche. It was sayd, that he sought to destroy the yong kyng Edward his newewe, and to make hym selfe kyng, but moste men thynke he dyed innocent in that matter.

In Aprile, Martine Bucer and Paulus Fagius, men of excellent learnyng, after many letters sente to theim from Thomas Cranmer archbyshop of Cantorburie, came into Englande, and were frendly receyued of the kyng hymselfe, of the whole nobilitie welmoste, and of the people also. And after they had a while refreshed the selues with the archebyshop of Canterbury, they were bothe sente to Cambridge, there to teache the trewe doctrine

the Epitome of Chronicles.

unt res
um.
Angli.

ctrine of Christe.

In Maie folowynge Peter Martyr and the diuines of Oxforde, disputed openly of the Lordes supper and the presence of Christe therein. These questions dyd Peter Martyr propone and defend. That the substance of bread & wyne is not changed, and that the body and bloude of Christ is not carnally and corporally in the breade and wyne, but is sacramentally vnited or knitte therevnto. The report of this disputation was afterwards set forth in print, wherein the moderatours of the disputations appointed by the kynge, doo plainly declare, that Martyr had the vpper hande.

In Iune folowynge, the French kynge came to Paris, with great pompe, and this was the fyrst commynge of hym thither after the deathe of his father, where at his beyng there, and in his presence, as some thynke, many were put to death for Luthers doctrine. And the kynge, as it appered by a writynge then set forth in printe, and sent into all partes of Fraunce, was there professed an open enemy to that sorte of men, determynynge to roote them quite out of his dominions. And not long after, he cut of mounsier Veruines heade, for that he had surrendered Boloigne to kynge Henry the eyght, after a long siege and soze battrie and assaultes.

About this tyme, there began in England great sedition among the people in all partes, but chiefly in Norfolke and in Deuonshire. The chief capitaine in Deuonshire was sir John Arundell a knyght, and in Norfolke one Kite a tanner. These bothe required groundes lately enpastured and enparked to be layd open agayn, but the chiefe cause of their rebellion was to haue the popish masse and ceremonies restored. They wroughte muche by a blynde prophecie, whiche tolde them that they shuld mete at London. And in dede so they dyd, for they were brought prisoners thither in one day, and committed to the tower. Suche is the good successe that they haue whych folowe blynde prophecies.

In this meane whyle dyd the french kynge invade and wyne the sorte whych kynge Henry had buylded betwene Boloigne and Calice, called Newhauen, the losse

Cccc

wherof

The pere
of the
worlde.

The pere
of Christ

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ.

whereof was layde to the Duke of Somersettes charge, Anno
for that he beeyng protectour hadde not seene that piece gum
better furnished. And in conclusion John Dudley the
Crole of Marwyke with the assent and helpe of others,
counsellours and nobles of the realme, charged hym in
open proclamation of misgouernement. and caused hym
to be apprehended at Wyndsoze, whether he was fledde
with the yong kynge his newewe, frome whens he was
brought as a traitour to the tower of London.

The fowerth day of Nouember a parlyment was hol
den at Westminster vpon prorogation, and there con
tinued and kept to the fyrst daye of February, wherein
was made an acte for the punishment of suche as would
vnlawfully assemble them selues. Also an acte for the res
titution of bloud in sy William Sheryngton knyght,
and an other for Mary daughter to sy Thomas Selmor
high Admyral.

1551

1550

In this meane whyle, Paulus Jagus dyed at Cam
bridge about the ende of Nouember, of a quartane.

In the beginnyng of February, the byshop of Straus
borewe had brought his matters to passe, and made per
fect his ministers, and began solemnely in. iii. churches
of the Citie, whiche the Senate had permitted hym to
occupie, the Popishe maner of theyr goddes seruite, to
the great admiration of youth, whiche had sene no such
monstrous mummeries before.

A littell before this, Arundell who was capitayne to
the Deuonshire men was hanged, drawen, and quarter
red at Tyburne. This was done the. xxi. of Januarye.
And about the same tyme, Kyte capitayne of the rebel
les in Norfolke was with his brother condemned and
sent to be hanged in chaines at Norwiche.

Before this, the. xix. day of the same moneth, wer mur
dered without Newgate in London one Gambo and an
other Filicirga, capitaynes of the Spanyardes, that had
serued in the warres at Boloigne, and eis where. This
murder was done by one Charles Gauaro a Flemynge
borne, who for the same dede had his hande cutte of in
the place where he dyd it, and was with his thre menne
hanged in Smithfielde vppon Saint Paules euen then.

next

the Epitome of Chronicles.

Annt re-
gum.
Angli.

next folowynge. He cam post from Warwik to London,
to doo this murder, and at his death sayd he woulde ne-
uer repent it.

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Chriſt

The. vi. day of February, the duke of Somerset was
deliuered out of the towre.

The same moneth went out of Englande certayn lordes
of the counsell to Boloigne, where certayne of the
frenche counsell mette with them, where at the last they
concluded a peace, whiche was proclaymed the. xxix.
day of Marche folowynge. And about the. xxv. of Aprille,
the towne of Boloigne with the fortresses therunto be-
longynge, was deliuered by the Englyshemen into the
handes of the Frenchemen.

The seconde day of May was bzent in Smithfielde a
woman called Jone Knel, other wise called Jone Bou-
cher, for the horrible heresy, that Chriſte took no fleshe
of the virgine Mary. And at her death dyd preache one
maſter John Scoy, then preacher at Canterbury.

About this tyme there were certayne lyghte persones
that pretended a newe commotion in Kent, but they
were apprehended, and the. xiii. of May was hanged at
Ashforde in Kent Rycharde Lyon, and Goddard Goram
and the next day folowynge was hanged at Canterbury
Rycharde Ireland for the same purpose.

In this meane while, the Englyshemen, and many o-
thers whiche fauored the goſpell in the lowe countreys
of Germany, were sore amased, by reason of an Edict
that Charles the Emperour set forth agaynst the Luth-
rans, and all theyr fauourers, and ſuche as ſhoulde be
founde with theyr bookes or images, made to the diſho-
nour of any of the popes holy ſainctes.

The. xxiii. day of Januarie was a parliament holden
at Weſtmynſter vpon prorogation, and was continued
and kept tyll the. xv. of Aprille, wherein among other thin-
ges it was enacted that priettes children ſhoulde be legi-
timate, and that no man ſhould take any vſury for lone
or forbearynge of money.

5512

1551

The. xiiii. daye of February was committed a ſhame-
full murder at Feuerſham in Kent. One Arden, a gen-
tlymanne, was by the conſente of his owne wyfe

Cee 2

murdered,

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere of Chyzt. The yere murdered, wherfore she was bzent at Canterbury, two Ann
of Chyzt. hanged in chaines at Feuerham, and a woman bzent: gum
of Chyzt. And in Smithfielde was hanged one Hol by and his sy
of Chyzt. ster. And the ruffian that was by the wyfe hyzed to doo
of Chyzt. the deede, whose name was blacke Wyllyam, fledde in
of Chyzt. to Sealande, and was taken at Flushyng, and there bur
of Chyzt. ned on a scaffolde besydes the hauen.

The. xvi. day of the same moneth, Steuen Gardener, byshop of Wynchester, was depriued of his bishoprike, and so committed to the tower agayne, where he lay durynge the lyfe of kyng Edward. Into whose place was by the kynges authoritie translated, doctour Poynt, byshop of Rochester.

The. xviii. of this moneth dyed at Cambridge Martine Bucer, and was there honourably buried, and commended by the Epitaphes of many learned men, among whome were the two sonnes of Charles duke of Suffolke, whose mother beyng a great fauourer of pure religion, shewed great kyndnes and frendshyp to Bucer, bothe befoze and in his sickenes. He died of the hickocks.

The. xxv. of Maie there was an earthquake in Sothe-rie, and in parte of Middelsex.

About the same tyme there was a dutchman burned in Smithfielde for holdyng the opinion of the Arrians.

At this season there fell amonge the englyshe nation, a very daungerous sweate, bothe in the realme, and in strange cuntryes, insomuche that many died in verie shorte space. And muche fruite of the repentance of former lyfe appeared sodenly. For some abated their unreasonable rentes, and many soughte for the pooze and neddy in prisons, and els where, to relieue them. But so soone as the sweate was ceased, they felle to their wonted synnes agayne, and as it seemed, repented them of their former repentance.

In July the piece that was coigned for. xii. d. was by proclamation abated to. ix. d. & the piece of. iiii. d. to. iij. d. And in August after from. ix. d. to. vi. d. and frome. iij. d. to. ij. d. And the piece of. ij. d. to a penye, and the penny to an halfe peny.

In October, the duke of Somerset was agayn apprehended.

the Epitome of chronicles

ant re- apprehended, and committed to the tower, and with him ^{The yere} ~~The yere~~
^{um} ~~um~~ ^{of the} ~~of the~~
^{nght.} ~~nght.~~ ^{worlde,} ~~of Chyrt.~~
 sy: Michel Stanhop, sy: Kase Jfane, sy: Miles Partri-
 che, and other. For then was John Erle of Marwyke,
 made duke of Northumberlande, whose deathe he sayd,
 the duke of Somerset had conspired.

The second day of Nouember the olde Quene of Scot-
 tes came to London, who was honourably receyued,
 and lodged in the byshops palaice.

Shortly after the Duke of Somerset was arrayned at
 Westminster, and by his pieres acquit of Treason, but
 condemned of felonie, and so committed to the towre a-
 gayne, where he remayned tyll he was brought forth to
 hys deathe.

In this meane while, the younge kynge was entised
 to passe time in maskeyng and mumminge. And to that
 ende there was piked oute a sorte of misrulers to deuyse
 straunge spectacles in the courte, in the tyme of Chyrt-
 mas to cause the yonge kynge to forgette, yea rather to
 hate, hys good vncl, who had purged the courte of all
 suche outrage, and enured the kynge vnto the exercyse
 of vertuose learninge, and hearynge of sermons. This
 was the high waye, firste to make an ende of the kynges
 vncl, and after of the kyng hymselfe.

⁶ The. xiii. day of Januarie, the sea brake in at Sandes-
 witche, in so muche that it dyd ouerflow al the marshes
 there about, and drowned much cattell, to the great losse
 both of the towne and countrey.

The. xxiij. of this monethe Edward duke of Somerset
 was beheaded at the towre hyll in London, where at the
 tyme of his speakyng to the people, there felle suche a
 sudden feare amonge the people by reason of a rumoure
 that ran abrode of the duke of Northumberlandes power
 of horsmen to be in a redinesse about the Citie, and an
 horse man that came in hastilpe at the northe syde of the
 towre hill that they fell to shufflynge and thrustynge, as
 men that stode in daunger of their lyues. In so muche
 that of all the great number of the garde and other, that
 stode ther with weapons to se execution done, ther was
 not one left in his order about the scffolde. In this sturre
 many were troben vnder fete, and many thrust into the
 towre

5513

1552

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ.

to the tower of Dytche. At the laste whenne the people perceyued that there came no more horsemenne, they supposed that he that was comen, had brought a pardon for the Duke, and therefore they beganne to shoute and cast by theyr cappes. Whiche thynge when the duke perceyued, he beckened with his cappe in his hande for silence. And that obtayned, he wylled the people to quiete theim selves, to obeye the rulers, and to loue theyr yonge kynge, and to pray to god for hym, that he myght long lyue and reigne ouer theym. As for hym selfe, he loked for no pardon, other then at Goddes hand. And so he prepared him selfe to the are, wherin he behaued hymselfe so soberly and humbly, that none so harde herted about hym, that dyd not shedde teares.

The xxv. day of February, there were hanged, at the towre byll for the dukes matter, syr Rafe Fane, and sir Wyles Partriche knyghtes, and syr Thomas Arundell, and syr Wyghell Stanhope beheaded.

The sommer folowynge, the kynge wente in progresse into the weste countre, wherein his yonge affections were fedde by them that were about hym, not withoute great daunger of his lyfe, by outragious ridynge in haukyng and huntynge. Towardes wynter he retourned to London, & fro thens he went to Grenewich, wher was prepared matter of pastyme, a fort counterfayted, riding at the tylte, and goodly pastimes at Christmas, tyll the kynge had gotten a cough that brought hym to his ende.

The fyrst day of Marche was holden a parliament at Westmynster, and continued there tyll the dissolution of the same, whiche was the laste daye of the same moneth. In this parlyament it was among other thynges enacted, that no maner of man shoulde selle or utter by retayle to be dronken in his owne house any kynde of wyne, vppon payne of forfaiture of tenne pounde for euery suche offence.

In this meane whyle there were thre noble shippes furnished for the great aduenture of the vnknoen viage into the east by the northseas. The great encourager of this voiage was Sebastian Caboto, an englishe man, borne at Brystow, but a Genoways sonne.

These

5514

1553

7

the Epitome of chronicles

These shypys dyd shortly after passe gallantly by Grene. The yere of Christ.
wiche in the kynges presence, one of the maryners stanz of the
dyng vpon the mayne topmasse of one of them. worlde.

At the same tyme there were other lyke shyppes sette
forthe towarde the southe to seke aduentures.

All this meane whyle kyng Edward was sycke,
And his counsellours linckinge them selues by marya-
ges. And muche talke ther was that the kyng was pop-
soned, and some suffered imprisonment and punishmen-
tes for so sayeng, and also for sayeng that he was deade.
In fine, the tenth day of July, it was by proclamation
declared in London, that he dyed the vi. day of that mo-
neth. And at the same tyme, there was a prayer set forth
in prynces, vnder the testimonye of Syr Thomas Wylzoth,
one of the prynces chaumber, and doctoure Diven one of
the kynges phisicians, with others: wherein the kyng a-
lyttell before he departed, besought God to preserve this
realme from popery.

In the abouenaied proclamation whiche was sette
forth by the consente of the duke of Northumberlande
and all the learned counsell of this realme, very fewe ex-
cepted, among whome Justice Hales of Kent was one,
and of the Mayre and Aldermen and common counsell
of the Citie of London, and moste parte of the Nobil-
itie, ladye Jane, daughter vnto Henrie Duke of Suf-
folke was proclaimed Queene, contrarie to that order
that was taken in parliamente for the succession of the
Crowne in the later daye of kyng Henry the eight, pre-
tendynge the feare of that whiche folowed in dede, that
yf Mary should raigne, she would bring in foreyn power
and the bishop of Rome.

But God, who wil not haue his truth mayntayned by
puttyng heyres from theyr right: confounded their wise-
dom. And by that woman who they wold haue shuldred
fro her right, he punished their vnsaciabie gatherynge of
tresure vnder theyr good kyng. For he so turned the her-
tes of the people to her & against them, that she ouercam
them without bloudshed, not withstandinge there was
made great expedition against her both by sea and land.

For when the counsell at London percepued that the
common

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Chyest.

common people woulde not stande with theim, and that certayne noble men began to go the other way: they turned their tale, & proclaymed the lady Mary, eldest daughter to kyng Henry, and appointed by parliament to succede Edward, dyeng without issue. And so the Duke of Northumberland beyng by the whole counsel sent forthe agaynst her, was lefte alone at Cambridge with some of his sonnes, and a fewe other, among whom the Erle of Huntington was one, who was there arrested, and broughte to the tower of London as traytours to the Crowne.

In this meane whyle, the lady Jane and her husband Gylforde, sonne to the duke of Northumberland, wer made prisoners in the tower, where they had lyen frome the tyme of her proclamation.

Quene Mary.

Thus dyd Mary the first begynne her reigne ouer this Realme, the xx. of July, in the yere of oure Lorde. 1553. beeyng at Framyngham castell in Suffolke.

The. iij. of Auguste she came to London, and entred the tower, where she founde prisoners Thomas duke of Norfolk, Stephen Gardener byshop of Winchester, Cuthbert Tonstall byshop of Durham, and Edward Courtney. And al these she restored shortly after, to their former dignities, and some of theim to greater, as Stephen Gardiner whome she made Chauncelloure, and Courtney Erle of Devonshyre, notwithstanding they were befoze lausfully depriued.

Shortly after, she restored Edmonde Boner of London, doctour Dape of Chichester, Heath of Worcester, and Troublefield of Excester, putting out Ridley, Scorye, Houser, and Couerdale. She put also out of Winchester Poynt, out of Yorke, the archebyshop, out of Bathe, Barlowe, out of Lyncolne Laylour, out of Warforde Harley, out of saint Davids, Farrar, and from Cantorbury the archebyshop Cranmer. And besydes these many deanes, as May, deane of Poules, Turner deane of Welles, Horne deane of Durham, Haddon, deane of Excester, with other many. And in a summe, al
maried

the Epitome of Chronicles.

Annt res
gum.
Angli.

all married ministers, that would not forsake theyr wy-
ues and do penance, receyvinge the popes absolution,
and promise to becom true papists. But such as refused
not so to doo, though they were remoued from their pla-
ces to satisfie the holy fathers lawe, yet in shorte tyme af-
ter they were placed els wher, in as much or moze welth
then euer they were before.

All this was not done in the tyme of her firste being in
the towre, but so shortely after as possibly it myght be.

Shortly after her comynge to the towre the bishoppe
of London beyng restored, appoynted maister Bowne,
a canon of Poules, to preach at the crosse, who taking
occasion of the gospel of the day to speake somewhat lar-
gelye in iustifieng of Boner the bishoppe then present,
who preached vpon the same text in that place that daye
foure yerres, and was vpon the same most cruelly and vn-
iustlye (as he sayde) caste into the most vile dungion of
the Martiallie, and there kepte duringe the tyme of king
Edward: his wordes sowed so euell in the eares of the
hearers, that they coulde not kepe silence, but began to
murmure and sturre in such sort, that the Maire and Al-
dermen with other estates then present, feared much an
bproue. And some sayde, that one hurled a dagger at the
preacher, but that coulde not be proued. In fyne the stur
was suche, that the preacher withdrew him selfe from
the place. And maister John Bradford (at the request of
the preachers brother and other, then being in the pulpit)
stode forth and spake so mildly Christianly and effectua-
ously, that with fewe wordes he appeased all. And after
warde he and John Rogers conducted the preacher be-
twixt them, from the pulpit to the grammar schole doore
where they leste him safe. But shortly after they were
both rewarded with longe imprisonment, and last of all
with fyre in Smithfelde.

The next sonday folowynge, the quenes garde were at
the crosse with their weapons to garde the preacher. And
when quiete men withdrew themselves frome the ser-
mon, order was taken by the mayre, that the auncientes
of all companies shoulde be present, leasse the preacher
shuld be discouraged by his small auditoire.

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Chyrt

Am

The

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ.

The .xviii. of August the duke of Northumberlande, Anne
sir John Gates knyght, and syr Thomas Palmer, were
beheaded at the tower hyl, where the sayd duke trusting
to receiue pardon (as some thought) or els geuen ouer to
hymselfe, as commonly suche men be as walke without
the feare of God, confessed that he hadde lyued in errour
many yeres, and exhorted the people to embrace the po-
pish religion, whiche he tearmed Catholike. But syr
Thomas Palmer, who had led a lyfe no lesse dissolute,
 protested that he dyed in the fayth that he had learned in
the gospell, and lamented that he hadde not lyued moze
gospellyke. Here we see two in one condemnation, the
one receyued, & the other refused, so farre as man can se.

About the fyrst day of September, Peter martyr came
to London from Oxforde, where for a tyme he had ben
commanded to kepe his house, and founde there the ar-
chebysshop of Canturbury, who offred to defend the do-
ctrine of the booke of Common praiser, both by the scrip-
tures and doctours, by the helpe of Peter martyr and a
fewe other. But whyles they were in hope to come to di-
sputations, the archebysshop and other were imprisoned,
but Peter Martyr was suffred to return whens he came.

In this tyme doctour Marten of the newe colledge in
Oxforde, was penning a booke agaynst the marriage of
priesstes, which when it was finished by the helpe of Ni-
cholas Udall: was so lyked of the queene and the Lord
chauncellour, that doctour Marten had a commission
to make free denizens of frenche and dutchemen, wher-
che he executed in the springe folowynge, and made hym-
selfe a gentelman, and set forth his booke in print. But
shortly after he was by doctour ponet, answered at the ful.

The last day of September the Quene passed through
the Citty of London to Westminster with great pompe
And among other strange sightes there set forth, this
was mooste to be had in memory. A man stood vpon the
backe of the wethercocke of Paules Steple, withoute
stape, hauing a streamer in his hande. On the morowe
he was crowned at Westminster, Stephen Gardiner
beyng minister.

The .x. day of October, began a parliament, wherein
were

the Epitome of Chronicles.

Ant re-
gum.
Angl.

were repealed al statutes made in the time of Kyng Hēry theight for preminire and statutes made in king Edward the fyrst time for administration of comon praier and the sacramentes in the Englishe tonge. And furder thattaynder of John Duke of Northumberlande was by thys parlyament confirmed. In this meane whyle many men were forwarde in the erectyng of Altars and masses in Churches. And suche as woulde stycke to the lawes made in Kyng Edwardes tyme tyll other sholde be established: were some of them marked and some presently apprehended, amonge whome Sir James Hales a knight of Kent, and iustice of the common place was one. Whoe not withstandinge he had ventred hys lyfe in quene Maries cause, in that he wold not subscribe to the disheritinge of her by the kinges will, yet for that he dyd at a quarter sessions geue charge vpon the statutes made in hys time of Hēry theight & Edward the vi. for supremacye & Religiō, he was imprisoned in the Martials Counter & flete, & so cruelly handled, & so put in feare by talke of the wardē of the flete vsed to haue in his hering, of torments that wer in preparing for heretikes, that he sought to rid himself out of this life, by wounding himself with a kniffe. And afterwarde was content to say as they willed him wher vpon he was discharged: But neuer quieted in conscience, tyll he had drowned him selfe in a ryuer halfe a myle from his house in Kent.

About the .xviii. of October, ther was at Poules church in London a disputatiō appointed by the quenes comāndement, about the presēce of Christ in the sacramēt of the altare, as thei call it. This disputatiō continued .vi. daies, wherin docto^r Weston was chief on the popes part, who behaued himself outragiously in tantyng & checking. In cōclusion, such as disputed on the contrary part wer driuen some to flee, some to denie, & some to dye, though to the mosse mens iudgementes that herde the disputation they had the vpper hand. About the end of October, one Michael Seruetus, a spaniard, was put to deathe at Geneva for denying the eternall deitie of Christ Iesus. At this tyme died James Sturmi^{us} at Strasborow, a man of excellēt lerning & vertu, of the age of .lxxiii. yeres.

F. lxx. 2.

In

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ.

In Nouember the archbyschop Crammer (notwithsta-
ndyng he had earnestly refused to subscribe to the kynges
wyll, in disherityng his syster Mary, alledgyng many
and pithy reasons for her legitimatyon) was in the guild
hall of London arraigned and attainte of highe treason,
with the lady Jane, and thre of the duke of Northum-
berlands sonnes, which al returned to the tower agayn.

In this meane whyle, Cardinall Woole beyng sente
for by quene Mary, was by the Emperour requested to
stae with hym, to the intent (as some thynke) that his pre-
sence in Englande shoulde not be a lette to the mariage
which he intended betwene Philip his sonne and quene
Mary. For the makyng whereof he sent a mosse ample
embassage, with full power to make by the mariage be-
twixt them. Whiche toke suche successe, that after they
had commoned of the matter a fewe dayes, they knytte
by the knotte.

This was doone aboute the begynnyng of January,
and was very euill taken of the people, and of many of
the nobilitie, which conspiryng among themselves made
a rebellion, wherof fyr Thomas Wyatt knyght was the
chiese and begynner. Who being in Kent, perswaded the
people, that the quene and the counsell wolde by foreyne
mariages byrnyng vpon this realme mosse miserable ser-
uitude, and establishe popyshe religion. Aboute the xxv.
of Januarie newes came to London of this sturre in
Kent, and shortly after of the Duke of Suffolke, who
was fled into Warwickshire, and Leicestershyre, there
to gather a power. The quene therfore caused them both
with Carewes of Devonshire, to bee proclaymed trai-
tours. And sente into Kente agaynst Wyatt, Thomas
duke of Norfolk, who beyng forsaken of theym that
went with hym, escaped to London agayne with greates
difficultie, as he thought, although no man folowed him.
After the duke of Suffolke was sent the Earle of Hun-
tyngdon in poste, who entryng the cite of Couentrie be-
fore the duke, disappoynted hym of his purpose. Where-
fore the duke in greate distresse committed hymselfe to
the keepyng of a seruaunt of his owne in a park, who
lyke a false traytoure bewrayed hym. And so hee was
brought

5515

1554

8

Anni-
gum.
811.

the Epitome of chronicles

nt re
um
ngil

brought by to the tower of London. In this mean while **The yere** **The yere**
Peter Carewe hearyng of that was doone, fledde into of the
Fraunce, but the other were taken, and **Wyat** came to, **of the**
wards London in the begynnynge of February, from **worlde.**
whence the **emperors** ambassadoers sped theselues away in
hast al by water. The **quene** herynge of **Wyats** comynge
came into the cite to the **Gylde hall**, wher she made a be
hement **Oration** against **Wyat**, declaringe that she ney
ther had no, wold consent to mary otherwise then shuld
seme to the counsell to be for the wealth of the realme.
Wherefore she despyed them of the **Citie** to sticke to her
in the suppressyng of rebellouse traitours and defending
her royall estate.

This done she appointed the **Lord William Haward**
lieutenant of the **Citie**, and the **Erle of Penbroke** gene
rall of the field. And lest any shuld escape out of the cite
to **Wyat**, she caused the drawbrdge of London to be cut
of, and let fall into the river **Temes**. In this mean while
was **Wyat** comen into **Southwarke**, And after two
dayes there spent in bayne: he departed to wards **Wyng**
ston, where he passed the ryuer by force, thynckynge to
have comen to London in good tyme, but he was disap
pointed, partly by breaking the cartage of his ordinaunces
and partely by wearinesse of the longe and foule jour
ney. So that at his commynge to **Charing crosse** he was
passe all hope of preyailinge. And yet suffered to go qui
etly thorow the stretes to **Ludgate**, and returning thens
was resisted at **Temple barre**, and there apprehended.

On the next day proclamation was made, that no man
should in payne of death, kepe any of the faction of **Wyat**
in his house, but forthwith bynge them oute, notwith
standing that generall pardon was by the haralde decla
red at the apprehension of **Wyat** the daye before, which
was **Ashewensedaye**.

Then were ther gallowses and gibbetes erected in all
parts of the **Citie** and suburbs of London to the nombre
of .xx. or therabout, and many capitayns & souldyours of
Wyats faction hanged thereon. Which gallowses stode
tyll in theyr places in the stretes tyll the beginninge of
June folowynge, when preparation began to be made for
recepying

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Chyest.

recepuyng of Philip pynce of Spayne.

Ann
gum.
Angli

The. xii. day of February was beheaded the lady Jane, and her hus bande Gilforde Dudley, two innocentes in comparison of them that late in iudgement vpon them. For they did but ignorantly accept that which the other had wittingly deuised to take fro others to giue to them.

The. xxi. of that moneth was Henry duke of Suffolke beheaded at the tower hill, beyng condemned but. iiii. dayes before.

After this were condemned for this conspiracie many gentilmen and yeomen, whereof some were executed at London, and some in the countrey, and in fine the quene pardoned. iiii. hundzeth of the common people.

The. xv. daye of Marche was committed to the toure, Courteney the Erle of Deuonshire, and the. xliii. of the same, the lady Elizabeth wyfe to the quene, both vppon suspition of wyats conspiracie.

Shortely after was apprehended in Northwales the lord Thomas Craye, brother to the duke, & sir James Crofte, whiche lord Thomas was after executed.

Immediatly there was a parliament summoned to be holden at Drforde, where was made great preparation to the great hindrance of many of the inhabitantes. For it was afterwarde appointed to be at Westmynster, and was there holden the second of April, wherin the quene requested. ii. things, her marriage, & restoring of the pope the one she obtained vpon certaine conditions, the other wolde not be granted as than.

In this meane while, not onely the Straungers that were in kyng Edwardes time, receiued into the realme for religion, among whom one John a Lasco vncle to the king of Poland was one: but many englishmen also fled, some to Friseland, some to Cleueland, som to high Germanie, where they found great fauour, but especially at Frankfort vpon Meaue. And somme wente to Geneva, wher they found great fauour also. About the same time there were hanged at Chard in Somersetshire. iiii. yong men for breakyng and burnyng of churche ornaments.

The. i. daye of Aprill, Archebischoppe Cranmer, Bp. Hop Wydley, and Hugh Latimer went out of the towre

the Epitome of chronicles

nt re-
um
ngit. towards Oxforde, where they had disputacions wth the deupnes of both vniuersities, and because they wold not recant they wer reserued in prisone, till they might be condemned by the popes autozitie, not withstanding that they answered most substantially and trulye.

At this tyme was sir Thomas Wyat beheaded at the towre hill, and afterwarde quartered, and his quarters set vp in sundry places, and his head vpon the gallows at hape hyl over the thze that were there hanged in chaines. And shortly after it was stolen awaye thence. Before he came forth to his deth, he did plainly declare that the ladye Elizabeth and Courtney were nothyng giltye of his faction, Not withstanding that coulde not let the ladye Elizabeth at libertye.

Durynge this tyme many mad parts wer playd about the citie of London, but chiefly these: A cat dresled lyke a prieste at masse, with the cake ouer her heade betwene her handes, was hanged vpon the gallows at the cross in Chepe. And a mastie dog, shauen in the crowne, with a tippet about his necke was found in the quenes closet, and a letter was fastned to his tippet wherin were these words: I am a poze priest & com to sue for a benefice.

About this tyme Cardinal Pole went from the Emperour to y^e French king to intreat a peace, but in vaine.

The xviij. of May was haged, drawn & quartered at Tyburn, William Thomas for cōspiring the quenes deth.

The. xx. of July Philip pzince of Spaine, son to Charles. v. Emperour, arrived at Southampton, and was ther honorably receiued, & cam y^e fourth day after to Winchester where the quene had long looked for him, wher matrimonie was betwene the honorably solēnised, & the kingdome of Naples for the mariage sake, to him by his father graunted. Which thinges done, they rode royallye to London, whither they cam and were sumptuously receyued the xviij. day of August. About the ende of October the emperor sent messēgers to the king his sonne, to geue him possession of the dukedom of Millayn.

The. xii. daye of Nouember there was holden at Westminster a parliament, to whiche Cardinall Pole was brought out of Brabant, beyng accompanied with the
englishe

The yere
of Chzist.

The thyrde parte of

The pere
of the
world.

The pere
of Chyst.

English ambassadours sent for the same purpose among whom the Lorde Baget was one. He came to London the xxiii. of November. And the first daye after, he came into the parliament house, beyng restozed to his olde estate, from which kyng Henry had cast hym doune, and in the presence of the kyng and queene, he dyd, after he had declared the cause of his legatie, exhort them al that there represented the holo body of the realm to retourne to the communion of the churche, and to restoze to the moste holy father his due authoritie. Signifyenge vnto them that his holynes was in purpose to shewe great clemencie and gentlenesse vnto them. And further he exhorted them to geue thanks to god that hadde geuen them suche a kyng and queene. And laste of all, he dyd them to vnderstande, that he toke it for a great benefite at theyr handes that they had restozed hym to his former estate, and therfore he accompted him selfe the more bounde a great deale, to restoze them to the heauenly court, which thinge he most desyzed of all thynges. And when he had thus spoken, he went out of the parliament house.

Then stode vp the lorde chauncelloz byshop of Winchester, and repeted the Cardinales oration, with many wordes of exhortation to conkozde and vnitie, affirmyng, that we oughte to geue moste hartty thanks to god, that of his vnmeasurable mercy had styzed vs by a prophete of oure owne nation, whiche geneth hymselfe wholly to doo vs good.

The day folowynge, when the parliament had graunted the Cardinales request, they deuised a forme of supplication to the kyng and queene, wherein they myghte moste humbly beseeche them to be meanes to the Cardinall for them. The effect whereof was this. That they dyd earnestly repent them of theyr scisme, in refusynge to obey the apostolike see of Rome, and in consentynge to lawes made against the same: promysynge that thence forth they would be at theyr comandement to do what soeuer they shulde be able to doo in that parliament, for the abolyshynge of all suche lawes and statutes.

The next day, so sone as the kyng, the queene, & Boole were againe present, the Chauncellour stode vp and declared

the Epitome of Chronicles.

Annt re-
gum.
Angli.

clared what the parliament had decreed concerning the popes legates request. And then he deliuered to the king and Quene, the supplication of the parliament sealed, humbly beseeching them to receyue it: which whan they had receyued and opened it, they deliuered it to the chancelour agayne to be redde, whiche he dyd, and asked of the whole house whether they consented to it or no. And when they had answered, yea: then the kyng & queene rose vp, and deliuered it to the Cardinall, who when he had redde it, deliuered the bull of his legacy to theyn, whych was forthewith redde, that all men myghte vnderstande, that the pope hadde geuen hym power to absolve theyn.

Afterwarde, he declared, howe acceptable in the sight of god, the repentance of a synner is, and howe greatly the angels reioyce ouer one sinner that repēteth. And in conclusion he gaue thanks to God, that had geuen them a mynde so desyrous of emendement. When this was done, he arose, and so dyd the kyng and quene also, and then fell the kyng and quene doune on theyr knees. Thā dyd the Cardinall lyfte vp his syngers, and blesse them, desyryng god to loke mercysfully vpon the people, and to forgive the offence, and so he absolved the whole multitude. And after this, they wente to the chappell, where thanks were geuen to god with pppynge and syngynge after the maner. Suche as knewe Pole befoze, and had had acquaintaunce with hym, meruailed muche at these doynge. For they looked for farre other thynges at his hande.

Nowe was the kyng, the quene, and all the commons at a good poynt, and in case mete to procede to the aduācyng of Antichriste, and treadinge Christe vnder fote in his members, as thei dyd, in that they renued thre statutes for the punishment of Christes people (whome they call heretikes) and in repealyng statutes made agaynst the apostolike see of Rome, as they terme it. And som men thought, that Philip shuld haue had the croun at that parliament, but it came not so to passe.

In this meane while, many were kept in prison, that had bene apprehended some for preachyng after queene

Eggg. i.

Mary

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ.

The thyrde parte of

Mary was proclaymed, and some had actions of debte against layde to their charge, that they might be had in holde under colour of lawe, tyll the lawe was establyshed, that myght make an ende of them, if they wolde not submit themselves to the church of Rome.

Soone after the begynnyng of January, the parlyament was dissolved: And immediately after, there were fyve men of god, and singularly learned in the scriptures, brought forth of the prisons aboute London, where they hadde bene holden, as is sayde before. And bycause they wolde not submitte themselves to the popes authoritie, they were all condemned of heresie. Theynames were John Hopper byshoppe of Worcester and Gloucester, John Bradforde, Laurence Saunders, Roulande Taylour doctour of the lawe, John Rogers reader of diuinitie at Paules. And shortly after was condemned Robert Farrer byshop of saint Davids in Wales.

All this whyle doctour Martyn was in greate authoritie with the byshoppe of Winchester, so that libertie and bandes were in his handes, and welle was he that coulde obtayne his fauour. But now it was needefull to haue men moze bloudy, for nede made Martyn myld. There were therfore appoynted in comission for the examination of heretikes, fyr Roger Cholmeley knyght, mayster Wyllyam Koper, and Doctour Story. And to brynge theym in were appoynted Bearde, John Uales, and Robert Caley, two taylours and a prynter. And besides these, there were in euery paryshe certayn sworne to marke and present all such as shewed not themselves popyshe.

About this time it was determined, that ambassadours shuld go to Rome, to render thanks to the holy father, for the great clemency that he hadde vsed towarde this realme, makynge faithfull promysse of obedience from thenceforthe for euer. These ambassadours tooke theyr journey the lent folowynge, one of theim was Thirleby byshop of Ely, and the other the lord Montacute.

In february the fourth day was bourned in Smithfielde, John Rogers aboue named,

the Epitome of Chronicles.

Anni res-
gum.
Angli.

The eighth daye of the same moneth Laurence Saun-
ders parson of All halowes in Wredstret, was burned
at Couentrie.

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yers
of Christ

The .ix. day, the aboue named Rowland Taylour was
burned at Hadley in Suffolke, where he was parson.

The .xiiij. of the same was burned at Glocester the a-
boue named John Hopper byshop there.

John Bradforde was a man of suche integritie of life
that the cruell papistes coulde not for shame put hym to
deathe as yet, but reserued hym in prison, trustyng that
tyme woulde weare out the memory of his godly lyfe,
but he so behaued hym selfe in prison, that the fame of
his vertue grewe, euen to the hower of his deathe.

In this meane whyle, the Emperour Charles labou-
red by his brother Ferdinandus kynge of Boheme, to
brynge the Germanes to a generall councell, fyrste at
Almes, and after at Auguste, to whiche the Cardinall
Moronus shulde haue comen, to trye whyther he coulde
haue done as muche in Germany as Pole had doone in
Englande. For the good successe that Pole had in En-
glande encouraged the Pope so, that he thoughte god
was with hym, and that his churche coulde by no mea-
nes be conuincd of errour.

The .v. of Marche, Thomas Tomkyn a weauer, who
dwelled in Shorditch without Bishoppes gate at Lon-
don, was burned in Smithfielde. This man hadde bene
longe reserued in prison, and had bene often before the
byshop of London, who on a tyme caused his hande to
be holden whiles he bourned it with a candell, to proue
howe he coulde away with burnyng.

The .xx. of the same moneth was burned at Burnde-
wodde, one William Hunter, an apprentise.

The .xxv. of the same Marche, was burned at Horne-
don on the hylle, Thomas Higby gentilman and biere-
buer. And at Rayley was bourned Thomas Causon
gentylman the same daye.

The .27. was burned at Bzaintry willia Pygat weuer

The .xxviij. daye was bourned at Malden, Stephen
Knyghte boucher, At Danbury, Wyllyam Digell.
At Colchester John Laurence preacher. At Cardiffe,

Eggg. h.

Kau.

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Christ. Kaulyn Whyte.

The thyrde parte of

The seconde of Aprile, John Aucocke died in prison, in Newgate at London.

Anni
gum
gli.

The .xxiii. of the same month, willyam Flower, other wise called Branche, was burned at Westminster. And fyrst his hand was striken of at the stake, because he had on Easter daie before wounded a priest in saint Margarets church, in tyme of the mynistracion of their house, as they call it. The same day was bourned at Westminster George Marche preacher.

In this meane while, many learned and worshipfull, and some noble personages, besides honest commoners a great numbze, conueyed them selues beyonde the seas some vnder licence, and some secretly, emongest whom the duchesse of Suffolke wyfe to Charles duke of Suffolke, was one, with her husband Barthew, surnamed Fraunces Knolles, and diuers other, chosynge rather to aduventure affliction in a straunge countrey, than to submytte them selues to the Romyshe superstitious orders, and to commit that grosse ydolatrie, that the papists mainteyn.

About this tyme, greate preparation was made for the queenes chylbedde, Mydwives, rockers, and other sortes of women in great numbze taken into the queenes lodgynge at Hampton Courte and not suffered to come home to their husbandes. Besydes that, great preparation of al thyng pertainynge to nursery, for it was plainly affirmed out of the mouths of the queenes phylitions, that she was greate with a man chylde, and some sayde with two. But in conclusion there was borne neyther manchild nor woman, that could be knowen. Although the priestes in euery church through the realme, hadoe diligently and earnestly moued the people from tyme to tyme after they were about the begynnyng of Nouember, by testimonie of the counsell certified that she was conceyued, to pray that she myght bryng forth a prince, that shulde by iuste title reigne ouer the greatest parte of the christen worlde.

The laste daie of Aprile, in the mornynge before the gates of London were opened, ther came a merie fellow to the gate at the brydge foote, affirminge that he muste ryde

the Epitome of chronicles

ride in post thorough the Citie, for the Quene was that The yere
mornynge deliuered of a prince. This shifte he vnto get of the of Chriſt.
the gate opened. But this worde flewe so faste thow we wolde.

London, and was so pleasant in the eares of priestes
and parische clarkes, that before. vii. of the clocke, all the
belles in the Citie were walkynge, and shortly after
Te deum, solemnely song, and processions set forth with
Salve festa dies, Wyth the best Crosses and Copes, and
besydes this bonefyres and bankets appoynted agaynst
after none, And many thretynge words spoken agaynst
them that were not forwarde in thys ouer speeche reioy-
cynge. At this tyme the Erle of Arundell beyng presy-
dent of the Counsell, laye at his house wythout Temple
barre, And heying the great noise of belles, he asked the
cause therof, And when they that were aboute hym had
told him the newes: he gaue no such credite to it but that
he woulde sende to the Mayre of London to knowe the
truth. And when he could learne there none other truth
then that whiche the priestes and clarkes hadde confir-
med with thyr singynge and ryngynge, he sente imme-
diately to the courte, and not contente to tarpe the re-
tourne of the messenger, he rode after in poste hymselfe,
and so learned that the Quene, and such as were aboute
her, had hearde nothynge of those ioyful newes.

But these newes stayed not there, for they ran in post
not only into al parts of England, but into al countreys
of Europe also, and some wer punished, in some partes
of Englande, for sayinge it was a lye.

But after it was manifestlye knowne to be a lye, the
people were verie desyrous to se what shulde be borne to
the stape of the succession of the crowne, for the whole
number of mydwyues and rockers were retayned still
at the courte. But at the lasse all were sente awaye, and
neyther prince nor princeſſe borne.

The. xxi. of May were bourned in Smithfelde John
Cardmaker, otherwise called Tailer, precher and chan-
celor of the churche of Welles, and John warren uphol-
ster of London.

The fourth of June was hanged at Charing crosse,
for robbynge a Spanyarde, William Toly pulter of Lon-
don

The thyrde parte of

The pere
of the
world.

The pere
of Chrest.

don, Who at the tyme of hys death desyred the people to say Amen to his prayer, whiche was thus. From the tyrannye of the bishop of Rome and all his detestable iniquities: good lord deliuer vs. For this cause he was after his death suffered to hange styll on the gallows, tyl he stank, and then being buried vnder the gallows, he was by the Bishopp of Londons officer summoned to appere in the colistorie at Paules. And for lacke of apperance he was condemned of heresye, and adiudged to be burned. And afterward taken vp and burned in the same place.

The x. of the same moneth was burned at Chemsford Thomas Mats linnen draper.

The xi. day was burned at Cocke hall Thomas Hawkes gentleman, whose examinations are written. And John Simson weuer at Kotchford, John Erbley house bandeman at Kayley. Nicholas Chamberlayne at Colchester.

The xii. of the same was burned at Maningtre Thomas Osmonde, and at Harwiche, William Butler.

In this meane was the ladie Elizabeth (syster to the Quene, carted prisoner from the toure of london to Woodstocke besyde Oxforde, whither the Lords Williams of Tame dyd curteously conducte her. But courteselye dyd her keeper Bennynghfelde behaue him selfe towards her both before and after.

In this moueth of June, the lord Chauncelloz of Englande the Erle of Arundell, and the Lord Paget, went ouer the sea to Calice with commissiō to treat of a peace to be concluded betwene the French Kyng and the Emperour, who had often communication with the French Kyngs commissione rs nere vnto Marke, the Cardynall Boiebeynge presidente there. But they returned without concluding any peace.

The firste of Iulye was burned in Smithfelde John Bradforde preacher, Who (as it is before declared) was condemned with the firste, but reserued in prisonne tyll now, where he wrote diuerse woorkes whiche were shortlye after put in prynte, wyth hym was burned John Leese an apprentice of London.

The

the Epitome of chronicles

The. 2. of this moneth William Mynges minister died in The yere
of the
of Chyrl.
Maydeston prizon.

The. xij. daie wer burned at Canterburp John Bland wzide.
Preacher, John Franckes bycar of Rowmedon, Pyco-
las Sheterden, Humfrey Wyddleton. John Wade at
Dartford. Derike Harman berebuer at Lewes. John
Launder batchelar, at Steuenyng, Thomas Emerson
bacheler at Chichester, and Wycharde Hooke there al-
so. The. xxx. daie at Rochester Nicholas hall: at Tur-
brydge Joane Wolley.

Aboute this tyme, the Lorde Courtney and the ladye
Elizabeth were deliuered of bandes, but the ladye Eliza-
beth was appoynted her place & enforced to haue masse
in her house. But Courtney was by the Cardinals pro-
curement sent into Italy shortly after, where he died as
some thincke of poyson.

The laste day of this moneth, Robert Farrer before
named, byshop of saint Davids, was burned at Car-
maerden.

The seconde day of August William Apleward died
in prizon at Readyng, where he was holden for that he
wold not consent to the popes Antichristian lawes. And
at Saint Edmundes burie was burned that day James
Abies. At Urbydge, John Denby gentleman. And at
Stratford the bowe was bourned the widowe of John
Warren upholster of London, who was before burned
wyth Carmaker, in Smithfielde.

The. xi. day, ther was a terrible fight in the narrow seas
betwene the dutch and French men: xi. ships brente and
sonke: sixe great ships on the one parte, and v. hulkes on
the other.

The. xxiij. daie were burned at Canterburp, William
Coker gentleman, Richard Collier Henrpe Laurence,
Wylliam Hopper, Wylliam Sterre, And Richard
Wright.

The. xxiii. day was burned at Taunton Roger Co-
rier.

The. xxvi. were burned at Sainte Albones George
Tankerfielde Coke, and William Wainforde.

The. xxix. day was burned at Urbydge Partrike pa-
tingham

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ.

The thyrde parte of

Wattingham felmonger, who, as it was reported, renou-
ced the Arians opinion befoze he dyed.

Anni
gum.
Angli

The xii. daye were burned, at Stanes Robert Smith
painter, who in the tyme of his imprisonment, wrote dy-
uers thinges in Metre, which were after put in print. At
Stortford Stephan Horwode Alebuer. And at Ware
Thomas Fulle Jerkenmaker.

The xxi. daye wer burned, John Neweman yeman
at Safron walden. William Hales, at Barnet. Robert
Samuell, at Ipswiche.

This sommer there were buried at London in Dore-
fieldes under an elm tree growyng in the corner of the
field next the towne ditch: a paynter that died in Lath-
bury, and a poore olde woman that dyed in S. Myldre-
des paryshe, bycause they refused to be houseled after the
popes order in theyr syckenes.

A littell befoze this, there was muche muttryng that
the quene was deade, bycause she had so longe retayned
mydwyues and rockers, and vpon a sodayn sent theym
away. wherfoze beyng at westminster, and determyned
to go to Grenewiche by water: she was by the counsell
at the request and suite of the mayre of London, persua-
ded to passe thowowe the citie to put all out of doubt. And
so she did, the morowe after Bartholomewe day.

In the begynnyng of September kyng Philyp passed
the seas to Calys, and so went to Brussels in Brabant,
to themperour his father.

The second day of September, was bourned at Wal-
singham, William Aleyn.

The thyrde daye of the same, were bourned Thomas
Cobbe at Thetforde, and Thomas Coe at Perforde.

The vi. daye were bourned at Canterburpe George
Bradbridge, James Tuttey, George Catner, Robertte
Streter, and Antonie Burwarde.

The x. daye John Lyfe dyed at Newgate in London.

The xiii. daye were burned at Lychefielde Thomas
Haywarde and Thomas Gorwape.

Aboute this tyme, one Tingle dyed in Newgate at
London and certen other in the Lowlers towre, As Ry-
charde Smith, George Kyng and William Andrewes
wher

the Epitome of Chronicles.

Ant res
gum
Angli.
Wherof some were at the commissioners commaundes
ment layd out vpon the donghilles withdute Dozgate,
but Tobias scholars buried them in the night.

The yere
of the
worlde.
The yere
of Christ

The xix. day, at Couentrise were burned Robert Bla-
uer gentleman, And Cornelius Bunge.

The iij. of October were burned at Elye, Willjam
Walley Weuer, and Robert Pygat paynter.

The xvi. daye were burned at Drforde, Nicholas Rid-
ley Bishophe of London, and Hugh Latimer sometime
Bishophe of Worcester.

The xxi. of October was holden a parliament at west
minster, and continued to the dissolution thereof, whi-
che was the nynte of December. In this parliamente
wer giuen from the kynges of Englande, the firste frui-
tes and tenthes, which in the tyme of kyng Henry the
eyghte were geuen, and by parlyamente annexed to the
crowne of Englande.

The laste of this moneth were burned at Canterbury
John webbe gentleman, George Koper, and Gregoꝝ
Painter.

Aboute the tenth daye of Nouember dyed Stephane
Gardiner Bishophe of Winchester and Lord Chauncel-
lor of Englande, chiefe traualer in the bzinging in of
the pope and fozen power into this Realme.

The vii. day of December James Coze dyed in Col-
chester pryson.

The xiiij. daye wylliam wylseman dyed in Towlers
tower, and was caste into the fieldes vnburied.

The xviii. daye, John Philpot Archedeacon of Wyn-
chester, was bourned in Smithfielde. He was one of
the chiefe that disputed in the conuocation house against
the Papistes, and putte the same disputation in wri-
tinge. He wzate also his owne examinations, and gathe-
red manye authorities against the abuse of the Lordes
supper, and the vsurped power of the bishophe of Rome.
He wzate also an Inuectiue againste Arrians and A-
nabaptistes.

4

The xxvii. of Januarie were burned in Smithfielde,
Thomas Whitwel minister, Bertelet Grene gentlemā
of the temple in in Lodon, Thomas Brown, John Tut

Gggg

son

5517

1556

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
wylde.

The yere son, John Went, Agnes Foster, Jone Lashforde. Annt
of Thyr A The. xxi. of the same moneth were burned at Canter, gum
bury, John Lowmas, Anne Albright, Jone Soale, Jone gll.

Paynter, and Agnes Snode.

The. xix. of Februarye were bourned at Ipswiche
two women.

The. x. day of Marche, there appeared a notable bla-
syng starre in the Southeast.

The. xxi. of Marche, Thomas Cranmer archebysshop
of Canterbury, was burned at Drforde. He wrote dy-
uers worthy bookes, bothe in the tyme of kyng Edward
and in the tyme of his imprisonment.

The. xxiii. of the same moneth were burned at Salis-
bury, thzee men, one named Spiser, one Paudzell, and
an other Liquerley.

About this tyme Cardinall Poole was made arche-
bysshop of Canterbury.

The seconde daye of Aprille, John Bulliarde minis-
ter, was bourned at Cambridge. And Hartpole, and
Beches wydowe at Rochester.

The. x. of the same moneth were bourned in Smith-
fielde, Willjam Tyms, and Robert Drakes ministers.
George Ambrose, John Caruill, Thomas Spurge, and
Rycharde Spurge.

The. xliii. day of the same month wer bzent at Colche-
ster, Christopher Lyster minister, John Pace, Rycharde
Picoll, John Spenser, John Hamond, Symon Cpen.

The. v. of Maye were burned at Glocester, one Tho-
mes, a blynde boy, and one other named Croker.

The. xiii. day of this moneth Margaret Elyot, a may-
den, beyng condemned to be burned, died in Newgate
at London, and was buried in the fieldes.

The. xv. day were burned at Stratford the bow, John
Aplice, a clotheworke and blind, and Hugh Leueroke
a lame man.

The. xvi. daye were burned in Smithfielde, Katarine
Hut widow, Joan Hozne Waidē, And Elizabeth Thak-
nell mayden.

The. xxi. daye were bourned at Bekelles in Suffolke
two men, and a woman,

The

the Epitome of Chronicles.

Ant res
gum
Anll.

The xxxi. daye William fleche died in the Kings bench, and was buried in the backsyde.

The yere
of the
worlde.

Theyere
of Chriſt

About this tyme sir John Cheke schole master to king Edward, and sir Peter Carewe were trayterously taken in Flaunders, and from thence shipped and brought to the tower of London, and there kept till they submitted them selues to the Pope, and then set at libertie. But sir John Cheke lyued not long after.

The. vi. day of June were burned at Lewes in Sussex, Thomas Harlande Millwright, John Dward carpenter, Thomas Reade and Thomas Avington. And the. xx. day were burned there Thomas Hoode minister and Thomas Milles.

The. xxii. day William Adhirall dyed in the kynges benche, and the. xxv. day John Clement wheelewright, died there also, and were bothe buried in the backsyde.

The. xxvi. day of this moneth, there was bourned at Leicester, a marchantes seruant.

The. xxvii. day of the same moneth, there were burned at Stratforde the bowe in one fyre. xiii. persons, whose names were Henry Adlyngton, Rafe Jarson, William Holywell, Thomas Bowper, Laurence Parmene, Lyon Acoer, Henry Wipe, John Dorefall, John Rothe, Edmund Hurste, George Searles, Elizabeth Peper, and Agnes George.

The same daye Thomas Paret dyed in the kynges benche, and ii. daies after, Marten Hunt, and were both buried in the backsyde.

The xxx. daye there were. iii. burned at s. Edmundes burpe.

The first of Iulye John Carelette weaner died in the Kinges benche, & was buried in the backesyde.

The xvi. day of the same moneth were burned at Newbery John Gwine shoemaker, Alkin, & Julius palmer.

The xviii. day wer burned at Grinsted, Thomas dungate, John Forman, and mother Tree.

Whiles the fire was thus raginge amōg the poore christians: there were certen as busy aboute a conspyracye, whose purpose was to haue robbed the Quene of her treasure in the Escheker, and thereby to haue bene

The yere
of the
wylde.

The yere
of Christ

The thyrde parte of
able to wage battell againste her, whiche purpose as it Anne
was fond, so fondly it was vttered by one of their owne gun
conspiracie. And certen of them were appzehended, and
executed: As Adall, frogmorton, Peccham, Staunton
and other. And dyuers other fledde the Realme for the
same.

The firste of August there was burned at Exeter an
olde woman.

The xxij. of September were burned at Mayefielde,
John Hart, Thomas Kaulsball, Nicholas holden, and
two other, And the morowe after was bourned at Wy-
llowe a yonge man a glouer.

About this time ther was burned one John Horne at
Newent, and a woman at Wotton vnder edge in Glouc-
ster shiere. And at Canterburie in the Castell, John
Clarke, Dunstan Chetterden, Archer, Potkins wyfe,
and William Foster, died of famine.

In October one was burned at Portsmouth, and
died in Canterbury castell, and wer buried in the fields.

The xxij. daye of January were burned at Canterbu-
in one fyre, vi. persons.

The xxv. of the same moneth wer burned at Ashford
two, and at Wyke other two.

The xxvi. of February, ther came to London an Em-
balladour sent from the kynge of Russe lande, wher one
of the thre ships that ventred towarde the easse, by the
north seas, fortunied to arrive.

About this tyme, D. Scot bishop of Chester, D. Wat-
son, bissshop of Lyncolne, and D. Chystriferson byshop
of Chichester came to Cambridge, and there caused the
dead carcases of Martin Bucer and Paulus Fagius, of
whom is metion befoze, to be solenly somoned to appere
befoze them & answere to suche heresies as shuld be layd
to theyr charge. And so sat in iugement vpon the, and co-
demned them bothe to be burned. Wherefoze they were
taken vp out of theyr graues, and solemnely burned on
the market hil. And certen of the vniuersitie that in their
lyfe tyme were verie frendly and familier with them, be-
gan now to defame them as heretikes, amonge whome
Doctoꝝ Perne was one. And nere about thys tyme, Pe-
ter

5518

1557

the Epitome of chronicles

Ant res
gum An
gll.
The yere
of Chzist.
wz 1502.
 ter Martyrs wife shold haue be so serued at Orford, but because none was able to say that ever he herd her speak any woꝛde of heresie) for she was a straunger borne, and neuer spake englishe nor Latin she could not be condemned. But because she was wife to such a man, she was vehemently suspected, and therefore remoued out of papistall halowed grounde. And as some saye, buried in a dungehille.

In thys februarie, the Lorde Starton (who had bene boldred in mischiese so longe as his godfather Stephen Gardiner liued) was arrayned at Westminster, for the murder of two gentlemen. And in Marche folowynge he was brought to Salisbury, and ther hanged the sixt day of that monethe.

The same March, the xxii. day kyng Philip beyng returned from Flanders came to london & passed thzough to westminster with great solemnity accompanied with the Quene and nobles of the Realme.

The xii. of Aprille, were burned in Smithfelde John Lotherbye, Henry Ramsey, William Sturle, And one Stanleys wife.

The xx. of May, Thomas Fowle, who hadde ventred his lyfe in preaching and ministring to the afflicted chzistians in London, durynge the former yeares of trouble, beyng visited with sickenes, died, to the great discomforte of the afflicted flocke.

The xxix. of the same moneth wer burned in. S. Georges fiede, Stephen gratwicke and William Morant.

This moneth of Maye, Henry Stafford came oute of France, and toke Scarborow castell by force, and kept it two days, and was then takē with his complices, and brought to London, where they suffred on the tower hil.

About this tyme kyng Philip passed the seas againe into Flanders, and ther made great preparatiō against the French men. For Theemperour his father had surrendered to hym, all his enheritaunces in the lowe countreyes, aboute whiche the warres betwixt him and the French men wer begonne and continued.

In the beginning of June folowynge, the quene caused open wars to be proclaimed betwene England & France,

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
world.

The yere
of Christ.

and forthwith sent ouer an army to ayde kynge Phyllip. Wherof the Erle of Penbroke was generall.

Annal
gum.
Angli.

The. vi. day of this monthe were burned at Maydston John Bradbrydge, one Appleby a weauer, and his wife, one Aleyn and his wyfe, one Mannynge's wyfe, and one Elizabeth, a blynde woman, at Bristowe.

The. xix. day were burned at Canterbury, John Fiscocke, Nicholas Whyte, Nicholas Perdue, Barbara Finall widowe, Bradbrydges wydowe, one Ales Wenden, and one Wyllsons wyfe.

The. xxii. day were burned at Lewes, Rycharde Woodman, George Stepheweauer, Margery Woyses, James her sonne, Dionysie Burgise, Wyllyam Maynerde, Alexander Hosenier, his seruant, Tomazin at Woode, his mayden, one Ashedownes wyfe, and one Groues wyfe.

The. xxviii. day one Ambrose dyed in Maydston prison.

The. xii. day of July were burned at Norwiche, Symon Gulner yeoman, and a woman.

The second of August in the forenoone were bourned at Colchester maistresse Smyth, other wyfe called Syluerlede, one Wynes wife, and Elizabeth Fore, with. iii. other. And in the after noone. iiii. other. And the same daye George Aegles was hanged, drawen, and quartered at Chemsford, because in his prayers for the quene he besought God to tourne her hearte.

The. v. day were burned at Colchester one Chrystians wyfe, and an other Bobumers wyfe.

About this tyme the Erle of Penbroke with his company mette with kynge Philip at a towne in France called saint Quintayns, which he besieged. And during the siege there were taken the. x. day of August, many of the chiefest capitaynes that the Frenche kynge had. And the. xxviii. daye of the same moneth the towne was taken by force.

The. xx. daye of the same moneth were burned at Rochester, one Robert Frier, an aged man, and one other man, and two women.

All this tyme, doctor Weston (of whom mention is made before) was pricked with prouender, and neyed so faste after euery mans wife, that at the laste the very bol

sters

the Epitome of Chronicles.

And res
gum
Angl.

Wers of balwderie were enforced to call hym to Cozam,
and to depriue hym of al his spiritual promotions, wher
of the deanrie of Wyndsoze was one. But he (trustyng
that the holy father would not se such crueltie shewed v-
pon him alone for that that is so common in his coledge
of Cardinals, appealed to the court of Rome. Howbe it
he could not so escape. For as he was conueyghing him
selfe awaye, he was taken at Graues Anne, and thense
brought to the tower of London, where he continued til
the Quene Maries deth, and shortly after was deliuered
being sore sycke, and died the next day after. Some sayd
that if he hadde lyued any whyle, he would haue vttered
much of the papists purpose, as touching the burning of
the bones of the famous kynges, Henrie and Edward
his sonne, and other thinges which he was priue to.

The pere
of the
worlde.

Theyere
of 1555

The x. of September was burned at Lychfield Joyce
Lewes.

The. xlii. day of the same moneth were burned at Isle-
lyngton, Rafe Alorton, James Ausco, and Margery his
wyfe, And Richarde Roth.

The. xlii. of Nouember were burned in Smithfielde,
John Holidaye Carpenter, and one Sparowe, and one
Rycharde Gibson.

The. xlii. of December were burned in Smithfielde,
John Kowghe, preacher of the congregation of Chryste,
which in those daingerouse dayes had kept theim selues
in secrete. This man succeeded Thomas Fowle in that
ministratyon. He was a scotte bozne. And was betrayed
by a false brother, one Sergeant, an holper. With hym
suffred one Margaret Jeames.

This meane while the Frenche kyng made great pre-
paration for warres, entending that whiche he brought
to passe. For notwithstanding that his purpose was per-
ceyued by the deputies of Calais and Guisnes, yet su-
che securitie was in the Englyshe potentates, that no-
thyng was prouided for resistance. So that his power
commynge to Calais, wanne in order, fyrst Newnam-
bridge, then Kisebanke, and then Calais, and last of all
Guisnes. This was done in the begynnyng of January.
And all thys, chaunced in lesse then than twenty dayes.

In

The thyrde parte of

The yere
of the
worlde.

The yere
of Chyill

In these holdes were taken prysoners the lord Ment, Annt
forde, deputie of Calaitce, and the lord Craye of Wyl- gum
ton, and the Capitaynes of the Castell, and other pie. 816
ces. And sir Antonie Ager was slayne. The merchaun-
tes of the staple and all the people were spoyled and sent
awaye in great in miserie.

Immediately after the winninge of these holdes, there
came suche tempestes bothe by sea and lande, that the
moste parts of the shelles in Sealand, were blowen dow-
ne. And muche harme done in other parties also.

In February was bourned at Hentyngton one na-
med Lawton.

55 19

1558

The xxvii. of Marche was bourned in Smythfielde
Cuthbert Simson, one of the fyrst deacons of the con-
gregation that hadde lyued in secreete, in London. This
manne was of weorthy integritie of lyfe. He was be-
traied with John Koughe. He suffered muche in the
tower and other prysons, because he beyng deacon could
hane bittered many good manne, whose bloud the Papt-
stes chyrstened for, but he woulde bitter none. With hym
were bourned one John Dementes, and an other called
Hugh Fore.

This Marche, the Princis Electours, and other prin-
cis of Germany, came togyther to Frankforde vppon
Rhesne, where (haupnge a surrender of the Imperyll
crowne made by Charles the fyrste, who had then deter-
mynd to end his lyfe in an house of religion in Spayne,
they proceeded to an election of a newe Emperour, and
in shorte tyme chose Ferdinandus, brother to Charles,
kyng of Boheme. This Ferdinandus though he were
a Papiste by profession: yet bycause some of the Prin-
cis Electours wold not be present at Masse, he was con-
tent to be crowned at after noone without any Masse.

This sprynge was greate preparation made bothe by
the frenche kyng, and by kyng Philippe also. But
the frenche kyng made suche speede, that he invaded
Flanders, and spoyled and brente Dunkirke before
kyng Philip coulde come to reskue. But before that the
Frenchemenne retourned agayne oute of Flanders,
they

the Epitome of chronicles

ant res
um An
ill.

they were mette with by the Flemynge and the quene of Englandes shippes, upon the sandes betwene Dun- kirke and Grauelyn, and of them slayn a great numbze.

The yere of the worlde.

The yere of Christ.

Then dyd bothe these myghty princes bend theim selues with all their power to invade eche other, and spent all that sommer in campe in their owne persones with two mighty armies. But after there had ben in October muche talkyng of peace that shuld haue ben concluded, they dyd in Nouember breake vp their campes, without eyther peace concluded, or fielde foughten, or any notable acte doone.

The. xv. of Aprile one John Maynerde died in Newgate, and was buried in the fielde.

The. xxvi. of Aprile were bourned at Canturburys two women.

The. xxvi. of May were bourned at Colchester, John Haryson, Agnes George, and one named Dape.

In June were burned at Norwiche thre persons. And the same moneth one Thomas Tyler, and one Mathewe Wilters died in Newgate, and were burned in the feldes.

The. xxvii. of June were burned in Smithfield, Henry Wonde a sadler, John Slade, and other, to the number of. vii. at one fyze.

The fyfte of Iuly was bourned at Wynchester one Braynbzicke, a gentylman.

The. xiii. of Iuly were burned at Braynfozde at one fyze. vi. persones.

Shortly after this, queene Mary felle daungerously sicke, and to thewe her some signe of his purpose, God toke from her two of her chiefe phisitions, but all wolde not helpe. Her byshops and she burned euen to the laste breathe. For euen in Nouember (the laste moneth of her lyfe) were burned at Ipswiche two, at Wery two. And at Canturbery, certayn persons. God therefore to geue his souldours a breathyng tyme, toke this rodde of his from them the. xvii. day of Nouember, and set vp in her place, the seconde daughter of the noble kynge Henry, who by ryght title succeded Edward and Mary, dyeng without issue.

This

The yere
of the
1558.

The yere
of Chyest.

The thyrde parte of

Queene Elizabeth.

Ann
gum.
Angl.



This most noble pyncesse began her reigne ouer this Realme, the. xviij. day of Nouember, in the yere of oure Lorde. 1558. And was then at Hatfielde in Hartfordshire, fro whens her grace came shortly after to the Citie of London, where she was so ioyfully receiued of the people, that wise menne myght well perceyue what hope the people had conceyued to receyue at her handes the thyng that her syfter had taken from theim. On the contrary parte, her behauiour towarde the people was suche, that if the people had not delited in her before, yet must they now haue shewed them selues, eyther thankfull to God for so good a chaunge, or els altogether vnwoorthy so gentyle, so louynge, and so coumfortable a Pyncesse.

But in her passyng through the Cite to the towre, and frome thens to Westmynster, and at her Coronation there, whiche was the. xv. day of January folowynge: the people shewed themselves so ioyfull, and she her selfe so thankfull, that it evidently appeared, that the Pyncesse and people stryued, who shoulde deserue moze at others hande.

Whyle these thynges were in doyng, God wroughte yet moze for his church, For the next day after the quene Maries death, the Cardinal Poole dyed also. And within. iij. daies after, the byshop of Rochester, and shortly after, the byshop of Chichester. And generally, so many priestes dyed in the realme in the tyme of quene Maries sicknesse, and about the tyme of her deathe, that doctour Scotte byshop of Chester, preachyng at Paules crosse, the. xxviij. of Nouember, affirmed that there was not for euery. iiii. churches in Englande, one priest. But byshop Boner of London besturred hym, and made newe priestes as he had bene madde. What he mente thereby, lette wyse men coniecture.

The. xx. of January began a parlyament, wherein among other thynges, the supremacy of the byshoppe of Rome

the Epitome of chronicles

ent rec
um An
ll.
Rome was longe debated, and euery man suffred to say **The yere** **The yere**
what he coulde and woulde in the defence of it: but at of the of **Chyft.**
the laste worlde.

Durynge the tyme of this parliament all preachinge ceased throught the Kealne sauing befoze the Quene in lent, where preached D. Cocks, D. Sands, D. Parker, maister Whithead, maister Grindall, D. Wyll, maister Pedder, maister Scozie, maister Leuer, master Horne, maister Samson, And maister Wintrie. These all bent them selues to the vttermost of their knowledge, to beat down Antichrist and his power, and dyd therin so much that none y had not his hert altogether hardened, would ones open his mouthe agaynst that they taught.

Thus dyd the Lord of his mercy take from his people his sharpe rodde, wherwith he had durynge the dayes of Quene Mary chastised them, as it may well appeere by the nountber of theym that suffered in the tyme of her reigne, whiche were manye mo in nountber then are in this bzeft chronicle remembred. But god hath theyr name in his booke, and theyr teares in his bottell, and when the number shalbe fulfyllled, he will be reuenged bypon the murtherers. The Lord graunt vs grace so to walke

in his feare, that our vertuous Queene maye continue with vs, and sette for the Goddes truth, to bys glozpe and our saluacion.

Amen.

Imprinted at London by VVilliam
Beres at the Weste ende of Poules towards
Ludgate at the signe of the Hedgehogge
and are there to be solde.

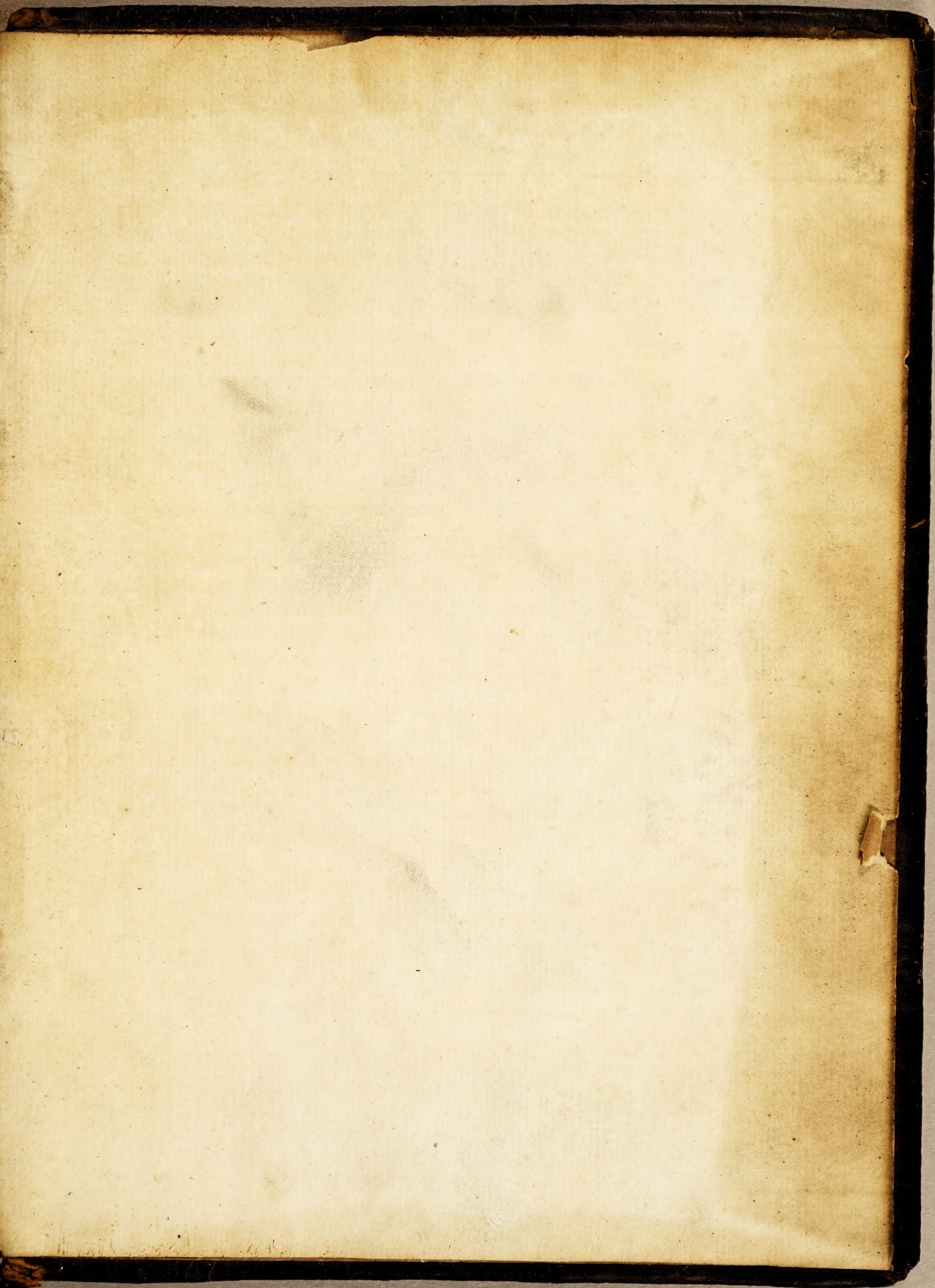
1559.

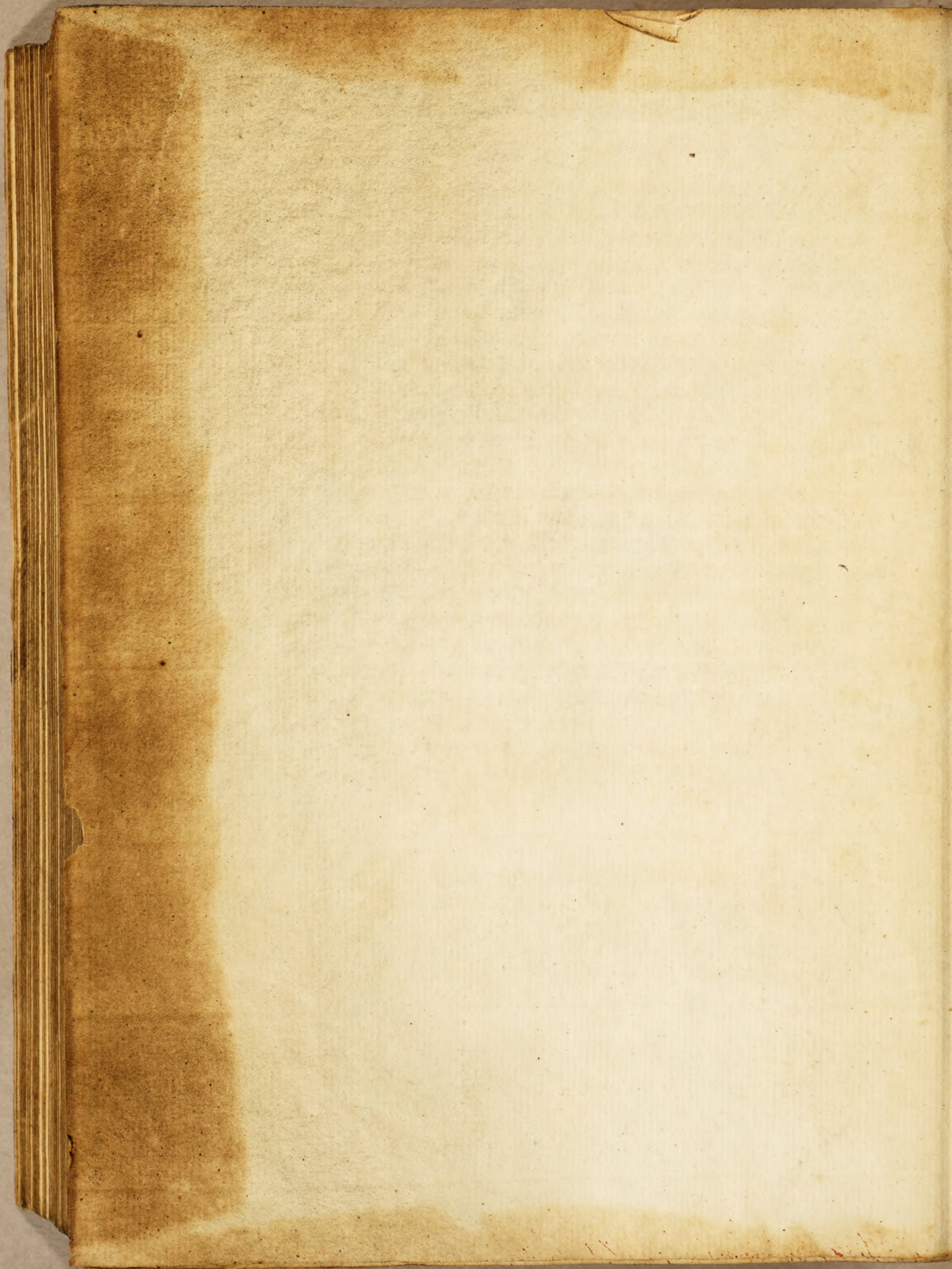
The v. day of Apryll.

06-154

Thom^{as} barthol^{omae} bok^{er} ⁱⁿ 1560
 1560 ²⁷ anno
 1560 ²⁷ anno
 1560 ²⁷ anno

liber prima Baxteri





D559
L293c

